This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

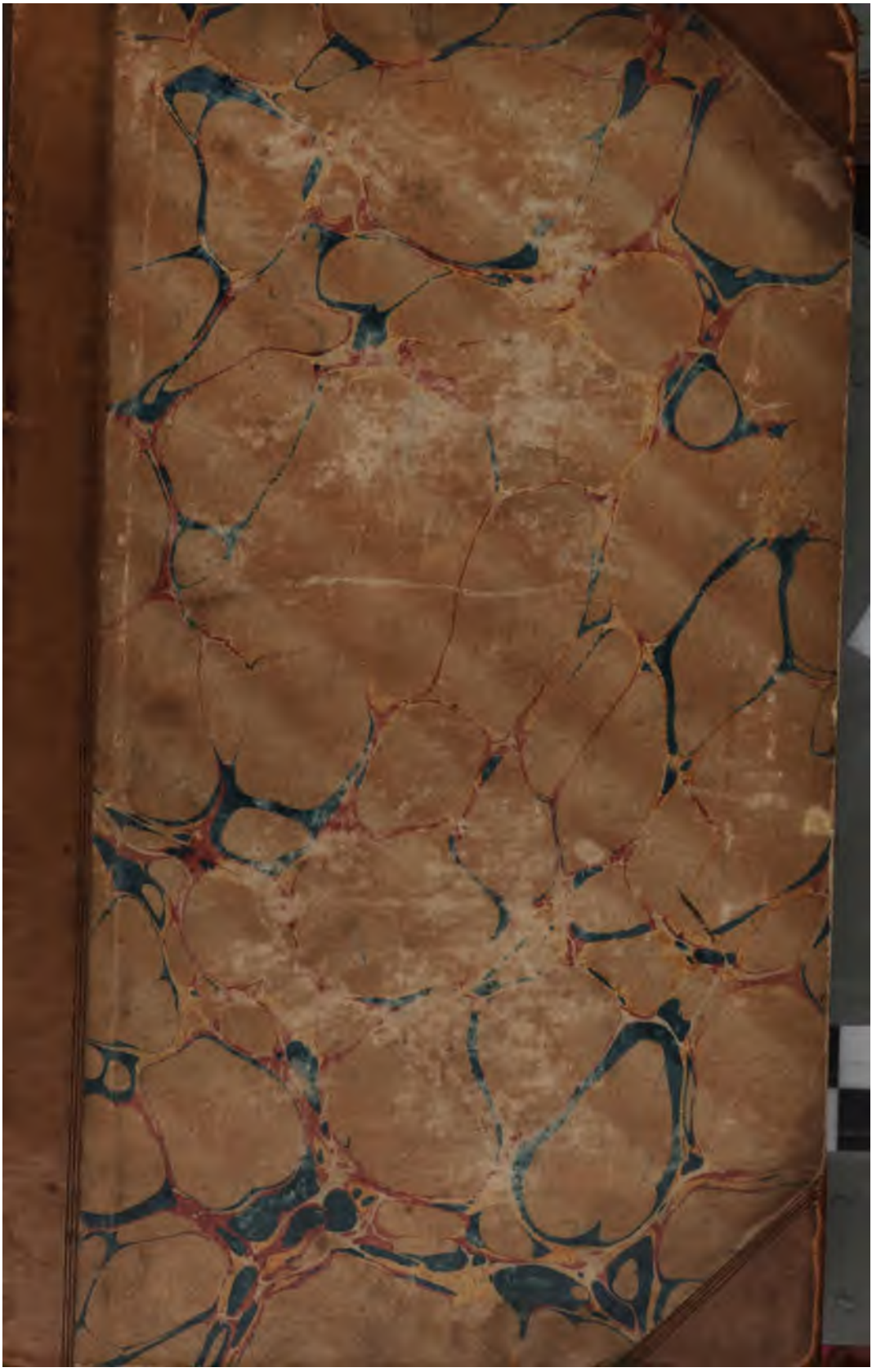
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



5

1/4 ER

$35.00

MATHEMATICAL PRINCIPLES

OF

MECHANICAL PHILOSOPHY,

AND THEIR APPLICATION TO

THE THEORY

OF

UNIVERSAL GRAVITATION.

BY

JOHN HENRY PRATT, M.A.

FELLOW OF GONVILLE AND CAIUS COLLEGE, AND OF
THE CAMBRIDGE PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY.

CAMBRIDGE;
PRINTED BY JOHN W. PARKER, UNIVERSITY PRINTER.
PUBLISHED BY J. & J. J. DEIGHTON, CAMBRIDGE;
J. H. PARKER, OXFORD; MILLIKEN AND Co., DUBLIN;
MACLACHLAN & STEWART, EDINBURGH;
AND
JOHN W. PARKER, WEST STRAND, LONDON.

QH805
P8
1836

A LEADING object that I have had in view in preparing the present Treatise has been to gather into one uniform system the principles of mechanical science, beginning with the most elementary and ascending to the most general. In attempting to accomplish this I have collected the fundamental principles into separate Chapters, and placed after them Chapters of application of these principles to the demonstration of others of a second class, and have then added collections of problems and, in some instances, hints to guide to their solution.

An attachment, and that in most respects a laudable attachment, to the geometry of the *Principia* had, till of late years, led to the practice of retaining in our course of University reading some parts of that immortal work, rather for the beauty and elegance of its demonstrations, than for the importance of the theorems demonstrated. But this practice has been gradually sinking into disuse, a result which we owe to Professor Woodhouse's *Physical Astronomy*, to M. Poisson's *Traité de Mécanique*, which has been extensively used amongst us, and very largely to Mr Whewell's Treatises on *Statics* and *Dynamics* and

Mr Airy's *Mathematical Tracts*. But notwithstanding the great and happy changes thus brought about we still cling to the old methods, not as a whole, but just so far as to derange our system and give to it the ambiguous character of being neither strictly geometrical, nor strictly analytical. But I wish not to be misunderstood; I mean not to imply that geometry should be discarded and banished from our academical course of study; far from it; for the analyst will find his analysis of little benefit if he have not the power of gathering from his formulæ geometrical conceptions. Neither would I have it for a moment conceived, that I would in the least degree repudiate the profound veneration, which is so justly due even to the letter of of the *Principia:* my own admiration of the clearness and conciseness of its demonstrations rather induces me to invite others to participate of the pleasures they may enjoy from its attentive and diligent study. But this I desire, that we should pay more regard to system than we hitherto have done; if our course is to be geometrical let us adhere to geometry, if analytical to analysis; if we are to admit both (the preferable course) let us keep our systems well apart, and not have our course of reading confused, here analysis and there geometry.

My own experience has impressed me also with the conviction, that many of our candidates for University honours are debarred the high enjoyment of penetrating into the sublimer investigations of Physical Astronomy from the want of some treatise that would lead them by

a clear and distinct path, and with an undivided attention, through the train of reasoning which leads from elementary mechanical principles to the demonstration of celestial phenomena. Some, it is true, of our first rate students do attain this eminence; but might not this few be considerably augmented, if their path were well pointed out and disencumbered of many of the obstacles which lie in their way and impede their course?

Let it not be imagined, however, that I send forth the present volume with the presumptuous confidence, that the want of a complete analytical system of mechanics is supplied by its appearance; though I will so far commit myself as to confess, that to supply this want has been my earnest desire;—no, I would rather use the experience of a distinguished Author, whose name I have already used, who is a far better judge, in such a case, than myself, and say in his words, "a few years experience has a great tendency to diminish the confidence of producing what shall satisfy himself and others, with which a young author sets out: and he learns that the vivid impression of fancied deficiencies and imperfections of preceding works which at first induced him to write, is a very insufficient warrant of his own skill and judgment." But yet my object has been unique; and it has not been till after much time and thought spent upon the subject, that I have ventured to lay my work before the public: how I have satisfied my own desire I leave to the candour of my readers to determine.

In the first, second, and third Chapters of Statics will be found the principles of the composition and equilibrium of statical forces acting, first on a particle, then on a rigid body, and lastly on a system of bodies connected in any manner. From the conditions of equilibrium the principle of Virtual Velocities has been deduced. Afterwards this principle has been demonstrated independently after the method of Lagrange, and from it are deduced the conditions of equilibrium. Then follow Chapters of application. The fourth Chapter is a collection of examples of finding the centre of gravity of bodies, being an application of the formulæ for the co-ordinates of the centre of parallel forces. In this Chapter I have aimed at explaining and illustrating integration between limits: see particularly Examples 8, 13, 14, 19, 25, 26. The fifth Chapter contains the application of the principles to the six mechanical powers, and concludes with some notices of the laws of friction. The sixth Chapter is upon roofs, arches, and bridges, which form interesting applications of the principles of equilibrium. In this Chapter will be found some remarks upon the roofs of Trinity College Hall and Westminster Hall, the action of buttresses, and the stone vaulting of King's College Chapel, as well as notices of other noted edifices and structures. An example is given of the method of calculating the lengths and weights of the supporting rods, chains, and road-way of suspension bridges, that the strain may in every part be proportional to the strength of the chain. Then follows a Chapter of statical problems, beginning with some general re-

marks on their solution. And the treatise on Statics closes with a Chapter on Attractions. After calculating the attraction of spherical and spheroidal bodies of homogeneous mass I have proceeded to the more general investigation of the attraction of a body differing but little from a sphere in form, with a view to the calculation of the Figure of the Earth in a future part of the work. This has led me to introduce Laplace's Coefficients, a subject unknown in our University course, till introduced a few years since by Mr Murphy in his Treatise on Electricity. I have followed Laplace's course, and not the inverse method of Mr Murphy. The frequent occurrence of the equation

$$\frac{d^2V}{dx^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dy^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dz^2} = 0$$

in physical investigations makes it highly desirable, that a knowledge of the profound analysis of Laplace should be made as familiar as possible to the higher class of students in the University. For this reason I have introduced, in as concise and at the same time as clear a manner as I was able, the principal properties of the Coefficients of that great analyst, breaking up and arranging the subject in the form of propositions.

The treatise on Dynamics opens with a Chapter upon the fundamental principles of the motion of bodies, which I gather wholly from experiment and observation. After explaining the conventional method

of measuring motion I proceed to an enquiry into the laws that regulate the motion of bodies when uninfluenced by external causes: a variety of experiments and facts of ordinary occurrence point to the principle called the First Law of Motion. This leads to an explanation of the conventional method of measuring force dynamically. An investigation is then made into the laws which regulate the motion of bodies when acted on simultaneously by different causes, and this leads to the principle called the Second Law of Motion. This law enables us to introduce a method of referring the motion of a body to three rectangular axes. The necessity is then shewn of obtaining a relation between the two arbitrarily assumed measures of force, viz. pressure, the statical, and velocity generated, the dynamical measure: this leads to the principle called the Third Law of Motion. The introductory Chapter of Dynamics concludes with the enunciation of a self-evident principle, analogous to that first introduced by D'Alembert, whereby we deduce the equations for calculating the motion of a system from the equations of equilibrium. This principle is, in fact, the interpretation of the Three Laws of Motion into analytical language. In explaining the means of estimating force I have aimed at giving a distinct idea of the nature of forces that require a finite time to develop their effects, and those which generate velocity in an indefinitely short time.

The second Chapter is upon the motion of a single particle. In this I have entered fully into the pro-

perties of central forces, and calculated the motion in various cases: and at the close of the Chapter Kepler's Laws are made use of to guide us to the discovery of the nature of the force acting on the planets; and we thus catch a first glimpse of the theory of gravitation: after shewing that there is sufficient ground to justify us in undertaking the task of calculating the consequences of this law, a large portion of the remainder of the work is devoted to that enquiry. In the third Chapter the motion of two particles attracting each other according to the law of gravitation is calculated. In the fourth the perturbations in this motion by the introduction of a third attracting body are explained upon the supposition that the disturbing body is very distant. This Chapter contains the Sixty-sixth Proposition of the First Book of the *Principia* and its corollaries and some Propositions of the Third Book put into an algebraical form: this is a digression from the chain of exact reasoning which is the professed object of the work; but being in a separate Chapter the student, if he choose, may pass over this and proceed to the fifth Chapter, in which the distance, longitude, and latitude of the Moon are calculated to a second approximation upon the theory of gravity. The sixth Chapter contains the calculation of the perturbations of the planets. In the Lunar Theory the only part peculiar to this work is the way in which I have introduced the constants c and g, which give rise to the motion of the line of apsides and the line of nodes. In the Planetary Theory I have used M. Pontecoulant's

method of integrating the equations of motion of an undisturbed planet and then applied Lagrange's principle of the variation of parameters to calculate the variations of the elliptic elements. This Chapter closes with a demonstration of the Stability of the Planetary System, retaining the squares of the eccentricities and inclinations. The next is upon the motion of a particle on curves and surfaces and also on the oscillations and perturbations of pendulums. A collection of problems on the motion of bodies considered as particles follows.

The next two Chapters contain the calculation of the motion of a rigid body acted on, first, by forces of finite intensity, and secondly, by instantaneous or impulsive forces. The subject of the first of these Chapters leads to the demonstration and calculation of the Precession of the Equinoxes and the Nutation of the Earth's Axis: the formulæ for these are prepared for numerical calculation; the reduction to numbers will be found at the close of the Chapter on the Figure of the Earth. After calculating the motion of a flexible body in the simple case of a vibrating cord, I close the treatise on Dynamics with the fifteenth and sixteenth Chapters, in which are developed the General Dynamical Principles of the Motion of a Material System, and their application to the solution of dynamical problems, of which a large collection is given.

In the treatises on Hydrostatics and Hydrodynamics the general principles of those Sciences are

developed, and applied to the determination of the Figure of the Earth upon the hypothesis of its mass having been at some former epoch in a semi-fluid state, the form of the atmospheres of the planets, the tides, and the effect of a resisting medium upon the elements of the planetary orbits.

Lastly, a summary of the arguments in favour of the Theory of Universal Gravitation closes the Work. A reference to the Table of Contents will give a better view of the character of the Work than I have deemed it necessary to give in this place.

The prevailing argument with me for using the old differential and integral notation is the excellence of Fourier's notation for definite integrals: I much prefer that to any other that I have seen, and this naturally led me back to the old form of differentials and integrals. In case any of my readers are not acquainted with Fourier's notation I now give it. $\int_a^b u dx$ represents the integral of the differential coefficient u, or of the differential $u dx$, with respect to x taken between the limiting values a and b of x. In successive integration the order of arrangement of the integrals is the same as that of the differentials: thus $\int_{-1}^{+1} \int_0^{2\pi} P d\omega d\varpi$ represents the double integral of P

I repeat, that it is not with the expectation that I have fully succeeded in satisfying even my own desires that I present this volume to the students of the University, but with the earnest wish that it may be found useful and that my labours may not have been altogether spent in vain. Should any of my readers favour me with any suggestions of improvement I shall receive them with the greatest thankfulness.

J. H. P.

CAIUS COLLEGE,
Nov. 26, 1836.

ERRATA.

PAGE	LINE	ERROR.	CORRECTION.
20	11	Q	R
65	6 from bottom	y	$\bar{y}$
166	last line	$\}$	$\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$
169	6 from bottom	R_i	$R_{i,}$
251	3	s	e
312	2 from bottom	$=$	$-$
488	3, 6	$\Sigma . mPdr$	$\Sigma . Pdr$
528	3	DIFINITIONS	DEFINITIONS
528	7 from bottom	*incomprehensible*	*incompressible.*
562	18	*afford*	*affords.*

ARTICLE PAGE

1—10. INTRODUCTION and definitions, measure of force in Statics and Dynamics 1

STATICS.

CHAPTER I.

THE COMPOSITION AND EQUILIBRIUM OF FORCES ACTING UPON A MATERIAL PARTICLE.

14. Resultant of forces acting in the same straight line 6

16, 17. Resultant of two forces acting not in the same straight line. Parallelogram of Forces 7

20. Resultant of three forces acting at right angles to each other 12

22. Resultant of any number of forces acting in any directions 13

23. Conditions of equilibrium of any number of forces 14

24. Principle of Virtual Velocities 14

CHAPTER II.

THE COMPOSITION AND EQUILIBRIUM OF FORCES ACTING ON A RIGID BODY.

28. The transmission of force through a rigid body 17

29. Resultant of two forces acting in the same plane but not on the same point 17

31. *Moment of a force with respect to a point* 19

32. Resultant of two parallel forces 19

35. Definition of a *Couple* 20

36. Resultant of any number of parallel forces 21

37, 38. Centre of parallel forces; centre of gravity 22

39. *Moment of a force with respect to a plane* 22

41—45. Properties of couples 23

ARTICLE PAGE

46. Resultant of couples in parallel planes 24
47. Resultant of two couples not in the same plane 25
48. Resultant of three couples acting at right angles to each other 26
50. Resultant of any number of forces acting in the same plane 27
58. Conditions of equilibrium of any number of forces acting in the same plane 29
54. Two resultants of any number of forces acting in any directions on a rigid body 30
56. The *principal moment* of the forces 32
58. The locus of the centres of the least principal moments 33
62. Condition when the forces have a single resultant 35
63, 64. Magnitude and direction of the single resultant 36
65. Six equations of equilibrium of a rigid body 37
67. One point of the body fixed 38
68. Two points, or an axis, in the body fixed 40
69. Conditions of equilibrium when a body rests on a plane 40

CHAPTER III.

THE EQUILIBRIUM OF A SYSTEM OF RIGID BODIES.

71. Conditions of equilibrium 42
72—77. Principle of Virtual Velocities 44
78. Centre of gravity highest or lowest 47
79. The equilibrium stable or unstable according as the centre of gravity is in its lowest or highest position 48
81. Lagrange's proof of Virtual Velocities 49
83. Conditions of equilibrium deduced from the principle of Virtual Velocities 51

CHAPTER IV.

CENTRE OF GRAVITY.

86. Triangle, pyramid, and frustrum of pyramid 52
87. Co-ordinates of the centre of gravity, and the calculation of them in various cases. Integration between limits explained and illustrated 55
88, 89. Guldinus' Properties 70

CHAPTER. V.

MACHINES, AND FRICTION.

93. Equilibrium of the *lever*, pressure on the fulcrum 73

ARTICLE PAGE

94. Three species of lever ... 75

95, 96. The *balance:* requisites for a good balance ... 77

98. Graduation of the steel-yard. 99. Roberval's Balance ... 78

100. Wheel and Axle. 102. Toothed Wheels ... 80

105.—111. Pullies. White's Pully. 113. Inclined Plane. 114. Wedge. 116. Screw ... 82

118. Friction ... 90

CHAPTER VI.

ROOFS, ARCHES AND BRIDGES.

121. Tension of the tie-beam of a simple truss-roof ... 93

122. Explanation of the action of buttresses ... 94

Roofs of Trinity College Hall and Westminster Hall ... 96

123. Equilibrium of a symmetrical roof of any number of beams ... 96

124. Arch, explanation of terms ... 99

126. The effect of friction in supporting an arch ... 100

128. Conditions of equilibrium of an arch ... 101

129. A form of arch that will bear any weight in any part ... 103

130. Blackfriars Bridge ... 104

131. The Gothic Arch. St Dunstan's Church. Flying-buttresses. An arch built in a wall ... 104

132. Equilibrium of a dome. St Paul's Cathedral. Steeples. Salisbury Cathedral. Stone roof of King's College Chapel ... 105

136—139. Common Catenary. Property of its centre of gravity. Tension. 108

140. Catenary of equal strength. Suspension Bridges ... 113

141. Formulæ reduced to Tables. Examples ... 116

CHAPTER VII.

STATICAL PROBLEMS.

142—145. Remarks on the solution of statical problems ... 120

146. Problems. Prob. 9, Roberval's Balance. Prob. 10, Application of Virtual Velocities. Prob. 11, stable and unstable equilibrium. Probs. 12, 13, 14, examples of friction ... 122

CHAPTER VIII.

ATTRACTIONS.

148, 149. Attraction of a spherical shell and sphere on an external particle, law of attraction being the inverse square ... 137

150. Ditto for an internal particle ... 139

ARTICLE PAGE

151, 152. Attraction of a spherical shell, law of attraction being any function of the distance. Examples..... 139

153, 154. The laws for which a shell attracts as if condensed into its centre. 141

155, 156. Attraction of an oblate spheroid of small ellipticity on a particle at its pole, and also another at its equator..... 143

157. Ditto for a prolate spheroid of small ellipticity..... 145

158. Attraction of a homogeneous oblate spheroid of any ellipticity on a particle in its mass..... 145

159. Attraction of a spheroidal shell on an internal particle..... 148

162. Formulæ for the attraction of an ellipsoid 149

163, 164. Attraction on an external particle. Ivory's Theorem..... 149

165. Attraction of a body on a very distant particle the same nearly as if condensed into its centre of gravity 153

167. Formulæ for the attraction of any heterogeneous mass..... 154

168. $$\frac{d^2V}{df^2}+\frac{d^2V}{dg^2}+\frac{d^2V}{dh^2}=0, \text{ or } -4\pi\rho'$$

according as the particle is external or internal 155

169. Transformation of the equation in V to polar co-ordinates 157

170, 171. Method of expanding V in a series. *Laplace's Coefficients*..... 159

172. Calculation of V for a homogeneous sphere 161

173, 174. Attraction of a nearly spherical homogeneous body 162

176. A function of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$ can be expanded in a series of Laplace's Coefficients, provided that the function do not become infinite between the values -1 and 1 of μ, and 0 and 2π of ω 164

179. Expansion of r in the series $a\{1+\alpha Y_0+\alpha Y_1+\alpha Y_2+\ldots\}$..... 169

180. If Q_i and $R_{i'}$ be two of Laplace's Coefficients, then if i and i' be different integers $\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} Q_i R_{i'}\, d\mu\, d\omega = 0$ 169

181. A function of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$ can be expanded in *only one* series of Laplace's Coefficients..... 171

182. Values of V for an external and internal particle in terms of Y_0, Y_1, Y_2, &c..... 172

183, 184. If a=the radius of the sphere of which the volume equals the volume of the attracting body, then $Y_0=0$: also if the origin of r be placed at the centre of gravity of the mass, then $Y_1=0$ 173

185, 186. Attraction of a heterogeneous body consisting of thin strata nearly spherical, homogeneous in themselves, but differing from one another in density..... 174

DYNAMICS.

CHAPTER I.

DEFINITIONS. LAWS OF MOTION.

ARTICLE PAGE

187. The measure of the *position* of a body in space 176

188. Necessity of choosing *units* of measure 177

189—191. Means of measuring motion. *Velocity*, uniform and variable. 177

193—196. Motion of a body uninfluenced by external causes. *First Law of Motion.* Nature of the proof of the laws of motion. *Inertia*. 180

198—206. Dynamical measure of *force*. Accelerating force, impulsive and finite 182

207—210. Motion of a body moving under the combined influence of two or more causes. *Second Law of Motion.* The use of this law in referring the motion of a body to rectangular axes. Resolution of velocity 188

211—225. The object of the Science of Dynamics. The necessity of discovering the relation between the statical and dynamical measures of force. Experiments for obtaining this relation. Atwood's Machine. *Moving force* and *Momentum*. Experimental laws of the elasticity of bodies. *Third Law of Motion*. Origin of the term *vis viva*. *Units* of statical force and mass 191

226, 227. Interpretation of the Three Laws of Motion into a Principle whereby the calculation of the motion of a system is made to depend upon the conditions of equilibrium of forces 203

CHAPTER II.

THE MOTION OF A MATERIAL PARTICLE.

228—230. Equations of motion: determination of the arbitrary constants .. 205

231—236. Rectilinear motion, under the action of gravity, and central forces, and on a plane 207

237—239. Curvilinear motion under the action of gravity. 213

240—245. Properties of *central orbits* 216

246. Differential equation of central orbits 220

249—251. Orbit when the force varies as the distance 222

252. Orbit when the force varies as the inverse square of the distance: conditions of projection that it shall be an ellipse, hyperbola, or parabola 226

253, 254. The law of force found when the orbit is known. Force in the conic sections about the focus: in the ellipse about the centre. Force in a circle about the centre. *Centrifugal force* and *centripetal force* defined 228

ARTICLE PAGE

255. The centrifugal force of a particle moving in space equals the square of the velocity divided by the radius of absolute curvature, and acts in the osculating plane 230

256—263. *Kepler's Laws*, and their application to determine the nature of the force acting on the planets: first conception of the existence of the *Law of Universal Gravitation:* the evidence in its favour sufficient to induce us to enter upon the calculation of its consequences 232

CHAPTER III.

MOTION OF TWO MATERIAL PARTICLES ATTRACTING EACH OTHER.

264. Motion of the centre of gravity, law of force the inverse square 238

265, 266. The orbits the bodies describe about each other, and about their centre of gravity 240

267. The orbits about the centre of gravity are similar 241

268, 269. Remarks on the errors in Kepler's Laws 243

270. Method of determining the elements of an orbit from observation ... 244

273. Time of motion in an elliptic orbit about the focus 246

274—280. Expansion of the eccentric, and true anomalies, and the distance in terms of the mean anomaly 248

281. Time in a parabolic orbit about the focus 251

282, 283. Place of a body in a parabolic orbit, and also in a very eccentric ellipse, at a given time 251

CHAPTER IV.

EXPLANATION OF THE LUNAR PERTURBATIONS.

284—287. Introductory remarks 254

288. Principle of the superposition of small motions 256

289—293. Brief history of lunar inequalities 257

294—298. Calculation of the *disturbing forces* and explanation of terms ... 258

299—301. Effect on the periodic time of the Moon 262

302. Effect on the velocity in the circular orbit 263

303. Effect on the form of the circular orbit 264

304. The ratio of the axes of the oval orbit 265

305, 306. The velocity in the oval orbit. Moon's *Variation* 266

307. Instantaneous elliptic orbit 268

309. Effect of the mean central disturbing force on the line of apsides 270

311. Effect of the tangential force on the line of apsides 272

312—314. Effect of the disturbing forces on the eccentricity 274

317. Effect on the inclination and line of nodes 278

ARTICLE PAGE

318—320. Calculation of the motion of the nodes, after Newton's method. Mean motion..... 279

321. Calculation of the inclination of the Moon's orbit, after Newton's method..... 283

CHAPTER V.

LUNAR THEORY.

323. The equations of motion of a body attracted by other bodies..... 285

325, 326. Equations for calculating the distance of the Moon, and the inclination of the lunar orbit to the elliptic in terms of her longitude... 289

327. Comparison of small quantities..... 292

328. Expansions of P, T, S to the third order..... 293

329. Integration of the equations, first approximation..... 295

330. Reason why some terms must be calculated to the third order for the second approximation..... 296

331—333. Calculations for a second approximation..... 297

334, 335. Differential equations for second approximation: introduction of the constants c and g..... 299

336, 337. Integration of the equations, second approximation..... 302

338. Distance of the Moon from the Earth..... 303

339. Longitude in terms of the time..... 304

341. Geometrical interpretation of the terms in the formulæ for the distance and longitude of the Moon. Progression of the line of apsides. The Variation. The Evection. The Annual Equation. The Reduction..... 305

342. Geometrical interpretation of the terms in the formula for the inclination of the Moon's orbit to the ecliptic. Regression of the line of nodes..... 308

343. Error in the calculated progression of the apsides..... 309

345. Perturbations in the motion of a satellite are deducible from those of the Moon..... 310

346. Notices of inequalities of the third and higher orders..... 310

347. The centre of gravity of the Earth and Moon nearly describes an ellipse about the Sun..... 311

348. Means of determining the mass of the Moon..... 314

CHAPTER VI.

PLANETARY THEORY.

349. Comparison of the Lunar and Planetary Theories..... 315

350. Instantaneous ellipse, or ellipse of curvature..... 315

ARTICLE PAGE

352. Explanation of the process of integration ... 317
353. Integration of the equations for an undisturbed planet ... 319
354. Elements of the orbit in terms of the arbitrary constants ... 323
355—357. Integration of the equations for a disturbed planet ... 325
358—362. Transformation of the differential coefficients of R ... 328
363—366. Variations of the elements ... 332
367. Method of expansion of R ... 338
368—372. The form of the terms and the order of magnitude of the coefficients in this expansion. The constant part of R ... 340
374. Effect of the terms of R (after the first) periodical ... 348
375. Some terms in R much increased by integration: Jupiter and Saturn, the Earth and Venus ... 349
377. Difference between *periodic and secular variations* ... 350
378. Equations for calculating the secular variations ... 351
379—383. Stability of the mean distances, and the mean motions: and of the eccentricities and inclinations. The fact that the planets revolve about the Sun in the same direction ensures the Stability of the System ... 352
384—389. Secular variations of the eccentricity, longitude of the perihelion, inclination, and longitude of the node ... 355
391, 392. The masses and elements of the heavenly bodies ... 362

CHAPTER VII.

MOTION OF A PARTICLE ON CURVES AND SURFACES. SIMPLE PENDULUM.

393. Motion on a plane curve, gravity acting ... 368
394. Pressure on the curve ... 369
395. Motion on a cycloid: oscillations are isochronous ... 370
396. Motion on a circular arc ... 372
397—399. Pendulum: measuring of heights and depths ... 374
401. Oscillation of a pendulum in a cycloid ... 376
402. Table of the lengths of the seconds pendulum in various places ... 377
403—406. Perturbations of the motion of a pendulum. Examples. Pendulum escapements ... 378
407. Velocity on a surface independent of the path ... 387
408, 409. Motion on a spherical surface ... 388
410. Pressure on a curve surface ... 390
411. Pressure when the particle moves in a bent tube ... 391

CHAPTER VIII.

ARTICLE PAGE

PROBLEMS ON THE MOTION OF BODIES CONSIDERED AS PARTICLES. 393

CHAPTER IX.

PRELIMINARY ANALYSIS.

412. Object of this Chapter stated ... 398

415, 416. Formulæ for the transformation of co-ordinates. ... 399

417. There is one, and in general only one system of *principal axes* in a body ... 400

418. To find the principal axes when one axis is known. Examples. ... 402

419—421. *Moment of Inertia:* its property with respect to the centre of gravity. Radius of Gyration. Examples. ... 403

422. Moment of inertia about any axis. ... 406

423—426. Properties of the principal moments of inertia. ... 407

CHAPTER X.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ACTED ON BY FORCES OF FINITE INTENSITY.

427. General equations of motion. ... 410

428. The motion of the centre of gravity the same as if all the forces acted at that point. ... 411

429. The motion of rotation the same as if the centre of gravity were fixed. 412

430. The use of these two principles. ... 413

CHAPTER XI.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ABOUT A FIXED AXIS: FINITE FORCES.

431. The angular accelerating force. ... 414

432. The time of a small oscillation, gravity. *The Compound Pendulum.* 415

433. The centres of oscillation and suspension are reciprocal. ... 415

434—436. The length of a seconds pendulum determined experimentally. *Captain Kater's pendulum.* The effect in shifting the sliding weight. The axes of support at the centres of oscillation may be knife edges with the edges passing through those points, or equal cylinders with the circumferences passing through the points of suspension and oscillation. ... 416

438. Pressure on the fixed axis. ... 421

439. The principal axes through the centre of gravity are *permanent axes* when no forces act ... 422

CHAPTER XII.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ABOUT A FIXED POINT: FINITE FORCES.

ARTICLE PAGE

441. The linear velocities of a particle parallel to the axes in terms of the angular velocities about the axes. *The Instantaneous Axis*..... 424

442—445. The position of this axis in space, the angular velocity of the body about it, and its position with respect to the principal axes... 425

446. Equations for calculating the angular velocities about the principal axes..... 427

447—449. The position of the body in space in terms of these angular velocities..... 429

450—456. Motion about a fixed point when no forces act..... 431

457, 458. Stability of the Earth's rotation..... 439

459. Equations for calculating the effect of the Sun and Moon on the rotatory motion of the Earth..... 441

460, 461. The length of the mean day is invariable..... 443

462—465. *The Precession of the Equinoxes* and *the Nutation of the Earth's Axis*. The cause of these..... 446

466. The inclination of the Earth's axis to the lunar orbit is nearly invariable. The cause of Lunar Nutation is the regression of the Moon's line of nodes..... 450

467, 468. Calculation of Lunar Precession and Nutation..... 452

469, 470. Solar and Lunar Precession, (calculated finally in Art. 551.)..... 454

CHAPTER XIII.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ACTED ON BY IMPULSIVE FORCES.

472. Object of this Chapter..... 456

473. General equations of motion..... 457

474. The motion of the centre of gravity the same as if the forces all acted at that point..... 458

475. The motion of rotation the same as if the centre of gravity were fixed. 459

477. Motion about a fixed axis..... 460

478. Motion about a fixed point..... 460

479. The position of the *Axis of Spontaneous Rotation*..... 461

480. The position of the *Centre of Percussion*..... 463

CHAPTER XIV.

THE MOTION OF A FLEXIBLE BODY.

482. Equations of motion of a vibrating cord..... 466

483, 484. Integration and interpretation of the equations..... 468

CHAPTER XV.

GENERAL DYNAMICAL PRINCIPLES.

ARTICLE PAGE

486. Conservation of the motion of the centre of gravity, whether the forces be impulsive or of finite intensity. 474

487, 488. Conservation of areas, whether the forces be impulsive or of finite intensity. Case in which this principle is true when the forces are not all internal. 477

489—495. *The Invariable Plane:* also *the plane of Greatest Moments.* The action of the Comets on the Planetary System is insensible. Remarks upon the hypothesis of the change in the Earth's temperature, adopted by geologists. Effect of earthquakes, volcanic explosions, winds, friction and pressure of the Ocean, &c. on the position of the Earth's axis of rotation. 481

496—503. Principle of Vis Viva: and remarks. Conservation of vis viva. The vis viva of a system equals the vis viva owing to the motion of translation + vis viva owing to rotation. Vis viva is lost or gained in a system by the action of internal impulsive forces according as they are of the nature of collision or explosion: a perfectly elastic system sustains no loss. The effect of the degradation of rocks, breakers on the sea-shore, volcanic explosions, &c. the descent of rivers, vapour and cloud in the form of rain, boulders and avalanches, evaporation, &c. on the length of the day. 487

504. Principle of Least Action (or, of Stationary Action). 493

506, 507. Professor Hamilton's Principle of Varying Action. 495

508—511. The Laws of Small Oscillations: Co-existence of Small Vibrations; and the Superposition of Small Motions. 499

CHAPTER XVI.

PROBLEMS ON THE MOTION OF RIGID BODIES, AND ANY MATERIAL SYSTEM.

512. Observations on the solution of dynamical problems: applications of the general principles of Chap. xv. Prob. 7, Atwood's Machine. Probs. 20—22, examples of the action of friction. Probs. 23—25, pressure on a fixed axis. Probs. 32—37, impact of balls. Probs. 38—41, illustrations of the action of springs in removing shocks. Probs. 42—58, examples of the action of impulsive forces. Prob. 62, Robins' Ballistic Pendulum. 504

HYDROSTATICS.

CHAPTER I.

DEFINITIONS AND PRINCIPLES.

ARTICLE PAGE

513, 514. Definitions ... 528

515. Equable transmission of pressure ... 529

516. *Pressure referred to a unit of surface* ... 530

518. Pressure in the interior of a fluid ... 531

519, 520. Conditions of equilibrium of a fluid mass ... 532

521. These conditions satisfied by central forces ... 533

522, 523. Internal arrangement of a mass of fluid in equilibrium. *Surfaces et couches de niveau* ... 534

CHAPTER II.

FIGURE OF THE EARTH.

524. Previous remarks ... 536

525—529. Spheroid the form of equilibrium of a homogeneous mass of fluid: ellipticity too small for the figure of the Earth. A limiting angular velocity beyond which the equilibrium is impossible ... 537

530. The figure of a mass of fluid revolving about an axis through a centre of force varying inversely as the square of the distance ... 540

531—535. Heterogeneous figure of the Earth. The equation for calculating the form of the strata. Simplification of the equation. Simplification of the radius vector of the strata. The strata are all spheroidal, and increase in ellipticity from the centre to the surface 541

536. Equations for calculating the ellipticity ... 549

538—541. *Clairaut's Theorem*, Value of gravity. Length of the seconds pendulum. Length of a degree of latitude. An independent proof of the correctness of the approximation ... 551

543. Principal moments of inertia of the Earth ... 554

545. Law of density of the strata found ... 556

546, 547. Calculation of the ellipticity ... 557

548. Moments of inertia calculated with this law ... 559

549. Determination of an unknown constant q in the formula for the density in the case of the Earth ... 560

550, 551. Numerical calculation of the ellipticity, and the Precession of the Equinoxes ... 561

552—556. Additional theorems ... 562

CHAPTER III.

FORM OF EQUILIBRIUM OF THE OCEAN UNDER THE MOON'S ATTRACTION, AND THE FORM OF THE ATMOSPHERE.

ARTICLE PAGE

557, 558. The form of the Ocean a prolate spheroid of small ellipticity; if we neglect the Earth's motion and ellipticity: remarks 567

559. Form of the atmosphere: only one form of equilibrium. Zodiacal Light does not arise from the Sun's atmosphere 570

HYDRODYNAMICS.

CHAPTER I.

EQUATIONS OF MOTION.

561. The transmission of pressure through a fluid in motion. 573

562—565. Equations of motion: fluid incompressible: fluid compressible 574

566—568. The pressure at any point of a homogeneous incompressible fluid mass in motion when $udx+vdy+wdz$ is a perfect differential: if this be a perfect differential at any instant it is at every instant of the motion 578

569, 570. Equations for calculating the motion of an elastic fluid, the excursions of the molecules being very small, and no forces acting 579

CHAPTER II.

TIDES AND STABILITY OF THE OCEAN.

572. The difficulty of the subject of the Tides requires some hypothesis to be made in addition to that of gravitation. Laplace's and Daniel Bernoulli's Theories. 581

573—576. Calculation of the height of the tide on Bernoulli's hypothesis. Time of high tide at a given place. *Establishment of the port.* Comparison with observations. Tide at a port where the tidal wave arrives by two distinct routs: Interference of tides 583

577, 578. Transformation of the equations to polar coordinates. 589

579, 580. Stability of the Ocean. 595

CHAPTER III.

MOTION OF THE HEAVENLY BODIES IN A RESISTING MEDIUM.

581. Law of resistance 597

ARTICLE PA

582. Effect of a resisting medium on a planet moving in an orbit nearly circular is to diminish the mean distance, increase the mean motion, diminish the eccentricity, and to leave the position of the axis major unchanged. These effects not sensible in our planetary system; but may be so with the comets. Method of calculation for comets..... 5

CONCLUSION.

SUMMARY OF ARGUMENTS IN FAVOUR OF UNIVERSAL GRAVITATION. 602.

1. The uniformity which characterises the operations of nature leads us to conjecture that the phenomena of the material world are regulated by certain fixed laws. The never-ceasing alternation of light and darkness, the unvarying succession of the Seasons, the periodical flux and reflux of the Ocean, the constant tendency of bodies downwards, and numberless such like appearances, mutually strengthen the suspicion that they are the necessary consequences of some universal principles with which matter has been endued by the Creator of the World. It is the object of Mechanical Philosophy to search out these Principles.

But at the very outset we are overwhelmed with such a variety of causes, all in simultaneous action, that it becomes no easy task to disentangle the simple laws from the maze in which they are involved.

The whole universe is in perpetual fluctuation, changes are incessantly taking place, and while we are occupying ourselves with the investigation of present appearances, the appearances themselves are in the act of transition from one state to another, and new phenomena press themselves upon our notice.

It is only by a careful and attentive examination of the phenomena perpetually presenting themselves to our view, arranging them in groups, selecting, re-examining and re-arranging, that we are able to rise, by a process of induction and generalisation from the mass of facts accumulated by observation, to the laws from which they flow. Having once reached this summit, we descend, making these laws our guides, and follow out, by a deductive process, the phenomena which must naturally result from their operation. A comparison of

the calculated results with the phenomena observed determines, by their agreement or disagreement, whether the laws, to which our investigations have conducted us, are laws of nature or not. It is by a process of this nature that we are convinced of the truth of the Law of Universal Gravitation: and the chief object which we have in view in the present undertaking is to lead the student step by step up to this great Principle, and then shew him the real foundation on which we rest our belief of its truth by displaying its power of explaining accurately every astronomical phenomenon with which we are acquainted.

2. We give the name *Matter* to everything that affects our senses in any manner whatever. *Bodies* are portions of matter limited in every direction, and are consequently of a determinate *form* and *volume*. The *Mass* of a body is the quantity of matter of which it is composed. A *material particle* is a body infinitely small in every dimension.

3. We may consider a body of finite dimensions to be an assemblage of an infinite number of material particles, and its mass to be the sum of all their infinitely small masses.

The mass of a body is said to be *homogeneous* when the same quantity of matter is contained in equal volumes of the body. When this is not the case, the mass is said to be *heterogeneous*.

Bodies of different material have different quantities of matter comprised in the same volume. The term *density* is used to indicate the quantity of matter contained in a given volume of a mass, and serves to measure the quantities of matter in different bodies. The density of a homogeneous mass is measured by the quantity of matter in a unit of a volume: when the mass is heterogeneous, the density at any point is measured by the quantity of matter of the same nature as that at the given point that would occupy a unit of volume.

4. A body is *in motion* when the body or its parts occupy successively different positions in space. But since space is infinite in extent and in every part identical, we cannot judge of the state of rest or motion of a body without comparing it with other bodies: and, for this reason, all mo-

tions which come under our observation are necessarily *relative* motions.

All bodies are capable of motion; but experience shews us that matter will not move spontaneously. Also it is a matter of experiment, as it is indeed of ordinary experience, that when a body is passing from a state of rest to a state of motion, we can always attribute the change to the action of a foreign cause.

5. Any cause which produces or tends to produce motion in a body or to change its motion is termed *Force*.

6. MECHANICS is the Science which treats of the Laws of Rest and Motion of Bodies, whether Solid or Fluid.

We divide this science into four branches.

(1) STATICS, which treats of the laws of the equilibrium of solid bodies.

(2) DYNAMICS, of the laws of motion of solid bodies.

(3) HYDROSTATICS, of the laws of the equilibrium of fluid bodies, and

(4) HYDRODYNAMICS, which treats of the laws of motion of fluid bodies.

7. In Statics force is estimated by the *pressure* it causes a body when at rest to exert against another with which it is in contact and is said to be estimated *statically*. In Dynamics, however, the estimate used is *the space through* which the force causes a body to move in a given time, and the measure is said to be *dynamical*. We shall endeavour to make this more intelligible.

8. Let us begin with the consideration of the ordinary phenomenon of a falling body. Experience teaches us that if a body be let free from the hand, it will fall downwards in a certain determinate direction: however frequently the experiment be made, the result is the same, the body strikes the same spot on the ground in each trial, provided the place from which it is dropped remain the same. Now this undeviating effect must be the result of some cause equally undeviating. The cause is assumed to be an affinity which

all bodies have for the earth, and is termed the force of *Attraction*. It is found to prevail in all parts of the globe.

The direction in which the body falls is called the *vertical line* of the place where the experiment is made: and a plane perpendicular to this is called the *horizontal plane* of the place. If the motion be prevented by interposing the hand, the body exerts a *pressure*, and it requires a muscular effort to keep the body from falling.

In one case then the attraction of the Earth produces a pressure, in the other motion: now of these, *viz.*, the pressure exerted by the body when at rest, and the space through which the body falls when in motion, either may be taken as a means of estimating the intensity of the force of attraction at different places on the Earth, at different elevations above or depressions below its surface.

9. And the same may be said of any force: as another instance let us consider the force exerted by a constrained spring. If the force of the spring be estimated by the pressure it produces on a body holding it in its constrained position, the estimate is said to be statical. But if the force be estimated by the magnitude of the motion generated in a body which it causes to move, the estimate is dynamical.

10. *Weight* is the name given to the pressure which the attraction of the Earth causes a body to exert on another with which it is in contact. Since the gravitation of bodies downwards is unceasing, weight becomes a very useful means of estimating all statical forces. Thus the force of a constrained spring, may be measured by the weight which will just hold the spring in its constrained position. The force of attraction of a magnet may be measured by the weight it will sustain; and so of other forces.

STATICS.

CHAPTER I.

THE COMPOSITION AND EQUILIBRIUM OF FORCES ACTING UPON A MATERIAL PARTICLE.

11. When a single force acts upon a particle, it is clear, from the meaning we attach to the term force, that the particle cannot be at rest.

Experience shews us, however, that two forces may counteract each other's effects in producing motion. In such a case the forces, even though they originate from different causes, are said to be *equal*; since they are measured by their effects. Experience likewise shews us that three or more forces may be in equilibrium with each other, if their directions and magnitudes are properly adjusted. The object of the Science of Statics is to determine the relations which must exist among the forces, in magnitude, direction, and points of application, that they may produce equilibrium when acting on a body.

12. Now any given number of forces acting upon a particle must either be in equilibrium, or else produce an effect on the particle which some single but unknown force would produce. For if the forces be not in equilibrium, the particle will begin to move in some determinate curve line immediately the particle is abandoned to the action of the forces. It is clear, then, that a single force may be found of such a magnitude, that if it act along the tangent at the commencement of

the curve, and in a direction opposite to that in which the motion would take place, this force would prevent the motion, and would consequently be in equilibrium with the other forces which act upon the particle. If, then, we were to remove the original forces, and replace them by a single force, equal in magnitude to that described above, but acting in an opposite direction, the particle would still remain at rest. This force, which is equivalent in its effect to the combined effect of the original forces, is called their *resultant*, and the original forces are called the *components* of the resultant.

13. It will be necessary, then, to begin by deducing rules for the *composition of forces*; that is, for finding their resultant force. After we have determined these, it will be an easy matter to deduce the analytical relations which forces in equilibrium must satisfy, by equating the expression which gives the magnitude of their resultant to zero.

PROP. *To find the resultant of a given number of forces acting upon a particle in the same straight line: and to find the condition that they must satisfy, that they may be in equilibrium.*

14. When two or more forces act on a particle in the same direction, it is evident that the resulting force is equal to their sum, and acts in the same direction.

When two forces act in opposite directions on a particle, it is equally clear that their resultant force is equal to their difference, and acts in the direction of the greater component.

When several forces act in different directions, but in the same straight line, on a particle, the resultant of the forces acting in one direction equals the sum of these forces, and acts in the same direction: and so of the forces acting in the opposite direction. The resultant, therefore, of all the forces equals the difference of these sums, and acts in the direction of the greater.

If the forces acting in one direction are reckoned positive, and those in the opposite direction negative, then their resultant equals their algebraical sum; its sign determining the direction in which it acts.

15. In order that the forces may be in equilibrium, their resultant, and therefore their algebraical sum must equal zero.

PROP. *To find the resultant of two forces acting upon a particle not in the same straight line*.*

16. Let P and Q represent the magnitudes of the two forces: A the particle (fig. 1.), AP, AQ the directions in which

* The following proof of the Parallelogram of Forces given by M. Duchayla, is well worthy of attention for the simplicity of its demonstration.

1. To find the *direction* of the resultant of two forces acting upon a point.

When the forces are equal, it is clear that the direction of the resultant will *bisect* the angle between the directions of the forces: or, if we represent the forces in magnitude and direction by two lines drawn from the point where they act, the diagonal of the parallelogram described on these lines will be the direction of the resultant.

Let us assume that this is true for two unequal forces, p and m: and also for p and n. We can prove that it must then necessarily be true for two forces, p and $m+n$.

Let A (fig. 2.) be the point on which the forces p and m act, AB, AC their directions and proportional to them in magnitude: complete the parallelogram BC, and draw the diagonal AD: then by hypothesis, the resultant of p and m acts along AD.

Again, take CE in the same ratio to AC that n bears to m. Since it is an experimental fact that the point of application of a force may be transferred to any point of its direction, without disturbing the equilibrium, so long as the two points of application are invariably connected, we may suppose the force n to act at A or C: and therefore the forces p, m and n, in the lines AB, AC, and CE are the same as p and $m+n$ in the lines AB and AE.

Now, replace p and m by their resultant, and transfer its point of application from A to D: then resolve this force at D into two, parallel to AB and AC; these resolved parts must evidently be p and m, p acting in the direction DF, and m in the direction DG. Transfer these two forces, p to C and m to G.

But by the hypothesis, p and n acting at C have a resultant in the direction CG; let then p and n be replaced by their resultant, and transfer its point of application to G. But m acts at G.

Hence by this process we have, without disturbing the equilibrium, removed the forces p and $m+n$ which acted at A to the point G.

Therefore the resultant of p and $m+n$ acts in the direction of the diagonal AG, provided our hypothesis is correct.

But the hypothesis is correct for equal forces, as p, p, and therefore it is true for forces p, $2p$; consequently for p, $3p$, and so it is true for p, $r \cdot p$.

Hence it is true for p, $r \cdot p$ and p, $r \cdot p$, and consequently for $2p$, $r \cdot p$, and so forth; and it is finally true for $s \cdot p$ and $r \cdot p$, r and s being positive integers.

We have still to shew that the Proposition is true for *incommensurable* forces.

Let AB, AC (fig. 3.) represent two such forces. Complete the parallelogram BC. Then if their resultant do not act along AD, suppose it to act along AE; draw EF parallel to BD. Divide AB into a number of equal portions, each less than DE: mark

the forces act: α the angle between these directions. Let R represent the magnitude of the resultant, and suppose AR is the direction in which it acts, this line being in the same plane as AP, AQ, and lying between them: let θ be the angle between AP and AR. Draw a line P_2AQ_2 in the plane of the forces through the point A, and perpendicular to AR.

Now let us imagine that P is the resultant of two forces P_1 and P_2 acting in the directions AR, AP_2; and that Q is the resultant of two forces Q_1 and Q_2, acting in the directions AR and AQ_2. Then (Art. 14.)

$$\left.\begin{aligned} R &= P_1 + Q_1 \\ \text{and } 0 &= P_2 - Q_2 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

P_1 and P_2 are functions of P and θ; and Q_1 and Q_2 are similar functions of Q and $\alpha - \theta$. Since P, P_1, P_2 are merely the numerical ratios which the corresponding forces bear to the unit of force, and since the relation they bear to one another must manifestly be independent of the unit we choose to adopt, the relation between P and P_1 must be of the form

$$\frac{P_1}{P} = \text{function of } \theta = f(\theta) \text{ suppose};$$

$$\text{and } \therefore \frac{P_2}{P} = f\left(\frac{\pi}{2} - \theta\right).$$

We have, then, to determine the form of $f(\theta)$.

mark off from CD portions equal to these, and let G be the last division, this evidently falls between D and F; draw GK parallel to AC. Then two forces represented by AC, AG have a resultant in the direction AK, because they are commensurable: and this is nearer to AG than the resultant of the forces represented by AC, AB, which is absurd, since AB is greater than AG.

In the same manner we may shew that every direction besides AD leads to an absurdity, and therefore the resultant must act along AC, whether the forces be commensurable or incommensurable.

2. To find the *magnitude* of the resultant.

Let AB, AC be the directions of the given forces, AD that of their resultant: (fig. 4.) take AE opposite to AD, and of such a length as to represent the *magnitude* of the resultant. Then the forces represented by AB, AC, AE balance each other. Complete the parallelogram BE.

Hence AC is in the same straight line with AF: hence FD is a parallelogram: and therefore $AE = FB = AD$.

Or the resultant is represented in *magnitude* as well as in direction by the diagonal of the parallelogram.

We assume that a force can produce no effect in a direction perpendicular to its own direction.

This principle points out to us two general conditions which P_1 and P_2 must fulfil; for since P can produce no effect in a direction at right angles to its own, it follows that the sum of the resolved parts of P_1 and P_2 in a direction at right angles to that of P must equal zero; and the sum of their resolved parts in the direction of P must equal P.

These conditions furnish the equations

$$P_1 f\left(\frac{\pi}{2} - \theta\right) - P_2 f(\theta) = 0,$$

$$P_1 f(\theta) + P_2 f\left(\frac{\pi}{2} - \theta\right) = P.$$

Then, by putting for P_1 and P_2 their values $Pf(\theta)$ and $Pf\left(\frac{\pi}{2} - \theta\right)$, and dividing by P, we have the first equation identical, and the second gives

$$\{f(\theta)\}^2 + \{f\left(\frac{\pi}{2} - \theta\right)\}^2 = 1 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (2).$$

This is the equation which $f(\theta)$ is to satisfy; but it admits of an infinite variety of solutions, and we assume (as the result of experiments allows us) that P_1 bears a determinate ratio to P, or $f(\theta)$ has a determinate value, for every value of θ. There must consequently be some other conditions, arising from the nature of the question, which $f(\theta)$ must satisfy; and which are to be our guides in selecting the proper solution of the equation just deduced.

The direct process would be, first to obtain the general solution of our equation, and then to determine the values of the arbitrary quantities involved in the general solution by the particular values of $f(\theta)$ for particular values of θ given by the nature of our problem. We may, however, reverse the process, and first search for the particular values of $f(\theta)$, and use these as our guides in detecting the proper solution.

Now the principle which has hitherto guided us—viz. that a force produces no effect in a direction at right angles to its own—furnishes us with new conditions which point out which of the solutions of equation (2) is to be chosen.

For whenever the direction of P_1 is at right angles to the direction of P, then $P_1 = 0$ and $P_2 = P$ or $-P$; and whenever the direction of P_2 is at right angles to that of P, then $P_2 = 0$ and $P_1 = P$ or $-P$ as exhibited below;

$$\text{when } \theta = 0, \quad P_2 = 0, \quad P_1 = P; \quad \therefore f(0) = 1,$$

$$\theta = \frac{\pi}{2}, \quad P_1 = 0, \quad P_2 = P; \quad \therefore f\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right) = 0,$$

$$\theta = \pi, \quad P_2 = 0, \quad P_1 = -P; \quad \therefore f(\pi) = -1,$$

$$\theta = \frac{3\pi}{2}, \quad P_1 = 0, \quad P_2 = -P; \quad \therefore f\left(\frac{3\pi}{2}\right) = 0,$$

$$\theta = 2\pi, \quad P_2 = 0, \quad P_1 = P; \quad \therefore f(2\pi) = 1.$$

. . . . . .

and all these cases are comprised in the formula

$$f\left(n \cdot \frac{\pi}{2}\right) = \cos\left(n \cdot \frac{\pi}{2}\right) \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3),$$

n being an integer.

These equations (2) and (3) are the only conditions which $f(\theta)$ is to satisfy: and since, as we have observed, $f(\theta)$ must, from the nature of the question, have a determinate form, it follows that there is only one form of $f(\theta)$ which satisfies both equations (2) and (3); consequently if we can find one, this is the solution we are seeking.

Now equation (3) suggests $f(\theta) = \cos\theta$; this fully satisfies both (2) and (3), and is consequently the required solution.

Hence equations (1) become

$$R = P\cos\theta + Q\cos(\alpha - \theta)$$

$$0 = P\sin\theta - Q\sin(\alpha - \theta) \ldots\ldots (4);$$

adding the squares of these,

$$R^2 = P^2 + Q^2 + 2PQ\cos\alpha \ldots\ldots\ldots (5).$$

Equation (4) determines the *direction* of the resultant, and (5) its *magnitude*.

17. These equations point out the following geometrical construction, (fig. 1.)

Take AB, AC in the ratio of P to Q, through B draw BD parallel to AC and cutting AR in D: join CD. Then by Trigonometry,

$$BD = AB\frac{\sin\theta}{\sin(\alpha-\theta)} = AB\frac{Q}{P} \text{ by } (4) = AC$$

by the construction.

Hence BC is a parallelogram: and its diagonal is the *direction* in which the resultant of P and Q acts.

Again, by Trigonometry,

$$AD^2 = AB^2 + AC^2 + 2AB\,AC\cos\alpha.$$

Compare this with equation (5), and we see that the diagonal represents the *magnitude* of the resultant on the same scale that the sides of the parallelogram represent the forces P and Q.

This Proposition is, in consequence of the property just proved, called The Proposition of the *Parallelogram of Forces*.

18. Cor. 1. Any force acting on a particle may be replaced by two others, if the sides of a triangle, drawn parallel to the directions of the forces, have the same relative proportion that the forces have.

This is called the *resolution* of a force.

19. Cor. 2. When three forces acting on a particle are in equilibrium, they are respectively in the same proportion as the sines of the angles included by the directions of the other two.

For if we refer to fig. 4, we have

$$P : Q : R :: AB : AC \text{ (or } BD) \quad AD$$

$$:: \sin ADB : \sin BAD : \sin ABD$$

$$:: \sin CAE : \sin BAE : \sin BAC.$$

PROP. *Three forces act upon a particle in directions making right angles with each other: required to find the magnitude and direction of their resultant.*

20. Let AB, AC, AD represent the three forces X, Y, Z in magnitude and direction: fig. 5.

Complete the parallelogram BC, and draw AE: then AE represents the resultant of X and Y in magnitude and direction, by Art. 17. Now the resultant of this force and Z, which are represented by AE, AD, is represented in magnitude and direction by AF, the diagonal of the parallelogram DE.

Hence the resultant of XYZ is represented in magnitude and direction by AF.

Let R be the magnitude of the resultant, and abc the angles the direction of R makes with those of XYZ.

Then, since $AF^2 = AE^2 + AD^2$

$$= AB^2 + AC^2 + AD^2;$$

$$\therefore R^2 = X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2.$$

$$\text{Also, } \cos a = \frac{AB}{AF} = \frac{X}{R},$$

$$\cos b = \frac{AC}{AF} = \frac{Y}{R},$$

$$\cos c = \frac{AD}{AF} = \frac{Z}{R}.$$

Whence the magnitude and direction of the resultant are determined.

21. COR. Any force R, the direction of which makes the angles abc with three rectangular axes fixed in space,

may be replaced by the three forces $R \cos a$, $R \cos b$, $R \cos c$, acting simultaneously on the particle on which R acts, and having their directions parallel to the axes of co-ordinates respectively.

PROP. *Any number of forces act upon a particle in any directions: required to find the magnitude and direction of their resultant.*

22. Let $PP_1 \ldots\ldots$ be the forces, and $\alpha\beta\gamma$, $\alpha_1\beta_1\gamma_1$, $\ldots\ldots$ the angles their directions make with three rectangular axes drawn through the proposed point.

Then the component parts of P in the directions of the axes are, by Art. 21,

$$P \cos \alpha, \quad P \cos \beta, \quad P \cos \gamma,$$

or X, Y, Z, suppose.

Resolving each of the other forces in the same way, we reduce the system to three forces, by adding those which act in the same lines (Art. 14.), we thus have

$$P \cos \alpha + P_1 \cos \alpha_1 + \ldots\ldots\ldots \text{ or } \Sigma . P \cos \alpha \text{ or } \Sigma . X,$$

$$P \cos \beta + P_1 \cos \beta_1 + \ldots\ldots\ldots \text{ or } \Sigma . P \cos \beta \text{ or } \Sigma . Y,$$

and $P \cos \gamma + P_1 \cos \gamma_1 + \ldots\ldots\ldots$ or $\Sigma . P \cos \gamma$ or $\Sigma . Z$,

acting in the directions of the axes of x, y and z.

The symbol Σ indicates that we are to take the sum of all the quantities in the system which are symmetrical with that before which it is placed.

If we call the resultant R, and the angles which the direction of R makes with the axes a, b, c, we have, by Art. 20.

$$R^2 = (\Sigma . X)^2 + (\Sigma . Y)^2 + (\Sigma . Z)^2,$$

$$\text{and } \cos a = \frac{\Sigma . X}{R}, \quad \cos b = \frac{\Sigma . Y}{R}, \quad \cos c = \frac{\Sigma . Z}{R},$$

to determine the resultant.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium when any number of forces act upon a material particle.*

23. When the forces are in equilibrium, we must have $R = 0$;

$$\therefore (\Sigma . X)^2 + (\Sigma . Y)^2 + (\Sigma . Z)^2 = 0;$$

$$\therefore \Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z = 0,$$

and these are the conditions among the forces, that they may be in equilibrium. It follows, then, that if a material particle at rest be acted on by forces whose intensities and directions satisfy these three equations it will remain at rest.

These conditions may be expressed under another form: and lead to a principle denominated the Principle of Virtual Velocities.

PROP. *To prove the Principle of Virtual Velocities when forces acting on a particle are in equilibrium.*

24. Let xyz be the co-ordinates to the point of application of the forces, and $x+\delta x$, $y+\delta y$, $z+\delta z$ the co-ordinates to a point near the former. Draw perpendiculars from this latter point upon the directions of the forces P, P_1...and let δr, δr_1...be the distances of these perpendiculars from the point xyz: hence

$$\delta r = \delta x . \cos \alpha + \delta y . \cos \beta + \delta z . \cos \gamma$$

$$\delta r_1 = \delta x . \cos \alpha_1 + \delta y . \cos \beta_1 + \delta z . \cos \gamma_1$$

. . . . . .

If then we multiply the equations

$$\Sigma . P \cos \alpha = 0, \quad \Sigma . P \cos \beta = 0, \quad \Sigma . P \cos \gamma = 0$$

by δx, δy, δz, and add the equations, bearing in mind that δx, δy, δz are independent of the forces, and may therefore be written inside the symbol Σ, we have

$$\Sigma . P (\delta x \cos \alpha + \delta y \cos \beta + \delta z \cos \gamma) = 0,$$

$$\text{or } \Sigma . P \delta r = 0,$$

which proves the following principle:—That if any number of forces acting upon a particle be in equilibrium, and the point of application be moved geometrically through any small space, then the sum of the products of the forces and the spaces described by the point of application relatively to the directions of the forces will vanish; these spaces being reckoned positive when drawn in the direction in which the force acts, and vice versâ.

This is termed the *Principle of Virtual Velocities*, since the spaces above mentioned measure the relative velocity of the geometric motion in the direction of the forces. We shall see in the next Chapter that this Principle is true for any system of forces.

CHAPTER II.

THE COMPOSITION AND EQUILIBRIUM OF FORCES ACTING ON A RIGID BODY.

---

25. A SOLID or fluid body is conceived to be an aggregation of indefinitely small material particles or molecules, which are held together by their mutual affinities. This appears to be a safe hypothesis, since experiments shew that any body is divisible into successively smaller and smaller portions without limit, if sufficient force be exerted to overcome the mutual action of the parts of the body.

26. By the term *rigid* we mean to express that the molecules of the body are held together in an invariable form; so that the intensity of the molecular forces is infinitely greater than that of the other forces which act upon the body. Were this not the case, the figure of the body would depend upon the forces which act upon it.

Now, in matter of fact, no body is perfectly rigid; every body yields more or less to the forces by which it is acted on. If, then, in any case this compressibility is of a sensible magnitude, we shall suppose that the body has assumed its figure of equilibrium, and then consider the points of application of the forces as a system of invariable form.

27. We are quite unacquainted at present with the laws according to which the molecules of a mass of matter act upon each other. In consequence of this, we must look for some principle which will enable us to calculate the effect of forces acting upon a rigid body, without bringing the molecular forces into the calculation.

And now we fall upon a case of the action of force totally different from anything we have yet met with. In considering

its action on a single particle, the force was supposed to act on the whole of the particle: but now we have to consider the effect of forces acting on individual particles of an assemblage held rigidly together by their mutual affinities. The force which acts upon any particle of the body must in some way have its effect propagated through the whole system of particles, in consequence of their invariable connexion. Sundry experiments have led philosophers to the following principle; which, as will be seen, exactly answers our purpose.

28. *When a force, acting in combination with others, holds a solid body in equilibrium, the equilibrium of the body will not be disturbed if we transfer the point of application of the force to any other point whatever in the line in which the force is acting.*

We shall commence with the simplest case of a rigid body acted on by forces, and so ascend to the most general.

PROP. *Two forces act upon a rigid body in the same plane but not at the same point: required to find their resultant.*

29. Let A, B (fig. 6.) be the points upon which the forces P and Q act: AP, BQ their directions: join AB, and produce PA, QB to cut each other in C, and let $\alpha\beta$ be the angles which AP and BQ make with AB produced: then, by Art. 28, we may suppose P and Q to act at C, the point C being rigidly connected with AB.

Take Ca, Cb along CA, CB, in the ratio of P to Q: and on these describe the parallelogram ab, and draw the diagonal Cd: and let it be produced to cut AB in D.

Then, by Art. 17, Cd represents the resultant of P and Q in magnitude and direction: let R be the resultant: then since

$$Cd^2 = Ca^2 + Cb^2 - 2\,Ca\,.\,Cb\cos(\alpha+\beta);$$

$$\therefore\ R^2 = P^2 + Q^2 - 2\,PQ\cos(\alpha+\beta),$$

this gives the *magnitude* of the resultant.

Let θ be the angle which the direction of R makes with AB: then

$$\frac{P}{Q} = \frac{Ca}{Cb} = \frac{Ca}{ad} = \frac{\sin Cda}{\sin aCd} = \frac{\sin DCB}{\sin DCA}$$

$$= \frac{\sin(\beta+\theta)}{\sin(\theta-\alpha)}$$

$$= \frac{\sin\beta + \cos\beta\tan\theta}{\tan\theta\cos\alpha - \sin\alpha};$$

$$\therefore \tan\theta\left\{\cos\alpha\frac{P}{Q} - \cos\beta\right\} = \sin\beta + \sin\alpha\frac{P}{Q},$$

$$\tan\theta = \frac{P\sin\alpha + Q\sin\beta}{P\cos\alpha - Q\cos\beta};$$

this determines the *direction* of the resultant.

Let $AD = x$: $AB = a$: then

$$\frac{a-x}{x} = \frac{DB}{DA} = \frac{DB}{DC}\cdot\frac{DC}{DA}$$

$$= \frac{\sin(\beta+\theta)}{\sin\beta}\cdot\frac{\sin\alpha}{\sin(\theta-\alpha)}$$

$$= \frac{\sin\alpha}{\sin\beta}\cdot\frac{P}{Q};$$

$$\therefore \frac{x}{a} = \frac{Q\sin\beta}{P\sin\alpha + Q\sin\beta},$$

this determines the point of application of the resultant.

30. Cor. 1. From the value of $\frac{a-x}{x}$ we obtain

$$\frac{P}{Q} = \frac{(a-x)\sin\beta}{x\sin\alpha}$$

$$= \frac{\text{perpendicular from } D \text{ on } Q\text{'s direction}}{\text{perpendicular from } D \text{ on } P\text{'s direction}}.$$

This shews us that if the point D be a fixed *fulcrum*, about which the body can turn, then, in order that P and Q may be in equilibrium about this fulcrum, in which case their resultant must pass through D, they must be inversely pro-

portional in magnitude to the perpendiculars drawn from the fulcrum on their directions.

31. Cor. 2. The product of a force and the distance of its direction from a given point is called *the moment of the force with respect to the point.*

If through the point an *axis* be drawn at right angles to the plane, passing through the point and the direction of the force, this product is called *the moment of the force with respect to the axis.*

Hence when P and Q, acting in the plane through D, are in equilibrium about D, we learn by Cor. 1. that their moments with respect to D, or the axis through D, must be equal and opposite.

If the two forces P and Q are parallel to each other, their directions will not meet when produced: and therefore the demonstration of the last article must not be received; but, by a simple artifice, we can easily remedy this difficulty.

Prop. *To find the resultant of two parallel forces acting in the same plane on a rigid body.*

32. Let P and Q be the forces; A, B (fig. 7.) their points of application: let P and Q act in the same direction, making angles α with AB. The state of equilibrium of the body will not be altered if we apply two equal and opposite forces, each equal to S, at the points A, B, acting in the line AB.

Then P and S acting at A, are equivalent to some force P' acting in some direction AP'; and Q and S acting at B, are equivalent to some force Q' acting in some direction BQ' inclined to AP.

Produce $P'A$, $Q'B$ to cut each other in C, and draw CD parallel to AP and BQ, and cutting AB in D.

Transfer P' and Q' to C, C being rigidly connected with AB, and resolve them along CD and parallel to AB: the latter parts will be S and S acting in opposite directions, and the sum of the former is $Q + P$.

Hence R, the resultant of P and Q, $= Q + P$. Also since the sides of the triangle ACD are parallel to the directions of the forces P, S, P'; (see Art. 18.)

$$\therefore \frac{P}{S} = \frac{CD}{DA},$$

and similarly, $$\frac{S}{Q} = \frac{DB}{CD};$$

$$\therefore \frac{P}{Q} = \frac{DB}{DA} = \frac{a-x}{x}$$

if $AB = a$ and $AD = x$;

$$\therefore \frac{x}{a} = \frac{Q}{Q+P},$$

this determines the point of application of the resultant Q.

33. If the force P act in a direction opposite to that of Q, (fig. 8.) a similar process will lead us to

$$R = Q - P,$$

$$\frac{x}{a} = \frac{Q}{Q-P},$$

but these are included in the formulæ of last article by putting $-P$ for P.

34. We also observe that the formulæ of Art. 29. comprehend those for parallel forces, although we thought it best not to assume this. We must put $\beta = \pi - \alpha$ or $2\pi - \alpha$ according as P and Q act in the same or opposite directions.

35. If $P = Q$ in Art. 33., then $R = 0$ and $x = \infty$, a result perfectly nugatory. It shews us that two equal and opposite parallel forces do not admit of a resultant. In fact the addition of the forces S, S still gives, in this case, two equal forces parallel and opposite in their directions.

Such a system of forces is called a *Couple:* the tendency of a couple is to *twist* the body upon which it acts.

We shall return to this subject, and investigate the laws of the composition and resolution of couples; since to these we shall hereafter reduce the composition and resolution of forces of every description acting upon a rigid body. Previous to this, however, we proceed to determine the resultant of any number of parallel forces.

PROP. *To find the resultant of any number of parallel forces acting upon a rigid body.*

36. Let the points of application of the forces be referred to a system of rectangular co-ordinate axes (fig. 9.) $m_1 m_2 \ldots\ldots$ the points of application: $x_1 y_1 z_1$, $x_2 y_2 z_2$, $\ldots\ldots$ their co-ordinates. $P_1 P_2 \ldots\ldots$ the forces acting at these points, those being reckoned positive which act in the direction of P_1 and those negative which act in the opposite direction. Join $m_1 m_2$: and take the point n_1 on $m_1 m_2$ such that

$$m_1 n_1 = \frac{P_2}{P_1 + P_2} \cdot m_1 m_2,$$

then n_1 is the point of application of the resultant of P_1 and P_2, that is, of $P_1 + P_2$: see Arts. 32, 33.

Draw $m_1 a$, $n_1 b$, $m_2 c$ perpendicular to the axis of x, and $m_1 de$ parallel to the axis of x, cutting $n_1 b$, $m_2 c$ in d and e.

Then, by similar triangles,

$$\frac{m_1 n_1}{m_1 m_2} = \frac{m_1 d}{m_1 e} = \frac{ab}{ac} = \frac{Ab - x_1}{x_2 - x_1};$$

$$\therefore\ Ab - x_1 = \frac{P_2}{P_1 + P_2} \cdot (x_2 - x_1);$$

$\therefore\ Ab$, the abscissa to n_1,

$$= \frac{P_1 x_1 + P_2 x_2}{P_1 + P_2}.$$

Then, supposing P_1 and P_2 to be replaced by $(P_1 + P_2)$ acting at n_1, the abscissa to the point of application of the resultant of $(P_1 + P_2)$, P_3

$$= \frac{(P_1 + P_2) \cdot Ab + P_3 \cdot x_3}{(P_1 + P_2) + P_3},$$

$$= \frac{P_1 x_1 + P_2 \cdot x_2 + P_3 \cdot x_3}{P_1 + P_2 + P_3}.$$

Let R be the resultant of all the forces, and $\bar{x}, \bar{y}, \bar{z}$ the co-ordinates to its point of application;

$$\therefore\ R = \Sigma . P_1,$$

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\Sigma . P_1 x_1}{\Sigma . P_1}.$$

Similarly $\bar{y} = \dfrac{\Sigma . P_1 y_1}{\Sigma . P_1}$, $\quad \bar{z} = \dfrac{\Sigma . P_1 z_1}{\Sigma . P_1}$.

These determine the magnitude and point of application of the resultant.

37. These co-ordinates are independent of the angle which the directions of the forces make with the co-ordinate axes. Hence if these directions be turned about the points of application of the forces, at the same time preserving their parallelism, the point of application of the resultant will not move.

For this reason that point is called the *centre of the parallel forces*.

38. A heavy body consists of an aggregation of material particles, each of which, in consequence of the Earth's attraction, tends towards the Earth's centre.

The weight, then, of a body may be considered as the resultant of the weights of the different elementary portions of the body acting in parallel and vertical lines.

In this case the centre of parallel forces is termed *the centre of gravity* of the body. The obvious property of this point is, that if it be fixed, the body will rest in any position; no forces but the body's weight being supposed to act.

39. The expression $P . x$ is denominated *the moment of the force P with respect to the plane yz*. This must be carefully distinguished from the moment of a force with respect to a point mentioned in Art. 31.

In consequence of the above definition, the equations for determining the position of the centre of parallel forces shew that the sum of the moments of any number of parallel forces with respect to any plane equals the moment of their resultant.

40. We shall now investigate the laws of composition of couples, since we shall hereafter reduce to these the composition of forces of every description acting on a rigid body.

We have already (Art. 35.) mentioned that by a *couple* we mean a system consisting of two equal parallel and opposite

forces acting on a body not on the same point. This system does not admit of a single resultant force, as we have shewn: but two or more couples acting upon a body may be replaced by a single couple: this we proceed to demonstrate, after proving some of the properties of couples.

41. DEFINITIONS. The *arm* of a couple is the distance between the directions of its forces.

The *moment* of a couple is the product of the force at either extremity and the arm: (see Art. 31).

The *axis* of a couple is a straight line perpendicular to the plane of the couple and proportional in length to the moment.

PROP. *The effect of a couple upon the equilibrium of a body is not altered, if its arm be turned through any angle about one extremity in the plane of the couple.*

42. Let the plane of the paper be the plane of the couple (fig. 10.) and AB the arm: AB' its new position: the forces P_1 P_2 are equal, and act on the arm AB.

At A and B' let the two pair of equal and opposite forces $P_3 P_5$, $P_4 P_6$, each $= P_1$ or P_2 be applied, acting perpendicular to AB': this will not affect the equilibrium.

Let BP_2, $B'P_3$ cut in C: join AC: AC manifestly bisects the angle BAB'.

Now P_2 and P_3 are equivalent to some force in direction CA,

P_1 and P_4 ..... same force ..... AC;

$\therefore$ P_1 P_2 P_3 P_4 are in equilibrium with each other;

therefore the remaining forces P_5, P_6 acting at $B'A$ produce the same effect as P_1 and P_2 acting on AB. Hence the proposition is true.

PROP. *The effect of a couple on the equilibrium of a body is not altered if we transfer the couple to any plane parallel to its own, the arm remaining parallel to itself.*

43. See fig. 11. AB the arm: $A'B'$ the new position parallel to AB. Join AB', $A'B$ bisecting each other in G.

At A' B' apply two equal and opposite forces each $= P_1$ or P_2: and let these forces be P_3 P_4 P_5 P_6: this will not alter the effect of the couple.

But P_1 and P_4 are equivalent to $2P_1$ acting at G in direction Ga,

and P_2 and P_3 ..... Gb.

Hence P_1 P_2 P_3 P_4 are in equilibrium with each other, and may be removed; therefore the remaining forces P_5 P_6, acting at A' and B' produce the same effect as P_1 and P_2 acting on AB.

Hence the proposition is true.

44. Cor. Combining these two propositions, we see that a couple may be any how transferred so long as its plane remains parallel to itself.

Prop. *The effect of a couple on a body at rest will not be altered if we replace it by another whose moment is the same: the plane remaining the same, and the arms being in the same line, and having a common extremity.*

45. Let AB be the arm, (fig. 12.): P, P the forces: and suppose $P = Q + R$: let $AB = a$: and make AC, a new arm, $= b$: at C apply two equal and opposite forces Q_1 Q_2 each $= Q$: this will not alter the effect of the couple.

Now R at A and Q_1 at C will balance $Q + R$ or P at B,

$$\text{if } AB : BC :: Q_1 : R \text{ (Art. 32.)},$$

$$\text{or if } AB : AC :: Q_1 : Q_1 + R = P,$$

$$\text{or if } Q \cdot b = P \cdot a,$$

we then have remaining the couple Q_1 Q_2 acting on the arm AC.

Hence the couple P, P acting on AB, may be replaced by the couple Q_1 Q acting on AC, if $Q \cdot b = P \cdot a$; that is, if their moments are the same.

Prop. *To find the resultant of any number of couples acting upon a body, the planes of the couples being parallel to each other.*

46. First suppose the couples all transferred to the same plane (Art. 43.): next let them all be transferred so as

to have their arms in the same straight line, and one extremity common (Art. 42.): and lastly let them all be replaced by others having the same arm (Art. 45).

Thus if P, Q, R, S, ... be the forces, and

a, b, c, d, ... be their arms,

we shall have replaced them by the following forces, (supposing a the length of the common arm)

$$P.\frac{a}{a}, \quad Q.\frac{b}{a}, \quad R.\frac{c}{a}, \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \text{ acting on the arm } a.$$

Hence their resultant will be a couple whose force

$$= P.\frac{a}{a} + Q.\frac{b}{a} + R.\frac{c}{a} + \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \text{ and arm} = a,$$

or whose moment $= P.a + Q.b + R.c + \ldots\ldots\ldots$

Hence the moment of the resultant couple is equal to the sum of the moments of the original couples.

If one of the couples, as (S, S), act in a direction opposite to the couple (P, P), then the force at each extremity of the arm of the resultant couple will be

$$P.\frac{a}{a} + Q.\frac{b}{a} + R.\frac{c}{a} - S.\frac{d}{a} + \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

and the moment of the resultant couple will be

$$P.a + Q.b + R.c - S.d + \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$

or the algebraical sum of the moments of the original couples; the moments of those couples which tend in the direction opposite to the couple (P, P) being reckoned negative.

PROP. *To find the resultant of two couples not acting in the same plane.*

47. Let the planes of the couples intersect in the line AB, which is perpendicular to the plane of the paper (fig. 13.), and let the couples be referred to the common arm AB, and let their forces, thus altered, be P and Q.

In the plane of the paper draw Aa, Ab perpendicular to the planes of the couples (P, P) and (Q, Q): and equal in length to their *axes*, (Art. 41).

Let R be the resultant of the forces P, Q at A; and P, Q at B.

Since AP, AQ are parallel to BP, BQ respectively, therefore AR is parallel to BR.

Hence the two couples are equivalent to the single couple (R, R) acting on the arm AB.

Draw Ac perpendicular to the plane of (R, R), and in the same proportion to Aa, Ab that the moment of the couple (R, R) has to those of (P, P), (Q, Q).

Then Ac is the *axis* of (R, R).

Now the three lines Aa, Ac, Ab make the same angles with each other that AP, AR, AQ make with each other; also they are in the same proportion in which

$$AB \cdot P, \quad AB \cdot R, \quad AB \cdot Q \text{ are,}$$

or in which P, R, Q are.

But R is the resultant of P and Q;

therefore Ac is the diagonal of the parallelogram on Aa, Ab (see Art. 17).

Hence if two straight lines, having a common extremity, represent the axes of two couples, that diagonal of the parallelogram described on these lines, which passes through their common extremity is equal in magnitude and direction to the axis of the resultant couple.

PROP. *To find the magnitude and position of the couple which is the resultant of three couples which act in planes at right angles to each other.*

48. Let AB, AC, AD be the axes of the given couples, (fig. 5). Complete the parallelogram CB: and draw AE the diagonal. Then AE is the axis of the couple which is the resultant of the two couples whose axes are AB, AC.

Complete the parallelogram DE, and draw AF the diagonal. Then AF is the axis of the couple which is the re-

sultant of the couples whose axes are AE, AD, or of those whose axes are AB, AC, AD.

$$\text{Now } AF^2 = AE^2 + AD^2$$

$$= AB^2 + AC^2 + AD^2.$$

Let G be the moment of the resultant couple, L, M, N those of the given couples;

$$\therefore G^2 = L^2 + M^2 + N^2;$$

and if λ, μ, ν be the angles the axis of the resultant makes with those of the components

$$\cos\lambda = \frac{AB}{AF} = \frac{L}{G}; \quad \cos\mu = \frac{M}{G}; \quad \cos\nu = \frac{N}{G}.$$

49. Cor. Hence conversely any couple may be replaced by three couples acting in planes at right angles to each other, their moments being

$$G\cos\lambda, \quad G\cos\mu, \quad G\cos\nu,$$

where G is the moment of the given couple, and λ, μ, ν the angles its axis makes with the axes of the three couples.

Prop. *To find the resultant of any number of forces acting on a rigid body in the same plane.*

50. Let the system be referred to any pair of rectangular co-ordinate axes Ax, Ay in the given plane: (fig. 14).

Let P, P_1, P_2, ... be the forces,

α, α_1, α_2, ... the angles which their directions make with the axis of x.

xy, x_1y_1, x_2y_2, ... the co-ordinates to their points of application.

Let B be the point of application of P: join BA: the points B and A are rigidly connected. At A apply two equal and opposite forces, each equal and parallel to P. This will not affect the equilibrium. Draw Ap perpendicular to PB produced if necessary.

Hence P acting at B is replaced by P acting at A, together with a couple (P, P) acting on the arm Ap, or a couple whose moment $= P \cdot Ap$, and tending to turn the body from the axis of x to the axis of y.

$$\text{Now } Ap = x \sin a - y \cos a.$$

Hence the moment of the couple (P, P)

$$= P \cdot (x \sin a - y \cos a).$$

The moments of those couples are reckoned positive that tend to turn the body from the axis of x to the axis of y: and those negative that tend the other way.

The other forces may be similarly replaced.

Hence our system is reduced to the forces

$$P,\ P_1,\ P_2 \ldots\ldots \text{ acting at } A$$

in directions parallel to those of the original forces; and the couples whose moments are

$$P \{x \sin a - y \cos a\},$$

$$P_1 \{x_1 \sin a_1 - y_1 \cos a_1\},$$

$$P_2 \{x_2 \sin a_2 - y_2 \cos a_2\},$$

$$\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$

acting in the plane of the paper.

Let R be the resultant of the forces acting at A, a the angle which R makes with the axis of x; G the moment of the resultant couple: then, by Art. 22,

$$R \cos a = \Sigma \cdot P \cos a,$$

$$R \sin a = \Sigma \cdot P \sin a,$$

and, by Art. 46, $G = \Sigma \cdot P (x \sin a - y \cos a)$,

and if $P \cos a = X$, and $P \sin a = Y$, these may be written

$$R^2 = (\Sigma \cdot X)^2 + (\Sigma \cdot Y)^2, \quad \tan a = \frac{\Sigma \cdot Y}{\Sigma \cdot X},$$

$$\text{and } G = \Sigma \cdot \{Y \cdot x - X \cdot y\}.$$

51. Let the arm of the resultant couple be turned in the plane of the forces and about its extremity A, till it is perpendicular to the direction of R. Art. 42: (fig. 15).

Let AR be the direction of R: $AB = a$, the arm of the resultant couple, and, consequently, $\frac{G}{a}$ the force at each extremity: let this $= R'$.

Hence the forces are all reduced to a force $R + R'$ acting at A in the direction AR, and R' acting at B in the direction BR', parallel to AR. The resultant of these is R, acting at a point C in the direction CR parallel to AR, the distance AC being $= \frac{R'}{R} AB$ (by Art. 32.) $= \frac{G}{R}$.

Wherefore the resultant of all the forces P, P_1, ... is a force R acting in the straight line whose equation is

$$y + AC \cos \alpha = \tan \alpha \, (x - AC \sin \alpha),$$

which simplified becomes

$$x \tan \alpha - y = \frac{AC}{\cos \alpha},$$

$$\text{or } x \sin \alpha - y \cos \alpha = AC,$$

$$\text{or } x \,.\, \Sigma \,.\, Y - y \,.\, \Sigma \,.\, X = G,$$

the *direction* in which R acts will be determined by the sign of $\tan \alpha$.

52. Cor. If it should happen that the forces are such that $R = 0$, then we are left with the couple whose moment is G, and there is not a single resultant force.

Prop. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of any number of forces acting on a rigid body in the same plane.*

53. We have shewn in the last Prop. that the resultant of any number of forces acting in the same plane on a rigid body equals a force R acting about the origin of co-ordinates, at a distance

$$= \frac{G}{R} \text{ where } R^2 = (\Sigma \,.\, X)^2 + (\Sigma \,.\, Y)^2,$$

$$\text{and } G = \Sigma \,.\, \{Yx - Xy\}.$$

Now when the forces are in equilibrium their resultant must vanish, therefore $R = 0$; also $G = 0$, since the distance $\frac{G}{R}$ must be indeterminate and not infinite; for if it were infinite, then the resultant of the forces would be a couple: see Art. 35.

Hence the conditions of equilibrium are

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0,$$
$$\text{and } \Sigma . \{Y . x - X . y\} = 0.$$

These may be written

$$\Sigma . P \cos \alpha = 0, \quad \Sigma . P \sin \alpha = 0,$$
$$\text{and } \Sigma . P (x \sin \alpha - y \cos \alpha) = 0.$$

PROP. *To find the two resultants of any number of forces acting upon a rigid body in any directions.*

54. Let the forces be referred to three rectangular axes Ax, Ay, Az; and suppose $PP_1P_2 \ldots$ are the forces, xyz, $x_1y_1z_1$, $x_2y_2z_2 \ldots$ the co-ordinates to their points of application, and $\alpha\beta\gamma$, $\alpha_1\beta_1\gamma_1$, $\alpha_2\beta_2\gamma_2 \ldots$ the angles their directions make with the axes: fig. 16.

Let m be the point of application of P, mP its direction $Ar = x$, $rn = y$, $nm = z$: An in the plane xy, also ns parallel to Ax.

Now P may be replaced by its three components

$$P \cos \alpha, \quad P \cos \beta, \quad P \cos \gamma, \text{ (or } X, \ Y, \ Z \text{ suppose)}$$

parallel to the axes, (Art. 21.)

Z produces the same effect if it be transferred to n. Now the equilibrium of the body will not be disturbed if we apply at A and also at r two opposite forces, each equal and parallel to Z. Then Z at m is equivalent to Z at A, and the two couples of which the moments are $Z . rn$ and $Z . Ar$ and the axes coincide respectively with the co-ordinate axes of x and y.

Hence Z at m is replaced by Z at A, and the two couples $Z . y$ and $-Z . x$ acting in the planes perpendicular to x and y

respectively: the moments of those couples which tend to turn the body from the axis of x to that of y about the axis of z, from y to z about x, and from z to x about y, are reckoned positive, and those in the opposite direction negative.

In the same manner we may substitute for Y and X.

Wherefore the force P acting at m may be replaced by X, Y, Z acting at A along the axes, together with the couples

$Z.y$ and $-Y.z$ in plane perpendicular to axis of x

$X.z$ and $-Z.x$ ..... y

$Y.x$ and $-X.y$ ..... z

or, by adding the moments of the couples acting in the same or parallel planes (Art. 46.)

P is replaced by X, Y, Z acting at A and the couples whose moments are

$Z.y - Y.z$ in plane perpendicular to axis of x

$X.z - Z.x$ ..... y

$Y.x - X.y$ ..... z.

By a similar resolution of all the forces, we shall have them replaced by the forces

$$\Sigma.X, \quad \Sigma.Y, \quad \Sigma.Z,$$

acting at A along the axes: and the couples

$\Sigma.\{Z.y - Y.z\} = L$ acting in the plane perpendicular to axis of x

$\Sigma.\{X.z - Z.x\} = M$ ..... y

$\Sigma.\{Y.x - X.y\} = N$ ..... z.

Let R be the resultant of the forces acting at A; a, b, c the angles its direction makes with the axes of co-ordinates: then (Art. 22.)

$$R^2 = \{\Sigma.X\}^2 + \{\Sigma.Y\}^2 + \{\Sigma.Z\}^2$$

$$\cos a = \frac{\Sigma.X}{R}, \quad \cos b = \frac{\Sigma.Y}{R}, \quad \cos c = \frac{\Sigma.Z}{R}.$$

Let G be the moment of the couple which is the resultant of the three couples above mentioned; λ, μ, ν the angles its axis makes with the axes of co-ordinates; then (Art. 48.)

$$G^2 = L^2 + M^2 + N^2,$$

$$\cos\lambda = \frac{L}{G}, \quad \cos\mu = \frac{M}{G}, \quad \cos\nu = \frac{N}{G}.$$

55. We may still further reduce the forces in the following manner.

Let the plane of the couple be turned round its axis till the projection of the direction of R on this plane is perpendicular to the arm. Let a be the length of the arm chosen arbitrarily. Then $\frac{G}{a}$ is the force at each extremity. Also let θ be the angle between the directions of R and the axis of G. Hence the whole force at A is =

$$\sqrt{R^2 + \frac{G^2}{a^2} + \frac{2RG}{a}\sin\theta}, \text{ (Art. 17.)}$$

where $\cos\theta = \cos a\cos\lambda + \cos b\cos\mu + \cos c\cos\nu$:

and the second force is $\frac{G}{a}$, acting at the other extremity of the arm.

These two forces cannot in general be reduced to a single force, since their directions do not meet.

In one case, viz., when the directions of these two forces meet, they can be reduced to a single force.

PROP. *To prove that* G *is the principal Moment of the Forces.*

56. The Principal Moment means the Moment of greatest Magnitude.

The quantities L, M, N are the sums of the moments of the forces with respect to the axes of x, y, z respectively (Art. 31), and they are equivalent to $\sqrt{L^2 + M^2 + N^2}$ $(= G)$,

the moment of the forces with respect to an axis which makes angles with the axes whose cosines are $\frac{L}{G}$, $\frac{M}{G}$, $\frac{N}{G}$.

Now G, the resultant moment of the forces, must be independent of the *directions* of the axes of co-ordinates*: but L, M, N depend upon these directions. But since $L^2 + M^2 + N^2 = G^2$, it shews that the greatest value of L is G, in which case $M = 0$ and $N = 0$. Consequently G is the principal moment about the given centre.

57. The values of L, M, N in the general case (Art. 54.) shew that the moment about an axis through the given centre, and making an angle ϕ with the axis of principal moments, equals $G \cos \phi$.

PROP. *To find the locus of the centres which give the least principal moments; the magnitude of these moments and the position of their axes.*

58. Let $x_1 y_1 z_1$ be the co-ordinates to a centre which gives a minimum principal moment: let $L_1 M_1 N_1 G_1$ be the values of $LMNG$ at that point: then these are found by putting $x - x_1$, $y - y_1$, $z - z_1$ for xyz in $LMNG$;

$$\therefore \; L_1 = L - y_1 \Sigma . Z + z_1 \Sigma . Y,$$

$$M_1 = M - z_1 \Sigma . X + x_1 \Sigma . Z,$$

$$N_1 = N - x_1 \Sigma . Y + y_1 \Sigma . X,$$

$$G_1^2 = L_1^2 + M_1^2 + N_1^2$$

* We might prove this in the following manner:

Let r, r', ... be the distances of the points of application of the forces P, P', ... from the origin of co-ordinates; that is, from the centre of moments: $l\,m\,n$, $l'\,m'\,n'$,..... the angles that r, r',..... make with the axes: also let (PP'), (Pr), ... represent the angles between straight lines drawn through the origin parallel to the directions of P and P', of P and r, and so on. Then

$$L = \Sigma . Pr (\cos m \cos \gamma - \cos n \cos \beta), \quad M = \Sigma . Pr (\cos n \cos \alpha - \cos l \cos \gamma),$$

$$N = \Sigma . Pr (\cos l \cos \beta - \cos m \cos \alpha);$$

$\therefore G^2 = L^2 + M^2 + N^2$ (after reduction)

$= \Sigma . P^2 r^2 \sin^2 (Pr) + 2\Sigma . PP' rr' \{ \cos (PP') \cos (rr') - \cos (Pr') \cos (P'r) \}$,

and this is independent of the *directions* of the axes of co-ordinates, though it does depend on the situation of the centre of moments.

$$= (L - y_1\Sigma . Z + z_1\Sigma . Y)^2 + (M - z_1\Sigma . X + x_1\Sigma . Z)^2$$
$$+ (N - x_1\Sigma . Y + y_1\Sigma . X)^2.$$

When this is a minimum, its three partial differential coefficients with respect to $x_1 y_1 z_1$ must vanish: hence three equations which may easily be written in the form

$$R^2 . x_1 = (x_1\Sigma . X + y_1\Sigma . Y + z_1\Sigma . Z)\,\Sigma . X + N\Sigma . Y - M\Sigma . Z,$$

$$R^2 . y_1 = (x_1\Sigma . X + y_1\Sigma . Y + z_1\Sigma . Z)\,\Sigma . Y + L\Sigma . Z - N\Sigma . X,$$

$$R^2 . z_1 = (x_1\Sigma . X + y_1\Sigma . Y + z_1\Sigma . Z)\,\Sigma . Z + M\Sigma . X - L\Sigma . Y.$$

If we multiply these respectively by $\Sigma . X$, $\Sigma . Y$, and $\Sigma . Z$, we find an identical equation: which shews that these three are equivalent to only two equations: and since they are simple equations in $x_1 y_1 z_1$, we learn that the centres of minimum principal moments lie in a straight line, any two of the above equations being the equations to this line.

It is evident that G_1 increases indefinitely with $x_1 y_1 z_1$, and therefore does not admit of a maximum value.

59. If we eliminate the second terms of the above equations, they become of the ordinary form of equations to a line: we have

$$L - y_1\Sigma . Z + z_1\Sigma . Y = \frac{(L\Sigma . X + M\Sigma . Y + N\Sigma . Z)\,\Sigma . X}{R^2},$$

$$M - z_1\Sigma . X + x_1\Sigma . Z = \frac{(L\Sigma . X + MZ . Y + N\Sigma . Z)\,\Sigma . Y}{R^2},$$

$$N - x_1\Sigma . Y + y_1\Sigma . X = \frac{(L\Sigma . X + M\Sigma . Y + N\Sigma . Z)\,\Sigma . X}{R^2}.$$

60. The minimum principal moment is

$$G_1 = \frac{L\Sigma . X + M\Sigma . Y + N\Sigma . Z}{R}.$$

61. Let $\alpha_1 \beta_1 \gamma_1$ be the angles which the axis of G_1 makes with lines parallel to the co-ordinate axes: then

$$\cos \alpha_1 = \frac{L_1}{G_1}, \quad \cos \beta_1 = \frac{M_1}{G_1}, \quad \cos \gamma_1 = \frac{N_1}{G_1};$$

and these become, by the above equations,

$$\cos \alpha_1 = \frac{\Sigma . X}{R}, \quad \cos \beta_1 = \frac{\Sigma . Y}{R}, \quad \cos \gamma_1 = \frac{\Sigma . Z}{R},$$

which shew that the axes of all the minima principal moments are parallel to each other, and to the direction of the resultant.

PROP. *Required to find the condition among the forces that they may have a single resultant.*

62. In order that this may be the case, it is clear that the force R must be in the plane of the couple G. For then the force resulting from the composition of R with one of the forces of the couple will, when produced, meet the other force of the couple, and, being compounded, will thus produce a single resultant. Now this condition is satisfied when the angle between R and the axis of G equals $90°$: or when the cosine of this angle equals zero: that is, when

$$\cos a \cos \lambda + \cos b \cos \mu + \cos c \cos \nu = 0;$$

therefore the condition is that

$$\frac{(\Sigma . X) L + (\Sigma . Y) M + (\Sigma . Z) N}{R . G} = 0,$$

$$\text{or } (\Sigma . X) L + (\Sigma . Y) M + (\Sigma . Z) N = 0,$$

unless R or G vanishes.

This is no condition when $R = 0$: that is, when $\Sigma . X = 0$, $\Sigma . Y = 0$, $\Sigma . Z = 0$, for the above equation is then identical.

In fact we then have only the couple G: which does not admit of a single resultant.

Also this is no condition when $G = 0$, for then $L = 0$, $M = 0$, $N = 0$, and the equation is again identical.

But in this case it is evident we have a single resultant R.

PROP. *When the forces are reducible to a single resultant, required the magnitude of this force and the equations to the line in which it acts.*

63. In this case the force R is in the plane of the couple of which the moment is G.

Let the arm of the couple be turned about its extremity A (see fig. 15), and in the plane of the couple, till it is perpendicular to the force R: and let $AB = a$ be the arm of the couple: then the force of the couple $(R') = \frac{G}{a}$; and the single resultant equals R acting at C in the direction CR parallel to AR, C being in BA, produced and determined by the equation

$$AC = \frac{R'}{R} AB = \frac{G}{R}.$$

64. We must now find the equations to the line in which this resultant acts.

Let $x_1 y_1 z_1$ be the co-ordinates to some point in this line; then, transferring the origin to this point, it is clear that the body must have no tendency to revolve about the origin.

Therefore the new values of $L M N$ when we put $x_1 + x$, $y_1 + y$, $z_1 + z$ for $x y z$ must $= 0$;

$$\therefore\ 0 = \Sigma . P . \{(y_1 + y) . \cos \gamma - (z_1 + z) \cos \beta\},$$

$$\text{or } 0 = L + y_1 \Sigma . Z - z_1 \Sigma . Y \ \ldots\ldots\ldots\ (1).$$

Similarly,

$$0 = M + z_1 \Sigma . X - x_1 \Sigma . Z \ \ldots\ldots\ldots\ (2),$$

$$0 = N + x_1 \Sigma . Y - y_1 \Sigma . X \ \ldots\ldots\ldots\ (3).$$

These three equations are equivalent to only two: for if we eliminate z_1 from (1) and (2), we have

$$0 = L\Sigma . X + M\Sigma . Y - x_1 \Sigma . Z . \Sigma . Y + y_1 \Sigma . Z . \Sigma . X.$$

But $L\Sigma . X + M\Sigma . Y + N\Sigma . Z = 0$, by Art. 62;

$$\therefore\ 0 = N + x_1 \Sigma . Y - y_1 \Sigma . X;$$

and therefore equation (3) is a necessary consequence of (1) and (2): wherefore any two of equations (1), (2), (3) are the equations to the line in which the single resultant acts.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of any number of forces acting upon a rigid body in any directions.*

65. We have shewn that the forces are in the general case reducible to two acting in different planes. These forces, then, must each vanish when there is equilibrium.

Hence (Art. 55.)

$$R^2 + \left(\frac{G}{a}\right)^2 + \frac{2RG}{a}\sin\theta = 0,$$

and $\frac{G}{a} = 0$, a being arbitrary;

$$\therefore\ R^2 = 0, \text{ and } G^2 = 0, \text{ or}$$

$$(\Sigma . X)^2 + (\Sigma . Y)^2 + (\Sigma . Z)^2 = 0 \text{ and } L^2 + M^2 + N^2 = 0,$$

and these lead to the six conditions

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . (Zy - Yz) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Xz - Zx) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Yx - Xy) = 0.$$

These may be thus written:

$$\Sigma . P\cos\alpha = 0, \quad \Sigma . P\cos\beta = 0, \quad \Sigma . P\cos\gamma = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . P(y\cos\gamma - z\cos\beta) = 0, \quad \Sigma . P(z\cos\alpha - x\cos\gamma) = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . P(x\cos\beta - y\cos\alpha) = 0.$$

66. If we derive the conditions of equilibrium from the case where the forces admit of a single resultant, we shall arrive at the same conclusion. For we must have the force $R = 0$, and also the distance $\frac{G}{R}$ at which it acts must be arbitrary and not necessarily infinite: hence also $G = 0$, and the conclusions are the same as before*.

* We have remarked in Art. 25, that the property of the divisibility of matter, leads us to the supposition that every body consists of an assemblage of material particles, or molecules, which are held together by their mutual attraction. Now we are totally unacquainted with the nature of these molecular forces; if, however, we assume the two hypotheses, that the action of any two molecules on each other is the same, and also that it acts in the line joining their centres, two suppositions which appear to be perfectly legitimate, then we shall be able to deduce the conditions of equilibrium of a rigid body from those of a single particle.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of a rigid body from those of a single molecule.*

Let

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of forces acting upon a rigid body when one point is fixed.*

67. Let the fixed point be taken as the origin of co-ordinates.

Let the body be referred to three rectangular co-ordinate axes: and let xyz be the co-ordinates to one of its constituent particles: XYZ the sums of the resolved parts parallel to the axes of the forces which act upon this particle, neglecting the molecular forces: P, P' ... the molecular forces acting on this particle; $\alpha\beta\gamma$, $\alpha'\beta'\gamma'$, ... the angles their respective directions make with the three axes of co-ordinates.

Then we may suppose the rest of the body to be removed, and this particle held in equilibrium by the above forces. Hence by Art. 23.

$$\left.\begin{aligned} X + P\cos\alpha + P'\cos\alpha' + \ldots\ldots = 0 \\ Y + P\cos\beta + P'\cos\beta' + \ldots\ldots = 0 \\ Z + P\cos\gamma + P'\cos\gamma' + \ldots\ldots = 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \ldots\ldots (a).$$

We shall have a similar system of equations for each particle in the body: if there be n particles, we shall have $3n$ equations. These $3n$ equations will be connected one with another, since any molecular force which enters into one system of equations must enter into a second system; this is in consequence of the *mutual* action of the molecules.

There are two considerations which will enable us to deduce from these $3n$ equations, *six* equations of condition, independent of the molecular forces. These will be the equations which the other forces must satisfy, in order that the equilibrium may be established.

The first consideration is this, that the molecular actions are *mutual*; and that, consequently, if $P\cos\alpha$ represent the resolved part parallel to the axis of x of any one of the molecular forces involved in the $3n$ equations, we shall likewise meet with the term $-P\cos\alpha$ in another of those equations which have reference to the axis of x. Consequently, if we add all those equations together which have reference to the same axis, we have the three following equations of condition independent of the molecular forces

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \qquad \Sigma . Y = 0, \qquad \Sigma . Z = 0.$$

The second consideration is this:—that the straight lines joining the different particles are the directions in which the molecular forces act.

Thus let P be the molecular action between the particles whose co-ordinates are (xyz) and $(x_1 y_1 z_1)$:

$$\begin{aligned} &P\cos\alpha, \qquad P\cos\beta, \qquad P\cos\gamma, \\ &-P\cos\alpha, \qquad -P\cos\beta, \qquad -P\cos\gamma, \end{aligned}$$

the corresponding resolved parts of P for the two particles.

Then $$\cos\alpha = \frac{x_1 - x}{\sqrt{(x_1 - x)^2 + (y_1 - y)^2 + (z_1 - z)^2}},$$

$$\cos\beta = \frac{y_1 - y}{\sqrt{(x_1 - x)^2 + (y_1 - y)^2 + (z_1 - z)^2}},$$

$$\cos\gamma = \frac{z_1 - z}{\sqrt{(x_1 - x)^2 + (y_1 - y)^2 + (z_1 - z)^2}}.$$

These

Now the action of the forces on the body will produce a pressure on the fixed point, and this will act in some definite direction.

Let $X'Y'Z'$ be the resolved parts of this pressure parallel to the axes.

If then we consider the forces $-X'$, $-Y'$, $-Z'$ in connexion with the given forces, we may suppose the body to be free, and the equations of equilibrium give

$$\Sigma . X - X' = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y - Y' = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z - Z' = 0,$$

$$L = 0, \quad M = 0, \quad N = 0.$$

These enable us to obtain three more equations free from molecular forces: for if we multiply the first and second of equations (α) by y and x respectively, and then subtract them, we have

$$Yx - Xy + \ldots\ldots + P\{x\cos\beta - y\cos\alpha\} + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$

and by the same process, we obtain from the system of equations which refer to the particle $(x_1 y_1 z_1)$,

$$Y_1 x_1 - X_1 y_1 + \ldots\ldots - P\{x_1\cos\beta - y_1\cos\alpha\} + \ldots\ldots = 0.$$

But the values of $\cos\alpha$ and $\cos\beta$, given above, lead to the condition

$$(x_1 - x)\cos\beta - (y_1 - y)\cos\alpha = 0.$$

Wherefore the equation

$$\left.\begin{array}{l} Y . x \quad - X . y + \ldots\ldots \\ + Y_1 . x_1 - X_1 y_1 + \ldots\ldots \end{array}\right\} = 0,$$

will not involve P, the molecular action between the particles whose co-ordinates are xyz and $x_1 y_1 z_1$, respectively.

It follows readily from what we have shewn, that if we form all the equations

$$Y_2 . x_2 - X_3 . y_3 + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$
$$Y_3 . x_3 - X_3 . y_3 + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$
$$\ldots\ldots$$

and add them to those above, we shall have a final equation

$$\Sigma . (Y . x - X . y) = 0,$$

independent of the molecular forces.

In like manner we should obtain

$$\Sigma . (X . z - Z . x) = 0,$$
$$\Sigma . (Z . y - Y . z) = 0.$$

These six equations are the only conditions which can be obtained independent of the molecular forces: they must be satisfied by the forces which hold in equilibrium the assemblage of molecules, whatever be the laws of their molecular action.

Now in the case of a *rigid* body, the molecular forces are supposed to be themselves in equilibrium independently of the extraneous forces; hence the above six equations express the conditions of equilibrium of a rigid body.

The first three equations give the resolved parts of the pressure on the fixed point: and the last three are the only conditions to be satisfied by the given forces.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of a body which has two points in it fixed.*

68. Let the axis of x pass through the two fixed points: and let the distances of the points from the origin be x' and x''. Also let $X'Y'Z'$, $X''Y''Z''$ be the resolved parts of the pressures on these points.

Then, as in the last Prop. the equations of equilibrium will be

$$\Sigma . X - X' - X'' = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y - Y' - Y'' = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z - Z' - Z'' = 0,$$

$$L - Y' . x' - Y'' . x'' = 0, \quad M + X' . x' + X'' x'' = 0,$$

$$N = 0.$$

The first, second, fourth and fifth of these equations will determine $X'X''Y'Y''$: and the third equation gives $Z' + Z''$, shewing that the pressures on the fixed points in the direction of the line joining them are indeterminate, being connected by one equation only.

The last is the only condition of equilibrium, viz. $N = 0$.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of a rigid body resting on a plane.*

69. Let this plane be the plane of xy: and let $x'y'$ be the co-ordinates to one of the points of contact, R' the pressure which the body exerts against the plane at that point. Then the force $-R'$, and similar forces for the other points of contact, taken in connection with the given forces ought to satisfy the equations of equilibrium.

Hence $\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z - \Sigma . R' = 0,$

$$L + \Sigma . R'y' = 0, \quad M - \Sigma . R' x' = 0, \quad N = 0.$$

If only one point be in contact with the plane, then the third equation gives the pressure, and we have five equations of condition,

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad L + y' \Sigma . Z = 0,$$
$$M - x' \Sigma . Z = 0, \quad N = 0.$$

If two points be in contact, then

$$R'y' + R''y'' = -L, \quad R'x' + R''x'' = M,$$

give $R' = -\dfrac{Lx'' + My''}{y'x'' - x'y''}, \quad R'' = \dfrac{Lx' - My'}{y'x'' - x'y''},$

and the equations of condition are

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z + \frac{L(x'' - x') + M(y'' + y')}{y'x'' - x'y''} = 0,$$

and $N = 0.$

If three points be in contact, then the pressures are determined from the equations

$$\left.\begin{aligned} R' + R'' + R''' &= \Sigma . Z \\ R'y' + R''y'' + R'''y''' &= -L \\ R'x' + R''x'' + R'''x''' &= M \end{aligned}\right\}$$

and the conditions of equilibrium are

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad N = 0.$$

If more than three points are in contact, then the pressures are indeterminate, since they are connected by only three equations: but the conditions of equilibrium are still

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad N = 0.$$

CHAPTER III.

THE EQUILIBRIUM OF A SYSTEM OF RIGID BODIES.

---

70. In order to obtain the conditions of equilibrium of two or more rigid bodies connected together in any way whatever, we must substitute unknown forces in the place of the mutual actions at the points of connexion, and then write down the equations of equilibrium of each body. These systems of equations will be connected together, since a force depending on the mutual actions of any two of the bodies must enter *both* the systems of equations, which correspond to those bodies.

Prop. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of a system of bodies acted on by given forces.*

71. Let any one of the bodies A be acted on by the given forces $X_1\ Y_1\ Z_1$, ... at the points $(x_1\ y_1\ z_1)$, ... also suppose that in consequence of the connexion of the system that a mutual force P acts between the bodies A and B, making angles $\alpha\ \beta\ \gamma$ with the axes: and let $x_1'y_1'z_1'$ be its point of application in A, and $x_2'y_2'z_2'$ the point of application in B.

Now if we suppose the force P to act on A and analogous forces for all the other mutual actions arising from the connexion of the system, the body A may be supposed to be in equilibrium under the action of these forces and the forces $X_1\ Y_1\ Z_1$ ..... Hence, by Art. 65,

$$\Sigma . X_1 + P\cos\alpha + \ldots\ldots = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y_1 + P\cos\beta + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . Z_1 + P\cos\gamma + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . (Z_1 y_1 - Y_1 z_1) + P(y_1'\cos\gamma - z_1'\cos\beta) + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . (X_1 z_1 - Z_1 x_1) + P (z_1' \cos \alpha - x_1' \cos \gamma) + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$
$$\Sigma . (Y_1 x_1 - X_1 y_1) + P (x_1' \cos \beta - y_1' \cos \alpha) + \ldots\ldots = 0.$$

In the same manner for the body B,

$$\Sigma . X_2 - P \cos \alpha + \ldots\ldots = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y_2 - P \cos \beta + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$
$$\Sigma . Z_2 - P \cos \gamma + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$
$$\Sigma . (Z_2 y_2 - Y_2 z_2) - P (y_2' \cos \gamma - z_2' \cos \beta) + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$
$$\Sigma . (X_2 z_2 - Z_2 x_2) - P (z_2' \cos \alpha - x_2' \cos \gamma) + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$
$$\Sigma . (Y_2 x_2 - X_2 y_2) - P (x_2' \cos \beta - y_2' \cos \alpha) + \ldots\ldots = 0.$$

If we add the second set of equations to the first set, each to each, we shall have six equations free from P: for P evidently vanishes from the first three; and it enters the fourth in the form $P \{(y_1' - y_2') \cos \gamma - (z_1' - z_2') \cos \beta\}$: and this vanishes when the bodies are in contact, because then $y_1' = y_2'$ and $z_1' = z_2'$: also it vanishes when the bodies are not in contact, because then P must act in the line passing through the points $(x_1' y_1' z_1')$, $(x_2' y_2' z_2')$; and then, r being the distance between these points,

$$r \cos \gamma = z_1' - z_2', \quad r \cos \beta = y_1' - y_2';$$
$$\therefore (y_1' - y_2') \cos \gamma - (z_1' - z_2') \cos \beta = 0.$$

and in the same way P disappears from the fifth and sixth equations.

Hence the six final equations are free from P: and, by adding together the equations referring to all the bodies, each to each, we shall have finally

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z = 0,$$
$$\Sigma . (Zy - Yz) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Xz - Zx) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Yx - Xy) = 0,$$

free from all the mutual actions of the bodies of the system.

We might have been led to this conclusion by remembering that the equilibrium of the system would not be disturbed by supposing the bodies, when at rest, to become united rigidly at the points of mutual action, and so considering the system as one rigid body.

PROP. *To prove that the Principle of Virtual Velocities is true of any system of forces which keep any material system in equilibrium.*

72. We shall first enunciate this Principle.

Suppose a material system is held in equilibrium by the action of a system of forces: suppose the points of application of the forces are geometrically moved through very small spaces in a manner consistent with the connexion of the parts of the system one with another. Suppose perpendiculars drawn from the new positions of the points upon the directions of the forces acting at the points in their positions of equilibrium. The distances of any perpendicular from the original point of application of the corresponding force is called the *virtual velocity of the point with respect to that force*, and is estimated positive or negative, according as the perpendicular falls on the side of the point towards which the force acts or the opposite side: then the Principle is this,

The algebraical sum of the products of each force of the system and the corresponding virtual velocity vanishes.

73. I. Suppose the system consists of only one rigid body.

We must cause the different particles to describe small spaces consistent with their connection; this will, in the case of a rigid body, be as well accomplished by supposing the co-ordinate axes to receive a slight alteration of position.

Suppose the axes to revolve round z through a small angle θ: then

$$x, y, z \text{ become } x + y\theta, \quad y - x\theta, \quad z,$$

neglecting small quantities of the second and higher orders.

Next, suppose these new axes to revolve through a small angle ϕ about the new axis of y: by these means the original values x, y, z become

$$(x + y\theta) - z\phi, \quad y - x\theta, \quad z + (x + y\theta)\,\phi,$$

$$\text{or } x + y\theta - z\phi, \quad y - x\theta, \quad z + x\phi.$$

Next, suppose the axes to revolve about the new axis of x, through a small angle ψ, and the co-ordinates become

$$x + y\theta - z\phi, \quad y - x\theta + z\psi, \quad z + x\phi - y\psi,$$

omitting small quantities of the second and higher orders.

Lastly, let the origin be shifted to a point whose co-ordinates are a, b, c: hence, if ∂x, ∂y, ∂z be the total changes in x, y, z produced by these changes of axes,

$$\partial x = a + y\theta - z\phi \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

$$\partial y = b + z\psi - x\theta \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2),$$

$$\partial z = c + x\phi - y\psi \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3).$$

Now multiply the equations of equilibrium

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . (Xy - Yx) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Zx - Xz) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Yz - Zy) = 0,$$

by a, b, c, θ, ϕ, ψ respectively, and add;

$$\therefore \Sigma . \{X(a + y\theta - z\phi) + Y(b + z\psi - x\theta) + Z(c + x\phi - y\psi)\} = 0;$$

and, consequently,

$$\Sigma . \{X\partial x + Y\partial y + Z\partial z\} = 0.$$

74. Let R be the force, of which XYZ are the components: a, b, c the angles which the direction of R makes with the axes;

$$\therefore X = R \cos a, \quad Y = R \cos b, \quad Z = R \cos c.$$

Also let ∂s be the small geometric displacement of the point of application of R, of which ∂x, ∂y, ∂z are the resolved parts: a', b', c' the angles ∂s makes with the axes: then

$$\partial x = \partial s . \cos a', \quad \partial y = \partial s . \cos b', \quad \partial z = \partial s . \cos c';$$

$$\therefore X\partial x + Y\partial y + Z\partial z = R\partial s (\cos a \cos a' + \cos b \cos b' + \cos c \cos c') = R\partial r$$

where ∂r is the resolved part of ∂s in the direction of R's action; that is, the virtual velocity of the point $(x\ y\ z)$ with respect to R.

Hence $\Sigma . R\partial r = 0$,

and the Principle of Virtual Velocities is true of a system of forces holding a rigid body in equilibrium

75. II. Suppose the system consists of any number of rigid bodies.

Let P be the mutual action of any two of the rigid bodies, whether by contact or by any means of connexion whatever: let $\alpha\,\beta\,\gamma$ be the angles which its direction makes with the axes, and let $x\,y\,z$, $x'\,y'\,z'$ be the co-ordinates to the points where the force P acts.

Now each of these bodies is in equilibrium under the action of its own forces, together with the force P, and the mutual actions it has with the other bodies of the system. Hence, by the first case,

$$\Sigma . R\delta r + P(\delta x \cos\alpha + \delta y \cos\beta + \delta z \cos\gamma) + \ldots = 0 \ldots (1);$$

also for the other body on which P acts,

$$\Sigma . R'\delta r' - P(\delta x' \cos\alpha + \delta y' \cos\beta + \delta z' \cos\gamma) + \ldots = 0 \ldots (2);$$

and P will not occur in any of the equations that have reference to the other bodies.

Adding equations (1) and (2), will give

$$\Sigma . R\delta r + \Sigma . R'\delta r' + P\{(\delta x - \delta x')\cos\alpha + (\delta y - \delta y')\cos\beta + (\delta z - \delta z')\cos\gamma\} + \ldots\ldots = 0.$$

Now in consequence of the geometric displacement of the system, suppose the points (xyz) and $(x'y'z')$ describe the small spaces δt and $\delta t'$, making respectively with the axes the angles m, m', m'' and n, n', n'': hence

$$\delta x = \delta t \cos m, \quad \delta y = \delta t \cos m', \quad \delta z = \delta t \cos m'',$$

$$\delta x' = \delta t' \cos n, \quad \delta y' = \delta t' \cos n', \quad \delta z' = \delta t' \cos n''.$$

Hence $(\delta x - \delta x')\cos\alpha + (\delta y - \delta y')\cos\beta + (\delta z - \delta z')\cos\gamma$

$= \delta t(\cos m \cos\alpha + \cos m' \cos\beta + \cos m'' \cos\gamma)$

$\quad - \delta t'(\cos n \cos\alpha + \cos n' \cos\beta + \cos n'' \cos\gamma)$

= resolved part of δt − resolved part of $\delta t'$ in direction of P

= sum of virtual veloc. of the pnts. (xyz), $(x'y'z')$ with resp. to P

$= \delta p + \delta p'$ suppose.

Wherefore if we form the equations analogous to equations (1) and (2) for all the bodies, and add them together, we shall have, supposing Σ now to extend through the whole system,

$$\Sigma . R\delta r + \Sigma . P(\delta p + \delta p') = 0.$$

and the Principle of Virtual Velocities is still true.

76. Cor. 1. If the force P be the mutual normal pressure of two surfaces in contact, then by giving the system such a geometric motion that these surfaces shall remain in contact, we shall cause P to disappear from this equation, because then

$$\delta p + \delta p' = 0.$$

77. Cor. 2. If the points (xyz) and $(x'y'z')$ are connected invariably, as for instance by an inextensible string, then P disappears from the equation of Virtual Velocities, since

$$\delta p + \delta p' = 0.$$

Prop. *When a system of rigid bodies is in equilibrium under the action of no forces but their weights, mutual forces, and pressures upon smooth immoveable surfaces, then the centre of gravity is in the lowest or highest position it can possibly attain by moving the system consistently with the connexion of its parts one with another.*

78. For let the axis of z be taken vertical: and let P_1, P_2,...be the vertical forces with which the different particles tend downwards by reason of the attraction of the Earth: $z_1 z_2$...the vertical ordinates to their points of application, $\bar{z}$ the vertical ordinate to the centre of gravity (see Art. 36.)

$$\therefore \bar{z} = \frac{P_1 z_1 + P_2 z_2 + P_3 z_3 + \ldots\ldots}{P_1 + P_2 + P_3 + \ldots\ldots}.$$

Now suppose the system to receive a slight displacement of its parts consistent with their connexion, and let $\delta z_1 \delta z_2 \delta z_3 \ldots$ be the vertical displacement of the points of application of $P_1 P_2 P_3 \ldots$(these are the virtual velocities of the points); and let $\bar{z}$ become $\bar{z} + \delta\bar{z}$;

$$\therefore \bar{z} + \delta\bar{z} = \frac{P_1 z_1 + P_2 z_2 + P_3 z_3 + \ldots\ldots}{P_1 + P_2 + P_3 + \ldots\ldots}$$

$$+\frac{P_1\delta x_1 + P_2\delta x_2 + P_3\delta x_3 + \ldots\ldots}{P_1 + P_2 + P_3 + \ldots\ldots};$$

$$\therefore\ \delta\bar{z} = \frac{P_1\delta x_1 + P_2\delta x_2 + P_3\delta x_3 + \ldots\ldots}{P_1 + P_2 + P_3 + \ldots\ldots}.$$

But by the principle of Virtual Velocities, the numerator of this fraction vanishes when there is equilibrium;

$$\therefore\ \delta\bar{z} = 0,$$

and $\bar{z}$ is a maximum or minimum: and the centre of gravity is in its highest or lowest position.

PROP. *To prove that when the centre of gravity has its lowest position the equilibrium is* stable, *and when it has its highest position the equilibrium is* unstable.

79. When a system of bodies is in equilibrium and an indefinitely small motion is given to the parts of the system so as to disturb the state of rest, the equilibrium is said to be *stable* or *unstable* according as the parts of the system do or do not return to their original positions of rest.

Now suppose the pressures (mentioned in the last Prop.) and the weight of the parts of the system are not in equilibrium. We shall prove that the centre of gravity cannot ascend, but must descend.

The resultant of the weights of the different parts of the system passes through the centre of gravity of the system. Let W be the weight of the whole system: and suppose the centre of gravity would move in the direction GG_1 (fig. 17.) making an angle θ with the vertical drawn downwards from G, if not prevented by a force P acting in the opposite direction and combining with the pressures to preserve equilibrium: $GG_1 = a$: then by Virtual Velocities,

$$W \cdot a\cos\theta - P \cdot a = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ \cos\theta = \frac{P}{W};$$

therefore $\cos\theta$ cannot be negative, or θ cannot lie between $\frac{\pi}{2}$ and $\frac{3\pi}{2}$; that is, G cannot move upwards but must move downwards when the system is not in equilibrium.

Now if the system be in equilibrium with its centre of gravity as high as possible, any slight disturbance must bring it lower; and since, by what we have just proved, it can never rise again, it follows that the equilibrium will be *unstable*. But if the equilibrium be such that the centre of gravity is in its lowest position, any disturbance must raise it higher; and since when left to itself it must fall, it follows that the centre of gravity will return to its former position, or the equilibrium is *stable*.

80. We have in the foregoing part of this work deduced the conditions of equilibrium of a material system from the simplest principles, commencing with the equilibrium of a single material particle: and we have from these conditions proved the Principle of Virtual Velocities. But we might have pursued an inverse course and commenced with proving the Principle of Virtual Velocities, and thence deducing the conditions of equilibrium of a material system.

PROP. *To prove the Principle of Virtual Velocities independently of the Parallelogram of Forces.*

81. The following is Lagrange's Proof of this Principle. Let us suppose that the forces are $P_1, P_2, P_3 \ldots$ and that they are commensurable and in the proportion of the numbers $n_1, n_2, n_3, \ldots$. let $A_1, A_2, A_3, \ldots$(fig. 18.) be their points of application: $A_1a_1, A_2a_2, A_3a_3, \ldots$ their directions.

Now imagine a_1 and b_1 to be two blocks consisting each of n_1 wheels of equal size, the wheels in the same block turning freely about the same axis: and let the centres of these blocks be in the straight line A_1a_1 produced. Let a_1 be connected with A_1 by an inextensible string: and suppose b_1 is firmly fixed to an immoveable beam B_1; and a_1, b_1 connected by an inextensible string passing round their wheels alternately, one end of the string being attached to a fixed point M any where in the plane of the first wheel of b_1 over which it passes; and

the other end being carried (as represented in the figure) to another system of blocks corresponding to the force P_2, each block having n_2 wheels; and so on: and lastly, let the string be passed over a simple wheel at C and be stretched by a weight W hanging by it.

The string is imagined to be perfectly flexible, and the wheels perfectly smooth: consequently the string will be stretched uniformly throughout, with a tension equal to the weight W. It is very evident, then, that since the wheels of a_1 and b_1 are all equal, the portions of string connecting them are parallel, and (they being $2n_1$ in number) the tension of A_1a_1 equals the weight $2n_1W$; in the same manner the tension of A_2a_2 is $2n_2W$; and so on.

Consequently by this imaginary contrivance the weight W produces forces at the points A_1A_2 ..... in the directions A_1a_1, A_2a_2 ..... and in the proportion of n_1n_2 ..... ; that is, in the proportion of P_1P_2 .....

But P_1P_2 ..... are in equilibrium: and since the unit of force may be any force, a system of forces *in the same proportion as* P_1P_2 ..... acting at the same points and in the same directions as P_1P_2 ..... will be in equilibrium.

Hence if we remove the forces P_1P_2 ..... and replace them in the manner described above, W will be at rest: and this will be the case of whatever magnitude W be, since by increasing or diminishing W, the forces P_1P_2 ..... are altered so as to retain their proportion unchanged.

Wherefore, however much we alter W, we cannot thereby cause the moveable block (a_1) of any of the systems (as a_1b_1) to move.

This shews that the relation of the magnitudes of the forces P_1P_2..., their directions, and points of application is such, that if we forcibly make the block a_1, or any other block, to approach or recede from the other block b_1 of the system by an indefinitely small space, then the other moveable blocks will so shift, that on the whole the length of string given off from the blocks which approach will exactly equal the length of string taken in by the blocks which separate. If this were not the case, this indefinitely small displacement of the system would give W an indefinitely small motion, and this would

shew conversely, that it is possible to move W, which (as we have proved) cannot be done, however much we alter W in magnitude.

Hence, if $\delta p_1\ \delta p_2$ ..... be the spaces through which $a_1\ a_2$ ..... move in consequence of the indefinitely small displacement, those being reckoned positive when the blocks approach, or string is given off, and the others negative. Then $n_1\delta p_1$, $n_2\delta p_2$, will be the lengths of string given off or taken on the wheels, according as they are positive or negative;

$$\therefore\ n_1\delta p_1 + n_2\delta p_2 + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$

$$\text{or}\ \ P_1\delta p_1 + P_2\delta p_2 + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$

which is the Principle of Virtual Velocities.

82. The displacements δp_1, δp_2 ..... must be taken indefinitely small, otherwise the equilibrium will be sensibly disturbed, and W will not remain at rest. In fact the best way of representing the principle is this; that when any part of the system is moved through a space less than any assignable quantity, then W will move through a small space which varies as the square or some higher power of the disturbance, so that it vanishes in the limit.

PROP. *To obtain the equations of equilibrium of a rigid body from the Principle of Virtual Velocities.*

83. By this principle we have $\Sigma . P\delta p = 0$. Let XYZ be the resolved parts of P: and δx, δy, δz the virtual velocities of the point (xyz) with respect to P;

$$\therefore\ \Sigma . (X\delta x + Y\delta y + Z\delta z) = 0.$$

Now, by Art. 73, we must put

$$\delta x = a + y\theta - z\phi,\quad \delta y = b + z\psi - x\theta,\quad \delta z = c + x\phi - y\psi,$$

in which a, b, c, θ, ϕ, ψ are arbitrary small quantities: hence

$$a\Sigma . X + b\Sigma . Y + c\Sigma . Z$$

$$+ \psi\Sigma . (Yz - Zy) + \phi\Sigma . (Zx - Xz) + \theta\Sigma . (Xy - Yx) = 0,$$

and because a, b, c, θ, ϕ, ψ are arbitrary,

$$\Sigma . X = 0,\quad \Sigma . Y = 0,\quad \Sigma . Z = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . (Yz - Zy) = 0,\quad \Sigma . (Zx - Xz) = 0,\quad \Sigma . (Xy - Yx) = 0,$$

which are the six equations of equilibrium deduced in Art. 65.

CHAPTER IV.

CENTRE OF GRAVITY.

84. It was shewn in Art. 37. that there is a point in every body such that, if the particles of the body be acted on by parallel forces and this point be fixed, the body will rest in whatever position it be placed.

85. Now the weight of a body may be considered as the resultant of the weights of the different elementary portions of the body acting in parallel and vertical lines. In this case the point above described, the centre of parallel forces, is called *the centre of gravity of the body*. We intend to devote the present Chapter to the determination of this point in bodies of various forms.

86. We shall first give a few geometrical calculations of the position of the centre of gravity.

Ex. 1. *To find the centre of gravity of a triangular figure of uniform thickness and density.*

Let ABC be one surface of the triangular figure: fig. 19. Bisect AC in D; join BD: draw adc parallel to ADC cutting BD in d. Then by similar triangles

$$ad : AD :: Bd : BD$$

$$\text{and } dc : DC :: Bd : BD$$

$$\therefore ad : AD :: dc : DC$$

$$\text{but } AD = DC; \quad \therefore ad = dc.$$

Hence BD bisects every line parallel to the side AC: and therefore each of these lines will balance on BD, and consequently the whole triangle will balance on BD: and therefore the centre of gravity must be in the line BD.

Bisect AB in E and join CE; let this cut BD in F. Then, as before, the centre of gravity must be in CE: but it must be in BD: and therefore F is the centre of gravity.

Join DE.

Then $\because\ AD = DC$ and $AE = EB$;

$\therefore\ DE$ is parallel to BC and $BC = 2\,.\,DE$,

and by similar triangles

$$\frac{DF}{DE} = \frac{BF}{BC};\quad \therefore\ DF = \tfrac{1}{2}\,BF;$$

$$\therefore\ DF = \tfrac{1}{3}\,DB.$$

Hence to find the centre of gravity of a triangle, bisect any side, join the point of bisection with the opposite angle, and the centre of gravity lies a third of the way up this line.

Ex. 2. *To find the centre of gravity of a pyramid on a triangular base.*

Let ABC be the base; V the vertex: fig 20, bisect AC in D; join BD, DV: take $DF = \frac{1}{3}\,.\,DB$, then F is the centre of gravity of ABC. Join FV: and draw abc parallel to ABC cutting VF in f: join bf; and produce it to meet DV in d.

Then by similar triangles, we easily see that $ad = dc$: also

$$\frac{bf}{BF} = \frac{Vf}{VF} = \frac{df}{DF}:\ \text{but}\ DF = \tfrac{1}{3}\,BF;$$

$$\therefore\ df = \tfrac{1}{3}\,bf;$$

therefore f is the centre of gravity of the triangle abc: and if we suppose the pyramid to be made up of an infinitely great number of infinitely thin triangular figures parallel to the base, each of these has its centre of gravity in VF. Hence the centre of gravity of the pyramid is in VF.

Again, take $DH = \frac{1}{3}\,DV$: join HB cutting VF in G. Then as before, the centre of gravity of the pyramid must be in BH: but it is in VF: hence G, the point of intersection of these lines, is the centre of gravity.

Join FH: then FH is parallel to VB:

$$\text{also } \because DF = \tfrac{1}{3} DB; \quad \therefore FH = \tfrac{1}{3} VB:$$

$$\text{and } \frac{FG}{FH} = \frac{VG}{VB} \text{ but } FH = \tfrac{1}{3} VB;$$

$$\therefore FG = \tfrac{1}{3} GV = \tfrac{1}{4} FV.$$

Hence the centre of gravity is found to be one-fourth of the way up the line joining the centre of gravity of the base with the vertex.

Ex. 3. *To find the centre of gravity of any pyramid having a plane base.*

Divide the base into triangles: if any part of the base is curvilinear, then suppose the curve to be divided into an indefinitely great number of indefinitely short straight lines. Join the vertex of the pyramid with the centres of gravity of all the triangles, and also with all their angles. Draw a plane parallel to the base at a distance from the base equal to one-fourth of the distance of the vertex from the base: then this plane cuts every line drawn from the vertex to the base in parts, having the same ratio 3 : 1; and therefore the triangular pyramids have their centres of gravity in this plane, and therefore the whole pyramid has its centre of gravity in this plane.

Again, join the vertex with the centre of gravity of the base: then every section of the pyramid parallel to the base will be similar to the base, and will have its centre of gravity in this line. Hence the whole pyramid has its centre of gravity in this line.

Wherefore the centre of gravity is one-fourth of the way up the line joining the centre of gravity of the base with the vertex.

Ex. 4. *To find the centre of gravity of the frustrum of a pyramid, formed by parallel planes.*

Let $ABCabc$ be the frustrum, fig. 20: G, g the centres of gravity of the pyramids $VABC$, $Vabc$: it is clear that the

centre of gravity of the frustrum must be in gG produced; at G' suppose.

Let $G'F = x$; $Ff = c$; $AB = a$, $ab = b$.

Now the smaller pyramid and the frustrum supposed to act at their centres of gravity are in equilibrium about G: hence by Art. 32.

$$\frac{GG'}{Gg} = \frac{\text{weight of smaller pyd.}}{\text{weight of frustrum}}$$

$$= \frac{\text{vol. of small pyd.}}{\text{vol. of large} - \text{vol. of small pyd.}} = \frac{b^3}{a^3 - b^3},$$

$$Gg = VG - Vg = \tfrac{3}{4}(VF - Vf) = \frac{3c}{4};$$

$$\therefore\ GG' = \frac{3c}{4}\,\frac{b^3}{a^3 - b^3}.$$

Also $GF = \frac{1}{4}VF = \frac{1}{4}(VF - Vf)\,\dfrac{a}{a-b}$ by similar figures,

$$= \frac{c}{4}\,\frac{a}{a-b};$$

$$\therefore\ FG' = FG - G'G = \frac{c}{4}\left\{\frac{a}{a-b} - \frac{3b^3}{a^3 - b^3}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{c}{4}\,\frac{a^2 + 2ab + 3b^2}{a^2 + ab + b^2}.$$

This is true of a frustrum of a pyramid on any base, a and b being homologous sides in the two ends.

We proceed now to the analytical calculations.

PROP. *To obtain formulæ for the calculation of the co-ordinates of the centre of gravity of a body.*

87. Let xyz be the rectangular co-ordinates to an elementary parallelopiped of the body, the mass of the element being dm: then if g be the constant ratio of the mass of a body to its weight, $g\,dm$ is the weight of this element: or the force with

which it presses downwards in a vertical line: $g dm . x$ is the moment of this force with respect to the plane of yz (see Art. 39.), and $\int . g x dm$ is the sum of the moments of the forces which the parts of the body exert downwards in vertical lines: also $\int g dm$ is the sum of the forces. Hence if $\bar{x}$ be that coordinate of the centre of gravity of the body which is parallel to the axis of x, (Art. 36.)

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int . g x dm}{\int . g dm} = \frac{\int . x dm}{\int . dm}.$$

Similarly, $\bar{y} = \dfrac{\int . y dm}{\int . dm}$, $\bar{z} = \dfrac{\int . z dm}{\int . dm}$,

the limits of integration being determined by the form of the body.

When the body is not bounded by continuous surfaces, these formulæ cannot be used, except in some particular cases, as we shall see when we come to apply them to examples. When these formulæ will not apply we must divide the body into distinct portions, of which the respective centres of gravity can be calculated by the above formulæ; and must finally find the centre of gravity of the whole body by considering these constituent portions as condensed, each into its centre of gravity, and so forming an assemblage of particles to which the formulæ of Art. 36. can be applied.

Ex. 1. *A straight rod of uniform thickness and density:* (fig. 21.)

AB the rod: P, Q two transverse sections, $AP = x$, $PQ = dx$, M the mass of the whole rod and l its length: then the mass of $PQ = M\dfrac{dx}{l}$;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^l . x dx}{\int_0^l . dx}, \text{ since } \frac{M}{l} \text{ divides out}$$

$$= \frac{\frac{1}{2} l^2}{l} = \tfrac{1}{2} l = AG.$$

Ex. 2. *A curved line of uniform density and thickness, the curvature lying in one plane:* (fig. 22.)

Let $AP = s$, $PQ = ds$;

the mass of $PQ = M\dfrac{ds}{l}$ and $ds = \sqrt{1 + \dfrac{dy^2}{dx^2}}\,dx$,

x and y being co-ordinates to P;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int x\,ds}{\int ds}, \quad \bar{y} = \frac{\int y\,ds}{\int ds}$$

between the proper limits. The two following examples are applications of these formulæ.

Ex. 3. *A quadrant of a circle:* (fig. 23.)

Here $y^2 = a^2 - x^2$, the centre B being origin: BA axis of x.

$$\frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{-x}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}; \qquad \frac{ds}{dx} = \frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}$$

the limiting values of x are 0 and $AB = a$;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a \dfrac{a x\,dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}}{\int_0^a \dfrac{a\,dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}} = \frac{a^2}{\frac{1}{2}\pi a} = \frac{2a}{\pi} = BH.$$

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\int_0^a \dfrac{a y\,dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}}{\int_0^a \dfrac{a\,dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}} = \frac{\int_0^a dx}{\int_0^a \dfrac{dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}} = \frac{2a}{\pi} = HG.$$

Ex. 4. *The arc of a semi-cycloid:* (fig. 23.)

The axis AB being the axis of x and the vertex A the origin,

$$y = a\ \text{vers.}^{-1}\frac{x}{a} + \sqrt{2ax - x^2}.$$

$$\frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{2a-x}{\sqrt{2ax-x^2}} = \sqrt{\frac{2a-x}{x}}, \quad \frac{ds}{dx} = \sqrt{\frac{2a}{x}},$$

the limits of x are 0 and AB or $2a$,

$$x = \frac{\int_0^{2a} x\sqrt{\frac{2a}{x}}\,dx}{\int_0^{2a}\sqrt{\frac{2a}{x}}\,dx} = \frac{2a}{3} = AH,$$

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\int_0^{2a} y\sqrt{\frac{2a}{x}}\,dx}{\int_0^{2a}\sqrt{\frac{2a}{x}}\,dx} = \frac{2x^{\frac{1}{2}}y - 2\int x^{\frac{1}{2}}\frac{dy}{dx}\,dx}{\int\frac{dx}{\sqrt{x}}}$$

between the proper limits

$$= \frac{(2a)^{\frac{1}{2}}\pi - 2\int_0^{2a}\sqrt{2a-x}\,dx}{2\sqrt{2a}} = \pi a - \frac{4a}{3} = HG.$$

Ex. 5. *A curve line of double curvature.*

In this case $ds = \sqrt{1 + \frac{dy^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2}}\,dx$, $x\,y\,z$ being co-ordinates to the variable extremity of s: this value of ds put in $\bar{x}\,\bar{y}\,\bar{z}$ will give the required co-ordinates.

Ex. 6. *Any portion of a helix, or the curve of the thread of a screw:* (fig. 24.)

The equations are $y = \sqrt{a^2 - x^2}$, $z = na\cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a}$;

$$\therefore \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{-x}{\sqrt{a^2-x^2}}, \quad \frac{dz}{dx} = \frac{-na}{\sqrt{a^2-x^2}};$$

$$\therefore 1 + \frac{dy^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} = \frac{a^2(4+n^2)}{a^2-x^2},$$

and the limits of x are a and x;

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int_a^x \frac{x\,dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}}{\int_a^x \frac{dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}} = \frac{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}{\cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a}},$$

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\int_a^x dx}{\int_a^x \frac{dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}} = \frac{a - x}{\cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a}},$$

$$\bar{z} = \frac{\int_a^x na \cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a} \frac{dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}}{\int_a^x \frac{dx}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}}} = \frac{na}{2} \cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a}.$$

Ex. 7. *A body of uniform thickness and density bounded by a plane curve and its ordinate.*

Let the plane parallel to the plane faces of the body and bisecting it be the plane of xy: the centre of gravity is evidently in this plane: M the mass of the body, and A its area: then the mass of an elementary portion of the area at the point P, of which the co-ordinates are xy, is $M\frac{dxdy}{A}$; and since $\frac{M}{A}$ divides both numerator and denominator, the co-ordinates of the centre of gravity become

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\iint x\,dx\,dy}{\iint dx\,dy}, \qquad \bar{y} = \frac{\iint y\,dx\,dy}{\iint dx\,dy}$$

between proper limits.

We shall sometimes find it convenient to use polar co-ordinates: (fig. 25.)

Let $AP = r$, $xAP = \theta$: dr, $rd\theta$ the sides of the elementary portion of the area at P; then $M\frac{rdrd\theta}{A}$ is the mass of the element at P: and $x = r\cos\theta$, $y = r\sin\theta$;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\iint r^2 \cos\theta\, dr\, d\theta}{\iint r\, dr\, d\theta}, \qquad \bar{y} = \frac{\iint r^2 \sin\theta\, dr\, d\theta}{\iint r\, dr\, d\theta},$$

between the proper limits: the following examples are applications of these; we shall sometimes use rectangular and sometimes polar co-ordinates.

Ex. 8. *Let the curve be the semi-parabola* AC, (fig. 23.)

$AM = x$, $MP = y$: $QM^2 = 4mx$, the equation to AC. Now x and y are independent variables, we may consequently integrate our expressions, first considering y variable and x constant, and then with regard to x. This admits of an easy explanation. Integrating our expressions on the supposition that x is constant and y variable is the same as calculating the expressions only for the elementary masses which lie in a *strip* of the area, like QM in the figure, in which PM or y is different for each element, but AM or x is the same: the limiting values of y in this integration will be $y = 0$ and $y = MQ = 2\sqrt{mx}$, and the result will therefore be a function of x only: then integrating this result with respect to x is the same as adding together the expressions for all the strips like QM, of which the area consists: the limits of x are 0 and AB or a;

$$\therefore \iint x\,dx\,dy \text{ between proper limits} = \int_0^a x\,(y + X)\,dx$$

$$(X \text{ a function of } x) = \int_0^a 2\sqrt{m}x^{\frac{3}{2}}dx = \frac{4}{5}\sqrt{m}a^{\frac{5}{2}},$$

$$\iint dx\,dy \text{ between limits} = \int_0^a (y + X')\,dx = \frac{4}{3}\sqrt{m}a^{\frac{3}{2}};$$

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{3a}{5} = AH,$$

$$\text{in like manner } \bar{y} = \frac{3\sqrt{ma}}{4} \text{ or } \frac{3\,BC}{8} = GH.$$

If we had taken the double area CAC', the limits of y would have been $y = -MQ' = -2\sqrt{mx}$, and $y = MQ = 2\sqrt{mx}$, and we should have found $\bar{x} = \frac{3a}{5} = AH$, $\bar{y} = 0$, and therefore H is the centre of gravity of the whole.

Ex. 9. *Let* CAC′ *be a circular area:* (fig. 23.)

$y^2 = 2ax - x^2$: and if we take a portion ACB, the limits of y are 0, and $\sqrt{2ax - x^2}$, and those of x are 0 and AB or a

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a \int_0^y x\,dx\,dy}{\int_0^x \int_0^y dx\,dy} = \frac{\int_0^a x\sqrt{2ax - x^2}\,dx}{\int_0^x \sqrt{2ax - x^2}\,dx}$$

$$= \frac{\int_0^a \frac{2ax^2 - x^3}{\sqrt{2ax^2 - x^3}}\,dx}{\int_0^a \frac{2ax - x^2}{\sqrt{2ax - x^2}}\,dx} = \frac{4a}{3\pi} = AH^*.$$

Also $\bar{y} = \dfrac{\int_0^a \int_0^y y\,dx\,dy}{\int_0^a \int_0^y dx\,dy} = \dfrac{\frac{1}{2}\int_0^a y^2\,dx}{\int_0^a y\,dx} = \dfrac{\frac{1}{2}\int_0^a (2ax - x^2)\,dx}{\int_0^a \sqrt{2ax - x^2}\,dx}$

$$= \frac{\frac{1}{2}(a^3 - \frac{1}{3}a^3)}{\frac{\pi}{4}a^2} = \frac{4a}{3\pi} = GH.$$

Ex. 10. *Let* CAC′ *be an ellipse.*

Then if we take the quadrant ACB, $AB = a$, $BC = b$,

$$\bar{x} = \frac{4a}{3\pi}, \qquad \bar{y} = \frac{4b}{3\pi}.$$

Ex. 11. *Let* CAC′ *be a cycloid:* $AB = 2a$.

$$\bar{x} = AH = \frac{7a}{6}, \qquad \bar{y} = HG = a\left(\frac{\pi}{2} - \frac{8}{9\pi}\right)$$

Ex. 12. *A triangle:* (fig. 26.)

Draw AD perpendicular to BC; A the origin, AD the axis of x: $DAB = \alpha$, $DAC = \beta\,(= A - \alpha)$, $AD = c$; $x \tan \alpha = y'$, $x \tan \beta = y''$, the limits of y;

* The general form is

$$\int_0^a \frac{x^n dx}{\sqrt{2ax - x^2}} = \frac{2n-1}{n}a \int_0^a \frac{x^{n-1}dx}{\sqrt{2ax - x^2}} \ldots \sqrt{2ax - x^2}.$$

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^e x^2 (\tan\alpha + \tan\beta)\, dx}{\int_0^e x (\tan\alpha + \tan\beta)\, dx} = \frac{2e}{3} = AH.$$

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\frac{1}{2}\int_0^e x^2 (\tan^2\alpha - \tan^2\beta)\, dx}{\int_0^e x (\tan\alpha + \tan\beta)\, dx} = \frac{e}{3}(\tan\alpha - \tan\beta) = HG.$$

$$\therefore AH = \tfrac{2}{3} AD, \quad GH = \tfrac{1}{3}(BD - CD),$$

and $\therefore \frac{2}{3} DE = GH;$

$$\therefore BD - CD = 2\,DE;$$

$$\therefore BD - DE = CD + DE;$$

and $BE = CE,$

and $AG = \frac{2}{3} AE,$ as in Ex. 1. Art. 86.

As an instance of the application of polar co-ordinates, we will take the following.

Ex. 13. *A semi-ellipse* CBC′: (fig. 25.)

Let H be its centre of gravity: $AP = r$, $BAP = \theta$.

In this case we must integrate first with respect to r and then with respect to θ; but not first with respect to θ and then with respect to r. For if we first integrate with respect to r, we take the sum of the elements in AQ, and the whole area can be divided into strips like AQ: but if we begin by integrating with respect to θ, we take the elements in an annular strip through P: and the area cannot be divided into strips described after the same law, hence we should be unable to integrate again with respect to r.

The limits of r are 0 and AQ or $\dfrac{b}{\sqrt{1 - e^2\cos^2\theta}}$, the limits of θ are $-\dfrac{\pi}{2}$ and $\dfrac{\pi}{2}$;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\iint r^2 \cos\theta\, d\theta\, dr}{\iint r\, d\theta\, dr} \text{ between these limits}$$

$$= \frac{2b}{3} \frac{\int_{-\alpha}^{\alpha} \dfrac{\cos\theta\, d\theta}{(1 - e^2\cos^2\theta)^{\frac{3}{2}}}}{\int_{-\alpha}^{\alpha} \dfrac{d\theta}{1 - e^2\cos^2\theta}}, \quad \alpha = \frac{\pi}{2}$$

$$= \frac{2b}{S} \frac{\int_{-a}^{a} \frac{d.\tan\theta}{(1-e^2+\tan^2\theta)^{\frac{3}{2}}}}{\int_{-a}^{a} \frac{d.\tan\theta}{1-e^2+\tan^2\theta}}, \quad a = \frac{\pi}{2}$$

$$= \frac{2b}{S} \frac{\frac{1}{1-e^2} \frac{\tan a}{\sqrt{1-e^2+\tan^2 a}}}{\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-e^2}} \tan^{-1} \frac{\tan a}{\sqrt{1-e^2}}} = \frac{2b}{S} \frac{1}{\frac{\pi}{2}\sqrt{1-e^2}} = \frac{4a}{3\pi}.$$

Ex. 14. *The sector of a circle*: (fig. 25.)

Let $BP'A$ be the sector: $\angle BAP' = a$.

It matters not in this example whether we integrate with respect to r first or θ first; since the area may be made up of either strips like AQ, or of annular strips like that passing through P.

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a \int_0^a r^2 \cos\theta d\theta dr}{\int_0^a \int_0^a r d\theta dr} = \frac{2a\int_0^a \cos\theta d\theta}{3\int_0^a d\theta} = \frac{2a(\sin a)}{3a},$$

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\int_0^a \int_0^a r^2 \sin\theta d\theta dr}{\int_0^a \int_0^a r d\theta dr} = \frac{2a\int_0^a \sin\theta d\theta}{3\int_0^a d\theta} = \frac{2a(1-\cos a)}{3a};$$

$$\therefore \angle GAB = \tan^{-1}\left(\frac{\bar{y}}{\bar{x}}\right) = \tan^{-1}\frac{1-\cos a}{\sin a} = \frac{a}{2},$$

$$AG = \sqrt{\bar{x}^2+\bar{y}^2} = \frac{2a}{3a}\sqrt{2-2\cos a} = \frac{4a\sin\frac{a}{2}}{3a}.$$

Ex. 15. *A surface of revolution*: (fig. 27.)

Let $AM = x$, $MP = y$; $MM' = dx$: through M and M' draw two planes at right angles to the axis of the figure: that is, the axis of x. Now every portion of the surface between these planes is equally distant from the axis, and therefore the centre of gravity of the surface $PQQ'P'$ is at M ultimately: let M be the mass of the whole surface (the thickness and density being uniform) and S the whole surface:

$$\therefore \text{ mass of the surface } PQQ'P' = M\frac{2\pi y ds}{S};$$

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a xy\frac{ds}{dx}dx}{\int_0^a y\frac{ds}{dx}dx} = AG, \quad AB = a.$$

It is evident that $\bar{y} = 0$.

Ex. 16. *The surface of a portion of a sphere.*

$$y^2 = 2ax - x^2, \quad \frac{ds}{dx} = \frac{a}{\sqrt{2ax - x^2}}$$

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^x ax\,dx}{\int_0^x a\,dx} = \frac{ax^2}{2ax} = \frac{x}{2} = AG.$$

Ex. 17. *The surface of a cone.*

$$y = ax, \quad \frac{ds}{dx} = \sqrt{1 + a^2};$$

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^x x^2 dx}{\int_0^x x\,dx} = \frac{2x}{3} = AG.$$

Ex. 18. *Let the body be any surface of uniform thickness and density:* (fig. 28.)

Let xyz be co-ordinates to any point of the surface: the area of a small portion of the surface at that point is

$$\sqrt{1 + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dy^2}}\,dx\,dy;$$

therefore mass of the corresponding element

$$= \frac{M}{S}\sqrt{1 + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dy^2}}\,dx\,dy;$$

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\iint x \sqrt{1 + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dy^2}}\, dx\, dy}{\iint \sqrt{1 + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dy^2}}\, dx\, dy}$$

between proper limits, and similar expressions for $\bar{y}$, $\bar{z}$.

Ex. 19. *The surface of an eighth part of a sphere.*

The origin being at the centre, $x^2 + y^2 + z^2 = a^2$ (fig. 28.)

$$\sqrt{1 + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dy^2}} = \frac{a}{z} = \frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2 - y^2}}.$$

We shall consider y to vary, x remaining constant: that is, we shall take all the elements in the strip QQ': hence the limits of y are 0 and $Q'M$ or $\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}$, which is obtained from the equation to the surface by putting $z = 0$: then the limits of x are 0 and AB or a;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a \int_0^{y'} \cdot \frac{x\, dx\, dy}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2 - y^2}}}{\int_0^a \int_0^{y'} \frac{dx\, dy}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2 - y^2}}}, \quad y' = \sqrt{a^2 - x^2}$$

$$= \frac{\int_0^a \cdot \frac{\pi}{2} x\, dx}{\int_0^a \cdot \frac{\pi}{2}\, dx} = \frac{a}{2},$$

in the same manner $\bar{y} = \frac{a}{2}$, $\bar{z} = \frac{a}{2}$.

Ex. 20. *Let the body be a solid formed by the revolution of a plane curve about the axis of* x: (fig. 27.)

The centre of gravity of the slice PQ' is evidently at M when the thickness of the slice is diminished indefinitely: and the mass of this slice $= \frac{M}{V} \pi y^2 dx$, V = whole volume;

$$\therefore\ \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^x xy^2\,dx}{\int_0^x y^2\,dx}.$$

Ex. 21. *Let the body be a hemisphere.*

$$y^2 = 2ax - x^2$$

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a (2ax^2 - x^3)\,dx}{\int_0^a (2ax - x^2)\,dx} = \frac{5a}{8}.$$

Ex. 22. *Let the body be a paraboloid.*

$$y^2 = 4mx$$

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^x x^2\,dx}{\int_0^x x\,dx} = \frac{2x}{3}.$$

Ex. 23. *The frustrum of a paraboloid.*

Let a and b be the radii of the larger and smaller ends: α and β the values of x measured from the vertex to the ends:

$$\text{then } \alpha = \frac{a^2}{4m},\quad \beta = \frac{b^2}{4m},$$

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\int_\beta^\alpha x^2\,dx}{\int_\beta^\alpha x\,dx} = \frac{2}{3}\frac{\alpha^3 - \beta^3}{\alpha^2 - \beta^2} = \frac{2}{3}\frac{\alpha^2 + \alpha\beta + \beta^2}{\alpha + \beta};$$

therefore the distance from smaller end

$$= \bar{x} - \beta = \frac{2\alpha^2 - \alpha\beta - \beta^2}{3(\alpha + \beta)}$$

$$= (\alpha - \beta)\frac{2\alpha + \beta}{3(\alpha + \beta)} = \frac{c}{3}\frac{2a^2 + b^2}{a^2 + b^2}$$

c = length of the frustrum.

Ex. 24. *Frustrum of a cone.*

$$\text{Distance from smaller end} = \frac{c}{4}\frac{b^2 + 2ab + 3a^2}{b^2 + ab + a^2},$$

as in Ex. 4. Art. 86.

Ex. 25. *Let the body be any solid.*

We shall first suppose the body referred to rectangular co-ordinates, as in fig. 29.

Let the body be divided into *slices*, like $Q'N''M$, by planes parallel to the plane yz: let these slices be divided into *prisms*, like QN, by planes parallel to the plane zx: and let these prisms be divided into *parallelopipeds*, like PP', by planes parallel to the plane xy. In this manner the body is divided into a number of elementary parallelopipeds: those at the extremities of the prisms will not be perfect; but when the distance of the cutting planes is diminished indefinitely, the sum of these imperfect portions vanishes.

Let $x\,y\,z$ be co-ordinates to P; dx, dy, dz the sides of the parallelopiped at P: then $dxdydz$ is the volume of this figure, and V being the volume and M the mass of the whole body, supposed homogeneous, the mass of the element at $P = \frac{M}{V}dxdydz$;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\iiint x\,dx\,dy\,dz}{\iiint dx\,dy\,dz}, \qquad \bar{y} = \frac{\iiint y\,dx\,dy\,dz}{\iiint dx\,dy\,dz},$$

$$\text{and } \bar{z} = \frac{\iiint z\,dx\,dy\,dz}{\iiint dx\,dy\,dz}.$$

between the proper limits.

We shall now suppose the body is referred to polar co-ordinates: as in fig. 30.

Let the body be divided into *slices*, such as $CN'NA$, by planes passing through AC: let these slices be divided into *pyramids* having their vertices in A, like AQ, by the rotation of rays like AQ about AC, preserving a constant inclination to AC during the rotation: lastly, let each of these pyramids be divided into *six-sided figures*, like PP', by planes perpendicular to its length. In this manner the body is divided into a number of six-sided figures which become parallelopipeds ultimately when the distance of the cutting planes is diminished indefinitely.

Let $CAP = \theta$, $AP = r$, $BAN = \varphi$,

therefore the sides of the figure at P are dr, $rd\theta$, $r\sin\theta d\phi$, and its volume ultimately equals the product of these

$$= r^2 \sin\theta \, dr d\theta d\phi.$$

Also $x = r\sin\theta\cos\phi$, $\quad y = r\sin\theta\sin\phi$, $\quad z = r\cos\theta$;

therefore, supposing the body homogeneous,

$$\bar{x} = \frac{\iiint r^3 \sin^2\theta\cos\phi \, dr d\theta d\phi}{\iiint r^2 \sin\theta \, dr d\theta d\phi},$$

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\iiint r^3 \sin^2\theta\sin\phi \, dr d\theta d\phi}{\iiint r^2 \sin\theta \, dr d\theta d\phi}.$$

$$\bar{z} = \frac{\iiint r^3 \sin\theta\cos\theta \, dr d\theta d\phi}{\iiint r^2 \sin\theta \, dr d\theta d\phi},$$

between the proper limits.

Ex. 26. *The eighth part of a sphere:* (fig. 29).

Now xyz, being co-ordinates to any point P in the body, are independent variables: we may therefore integrate with respect to z, considering x and y not to vary: that is the same as taking all the elements of the mass in a given prism QN, since although z or PN is different for each element, yet x and y remain the same: the limiting values of z are 0 and $QN = \sqrt{a^2 - x^2 - y^2}$ ($= z'$ suppose) obtained from the equation to the surface. This integration with respect to z between limits will leave a result a function of x and y without z. We shall then integrate with respect to y, considering x constant; this is the same as taking all the prisms in the same slice as $Q'N''$; since, although MN or y is different for each prism, yet AM or x is the same. The limits of y are 0 and MN' or $\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}$ ($= y'$ suppose) obtained from the equation to the line BN'. We shall finally integrate with respect to x from $x = 0$ to $x = AB$ or a, which is the same as taking all the slices, and therefore the whole body;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a\int_0^{y'}\int_0^{z'} x\,dx\,dy\,dz}{\int_0^a\int_0^{y'}\int_0^{z'} dx\,dy\,dz} = \frac{\int_0^a\int_0^{y'} x\sqrt{a^2 - x^2 - y^2}\,dx\,dy}{\int_0^a\int_0^{y'}\sqrt{a^2 - x^2 - y^2}\,dx\,dy}$$

$$= \frac{\int_0^a \frac{\pi}{4} x\,(a^2 - x^2)\,dx}{\int_0^a \frac{\pi}{4}\,(a^2 - x^2)\,dx} = \frac{\frac{1}{2}a^4 - \frac{1}{4}a^4}{a^3 - \frac{1}{3}a^3} = \frac{3a}{8};$$

in like manner we shall find $\bar{y} = \frac{3a}{8}$, $\bar{z} = \frac{3a}{8}$.

Ex. 27. *The same as last example, but referred to polar co-ordinates:* (fig. 30.)

We shall integrate first with respect to r, then θ, and lastly ϕ. The limits of r are 0 and AQ or a; those of θ are 0 and $\frac{\pi}{2}$; those of ϕ are 0 and $\frac{\pi}{2}$;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_0^a \int_0^a \int_0^a r^3 \sin^2\theta \cos\phi\, d\phi\, d\theta\, dr}{\int_0^a \int_0^a \int_0^a r^2 \sin\theta\, d\phi\, d\theta\, dr}, \quad a = \frac{\pi}{2}$$

$$= \frac{3a}{4} \frac{\int_0^a \int_0^a \sin^2\theta \cos\phi\, d\phi\, d\theta}{\int_0^a \int_0^a \sin\theta\, d\phi\, d\theta}$$

$$= \frac{3a}{8} \frac{\int_0^a \cdot \frac{\pi}{2} \cos\phi\, d\phi}{\int_0^a d\phi} = \frac{3a}{8};$$

So also $\bar{y} = \frac{3a}{8}$, $\bar{z} = \frac{3a}{8}$.

Ex. 28. *A hemisphere in which the density varies as the* n^{th} *power of the distance from the centre.*

We shall use polar co-ordinates.

The volume of an element at $P = r^2 \sin\theta\, d\phi\, d\theta\, dr$; and if ρ be the density at a distance a the density at a distance $r = \rho \left(\frac{r}{a}\right)^n$;

$$\therefore \text{ mass of element at } P = \frac{\rho}{a^n} r^{n+2} \sin\theta\, d\phi\, d\theta\, dr$$

The limits of r are 0 and a; of θ, 0 and π; of ϕ, $-\frac{\pi}{2}$ and $\frac{\pi}{2}$;

$$\therefore \bar{x} = \frac{\int_{-a}^{a}\int_{0}^{\pi}\int_{0}^{a} r^{n+3}\sin^2\theta\cos\phi\, d\phi\, d\theta\, dr}{\int_{-a}^{a}\int_{0}^{\pi}\int_{0}^{a} r^{n+2}\sin\theta\, d\phi\, d\theta\, dr}, \quad a = \frac{\pi}{2}$$

$$= \frac{n+3}{n+4}\cdot\frac{a}{2}.$$

GULDINUS's PROPERTIES.

PROP. ***To prove that if any plane figure revolve about an axis lying in its own plane, the content of the solid generated by this figure in revolving through any angle is equal to a prism, of which the base is the revolving figure and height the length of the path described by the centre of gravity of the area of the plane figure.***

88. Let the axis of revolution be the axis of x, and the plane of the revolving figure in its initial position to be the plane of xy; we shall suppose the figure to be wholly on one side of the axis of x: θ the angle through which the figure revolves.

Then the elementary area $dx\,dy$ of the plane figure in revolving through an angle $d\theta$, generates the elementary solid whose volume is $y\,d\theta\,dx\,dy$; therefore whole solid

$$= \int_0^{\theta}\iint y\,d\theta\,dx\,dy,$$

the limits of x and y depend upon the equation to the curve

$$= \theta\iint y\,dx\,dy$$

between the proper limits.

But if $\bar{y}$ be the ordinate to the centre of gravity of the plane figure, then by Art. 87. Ex. 7.

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\iint y\,dx\,dy}{\iint dx\,dy}$$

the limits the same as before;

therefore whole solid $= \theta \iint y\,dx\,dy = \bar{y}\theta \cdot \iint dx\,dy$

= arc descd. by centre of gravity × area of figure.

Hence the Prop. is true.

PROP. *To prove that the surface of the solid generated is equal in area to the rectangle of which the sides are the length of the perimeter of the generating figure and the length of the path of the centre of gravity of the perimeter.*

89. The surface generated by the arc ds of the figure revolving through an angle $d\theta$ equals $y\,d\theta\,ds$;

$\therefore$ whole surface $= \int_0^\theta \int y\,d\theta\,ds = \theta \int y\,ds$ between proper limits.

But $\bar{y}$ = ordinate to centre of gravity of perimeter

$$= \frac{\int y\,ds}{\int ds} \text{ between same limits as before;}$$

therefore whole surface $= \bar{y}\theta \cdot \int ds$

= arc descd. by centre of gravity × length of perimeter.

Hence the Prop. is true.

90. It is evident that these theorems are true also when the generating figure is bounded by a line not of continuous curvature.

EX. 1. *To find the solid content and the surface of the ring of an anchor.*

Let the radius of the axis be a, and the radius of a transverse section be b: then the length of the path of the centre of gravity of the area of the generating figure $= 2\pi a$, and the area of the figure $= \pi b^2$;

$$\therefore \text{ content of solid} = 2\pi^2 a b^2.$$

Also path of centre of gravity of the perimeter $= 2\pi a$, and the length of the perimeter $= 2\pi b$;

$$\therefore \text{ surface} = 4\pi^2 a b.$$

Ex. 2. *To find the centre of gravity of the area and also of the arc of a semi-circle.*

A semi-circle by revolving about its diameter generates a sphere: the content of the sphere $= \frac{4\pi}{3}a^3$, a the radius: the surface $= 4\pi a^2$:

the area of the semi-circle $= \frac{\pi}{2}a^2$; the perimeter $= \pi a$;

therefore distance of centre of gravity of area from diameter

$$= \frac{\text{content of sphere}}{2\pi \cdot \text{area of } \frac{1}{2} \text{ circle}} = \frac{4a}{3\pi};$$

and distance of centre of gravity of arc from diameter

$$= \frac{\text{surface of sphere}}{2\pi \cdot \text{arc of } \frac{1}{2} \text{ circle}} = \frac{2a}{\pi}.$$

91. A MACHINE is an instrument, or a system of solid bodies, for the purpose of transmitting force from one part to another of the system.

It would be endless to describe all the machines that have been invented; we shall consequently confine ourselves to those of simple construction. The most simple species of machines are denominated the Mechanical Powers. These we shall explain, and also a few combinations of them.

92. A *Lever* is an inflexible rod moveable only about a fixed axis; which is called the *fulcrum*. The portions of the lever into which the fulcrum divides it are called the *arms* of the lever: when the arms are in the same straight line, it is called a *straight lever*; in other cases a *bent lever*.

Two forces act upon the lever about the fulcrum, called the *power* and the *weight*: the power is the force applied by the hand (or other means) to sustain or overcome the other force, or the weight. There are three species of levers: the first has the fulcrum between the power and weight; in the second the weight acts between the fulcrum and the power; and in the third the power acts between the fulcrum and the weight.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of two forces acting in the same plane on a lever.*

93. Let the plane of the paper be the plane in which the forces act, and also be perpendicular to the axis, of which C is the projection, and about which the lever can move (fig. 31.), A, B the points of application of the forces P, W; α, β the angles which the directions of the forces make with any line aCb drawn through C on the paper. Let R be the pressure

upon the fulcrum, and θ the angle which it makes with the line aCb; then if we apply a force R in the direction CR, we may suppose the fulcrum removed, and the body to be held in equilibrium by the forces P, W, R.

We shall resolve these forces in directions parallel and perpendicular to aCb; and also take their moments about C: then, by Art. 53, we have the following equations of condition:

$$P\cos\alpha - W\cos\beta - R\cos\theta = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

$$P\sin\alpha + W\sin\beta - R\sin\theta = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (2),$$

$$\text{and } P.CD - W.CE = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (3).$$

CD and CE being drawn perpendicular to the directions of P and W.

These three equations determine the ratio of P to W when there is equilibrium; and the magnitude and direction of the pressure on the fulcrum.

For equation (3) gives

$$\frac{P}{W} = \frac{CE}{CD} = \frac{\text{perpendicular on direction of } W}{\text{perpendicular on direction of } P}.$$

Also by transposing the last terms of (1) and (2), we have

$$R\cos\theta = P\cos\alpha - W\cos\beta,$$

$$R\sin\theta = P\sin\alpha + W\sin\beta.$$

Add their squares;

$$\therefore R^2 = P^2 + W^2 - 2PW\cos(\alpha+\beta),$$

which gives the magnitude of R.

Take the ratio of the above equations;

$$\therefore \tan\theta = \frac{P\sin\alpha + W\sin\beta}{P\cos\alpha - W\cos\beta},$$

which gives the direction of the pressure.

If we suppose B to be the fulcrum and take the moments about B instead of C, we have instead of equation (3) the following*:

* This is not a new equation of condition; but is a consequence of the three already given, (1), (2), (3). To shew this imagine AD and BE produced to meet CR:

$$\frac{P}{R} = \frac{\text{perpendicular on direction of } R}{\text{perpendicular on direction of } P}.$$

It follows, then, that *the condition of equilibrium in a lever of any species is that the two forces must be inversely as the perpendiculars drawn upon their directions from the fulcrum.*

94. This property of the lever renders it a useful instrument in multiplying the power of a force. For any two forces, however unequal in magnitude, may be made to balance each other simply by fixing the fulcrum so that the ratio of its distances from the directions of the forces shall be equal to the ratio of the forces; an adjustment which can always be made. If the fulcrum be moved from this position, then that force will preponderate from which the fulcrum is moved and the equilibrium will be destroyed. We are thus led to understand how mechanical advantage is gained by using a crow-bar to move heavy bodies, as large blocks of stone: a poker to raise the coals in a grate: scissors, shears, nippers, and pincers; these last consisting of two levers of the first kind. The brake of a pump is a lever of the first kind. In the Stanhope printing-press we have a remarkable illustration of the mechanical advantage that can be gained by levers. The frame-work in which the paper to be printed is fixed, is acted upon by the shorter arm of a lever, the other arm being connected to a second lever, the longer arm of which is worked by the pressman. These levers are so adjusted that at the instant the paper comes in contact with the types, the perpendiculars from the fulcra upon the directions of the forces acting at the shorter arms are exceedingly short, and consequently the levers multiply the force exerted by the pressman to an enormous extent.

CR: they will meet this line in the same point, since the distances by these two constructions are CD cosec $(\theta - \alpha)$ and CE cosec $(\theta + \beta)$; and these are made equal, by equations (1), (2), (3), if we eliminate P, Q, W. Suppose, then, F to be the point in which these lines meet. By multiplying (1), (2), respectively by $\sin\beta$ and $\cos\beta$, and adding, we have

$$\frac{P}{R} = \frac{\sin(\theta+\beta)}{\sin(\alpha+\beta)} = \frac{FB\sin(\theta+\beta)}{FB\sin(\alpha+\beta)} = \frac{\text{perpendicular on direction of } R}{\text{perpendicular on direction of } P};$$

therefore this equation is a consequence of the equations (1), (2), (3), as might have been anticipated.

As examples of levers of the second kind, we may mention a wheelbarrow, an oar, a chipping-knife, a pair of nutcrackers.

It must be observed, however, that as the lever moves about the fulcrum the space through which the weight is moved is, in the first and second species of lever, smaller than the space passed through by the power: and therefore what is gained in power is lost in despatch. For example in the case of the crow-bar: to raise a block of stone through a given space by applying the hand at the further extremity of the lever, we must move the hand through a greater space than that which the weight describes.

But in the third species of lever the reverse is the case. The power is nearer the fulcrum than the weight, and is consequently greater; but the motion of the weight is greater than that of the power. In this kind of lever despatch is gained at the expense of power. An excellent example is the treddle of a turning lathe. But the most striking example of levers of the third kind is found in the animal frame, in the construction of which it seems to be a prevailing principle to sacrifice power to readiness and quickness of action. The limbs of animals are generally levers of this description. The condile of the bone rests in its socket as the fulcrum; a strong muscle attached to the bone near the condile is the power, and the weight of the limb together with any resistance opposed to its motion is the weight. A slight contraction of the muscle gives a considerable motion to the limb. A drawing of the human arm is given as an illustration of these remarks: (fig. 32.)

95. The lever is applied to determine the weight of substances. Under this character it is called a Balance. The Common Balance has its two arms equal, with a scale suspended from each extremity; the fulcrum being *above* the line joining the extremities of the arms. The substance to be weighed is placed in one scale, and weights placed in the other till the beam remains in equilibrium in a perfectly horizontal position; in which case the weight of the substance is indicated by the weights by which it is balanced. If the weights differ ever so slightly, the horizontality of the beam will be disturbed, and after oscillating for some time (in consequence of the fulcrum being placed *above* the line joining the points of support of the

scales) it will, on attaining a state of rest, form an angle with the horizon, the extent of which is a measure of the sensibility of the balance.

In the construction of a balance the following requisites should be attended to. 1. When loaded with equal weights the beam should be perfectly horizontal. 2. When the weights differ, even by a slight quantity, the *sensibility* should be such as to detect this difference. 3. When the balance is disturbed it should readily return to its state of rest, or it should have *stability*. We shall now consider how these may be fulfilled.

PROP. *To find how the requisites of a good balance may be satisfied.*

96. Let P and Q be the weights in the scales (fig. 33.): $AB = 2a$: C the fulcrum: h its distance from the line joining A, B: W the weight of the beam and scales: k the distance of the centre of gravity of these from C measured downwards: θ the angle the beam makes with the horizon when there is equilibrium.

Let us take the moments of P, Q, W about C: their sum equals zero since there is equilibrium (Art. 53.) Then

since the distance of P's direc. from $C = a\cos\theta - h\sin\theta$

..... Q's ..... $= a\cos\theta + h\sin\theta$

..... W's ..... $= k\sin\theta$,

we have

$$P(a\cos\theta - h\sin\theta) - Q(a\cos\theta + h\sin\theta) - Wk\sin\theta = 0;$$

$$\therefore \tan\theta = \frac{(P-Q)a}{(P+Q)h + Wk}.$$

This determines the position of equilibrium. The first requisite—the horizontality when P and Q are equal—is satisfied by making the arms equal.

For the second we observe that for a given difference of P and Q the sensibility is greater the greater $\tan\theta$ is; and for a given value of $\tan\theta$, the sensibility is greater the smaller the

difference of P and Q is: hence $\frac{\tan\theta}{P-Q}$ is a correct measure of the sensibility: and therefore the second requisite is fulfilled by making $(P+Q)\frac{h}{a}+W\frac{k}{a}$ as small as possible.

The stability is greater the greater the moment of the forces which tend to restore the equilibrium when it is destroyed. Suppose $P=Q$, then P and Q may be placed at the mid-point between A and B: and the moment of the forces tending to restore equilibrium equals $\{(P+Q)h+Wk\}\sin\theta$. Hence to satisfy the third requisite, this must be made as large as possible. This is, in part, at variance with the second requisite. They may, however, both be satisfied by making $(P+Q)h+Wk$ large, and a large also: that is, by increasing the distances of the fulcrum from the beam and from the centre of gravity of the beam and scales, and by lengthening the arms.

It must be remarked that the sensibility of a balance is of more importance than the stability, since the eye can judge pretty accurately whether the index of the beam makes equal oscillations on each side of the vertical line; that is, whether the position of rest would be horizontal: if this be not the case, then the weights must be altered till the oscillations are nearly equal.

97. Another kind of balance is that in which the arms are unequal, and the same weight is used to weigh different substances by varying its point of support, and observing its distance from the fulcrum by means of a graduated scale. The common steelyard is of this description.

PROP. *To shew how to graduate the common steelyard.*

98. Let AB be the beam of the steelyard (fig. 34.) A the fixed point from which the substance to be weighed is suspended, Q being its weight: C the fulcrum: W the weight of the beam together with the hook or scale-pan suspended from A; G the centre of gravity of these.

Suppose that P suspended at N balances Q suspended from A, then taking the moments of P, Q, W about C, we have

$$Q \cdot AC - W \cdot CG - P \cdot CN = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ Q = \frac{CN + \frac{W}{P} \cdot CG}{AC} \cdot P.$$

Take the point D, so that $CD = \frac{W}{P} CG$;

$$\therefore\ Q = \frac{CN + CD}{AC} \cdot P = \frac{DN}{AC} P.$$

Now let the arm DB be graduated by taking Da_1, Da_2, Da_3,.....equal respectively to AC, $2AC$, $3AC$,.....let the figures 1, 2, 3, 4,.....be placed over the points of graduation, and let subdivisions be made between these. Then by observing the graduation at N we know the ratio of Q to P; and this latter being a given weight we know the weight of Q. In this way any substance may be weighed.

99. There is a remarkable balance called after its inventor Roberval's Balance: a representation of it is given in fig. 35. DC' is a frame of which the opposite sides are equal, and the extremities are connected by pins at D, C, D', C' so as to allow of free motion: this frame is supported by a stand $EE'A$, being connected to it by pins at E and E' so as to allow of free motion about those points: EE' must be parallel to DC and $D'C'$, but not necessarily equi-distant from them: arms are fixed at right angles to the sides DD', CC' to support weights Q and P. The peculiarity of this machine is, that if P and Q balance in any given position on the horizontal arms, the equilibrium will remain undisturbed if we shift P or Q or both of them along their arms in either direction: also if we push one arm down and consequently raise the other the whole will remain at rest in the position in which it is left. We shall prove these facts, and explained the paradoxical character of the machine in the Chapter of Problems. We may however easily prove by the Principle of Virtual Velocities the facts mentioned above, though the paradox will not be removed.

If we lower the arm on which P acts through a space x, then D' sinks through a space x, and D, and therefore the arm on which Q acts, rises through a space $\frac{a'x}{a}$, which is independent of the distances of P and Q along their arms: a and a' are the lengths DE and ED'.

$$\text{Then } P.x - Q.\frac{a'x}{a} = 0 \text{ by Virtual Velocities,}$$

$$\text{or } \frac{P}{Q} = \frac{a'}{a},$$

for all positions of the frame and of the weights.

It will be seen upon referring to the Chapter of Problems that although the equilibrium remains undisturbed when P and Q have different positions, yet the strains at the joints D, D', C, C', E, E' and the point of application (B in figure) of the downward-pressure undergo changes.

It is on the principle of this machine that the balances used of late years in shops are constructed: the scales rest each by one point upon the extremities of a lever below them, and the only motion they are capable of is in a vertical direction.

100. The second of the Mechanical Powers is the Wheel and Axle. This machine consists of two cylinders fixed together with their axes in the same line: the larger is called the wheel and the smaller the axle: the axis of the axle is generally much larger than that of the wheel. The cord by which the weight is suspended is fastened to the axle, and then coiled round it, while the power which supports the weight acts by a cord coiled round the circumference of the wheel; by spokes acted on by the hand, as in the *capstan*; or by the hand acting on a handle as in the *windlass*.

PROP. *To find the ratio of the power and weight in the Wheel and Axle when in equilibrium.*

101. Let AD be the wheel and $CC'B$ the axle (fig. 36.) P the power represented by a weight suspended from the cir-

cumference of the wheel at A: W the weight hanging from the axle at B.

Then since the axis of the machine is fixed, the condition of equilibrium is that the sum of the moments of the forces about this axis vanishes (Art. 68.);

$$\therefore P \cdot AC - W \cdot C'B = 0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{W}{P} = \frac{AC}{BC'} = \frac{\text{rad. of wheel}}{\text{rad. of axle}}.$$

It will be seen that this machine is only a modification of the lever. In short it is an assemblage of levers all having the same axis: and as soon as one has been in action the next comes into play; and in this way an endless leverage is obtained. In this respect, then, the wheel and axle surpasses the common lever in mechanical advantage. It is much used in docks, and in shipping.

102. The third Mechanical Power is the Toothed Wheel. It is extensively applied in all machinery; in cranes, steam-engines, and particularly in clock and watch work. If two circular hoops of metal or wood having their outer circumferences indented, or cut into equal teeth all the way round, be so placed that their edges touch, one tooth of one circumference lying between two of the other (as represented in the figure 37.); then if one of them be turned round by any means, the other will be turned round also. This is the simple construction of a pair of toothed wheels.

PROP. *To find the relation of the power and weight in Toothed Wheels.*

103. Let A and B be the fixed centres of the toothed wheels on the circumferences of which the teeth are arranged. C the point of contact of two teeth: QCQ a normal to the surfaces in contact at C. Suppose an axle is fixed on the wheel B, and the weight W suspended from it at E by a cord: also suppose the power P acts by an arm AD: draw Aa, Bb perpendicular to QCQ. Let the mutual pressure at C be Q. Then since the wheel A is in equilibrium about the fixed axis A, the sum of the moments about A equals zero:

$$\therefore\ P \,.\, AD - Q \,.\, Aa = 0.$$

Also since the wheel B is in equilibrium about B, the sum of the moments about B equals zero:

$$\therefore\ Q \,.\, Bb - W \,.\, BE = 0.$$

Then by eliminating Q from these two equations,

$$\frac{P}{W} = \frac{P}{Q} \cdot \frac{Q}{W}$$

$$= \frac{Aa}{AD} \cdot \frac{BE}{Bb};$$

$$\text{or} \quad \frac{\text{moment of } P}{\text{moment of } W} = \frac{Aa}{Bb};$$

when the teeth are small this ratio

$$= \frac{\text{rad. of wheel } A}{\text{rad. of wheel } B} \text{ very nearly.}$$

104. Wheels are in some cases turned by means of straps passing over their circumferences. In such cases the minute protuberances of the surfaces prevent the sliding of the straps, and a mutual action takes place such as to render the calculation exactly analogous to that in the Proposition.

For the calculation of the best forms for the teeth, the reader is referred to a Paper of Mr Airy's, in the Camb. Phil. Trans. Vol. II. p. 277.

105. The fourth Mechanical Power is the Pully. There are several species of pullies: we shall mention them in order. The simple pully is a small wheel moveable about its axis: a cord passes over part of its circumference. If the axis is fixed the effect of the pully is only to change the direction of the cord passing over it: if, however, the axis be moveable then, as will be presently seen, a mechanical advantage may be gained.

PROP. *To find the ratio of the power and weight in the single moveable Pully.*

106. I. Suppose the parts of the cord divided by the pully are parallel (fig. 38.)

Let the cord ABP have one extremity fixed at A, and after passing under the pully at B suppose it held by the hand exerting a force P. The weight W is suspended by a cord from the centre C of the pully.

Now the tension of the cord ABP is the same throughout. Hence the pully is acted on by three parallel forces, P, P, and W: hence

$$2P - W = 0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{W}{P} = 2.$$

II. Suppose the portions of cord are not parallel (fig. 39.)

Let α and α' be the angles which $A\alpha$ and Pb make with the vertical.

Now the pully is held in equilibrium by W in CW, P in αA, P in bP. Hence by Art. 53,

$$\text{horizontal forces, } P\sin\alpha - P\sin\alpha' = 0 \ldots (1)$$

$$\text{and vertical forces, } P\cos\alpha + P\cos\alpha' - W = 0 \ldots (2)$$

the equation of moments is identical.

$$\text{By (1), } \sin\alpha = \sin\alpha' \text{ and } \alpha = \alpha';$$

$$\therefore \text{ by (2), } \frac{W}{P} = 2\cos\alpha \text{ which is the relation required.}$$

PROP. *To find the ratio of the power and weight in a system of pullies, in which each pully hangs by a separate string, one end being fastened in the pully above it and the other end on a fixed beam: all the strings being parallel.*

107. Let n be the number of pullies (fig. 40.)

I. Let us neglect the weights of the pullies themselves.

Then the tension of $b_1 W = W$; $\therefore$ the tension of $a_1 b_1 b_2 = \frac{1}{2} W$;

$$\therefore \text{ tension of } a_2b_2b_3 = \frac{1}{2^2}W, \text{ tension of } a_3b_3c = \frac{1}{2^3}W,$$

and so on, and the tension of the string passing under the n^{th} pully $= \frac{1}{2^n}W$, and this $= P$;

$$\therefore \frac{W}{P} = 2^n.$$

II. Let us suppose the weights of the pullies to be considered: and let $\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3\ldots\omega_n$ be these weights.

Then if $p_1p_2p_3\ldots p_n$ be the weights which they would sustain at P and P_1 the weight W would sustain at P, we have

$$p_1 = \frac{\omega_1}{2^n},\ p_2 = \frac{\omega_2}{2^{n-1}},\ldots\ldots p_n = \frac{\omega_n}{2},\ P_1 = \frac{W}{2^n};$$

$$\therefore P = p_1 + p_2 + \ldots\ldots + p_n + P_1,$$

$$\text{or } P = \frac{1}{2^n}\left\{W + \omega_1 + 2\omega_2 + 2^2\omega_3 + \ldots\ldots + 2^{n-1}\omega_n\right\}.$$

If $\omega_1 = \omega_2 = \omega_3 = \ldots\ldots = \omega_n$,

$$P = \frac{1}{2^n}\left\{W + (2^n - 1)\,\omega_1\right\}.$$

PROP. *To find the ratio of the power and weight when the system is the same as in the last Proposition; but the strings are not parallel.*

108. We shall neglect the weights of the blocks. The pullies will evidently so adjust themselves that the string at their centre will bisect the angle between the strings touching their circumference.

Let $a_1a_2a_3 \ldots\ldots a_n$ be the angles included between the strings touching the first, second, third, ... n^{th} pullies respectively: (fig. 41.)

Then, by Art. 106, tension of $a_1b_1b_2 = \dfrac{W}{2\cos a_1}$;

$$\text{therefore tension of } a_2 b_2 b_3 = \frac{W}{2^2 \cos \alpha_1 \cos \alpha_2},$$

$$\text{tension of } a_3 b_3 c = \frac{W}{2^3 \cos \alpha_1 \cos \alpha_2 \cos \alpha_3},$$

$$\text{tension of the last string} = \frac{W}{2^n \cos \alpha_1 \cos \alpha_2 \cos \alpha_3 \ldots\ldots \cos \alpha_n},$$

$$\text{and this} = P;$$

$$\therefore \frac{W}{P} = 2^n \cos \alpha_1 \cos \alpha_2 \cos \alpha_3 \ldots\ldots \cos \alpha_n.$$

PROP. *To find the relation of the power and weight in a system of pullies where the same string passes round all the pullies.*

109. This system consists of two blocks; each containing a number of the pullies with their axes coincident. The weight is suspended from the lower block, which is moveable, and the power acts at the loose extremity of the string, which passes round the respective pullies of the upper and lower block alternately.

Since the same string passes round all the pullies, its tension will be everywhere the same, and equal to the power P. Let n be the number of portions of string at the lower block; then $n \,.\, P$ will be the sum of their tensions;

$$\therefore W = n \,.\, P.$$

If we take into account the weight of the lower block, and call it B, then

$$W + B = n \,.\, P.$$

If the strings at the lower block are not vertical, we must take the sum of the parts resolved vertically, and equate it to W. But, in general, this deviation from the vertical is so slight, that it is neglected.

110. As the weight is rising or falling, it will be observed that in general the pullies move with different angular motions. The degree of angular motion of each pully depends upon the

magnitude of its radius. Mr James White took advantage of this to choose the radii of the pullies in such a manner as to give them the same angular motion, and so prevented the wear and resistance caused by the friction of the pullies against each other. This being the case, the pullies might be fastened together. Instead of this, however, the pullies were cut in the same block.

It will be seen without much difficulty, that the angular motions of the pullies of the upper block will be as the series of odd integers 1, 3, 5, ... and those of the pullies of the lower block as the series of even integers 2, 4, 6, ...

These series, then, determine the relative sizes of the pullies in the two blocks.

PROP. *To find the ratio of the power to the weight when all the strings are attached to the weight.*

111. If we neglect the weight of the pullies (fig. 42.) the tension of the strings $b_1 a_1 = P$; the tension of $a_2 b_2 = 2P$; and so on: if there be n pullies, then the sum of the tensions of the strings attached to the weight

$$= P + 2P + 2^2 P + \ldots\ldots + 2^{n-1} P = (2^n - 1) P;$$

$$\therefore \frac{W}{P} = 2^n - 1.$$

If we suppose the weights of the pullies are $\omega_1 \omega_2 \omega_3 \ldots\ldots$ reckoning from the lowest, and $\omega' \omega'' \omega''' \ldots\ldots$ the portions of W which they respectively support (since they evidently assist P), and W' the portion of W supported by P; then

$$W' = (2^n - 1) P,$$

$$\omega' = (2^{n-1} - 1) \omega_1,$$

$$\omega''' = (2^{n-2} - 1) \omega_2,$$

$$\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$

$$\omega^{(n-1)} = (2 - 1) \omega_{n-1};$$

$$\therefore W = W' + \omega' + \ldots\ldots = (2^n - 1) P + (2^{n-1} - 1) \omega_1$$

$$+ (2^{n-2} - 1) \omega_2 + \ldots\ldots + (2 - 1) \omega_{n-1}.$$

If $\omega_1 = \omega_2 = \omega_3 \ldots\ldots\ldots$

$$W = (2^n - 1)\,P + \{2^{n-1} + 2^{n-2} + \ldots\ldots + 2 - (n-1)\}\,\omega_1$$

$$= (2^n - 1)\,P + (2^n - n - 1)\,\omega_1.$$

112. The fourth Mechanical Power is the Inclined Plane. By an inclined plane we mean a plane inclined to the horizon. A weight W may be supported on an inclined plane by a power P less than W.

PROP. *To find the ratio of the power and weight in the inclined plane.*

113. Let AB be the inclined plane (fig. 43.): α the angle it makes with the horizon. Let the power P act on the weight in the direction CP, making an angle ϵ with the plane. Now the weight at C is held at rest by P in CP, W in the vertical CW, and a pressure R in CR, at right angles to the plane.

Hence, by Art. 23, if we resolve these forces perpendicular and parallel to the plane, we have

$$R + P \sin \epsilon - W \cos \alpha = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

$$P \cos \epsilon - W \sin \alpha = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

The second gives the required relation $\dfrac{P}{W} = \dfrac{\sin \alpha}{\cos \epsilon}$; and the first equation gives the magnitude of the pressure R.

COR. 1. If P act horizontally, $\epsilon = -\alpha$, and $P = W \tan \alpha$.

COR. 2. If P act parallel to the plane, $\epsilon = 0$, $P = W \sin \alpha$.

COR. 3. If P act vertically, $\epsilon = \dfrac{\pi}{2} - \alpha$, $P = W$.

114. The fifth mechanical power is the Wedge. This is a triangular prism, and is used to separate obstacles by introducing its edge between them and then thrusting the wedge forward. This is effected by the blow of a hammer or other such means, which produces a violent pressure for a short time, sufficient to overcome the greatest forces.

PROP. *An isosceles wedge being introduced between two obstacles, required to find its tendency to separate the obstacles when the wedge is prevented from being thrust back by a given force.*

115. Let $2P$ be the force acting at the back of the wedge (fig. 44.) In the figure we suppose the obstacles to be the two halves of a tree. The portions of the tree we suppose similarly situated on the two sides of the wedge: let A and A' be the points of contact between the wedge and the obstacles: AN, $A'N'$ normals to the wedge at A and A': R, R the mutual resistances of the wedge and obstacles at A and A'.

Now if the wedge were to move backwards or to be thrust forwards the points A and A' would move in some unknown curve line: the nature of this curve would depend upon the elasticity and strength of the material of the obstacles and upon other circumstances. Draw AT, $A'T'$ tangents to these curves at the points A and A'. Then it will be seen that the parts of the pressures at A and A' which measure the tendency of the obstacles to separate will be their resolved parts along these tangent lines; since if they separate it must be by A and A' moving along these lines. The resolved parts perpendicular to these tangents are counteracted by the resistance of the ground at E.

Let W be the resolved part of R along the tangent on either side: and suppose the angle $NAT = i$. Also let the angle of the wedge be $2a$.

Then the wedge being sustained by the forces $2P$, R and R; we have by resolving them vertically

$$2P - 2R \sin a = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (1);$$

the horizontal parts counteract each other of necessity, also the equation of moments is an identical equation.

$$\text{Again } W = R \cos i \ldots\ldots\ldots (2);$$

$$\therefore \frac{P}{W} = \frac{\sin a}{\cos i}.$$

If, then, we know the angle i we shall know W: but we have

no means of ascertaining the value of i, and consequently the preceding calculation is of little importance.

When i is very small, then $W = \dfrac{P}{\sin \alpha}$ nearly.

116. The last Mechanical Power is the Screw.

This machine in its simple construction consists of a cylinder (fig. 45.) AB with a uniform projecting thread $abcd$ ... traced round its surface, and making a constant angle α with lines parallel to the axis of the cylinder. This cylinder fits into a block D pierced with an equal cylindrical aperture, on the inner surface of which is cut a groove the exact counterpart of the projecting thread $abcd$.

It is easily seen from this description, that when the cylinder is introduced into the block, the only manner in which it can move is backwards or forwards by revolving about its axis, the thread sliding in the groove. Suppose W is the weight acting on the cylinder (including the weight of the cylinder itself) and P is the power acting at the end of an arm AC at right angles to the axis of the cylinder: the block D is supposed to be firmly fixed, and the axis of the cylinder to be vertical.

PROP. *To find the ratio of the power and weight in the Screw when they are in equilibrium.*

117. Let $AC = a$: rad. of cylinder $= b$.

Now the forces which hold the cylinder in equilibrium are W, P and the reactions of the pressures of the various portions of the thread on the corresponding portions of the lower surface of the groove in which the thread rests: these reactions are indeterminate in their number; but they all act in directions perpendicularly to the surface of the groove, and therefore their directions make a constant angle α with a horizontal plane. If, then, R be one of these reactions, $R \sin \alpha$, $R \cos \alpha$ are the resolved parts vertically and horizontally: the horizontal portions of the reactions act each at right angles to a radius of the cylinder. Hence resolving the forces vertically, and also taking the moments of the forces in horizontal planes, we have

$$W - \Sigma . R \sin \alpha = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

$$Pa - \Sigma . R \cos \alpha \, b = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (2),$$

we might write down the other four equations of equilibrium; but they introduce unknown quantities with which we are unconcerned in our question.

Hence $\frac{W}{P} = \frac{a \sin a \Sigma . R}{b \cos a \Sigma . R}$, because b and a are constant:

$$= \frac{a \sin a}{b \cos a} = \frac{2\pi a}{2\pi b \cot a}$$

$$= \frac{\text{circumference of circle whose rad. is } AC}{\text{vertical dist. between two successive winds of the thread}}.$$

The screw is used to gain mechanical power in many ways. In excavating the Thames Tunnel the heavy iron frame-work which supported the workmen was gradually advanced by means of large screws.

FRICTION.

118. In the investigations of this Chapter we have supposed that the surfaces of the bodies in contact are perfectly smooth. Now in practice this is not the fact; for no surface can be so entirely freed from roughness and asperities as to be perfectly smooth, although their effect may in many cases be greatly diminished. By a *smooth* surface is meant a surface which opposes no resistance whatever to the motion of a body upon it, and therefore the resistance is wholly perpendicular to the surface. A surface which does oppose a resistance to the motion of a body upon it is said to be *rough*.

The friction of a body on a surface is measured by the least force which will put the body in motion along the surface.

Coulomb made a series of experiments upon the friction of bodies against each other and deduced the following laws: *Mémoires des Savans Etrangers*, Tom. x.

(1) *The friction varies as the pressure, when the materials of the surfaces in contact remain the same.* When the pressures are very great indeed it is found that the friction is somewhat less than this law would give.

(2) *The friction is independent of the extent of the surfaces in contact so long as the pressure remains the same.* When the surfaces in contact are extremely small, as for instance a cylinder resting on a surface, this law gives the friction much too great.

These two laws are true when the body is on the point of moving and also when it is actually in motion: but in the case of motion the magnitude of the friction is much less than when the body is in a state bordering upon motion.

(3) *The friction is independent of the velocity when the body is in motion.*

It follows from these laws that if P be the normal pressure of the body upon the surface then the friction $= \mu . P$, where μ is a constant quantity for the same materials, and is called *the coefficient of friction.*

In the state bordering on motion and when the surfaces in contact are of finite extent we have the following results from experiment:

$\mu = \frac{1}{2}$ surfaces wood, the grain being in same direction.

$= \frac{1}{4}$ ..... opposite .....

$= \frac{1}{4}$ metallic surfaces.

$= \frac{1}{5}$ one surface wood and the other metal.

Oil and grease considerably diminish friction; fresh tallow reduces it to half its value.

In the state bordering on motion and when the surfaces in contact are single lines, then $\mu = \frac{1}{12}$ for wood. When the surface in contact is a physical point the statical friction is inconsiderable.

But for full particulars on this subject we refer the reader to Coulomb's papers, and also to two Memoirs recently published in the *Mémoires de l'Institut.* by M. Morin.

Prop. *To find the greatest angle which the direction of the mutual pressure of two surfaces in contact may make with their common normal at the point where the pressure acts without sliding; the coefficient of friction being given.*

119. Let P be the mutual pressure, its direction making an angle β with the normal. Then $P \cos \beta$ is the *direct* or normal pressure of the surfaces, and $P \sin \beta$ is the force balanced by the friction acting wholly or in part.

Hence the greatest value of the ratio $\dfrac{P \sin \beta}{P \cos \beta}$ is μ;

$\therefore \beta = \tan^{-1} \mu$ is the greatest value of β.

PROP. *In a simple isosceles truss-roof required to calculate the tension of the tie-beam.*

121. Let AB, BC be two beams of the roofing connected by the tie-beam AC (fig. 46.): the truss resting on walls, as drawn in the figure. Let B be the weight of each sloping beam and the portion of the tiling or thatching supported by the beam: let G be the point at which this weight acts. Also suppose that the weight on the vertex arising from other appendages equals W: let α be the angle the roof makes with the horizon: $AG = b$, $AB = a$.

Now the forces acting on AB are a pressure at A perpendicular to the wall, $= R$ suppose: the tension of the tie-beam acting at A in the direction AC, $= T$ suppose: the weight B acting vertically at G: and lastly, some force P acting at B in direction BP making an unknown angle θ with the beam in the plane of the paper, and arising from the weight W and the action of the beam BC.

In order to find the connexion between P and W, we remark that the point B is held at rest by the force W downwards, and the two reactions P, P acting along the dotted lines.

For the equilibrium of AB we have

horizontal forces $= T - P\cos(\alpha - \theta) = 0$ ..... (1),

vertical forces $= R - B - P\sin(\alpha - \theta) = 0$ ..... (2),

moments about $A = Bb\cos\alpha - Pa\sin\theta = 0$ ..... (3).

For the equilibrium of the point B,

vertical forces $= 2P\sin(\alpha - \theta) - W = 0$ ..... (4).

Here, then, we have four equations and four unknown quantities T, P, R, θ: and therefore we can determine the unknown quantities, and therefore T.

By (1) (4) $T = \frac{1}{2} W\cot(\alpha - \theta)$, eliminating P:

and by (3) (4), eliminating P, we have

$$Bb\cos\alpha = \tfrac{1}{2} Wa\,\frac{\sin\theta}{\sin(\alpha-\theta)} = \tfrac{1}{2} Wa\,\frac{\sin\{\alpha-(\alpha-\theta)\}}{\sin(\alpha-\theta)}$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{2} Wa\,\{\sin\alpha\cot(\alpha-\theta) - \cos\alpha\};$$

$$\therefore \cot(\alpha-\theta) = \frac{2Bb + Wa}{Wa}\cot\alpha;$$

$$\therefore T = \frac{2Bb + Wa}{2a}\cot\alpha.$$

This measures the horizontal thrust of the roofing against the supporting walls supposing the tie-beams to give way: and we learn that this will be less the larger α is, or the steeper the roof is, the other quantities remaining the same. Also the smaller b is in proportion to a, or the nearer G is to A, the smaller is this thrust.

PROP. *To explain the manner in which buttresses act in supporting a roof: and to calculate their angle of elevation.*

122. Let (as before) AB, BC (fig. 47.) be two beams of the roofing: AD a piece of timber firmly attached to AB running down the inside of the wall, and resting on a *corbel* E: FH a beam to strengthen the attachment of AD, AB. Let R be the pressure on the top of the wall and corbel; N the point at which the resultant of the reactions of all the hori-

zontal pressures on the wall acts; T this resultant; $AN = x$; G the point through which the weight on the slanting timbers acts; $AG = b$, $AB = a$.

Now the action of the beams on each other at B must be in a horizontal direction, since we suppose there is no extra weight acting at B, as in the last Proposition; let P be this mutual pressure.

For the equilibrium of BAD,

horizontal forces $= T - P = 0$ ..... (1),

vertical forces $= R - B = 0$ ..... (2),

moments about $A = Tx - Bb\cos\alpha + Pa\sin\alpha = 0$ ..... (3).

Here we have three equations and four unknown quantities T, P, R, x: and another relation connecting these quantities cannot be found; hence the problem is indeterminate: we shall see in the solution what quantities are indeterminate.

By (2) $R = B$, and is therefore not indeterminate.

By (1) (3), eliminating P, we have

$$T = \frac{Bb\cos\alpha}{x + a\sin\alpha}, \quad = P \text{ by (1)}.$$

Hence P, T, and x are indeterminate: but when a value is given to one of them, then, that the equilibrium may subsist, the other two must satisfy the two conditions just deduced.

Let ϕ be the angle which the resultant of R and T makes with the vertical; then

$$\tan\phi = \frac{T}{R} = \frac{b\cos\alpha}{x + a\sin\alpha}.$$

Now our object is to find the least angle at which a buttress need be built to support the roof. If the roof be on the point of sinking it must be so by tending to turn about the extremities D, D of the framework: in which case the force T acts at D, and x will then have its greatest value: also we perceive that both T and also ϕ are smaller the greater x is: hence the least angle at which the buttress need be built is given by the equation

$$\tan\phi = \frac{A'G'}{AD + AA'} = \frac{A'G'}{A'D}$$

BA' being horizontal; AA', GG' vertical.

Hence the dotted line $G'D$ represents the limiting angle which the buttress must make with the vertical in order that the roof may not fall.

This calculation shews the great use of the part of the framework which runs down the wall.

We have drawn in our figure but one connecting beam HF: but there might have been more, and the calculation would have been precisely the same, supposing that ABD is a *rigid* framework: and GG' the vertical line in which the weight of this framework and the superincumbent tiling or other covering acts. The simple rule is to draw a horizontal BG' from the vertex of the roof, cutting GG' in G' and join G' with the lowest point D of the framework: $G'D$ gives the least inclination of the buttress. Also the buttress need not extend higher up the wall than the level of D.

The roofs of Westminster Hall and of Trinity College Hall, Cambridge, are good illustrations of this kind of roof.

Before quitting this subject we will investigate the following Proposition.

PROP. *To calculate the conditions of equilibrium of any number of beams forming a framework in a vertical plane, symmetrical with respect to a vertical line through the highest point.*

123. Let the lengths of the beams be $a_1 a_2 a_3 \ldots$ reckoning from the lowest: $G_1 G_2 G_3 \ldots$ the points at which the weights of the beams and the weights with which they may be loaded act; $b_1 b_2 b_3 \ldots$ the distances of these points from the lower extremities of the beams; $\alpha_1 \alpha_2 \alpha_3 \ldots$ the angles which the beams make with the horizon; R the vertical pressure on the walls of support of each of the two lowest beams; T the horizontal thrust of these beams on the walls; or the tension of the tie-beam connecting them if there be one.

Now the actions of any two beams on each other at the points of junction must be in the same line, since there is no third force to keep them in equilibrium. Let then $P_1 P_2 \ldots$ be these mutual actions between the first and second, the second and third beams, and so on; $\theta_1 \theta_2 \ldots$ the angles which the directions of these forces make with the horizon.

For the equilibrium of the lowest beam

$$T - P_1 \cos \theta_1 = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1)$$

$$B_1 - R + P_1 \sin \theta_1 = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2)$$

$$B_1 b_1 \cos a_1 - P_1 a_1 \sin (a_1 - \theta_1) = 0 \ldots\ldots (3).$$

For the equilibrium of the second beam

$$P_1 \cos \theta_1 - P_2 \cos \theta_2 = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (4)$$

$$B_2 - P_1 \sin \theta_1 + P_2 \sin \theta_2 = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (5)$$

$$B_2 b_2 \cos a_2 - P_2 a_2 \sin (a_2 - \theta_2) = 0 \ldots\ldots (6),$$

and so on, till we come to the highest beam in which the angle θ_n must $= 0$, since the two highest beams which form the vertex have no third force at their point of junction to keep P_n and P_n in equilibrium. Hence for the last (the n^{th}) beam

$$P_{n-1} \cos \theta_{n-1} - P_n = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3n - 2)$$

$$B_n - P_{n-1} \sin \theta_{n-1} = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3n - 1)$$

$$B_n b_n \cos a_n - P_n a_n \sin a_n = 0 \ldots\ldots (3n).$$

Also we have the following analytical relation connecting $a_1 a_2 \ldots$, $a_1 a_2 \ldots$

$$a_1 \cos a_1 + a_2 \cos a_2 + \ldots + a_n \cos a_n = D \ldots (3n + 1)$$

$2D$ being the distance of the opposite walls from each other.

We have then $3n + 1$ equations from which to eliminate the quantities $P_1 P_2 \ldots P_n$, $\theta_1 \theta_2 \ldots \theta_{n-1}$, R, T, which are $2n + 1$ in number and we have n equations remaining to determine the n angles $a_1 a_2 a_3 \ldots a_n$; and these being known we know the position of equilibrium of the beams.

If we add together all the second equations we have

$$R = B_1 + B_2 + \ldots\ldots + B_n$$

wherefore R is known.

Now by (2) (3) eliminating P_1 we have

$$\frac{\sin(a_1 - \theta_1)}{\sin\theta_1} = \frac{B_1 b_1 \cos a_1}{(R - B_1)\, a_1};$$

$$\therefore \sin a_1 \cot\theta_1 = \left\{1 + \frac{B_1 b_1}{(R - B_1)\, a_1}\right\} \cos a_1;$$

$$\therefore \cot\theta_1 = \frac{(R - B_1)\, a_1 + B_1 b_1}{(R - B_1)\, a_1} \cot a_1;$$

$$\therefore T = (R - B_1) \cot\theta_1 \text{ by (1) (2)}$$

$$= \frac{(R - B_1)\, a_1 + B_1 b_1}{a_1} \cot a_1 = \left\{B_2 + \ldots + B_n + B_1 \frac{b_1}{a_1}\right\} \cot a_1$$

whence T is known.

Again, by adding equations (1), (4); (2) (5) respectively we have

$$T - P_2 \cos\theta_2 = 0$$

$$B_1 + B_2 - R + P_2 \sin\theta_2 = 0$$

also by (6) $B_2 b_2 \cos a_2 - P_2 a_2 \sin(a_2 - \theta_2) = 0.$

Hence, as by solving (1) (2) (3), we have

$$T = \left\{B_3 + \ldots + B_n + B_2 \frac{b_2}{a_2}\right\} \cot a_2,$$

and in the same manner we should obtain

$$T = \left\{B_4 + \ldots + B_n + B_3 \frac{b_3}{a_3}\right\} \cot a_3$$

$$\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$

$$T = \left\{B_n \frac{b_n}{a_n}\right\} \cot a_n.$$

These n values of T, being equated, give $n-1$ relations connecting the angles $\alpha_1 \alpha_2 \ldots \alpha_n$; and these combined with equation $(3n+1)$ determine these angles.

The relation of one angle α_m to the preceding α_{m-1} is given by

$$\tan \alpha_m = \frac{B_{m+1} + \ldots + B_n + B_m \dfrac{b_m}{a_m}}{B_m + \ldots + B_n + B_{m-1} \dfrac{b_{m-1}}{a_{m-1}}} \tan \alpha_{m-1}.$$

This shews that every one of the angles $\alpha_1 \alpha_2 \ldots \alpha_n$ is greater or every one less than 90^0 and equation $(3n+1)$ shews that they must be all less than 90^0, otherwise we should have $D =$ a sum of negative quantities.

Also the beams must be less and less inclined to the horizon as we ascend, since $\tan \alpha_m$ is less than $\tan \alpha_{m-1}$.

124. By an *Arch* is meant an assemblage of bodies supported, as represented in fig. 48, by their mutual pressures and the pressures of the two extreme bodies against fixed obstacles.

We shall suppose the bodies to have the usual form, that of truncated wedges; and to be placed so as to have their sides which are in contact perpendicular to the same vertical plane. These bodies are then called *voussoirs*: the highest voussoir is called the *key-stone* of the arch: the surfaces which separate the voussoirs are called the *joints*: the external curve of the arch is called the *extrados*; the internal curve the *intrados*: the solid mass against which the lowest voussoir on each side rests is called the *pier* or *abutment*.

125. It is found in practice that the friction of the voussoirs against each other is so great that they are incapable of sliding past each other; and in many cases all possibility of sliding is prevented by the voussoirs being *joggled*; that is, being united by a piece of stone or iron which is partly imbedded in one voussoir and partly in the voussoir in contact with it.

In consequence of this the conditions of equilibrium of an arch reduce themselves to the condition that the arch shall not break at any part by the rotation of one voussoir upon another: or, which is the same thing, by the opening of any of the joints.

PROP. *To explain how an arch is supported; and in what manner friction tends to preserve the equilibrium.*

126. When two bodies with *smooth* surfaces in contact are pressing against each other, then, in order that they may not slide upon each other, the mutual pressure must act in a line which is perpendicular to the two surfaces. But if the surfaces in contact be *rough*, the mutual pressure need not act in a direction perpendicular to the surfaces to prevent sliding, but may act in any line making an angle with the perpendicular less than a certain finite angle, the magnitude of which depends on the degree of roughness of the surfaces. See Art. 119.

Suppose fig. 48. represents an arch in equilibrium, the extreme voussoirs G_1 and G_7 resting on the piers A and B: $G_1 G_2 G_3$.....are the centres of gravity of the voussoirs: the weights of the voussoirs act in the vertical lines $G_1 b$, $G_1 d$, $f G_3$.

Now any voussoir is held in equilibrium by the action of its weight in a vertical direction downwards, and by the pressures of the contiguous voussoirs or abutment on its two joints. The mutual pressures of any two voussoirs at a joint must evidently be equal to some single force acting at some unknown point.

Suppose the pressure of the pier A acts on the voussoir G_1 at the point a in the direction ab cutting $G_1 b$ in some point b: then the third force which supports G_1 must act through b in some determinate direction dcb; let this cut the vertical through G_2 in d: this is the direction of the mutual pressures of the voussoirs G_1 and G_2, and c is the point at which they act: then the third force which supports G_2 must act through d in some direction fed; and so on: and it follows that the mutual pressures of the voussoirs act in some determinate (though unknown) line $abdfhjlno$ made up of portions of straight line. This is called *the line of pressure.*

Now if the surfaces of the voussoirs were *smooth* it would be necessary for the equilibrium, that this line of pressure should be perpendicular to the joints at the points a, c, e, g, i, k, m, o. This condition establishes certain relations between

the weights of the voussoirs and the angles which the joints make with the horizon. These relations may be easily calculated, but since the voussoirs never are smooth in practice the calculation would be useless. But when the surfaces of the voussoirs are *rough*, the only conditions for the equilibrium are that the angles which the line of pressure makes with the perpendiculars to the joints at the points a, c, e, g, i, k, m, o should not exceed a certain finite angle, which can be made as large as we please by having the stones *rough-hewn* or by *joggling* them (Art. 125.)

We see, then, that in consequence of friction the weights of the voussoirs and the angles of inclination of their joints need not fulfil those exact relations, which would be necessary if the surfaces were smooth.

127. But the great advantage of friction in the support of an arch is yet to appear. For in order that an arch in a bridge may be of service, it must be able to sustain weights (not immoderate in their magnitude) placed on different parts without breaking.

Let us now suppose a weight W to be placed on the voussoir G_2. This weight adds to the weight of G_2, and consequently disturbs the line of pressure and shifts it to some new position $a'b'd'f'h'j'l'n'o'$ as represented in fig. 49. But the arch will still stand if the angles at a', c', e', g', i', k', m', o' do not exceed the finite limit. Whereas the equilibrium of the arch would certainly be disturbed by W if the surfaces were smooth.

In this way we see, then, the important aid that friction affords in the support of an arch.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of an arch.*

128. Since we suppose the friction of the voussoirs against each other to be so great that they cannot slide upon each other, it follows that the arch can fall only in consequence of its breaking at the upper or lower extremities of some of the joints. And, since we suppose the piers A and B to be immoveable, simple geometrical considerations shew, that if the arch break it must break in at least three pieces, four joints

at least opening, the points where they open being alternately in the extrados and intrados of the arch. So long as the line of pressure cuts all the joints (as is represented in figures 48, 49.) the arch must stand, because in that case the joints are prevented from opening by the pressure acting along that line.

But by continually loading the arch in the same part we may gradually shift the line of pressure till it passes through the extremity of one of the joints, as g' in fig. 50: and now the pressure acting through g' will not prevent the joint $g'H$ opening at H, although other circumstances may.

From what we have already said about the arch not falling till two joints at least in the extrados and two joints at least in the intrados open, it follows, that the arch will certainly stand as we continually load it till the line of pressure passes through the extremities of at least four joints, the extremities being alternately in the intrados and extrados.

If, then, our arch be such, that by loading it we cannot shift the line of pressure into this position, the arch will sustain any load without falling. Nevertheless when the arch is much loaded, and the line of pressure passes through the extremity of any joint, there will be a great strain at that point. This explains the fact observed by Professor Robison, who constructed some chalk models and found that chips fell off from three or four of the extremities of the joints.

If, however, the arch be of such a form that we can place on it a sufficient load to cause the line of pressure to pass through at least four extremities of joints situated alternately in the intrados and extrados, there is a possibility of the arch breaking and falling by the opening of the joints.

Let D, K, L, M (fig. 51.) be the points through which the line of pressure passes in this case: join them by straight lines. Then the arch may be supposed to be a system of heavy beams DK, KL, LM. In order to determine the conditions that the equilibrium of the arch shall be stable, suppose the joints are forcibly opened through very small angles, the parts of the arch being sustained in the position represented in fig. 51. That the equilibrium of the arch may be stable, the joints, when the arch thus sustained in a broken form is left to itself, ought to collapse and not open wider; a condition

which is satisfied if the system of beams DK, KL, LM be such that when left to themselves the point K shall ascend and the point L descend.

Hence to ascertain whether an arch of certain dimensions and figure will sustain any weight placed on it, we must consider all the ways in which the arch can break and find whether in each case the system of beams is of the nature just described. If this be the case we may be assured that the arch will support any weight.

PROP. *To prove that an arch, in which a tangent line drawn at the highest point of the intrados and produced to the abutments lies wholly within the voussoirs, will sustain any weight placed on any part of the extrados without breaking: also if the arch be of greater span than this, it will bear any weight placed on those parts of the extrados from which straight lines can be drawn through the voussoirs to both abutments.*

129. We will take the arch of greatest length under the first conditions mentioned in the enunciation. Let F be the highest point of the intrados (fig. 52.); then the tangent at F passes through the highest point C and C' of the extreme joints. Hence from any point G in the extrados a straight line can be drawn to each pier lying wholly within the mass of the voussoirs. This would not be the case if the arch were the least portion longer without having the voussoirs proportionably lengthened. For suppose the left hand abutment (in the figure) had the position of the dotted line, then no straight line can be drawn from a point c through the voussoirs to the right hand abutment.

It appears, then, that if two straight lines Ga, Gb can be drawn from G through the voussoirs to the piers, the tangent at F must be wholly in the voussoirs: and, this being the case, any weight placed on G will be sustained, since the portions of the arch on the right and left of G will act like beams Gb, Ga, of which the points b and a cannot slip, because we suppose the friction of the voussoirs, or at any rate the joggling, sufficient to prevent sliding.

The second part of the Proposition is evidently true after what has been already written.

130. Cor. 1. The principle of this Proposition seems to have been used by Mylne in the construction of Blackfriars Bridge, London, one of the arches and piers of which we have represented in fig. 53. AVY is a circular arc of which C is the centre, and the radius 56 feet: OV height above low-water = 40 feet: VK = 6 feet 7 inches. AB, YE are circular arcs of radius 35 feet: ab = 19 feet: YI = about 8 or 9 feet. All the joints are joggled: and a line from K to the middle point of the joint YI lies wholly within the masonry; and does not even pass near the extremities of the joints, so that chipping of the voussoirs cannot take place. Therefore the portion YVL cannot break however great the load on or near the crown of the bridge, except by the crushing of the materials: and it would require an enormous pressure on the *haunches* (near Y) to raise the crown, since the weight of KY is about 2000 tons.

The tangent at Y falls within the foot of the pier F: and the pier itself is like one solid mass by having the stones and oaken planks below ab (low-water mark) well joggled, and by having each of the voussoirs between Y and a projecting over the one below it, and so giving each a firm hold of the rubble-work in the centre of the pier (as represented in the figure). The rubble-work itself is held down in its place by the small inverted arch IG. Since, then, the tangent at Y falls within the foot F of the pier, and the pier is as one solid mass, the arch $BAVE$ would stand of itself even were the other arches to fall, since if KY were on the point of falling the pressure would act through Y. This gives additional security to the bridge.

131. Cor. 2. From this Proposition we learn how it is that the Gothic Arch will sustain such enormous weights upon its crown, as we see is the case in many of our ecclesiastical buildings. The stone steeple of St Dunstan's in the East, London, is supported by four semi-pointed arches. In fact, it is a principle that a pointed arch must have a great pressure upon its crown to prevent its falling; for we may consider it as consisting of the two extreme portions of a very large circular arch brought together, so that the pressure on the crown must

at least equal the pressure of the portion of the circular arch which is removed. Flying buttresses always have a great pressure upon their highest part.

But besides this the pointed arch, for the reason explained in the Proposition, will sustain almost any weight on its crown provided the lowest stones do not give way: and consequently the Gothic arch is stronger for lofty buildings than the circular: but the circular arch is far better adapted than the Gothic arch for bridges, since the pressure of weights passing over may act upon any part of the arch, not only on the crown.

An arch built in a wall is almost sure to stand of whatever form it be, so long as its foundation is firm: for suppose the haunches were about to fall in, the crown rising; then, in order that the crown may rise, the whole of the masonry or brick work above the black line (in fig. 54.) must be moved upwards, a weight sufficient to prevent the crown from rising. Moreover, suppose the crown would rise; then directly it had risen and thrust the masonry above it through a small space, the pressure which caused the haunches to sink will cease to act in consequence of the *dove-tailing* together (so to speak) of the stones or bricks, which lie above the haunches. In the the same manner we see that the crown could not sink.

PROP. *To explain the manner in which a dome is supported.*

132. A Dome or Cupola is an assemblage of stones, bricks, or other materials in equilibrium, of which the intrados and extrados are surfaces of revolution having a common vertical axis.

If we consider any given horizontal course of stones, it is evident that this course cannot fall inwards, since all the stones tend equally towards the center, and consequently wedge each other in. But the form of the dome might be such that the weight of the superincumbent courses should thrust out the course under consideration and the courses below. In this way, and in this way only, can the dome fall.

It is very easily seen that a conical dome is secure, and will bear any weight on its upper course, provided the lowest

course is kept from bursting outwards. A dome with its convexity inwards would be still more secure: for every stone is pressed inwards, since it forms part of an arch with its convexity inwards, and extremities in the highest and lowest horizontal courses: consequently the stones of each horizontal course are more firmly held together than in the conical dome.

133. The stone lanthern on the top of St. Paul's Cathedral weighs several hundred tons, and is supported by a brick cone, which is concealed between the outer and inner domes. The lowest course of this cone is above the stone gallery at the bottom of the outer dome, and is held from bursting outwards by an iron chain.

The pyramids, which form the steeples of Gothic architecture, are for the same reasons as the cone stable in their equilibrium. The enormous weight of these steeples is supported by very pointed arches, which spring from the square tower at a considerable distance below the top, and are of such a slight curvature that a straight line can be drawn from the key-stone through all the stones of each leg (Art. 129, 131.): and the thrust down these arches is counteracted by the massive masonry of the tower and the buttresses (as explained in Art. 122.)

In the walls and tower of Salisbury Cathedral are to be seen some fearful cracks which seem to indicate a want of sufficient support for the stupendous steeple which forms so striking a feature of this edifice. The foundation remains firm. Sir Christopher Wren examined these defects, and found that the steeple was braced in different parts with iron bars: and added more for greater security. A little less than a century ago Price, the author of the *British Carpenter*, narrowly inspected the whole, and seems to have proved, that the cathedral was erected under two architects, one completing the work that the other commenced; but that the first architect never contemplated the erection of the steeple nor so lofty a tower as the second architect was bold enough to add to the low tower built by his predecessor; and in consequence of the insufficiency of the supports the cracks now to be seen warned the architect to resort to the expedient of bracers to hold the base of the steeple from spreading. For a very interesting ac-

count of this building we refer the reader to Price's *Series of Observations upon the Cathedral-church of Salisbury*. We have mentioned these particulars because this building is a very remarkable illustration of the necessity of attending to the connexion between the weights and pressures in a building, and the walls arches and buttresses by which they are to be sustained.

134. As an example of the support of a stone vaulting, we shall explain the manner in which the roof of King's College Chapel, Cambridge, is supported.

Figure 55 represents a projection upon a horizontal plane of one compartment of the roof included between the four buttresses f, g, h, k; and figure 56 represents the projection of half this compartment upon the vertical plane of one of the windows on the south side: the same letters in the two figures refer to the same points.

The rib bc runs from the east to the west end of the Chapel, the stones which form it lie in the same horizontal line and at a greater elevation from the ground than any other part of the roof: K is the central stone of the compartment, and is the upper part of one of the ornamented drops seen hanging from the roof in the interior. The stones in aKd lie in an arch of which K is the key-stone: it is clear that the *tendency* of this arch is to sink at the crown K, and thrust down the walls at a and d. We shall proceed, then, to explain how the stones in this arch are supported; and also the stones in the rib bc: and in the course of the explanation it will be seen that we shew how every stone in the compartment $fghk$ is supported.

On examining the roof carefully it will be found that the stones are placed in semi-arches in vertical planes through the buttresses; the spring of all the semi-arches in the space ba being at f, and their crowns or key-stones in the courses bK or Ka: this is best seen in figure 56. Now any stone s in the arch aKd is the key-stone of the two semi-arches sf and sg: and the thrust of the stones in Ks is propagated down the semi-arches sf and sg, and ultimately acts upon the buttresses at f and g; the same is true of every stone in Ka: likewise on the other side of bc the stones in Kd are supported

by the semi-arches, of which they are the key-stones, and which spring from the buttresses h and k. Again, any stone r in Kb is the key-stone of two semi-arches rk and rf, and is held in its place by the thrust of the stones in Kr; and this thrust is propagated down the semi-arches rk and rf, and acts ultimately upon the buttresses k and f: the masonry of the rib bc is sufficiently heavy to prevent these semi-arches from sinking by their key-stone rising. It will be clearly seen, then, how every stone in bc and aKd is supported: it will also be seen that every other stone in the roof is sustained by being a member of a semi-arch springing from one of the buttresses, and having its key-stone in bc or aKd. The pressure of the compartment $fghk$ upon the buttresses acts obliquely: for instance, that on f will act downwards in a line whose projection on the horizontal plane will lie towards the south-east. But the compartment east of $fghk$ will press upon the buttress f in a line whose horizontal projection lies towards the south-west: and consequently the resultant of these pressures will act in a line whose horizontal projection runs due south: let fF be this line (fig. 57.); this figure represents one of the buttresses. The dimensions of the buttress are so arranged that fF shall lie within the masonry and pass into the foundation within the foot of the buttress.

The resultant pressure of the roof on the walls at each of the four angles acts obliquely; consequently instead of buttresses of the ordinary form at the four angles of the building, towers crowned with lofty turrets are erected of such a weight as to deflect the line of pressure of the roof, and cause it to pass into the ground through the masonry.

135. We proceed now to find the position of equilibrium of a chain suspended from two fixed points, and briefly to explain the construction of *Suspension Bridges*.

A chain is an assemblage of rigid pieces of iron linked together, or connected by pivots, as in the chains of suspension bridges. We may therefore apply the principles of Chapter III. to determine the position of equilibrium of the chain. The length of the chain is generally so great in comparison with the length of each link, that we shall suppose the polygonal figure in which the chain hangs to be a continuous

curve. Also we suppose that the motion of the links about their points of connexion is perfectly free; or, in other words, that the mutual action of any two links acts in a tangent line to the curve in which the chain hangs. The curve in which the chain hangs when in equilibrium is called the *Catenary*.

PROP. *A chain of uniform density and thickness is suspended from two given points: required to find the equation to the curve in which the chain hangs when it is in equilibrium* *.

136. Let A and B (in the plane of the paper, which is supposed to be vertical) be the two points of support: fig. 58. After the chain has ceased oscillating and has attained its position of permanent rest, suppose ACB is the curve which it forms, C being the lowest point: take this as the origin of co-ordinates, CM vertical $= x$; MP horizontal $= y$; $CP = s$; P being any point in the curve.

Now the equilibrium of any portion CP will not be disturbed if we suppose this part of the chain to become rigid: this appears from Art. 71. Let c and t be the lengths of portions of the chain of which the weights equal the tensions

* We may calculate the form of the curve in the following manner.

Let us suppose the chain to consist of an infinitely great number of rigid and straight portions, each equal to δs in length: and let τ of these portions lie between C and P: fig. 58. then $s = r\delta s$: also α_r and α_{r-1} being the angles which these portions make with the axis of x, we have by Art. 123.

$$\tan \alpha_r = \frac{r + \frac{3}{2}}{r + \frac{1}{2}} \tan \alpha_{r-1}.$$

Hence $\delta . \tan PTM = \tan \alpha_r - \tan \alpha_{r-1}$

$$= \frac{1}{r + \frac{1}{2}} \tan \alpha_r,$$

$$\text{or } \delta . \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{\frac{dy}{dx} \delta s}{s + \frac{1}{2} \delta s};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2 y}{dx^2} = \frac{1}{s} \frac{dy}{dx} \frac{ds}{dx}; \quad \therefore \log_e \frac{dy}{dx} = \log_e \frac{s}{c};$$

at C and P. Then CP is a rigid body acted on by three forces which are proportional to c, t, s, and act respectively in the directions Cc, Pt, Gs.

Draw PT the tangent at P cutting the axis of x in T. Then the forces holding CP in equilibrium have their directions parallel to the sides of the triangle PMT, and therefore bear the same proportion one to another that these sides do; (see Art. 18.)

$$\therefore \frac{PM}{MT} = \frac{\text{tension at lowest point}}{\text{weight of the portion } CP}$$

$$\text{or } \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{c}{s};$$

$$\therefore \frac{ds}{dx} = \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2} = \frac{\sqrt{c^2 + s^2}}{s},$$

$$\frac{dx}{ds} = \frac{s}{\sqrt{c^2 + s^2}};$$

$$\therefore x + c = \sqrt{c^2 + s^2} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (1),$$

the constant added being such that when $x = 0$ then $s = 0$, since the origin of co-ordinates is taken on the curve at C;

$$\therefore s^2 = x^2 + 2cx \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (2).$$

$$\text{Also } \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{c}{s} = \frac{c}{\sqrt{x^2 + 2cx}};$$

$$\therefore y = c \log_e \left\{\frac{x + c + \sqrt{x^2 + 2cx}}{c}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (3),$$

the constant being so chosen that x and y vanish together.

This last equation may be put under another form

$$e^{\frac{y}{c}} = \frac{x + c}{c} + \sqrt{\left(\frac{x + c}{c}\right)^2 - 1},$$

then transposing $\frac{x + c}{c}$ and squaring both sides of the equation

$$e^{\frac{2y}{c}} - 2e^{\frac{y}{c}} \cdot \frac{x+c}{c} = -1;$$

$$\therefore\ x + c = \frac{c}{2}\left\{e^{\frac{y}{c}} + e^{-\frac{y}{c}}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ (4).$$

Also $s = \sqrt{(x+c)^2 - c^2}$ by equation (2),

$$= \frac{c}{2}\left\{e^{\frac{y}{c}} - e^{-\frac{y}{c}}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ (5).$$

Any one of these five equations may be taken as the equation to the curve.

When the chain is uniform in density and thickness, (as in the present instance) the curve is called the *Common Catenary.*

137. Cor. 1. Of all curves of a given length drawn between two fixed points in a horizontal line, the common catenary is that which has its centre of gravity furthest from the line joining the points.

For since the chain is in equilibrium the depth of its centre of gravity from the horizontal line is a maximum or minimum (Art. 78.) and it is clear that it is a maximum and not a minimum, because if you displace the chain slightly it will return to its position of equilibrium, or its equilibrium is *stable* (Art. 79). Hence in any other position of the chain than that of equilibrium the centre of gravity will be nearer the given horizontal line. But the chain which hangs in the common catenary is of uniform density and thickness, and therefore its centre of gravity coincides with that of the curve: and consequently the common catenary is the curve of the nature described.

Cor. 2. By means of the formulæ of Art. 87. Ex. 2. we shall find that the co-ordinates to the centre of gravity from the lowest point are

$$\bar{x} = \frac{cy}{2s} + \frac{x-c}{2}, \qquad \bar{y} = y - \frac{cx}{s}.$$

138. Cor. 3. We might have taken the origin of co-ordinates at any other point than the lowest; as C', fig. 59.

Let the tangent at C' make an angle a with the vertical. We shall then readily get, if c' be used instead of c in the Proposition,

$$\frac{s}{c'} = \frac{C'T}{C'R} = \frac{\sin(a - PTM)}{\sin PTM}$$

$$= \sin a \cot PTM - \cos a$$

$$= \sin a \frac{dx}{dy} - \cos a;$$

$$\therefore \frac{dx}{ds} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{dy}{dx}\right)^2}} = \frac{s + c' \cos a}{\sqrt{(s + c' \cos a)^2 + (c' \sin a)^2}},$$

$$x + c' = \sqrt{s^2 + 2sc' \cos a + c'^2}.$$

We shall also find that

$$y = c' \sin a \log_e \left\{ \frac{x + c' + \sqrt{x^2 + 2c'x + c'^2 \cos^2 a}}{c'(1 + \cos a)} \right\}.$$

PROP. *To find the tension of the chain at any point.*

139. Let t be the tension at P acting in the direction of the tangent at P and estimated in terms of the length of chain of which the weight equals the tension: then, by what was mentioned in the last Proposition, (fig. 58.)

$$\frac{\text{tension at } P}{\text{weight of } CP} = \frac{PT}{MT}; \quad \therefore \frac{t}{s} = \frac{ds}{dx}.$$

But $s^2 = x^2 + 2cx$, by equation (2) of Art. 136;

$$\therefore t = x + c.$$

This shews that the lengths of chain of which the weights equal the tensions at the various points of the common catenary are such, that if they were suspended from those points their lower extremies would lie in a horizontal line.

For draw CE and PQ vertically downwards and equal to c and $x + c$ respectively: these then are the lengths of chain which measure the tensions at C and P. But $PQ = x + c = MC + CE$, and PM is horizontal: therefore Q and E are in the same horizontal line.

Cor. 1. If a uniform chain hang freely over any two points, the extremities of the chain will lie in the same horizontal line when the chain is in equilibrium.

Prop. *A chain of variable thickness, but of the same material throughout, is suspended from two points: required to find the law of the thickness that the tension at different parts of the chain may vary as the strength of the chain at those parts.*

140. Let S be the length of a uniform chain of which the thickness equals that at the lowest point, and weight equals the weight of the length s of the chain to be suspended.

Let, as before, C be the lowest point (fig. 58.): $CM = x$, $MP = y$, $CP = s$: c the length of uniform chain of the thickness at C, of which the weight equals the tension at C. The portion CP when it has assumed its form of equilibrium may be supposed to become rigid. The forces which retain it in equilibrium are its weight and the tensions at C and P, and these are parallel to the sides of the triangle MTP;

$$\text{and } \because PT = \sqrt{PM^2 + MT^2};$$

$$\therefore \text{ tension at } P = \frac{\sqrt{c^2 + S^2}}{c} \text{ tension at } C.$$

But the thickness of the chain at P varies ultimately as the quantity of material in a given short length δs of the chain, since the density is constant: it therefore varies as $\frac{dS}{ds}$. But by the hypothesis the tension must vary as the thickness of the chain;

$$\therefore \frac{dS}{ds} \text{ varies as } \sqrt{c^2 + S^2} \text{ or } \frac{dS}{ds} = \frac{\sqrt{c^2 + S^2}}{c}$$

since S and s are ultimately equal;

$$\therefore s = c \log_e \left(\frac{S + \sqrt{S^2 + c^2}}{c} \right) \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (6)$$

$$\text{Also } \frac{c}{S} = \frac{MP}{MT} = \frac{dy}{dx}; \quad \therefore \frac{ds}{dx} = \frac{\sqrt{c^2+S^2}}{S}.$$

$$\text{But } \frac{dS}{ds} = \frac{\sqrt{c^2+S^2}}{c};$$

$$\therefore \frac{dS}{dx} = \frac{c^2+S^2}{cS} \text{ or } \frac{dx}{dS} = \frac{cS}{c^2+S^2};$$

$$\therefore x = c \log_e \frac{\sqrt{c^2+S^2}}{c} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (7).$$

$$\text{Also } \frac{dy}{dS} = \frac{dy}{dx}\frac{dx}{dS} = \frac{c^2}{c^2+S^2};$$

$$\therefore y = c \tan^{-1}\frac{S}{c} \text{ or } S = c \tan\frac{y}{c} \ldots\ldots\ldots (8).$$

141. These formulæ have been reduced to Tables by Sir Davies Gilbert in the Philosophical Transactions for 1826. We give the following extracts from them to elucidate the application of the equations to the construction of Suspension Bridges.

TABLE I. The Common Catenary.

$y = 100$.

c	x	s	t	Angle.
1000	5.004	100.166	1005.004	84° 16′ 48″
980	5.106	100.173	985.106	84 9 49
...	....	... ...	... ...	.. .. ..
420	11.961	100.947	431.961	76 29 6
400	12.565	101.045	412.565	75 49 22
380	13.234	101.158	393.234	75 5 35
...	.. ...	... ...	... ...	.. .. ..

TABLE II. The Common Catenary.

$c = 100.$

y	x	s	t	Angle.
1	.005	1.000	100.005	89° 25′ 39″
2	.020	2.000	100.020	88 51 15
.	...	.. ...	... ...	.. .. ..
20	2.007	20.134	102.007	78 36 59
21	2.213	21.155	102.213	78 3 19
..	....	.. ...	... ...	.. .. ..

TABLE III. The Catenary of equal strength.

$y = 100.$

c	x	s	S	t	Angle.
1000	5.008	100.167	100.334	1005.021	84 16′ 15″
980	5.111	100.174	100.348	985.124	84 9 12
...	....	.....	.....	.....	.. ..
420	12.019	100.958	101.933	432.193	76 21 29
400	12.631	101.057	102.137	412.832	75 10 33
...	.....	.....	.....	....	.. .. ..

TABLE IV. The Catenary of equal strength.

$c = 100$.

y	x	s	S	t	Angle.
1	.005	1.000	1.000	100.005	$89^0\ 25'\ 37''$
2	.020	2.000	2.000	100.020	88 51 14
.	...	....	....	.....	.. .. ..
20	2.013	20.135	20.271	102.034	78 32 23
21	2.221	21.156	21.314	102.246	77 58 4
.	....	.....	.....	.....	.. .. ..

To explain the use of these Tables we shall take an example of each species of Catenary.

Ex. 1. *Let the span proposed for a Suspension Bridge be* 800 *feet, and let the adjunct weight of suspension rods, road-way .... be taken at one half of the weight of the chains: and let it be determined to load the chains at the point of their greatest strain, that is at the points of suspension, with one-sixth part of the weight they are theoretically capable of sustaining.*

The modulus which measures the full tenacity of iron is shewn by numerous experiments to be 9800 feet: this being the greatest length of iron bar which another iron bar of equal transverse dimensions will support without sensibly stretching.

Now this modulus must be reduced in the ratio 3 : 2, since we have supposed the weight of the rods road-way ... to be equal to half the weight of the chains, and consequently we add to the weight of the chains without adding to their strength. The virtual modulus is therefore 9867 feet: and the tension of the chain at the points of support is by hypothesis to $= 9867 \div 6$ feet $= 1644.5$ feet.

The semi-span is 400 feet. In Table I. y is taken = 100 measures; therefore each of these measures is 4 feet: and the tension at the points of support expressed in these measures = 1644.5 ÷ 4 = 411.124. But by Table I. when $t = 412$,

$c =$ 400 measures = 1600 feet,

$x =$ 12.565 ..... = 50.260 ....

$s =$ 101.045 ..... = 404.180 ....

The angle of suspension = 75° 49′.

Having found the value of c we may make use of Table II. to find the lengths of the rods for the different ordinates of the curve. In this Table c is taken at 100 measures, consequently each measure equals 16 feet.

Each gradation of y in that Table will therefore be 16 feet; and the second column gives the number of measures by which the suspending rods corresponding to the respective values of y must exceed the length of the suspending rod at the apex or centre of the bridge.

Let the following Table be formed from Table II. by taking the successive differences of the values of s:

1st measure of y.	length of arc of catenary = 1.000 measures.
2nd	..... = 1.000 .....
.....	.....
.....	.....
21st	..... = 1.021 .....
.....	.....

The last column of numbers gives the proportional part of the adjunct weights which must be suspended from the successive portions of the catenary, in order to distribute them equally throughout.

In this example we have supposed the adjunct weights to be equally distributed along the chain, so as virtually merely to increase its uniform thickness. We shall now in

Ex. 2. *Suppose the catenary to be one of equal strength:* i. e. *the tension at every part proportional to the strength: the other data the same as before.*

In this case c represents the uniform tension on each portion of iron throughout the chains whose transverse section equals that at the lowest point. In the uniform catenary the greatest tension (that at the points of support) was found equal 411.125 measures of 4 feet each: we shall take this then for the value of c in the case of a catenary of equal strength.

Turning then to Table III. (in which, as before, each measure is 4 feet) and taking the proportional part between 400 and 420, we have

$x =$ 12.290 measures or 49.161 feet,

$s =$ 101.002 ..... 404.008 ....

$S =$ 102.024 ..... 408.096 ....

$t =$ 423.602 ..... 1694.408 ....

angle $= 76^0\ 3'\ 17''$.

We have taken c at 411.125 measures or 1644.5 feet, but Table IV. is calculated for $c = 100$: and therefore each measure of this table is 16.445 feet: and the second column determines the excess of length of the respective rods over that at the apex for every gradation of y.

Let us form a Table, as before, of the differences of s and S.

1st measure of y	1.000	1.000	1.000
2nd	1.001	1.000	.999
.....	.....	.....	.....
.....	.....	.....	.....
21st	1.021	1.043	1.002
.....	.....	.....	.....

The fourth column gives the quantity of matter of which the chain must be composed at the various ordinates of which the values are in the first column. Also the adjunct weights of rods, road-way...should be distributed in portions proportional to the numbers of the third column.

CHAPTER VII.

PROBLEMS.

---

142. In the last two Chapters we have illustrated the principles of equilibrium by applying them to the solution of various questions. Our object in the present Chapter is to make some general remarks upon the solution of Statical Problems, and to give a few more applications.

143. The conditions of equilibrium of a single particle acted upon by forces which act in any directions, are three in number,

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z = 0,$$

X, Y, Z being the resolved parts parallel to three rectangular co-ordinate axes of any one of the forces: Art. 23.

If the directions of these forces all lie in the same plane, and this plane be taken for that of xy, then the third equation becomes identical and there are only two conditions. If the forces all act in the same line and this line be taken for the axis of x, then the last two equations are identical and there is only one condition.

The conditions of equilibrium of a rigid body, or of a system of rigid bodies, acted on by forces which act in any directions, are six in number,

$$\Sigma . X = 0, \quad \Sigma . Y = 0, \quad \Sigma . Z = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . (Zy - Yz) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Xz - Zx) = 0, \quad \Sigma . (Yx - Xy) = 0,$$

X, Y, Z being the resolved parts parallel to three rectangular co-ordinate axes of any one of the forces, and xyz the co-ordinates to the point of application of that force.

If the forces all act in the same plane and this plane be taken for the plane of xy, the third, fifth and sixth equations become identical, and there are only three equations of condition. Art. 65, 53.

144. When we wish to solve a statical problem we must consider what forces act upon the body that is to be in equilibrium: for unknown pressures and reactions we must substitute unknown forces, which we shall call *mechanical quantities:* also for unknown distances, angles of position, and so on, we must use unknown quantities; these we shall term *geometrical quantities.* After this we must write down the equations of equilibrium, the number of which will depend upon the nature of the problem, as mentioned in the last article. We must next write down the equations (if there be any) which connect the geometrical quantities. Lastly, we must count the unknown quantities involved in the equations; and if their number exceed the number of equations, it shews that the problem is indeterminate, or else that we have not written down all the equations of condition: we must therefore search for more; they must be equations connecting the geometrical quantities, since we know, by the principles of equilibrium, that there cannot be any more mechanical equations.

If in the end the number of equations be less than the number of unknown quantities, then equilibrium will subsist under several circumstances, and is said to be indeterminate; it does not follow that *all* the unknown quantities are indeterminate. If the number of unknown quantities equal the number of equations, then equilibrium will subsist in one way only. If it be found that there are more equations than unknown quantities, then the equilibrium will not subsist unless the known quantities fulfil the conditions at which we arrive by eliminating the unknown quantities from the equations.

145. It will often happen that we can materially diminish the labour of solving the equations by properly choosing the centre of moments, and the lines parallel to which we resolve the forces. Also by having regard to the object of the problem, whether it be to find the position of equilibrium of a

body, the magnitude and direction of an unknown pressure, and so on, we may frequently set aside some of the equations as having no reference to the particular point of enquiry. Thus in Art. 121. the object is to find T, the tension of the tie-beam. Upon examining the four equations we see immediately that (2) may be set aside, because it contains an unknown quantity R, which does not enter any of the other equations, and therefore (2) is of use solely to determine R, a quantity which it is not the immediate object of the problem to discover. Equation (1) gives T when P and θ are known, and these are found from (3) and (4). Again, Art. 122. gives a good illustration of an indeterminate problem. For (1) (2) (3) are the only mechanical equations that can possibly exist, and these contain only one unknown geometrical quantity x, and consequently a fourth equation does not exist, or the problem is indeterminate: as we might easily have foreseen from the nature of the case. It does not follow that every unknown quantity in the equations is indeterminate, as we see in this instance.

146. We shall now add a few Problems.

PROB. 1. A given weight W is held at rest on a known curve AP lying in a vertical plane by means of a given weight Q acting over the pully B: required the position of rest: fig. 60.

The vertical BM through B is the axis of x, B the origin, $BM = x$, $MP = y$, P being the position of the weight; angle $B = \theta$. Now the weight is held in equilibrium by Q acting in PB, W in PW, and the reaction of the curve, or R, acting in GR a normal to the curve at P: hence, resolving these forces vertically and horizontally, Art. 23. gives

$$W - Q\cos\theta - R\cos PGB = 0,$$

$$Q\sin\theta - R\sin PGB = 0;$$

or, since $\tan PGB = \dfrac{dx}{dy}$,

$$W - Q\cos\theta - R\frac{dy}{ds} = 0 \ldots\ldots (1),$$

$$Q \sin\theta - R\frac{dx}{ds} = 0 \ldots\ldots (2),$$

two equations and five unknown quantities R, θ, x, y, s: since equations (1) (2) are the only conditions of equilibrium, the other three equations must be among the quantities θ, x, y, s: they are

$$\tan\theta = \frac{y}{x} \ldots\ldots (3), \quad \frac{ds}{dx} = \sqrt{1 + \frac{dy^2}{dx^2}} \ldots\ldots (4),$$

$$\text{and } \phi(x, y) = 0 \ldots\ldots (5)$$

the equation to the curve. These five equations will solve the problem when we select any particular curve.

The elimination of R from (1) and (2) gives

$$W - Q\left(\cos\theta + \frac{dy}{dx}\sin\theta\right) = 0,$$

$$\text{or } W - Q\left(\frac{x}{r} + \frac{y}{r}\frac{dy}{dx}\right) = 0 \text{ by (3): } r^2 = x^2 + y^2,$$

$$\text{or } W dx - Q dr = 0$$

the equation of virtual velocities which we should have obtained from Art. 24.

Suppose the curve is a circle the centre being at a vertical distance c from the point B: then a being the radius

$$y^2 + (x - c)^2 = a^2;$$

$$\therefore r^2 = x^2 + y^2 = a^2 - c^2 + 2cx; \quad \therefore \frac{dr}{dx} = \frac{c}{r};$$

$$\therefore \frac{r}{c} = \frac{Q}{W}, \quad \frac{r^2}{c^2} = \frac{Q^2}{W^2};$$

$$\therefore x = \frac{r^2 - a^2 + c^2}{2c} = \frac{(Q^2 - W^2)c^2 - W^2a^2}{2cW^2},$$

and the position of W is known.

PROB. 2. A cord $AA_1A_2 \ldots a$ is held at rest by forces acting at its extremities and at the knots $A_1A_2A_3 \ldots$ in given directions: having given the form of the polygonal figure of the cord required to find the relations of the forces; also to find the tensions of the portions of cord: fig. 61.

The portions of cord need not be in the same plane; but the force which acts at any knot, as P_1 at A_1, must have its direction in the plane of the portions of cord which join in A_1. Let $P_1P_2 \ldots$ be the forces acting at the knots $A_1A_2 \ldots$: $T\,T_1\,T_2 \ldots T_n$ the tensions of the portions of cord: $\alpha_1\beta_1$, $\alpha_2\beta_2, \ldots$ the angles which the directions of $P_1P_2 \ldots$ make respectively with the portions of cord at the knots.

Then A_1 is held at rest by the three forces $P_1\,T_1\,T$; hence, resolving these forces in the direction of P_1 and at right angles to this, we have by Art. 23.

$$P_1 - T\cos\alpha_1 - T_1\cos\beta_1 = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (1),$$

$$T\sin\alpha_1 - T_1\sin\beta_1 = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (2).$$

Again, A_2 is held at rest by $T_1\,P_2\,T_2$; hence

$$P_2 - T_1\cos\alpha_2 - T_2\cos\beta_2 = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (3),$$

$$T_1\sin\alpha_2 - T_2\sin\beta_2 = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (4),$$

and so on: if there be n knots we shall have $2n$ equations, involving $2n+1$ unknown forces $P_1\,P_2 \ldots P_n\,T\,T_1 \ldots\ldots T_n$: we shall therefore have an equation of condition connecting these forces, we shall suppose T to be known.

By equations (2) (4) ..... we have

$$\frac{T_1}{T} = \frac{\sin\alpha_1}{\sin\beta_1}, \quad \frac{T_2}{T_1} = \frac{\sin\alpha_2}{\sin\beta_2}, \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots \quad \frac{T_n}{T_{n-1}} = \frac{\sin\alpha_n}{\sin\beta_n};$$

$$\therefore\ T_1 = \frac{\sin\alpha_1}{\sin\beta_1}\,T, \quad T_2 = \frac{\sin\alpha_1\sin\alpha_2}{\sin\beta_1\sin\beta_2}\,T, \text{ and so on,}$$

and the tensions are all known in terms of T.

Also by (1) (2) eliminating T_1,

$$P_1 = \frac{T\sin\beta_1}{\sin(\alpha_1+\beta_1)}, \text{ and in like manner}$$

$$P_2 = \frac{T_1 \sin \beta_2}{\sin (\alpha_2 + \beta_2)} = \frac{T \sin \alpha_1 \sin \beta_2}{\sin \beta_1 \sin (\alpha_2 + \beta_2)}, \text{ and so on.}$$

Hence all the forces $P_1 P_2 \ldots$ are known in terms of T.

We shall now solve a few problems of forces acting on a rigid body in the same plane: see Art. 52, 53. When the system consists of more than one rigid body, we shall consider each body separately.

PROB. 3. A uniform beam passing freely through a hole H in a wall rests with one end on an inclined plane: find the position of equilibrium: fig. 62.

AH horizontal $= h$, $\angle A = \alpha$, $PH = x$, $PG = a$: $\angle AHP = \theta$, pressure at $P = R$ perpendicular to the plane, pressure at H perpendicular to beam and $= Q$: resolving the forces vertically and horizontally

$$W - R \cos \alpha - Q \cos \theta = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (1),$$

$$R \sin \alpha - Q \sin \theta = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (2),$$

taking the centre of moments at P,

$$Wa \cos \theta - Qx = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (3),$$

these equations involve four unknown quantities R, Q, θ, x, we must search for a relation between x and θ: this is

$$\frac{x}{h} = \frac{\sin \alpha}{\sin (\alpha + \theta)} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \quad (4).$$

Our object is to determine the position of equilibrium: that is, to find x and θ: we have one equation (4), we must therefore obtain another between x and θ by eliminating R and Q from (1) (2) (3).

By (1) (2), elim^{g}. R, $\frac{W}{Q} = \frac{\sin (\alpha + \theta)}{\sin \alpha}$: by (3) $\frac{W}{Q} = \frac{x}{a \cos \theta}$;

$$\therefore \frac{\sin (\alpha + \theta)}{\sin \alpha} = \frac{x}{a \cos \theta}.$$

Eliminating x from this by (4) we have

$$\cos\theta \sin^2(\alpha+\theta) = \frac{h}{a}\sin^2\alpha,$$

from which θ, and therefore the position of the beam, is to be determined.

$$\text{If } \alpha = 90^0, \quad \cos\theta = \sqrt[3]{\frac{h}{a}}.$$

PROB. 4. A sphere and cone in contact rest, as in fig. 63, on two inclined planes, the intersection of which is a horizontal line: required the angle of the cone and the position of equilibrium.

W, W' the weights of the sphere and cone: R the reaction at B: P the mutual action at E: the resultant of the reactions of the plane on the base of the cone must act at some point D, let Q be this resultant: $CD = x$: G the centre of gravity of the cone: rad. of sphere $= a$, $Ge = z$, e being the point where the normal at E cuts the axis of the cone: 2θ = the angle of the cone: α, β the angles the planes make with the horizon.

For the sphere, $W - R\cos\beta + P\sin(\alpha-\theta) = 0$ ..... (1),

$$R\sin\beta - P\cos(\alpha-\theta) = 0 \text{ ..... (2).}$$

The equation of moments is an identical equation.

For the cone, $W' - Q\cos\alpha - P\sin(\alpha-\theta) = 0$ ..... (3),

$$Q\sin\alpha - P\cos(\alpha-\theta) = 0 \text{ ..... (4),}$$

$$\text{moments about } G,\ Qx - Pz\cos\theta = 0 \text{ ..... (5).}$$

These five equations involve six unknown quantities: if there be a sixth equation it must be a relation connecting the *geometrical* quantities involved in these five equations: but a little consideration will shew us that no necessary connexion exists between any two of x, θ, z: hence the problem is indeterminate. By examining the equations we perceive that the first four involve only the four unknown quantities P, R, Q, θ: hence

these are determinate; but x and z are indeterminate since they are connected only by (5): for any given position, however, of the bodies z is known by geometry, and consequently x becomes known by (5).

We learn from this that if θ be chosen so as to satisfy equations (1) (2) (3) (4), the bodies will remain at rest in whatever position they are placed, their centres of gravity remaining in the plane of the paper: and as we give the bodies different positions z varies, consequently x and therefore the point of application of Q changes.

By (1) (2) $\dfrac{P}{W} = \dfrac{\sin\beta}{\cos(\alpha+\beta-\theta)}$; by (3) (4) $\dfrac{P}{W'} = \dfrac{\sin\alpha}{\cos\theta}$;

$$\therefore \frac{W}{W'} = \frac{\sin\alpha\cos(\alpha+\beta-\theta)}{\sin\beta\cos\theta} = \frac{\sin\alpha}{\sin\beta}\{\cos(\alpha+\beta)+\sin(\alpha+\beta)\tan\theta\};$$

$$\therefore \tan\theta = \frac{W\sin\beta - W'\sin\alpha\cos(\alpha+\beta)}{W'\sin\alpha\sin(\alpha+\beta)}$$

$$= \frac{(W+W')\sin\beta}{W'\sin\alpha\sin(\alpha+\beta)} - \frac{\sin(2\alpha+\beta)}{\sin\alpha\sin(\alpha+\beta)}.$$

By (4) (5) $\dfrac{x}{z} = \dfrac{\sin\alpha\cos\theta}{\cos(\alpha-\theta)} = \dfrac{\sin\alpha}{\cos\alpha+\sin\alpha\tan\theta}$

$$= \frac{W'\sin\alpha\sin(\alpha+\beta)}{W'\{\cos\alpha\sin(\alpha+\beta)-\sin\alpha\cos(\alpha+\beta)\}+W\sin\beta}$$

$$= \frac{W'\sin\alpha\sin(\alpha+\beta)}{(W+W')\sin\beta}.$$

The value of $\tan\theta$ gives the angle of the cone necessary for equilibrium, and the value of x gives the point of application of Q for any given position of the bodies.

PROB. 5. A person suspended in a balance of which the arms are equal thrusts his centre of gravity out of the vertical by means of a rod fixed to the furthest extremity of the beam of the balance, the direction of the rod passing through his centre of gravity: given that the rod and the line from the nearer end of the beam of the balance to his centre of gravity

make angles α, β with the vertical, shew that his apparent and true weights are in the ratio $\sin(\alpha+\beta) : \sin(\alpha-\beta)$.

PROB. 6. A uniform beam placed in a hemispherical bowl is in equilibrium, find its position.

PROB. 7. A cylinder with its axis horizontal is supported on an inclined plane by a beam which rests upon it and has its lower extremity fastened to the plane by a hinge: find the conditions of equilibrium.

PROB. 8. Two uniform beams of equal length are loosely connected, each by one extremity, to the extremities of another uniform beam, they are then placed on a sphere; find the pressures on the sphere at the three points of contact, the length of the middle beam being less than the diameter of the sphere.

PROB. 9. To determine the conditions of equilibrium on Roberval's Balance; see Art. 99. and fig. 35.

This machine consists of five rigid bodies; and since the forces all act in the same (the vertical) plane we shall have fifteen equations: the figure will point out the meaning of the various unknown quantities, the description of which we omit here to save room.

The equilibrium of the part supporting Q gives

$$Q - R\cos\theta - R'\cos\theta' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

$$R\sin\theta - R'\sin\theta' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2),$$

$$Qr - Rb\sin\theta = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3).$$

The equilibrium of the bar CC' gives

$$V\cos\psi - R\cos\theta - S\cos\phi = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (4),$$

$$V\sin\psi + R\sin\theta - S\sin\phi = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (5),$$

$$Ra\sin(\alpha+\theta) - Sa'\sin(\alpha-\phi) = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (6).$$

The equilibrium of the bar DD' gives

$$V'\cos\psi' - R'\cos\theta' - S'\cos\phi' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (7),$$

$$V'\sin\psi' + R'\sin\theta' - S'\sin\phi' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (8),$$

$$R'a\sin(\alpha-\theta') - S'a'\sin(\alpha+\phi') = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (9).$$

The equilibrium of the part supporting P gives

$$P - S\cos\phi - S'\cos\phi' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (10),$$

$$S\sin\phi - S'\sin\phi' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (11),$$

$$Ps - Sb\sin\phi = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (12).$$

The equilibrium of the stem and stand gives

$$W - T + V\cos\psi + V'\cos\psi' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (13),$$

$$V\sin\psi - V'\sin\psi' = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (14),$$

$$Tx - V'(h+b)\sin\psi' + Vh\sin\psi \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (15).$$

These equations contain 15 unknown quantities, namely, $R\,R'$ $V\,V'\,S\,S'\,T\theta\,\theta'\,\psi\,\psi'\,\phi\,\phi'\,x$ and the ratio of Q to P. Some of these must be indeterminate since (as we might have foreseen) (14) is a consequence of (2) (5) (8) (11).

To obtain the ratio $\dfrac{Q}{P}$.

By (1) (2) $\dfrac{Q}{R} = \dfrac{\sin(\theta+\theta')}{\sin\theta'}$, by (10) (11) $\dfrac{P}{S} = \dfrac{\sin(\phi+\phi')}{\sin\phi'}$;

$$\therefore \frac{Q\sin(\phi+\phi')}{P\sin(\theta+\theta')} = \frac{R\sin\phi'}{S\sin\theta'} = \frac{a'\sin(a-\phi)\sin\phi'}{a\sin(a+\theta)\sin\theta'} \text{ by (6).}$$

If we had eliminated R and S first and then $R'\,S'$,

$$\frac{Q\sin(\phi+\phi')}{P\sin(\theta+\theta')} = \frac{R'\sin\phi}{S'\sin\theta} = \frac{a'\sin(a+\phi')\sin\phi}{a\sin(a-\theta')\sin\theta} \text{ by (9).}$$

Adding these equations after multiplying them respectively by the denominators of the right-hand sides we have

$$\{\sin(a+\theta)\sin\theta' + \sin(a-\theta')\sin\theta\}\,\frac{Q\sin(\phi+\phi')}{P\sin(\theta+\theta')}$$

$$= \frac{a'}{a}\{\sin(a-\phi)\sin\phi' + \sin(a+\phi')\sin\phi\};$$

$$\therefore \sin a\sin(\theta+\theta')\cdot\frac{Q\sin(\phi+\phi')}{P\sin(\theta+\theta')} = \frac{a'}{a}\sin a\sin(\phi+\phi');$$

$$\therefore \frac{Q}{P} = \frac{a'}{a},$$

that is, the weights must always be inversely as the arms DE', $D'E'$, and do not depend on r and s.

To find T.

Add together (1) (4) (7) (10) (13) after changing the signs in (4) (7), we have

$$T = W + P + Q.$$

To find x.

By (14) (15) $Tx = Vb \sin \psi$

$$= Ps - Qr \text{ by (5) (3) (12)} = P\left(s - \frac{a'}{a} r\right);$$

$$\therefore x = \frac{P}{W + P + Q}\left(s - \frac{a'}{a} r\right).$$

This shews that as we shift the weights P and Q the point B, at which the reaction and consequently the resultant downward-pressure acts, shifts also. If the ratio of r and s be such that B is at C, then if P be shifted outwards or Q inwards the balance will fall moving about the point C. If the stem be fixed of course the balance will not fall; but then the *strain* upon the stem will change as we shift P and Q. The strains at the pivots are indeterminate, nevertheless they alter as P and Q are shifted.

In this way the paradoxical character of the balance is explained.

We shall illustrate the Principle of Virtual Velocities in the solution of the following problem.

PROB. 10. A beam in a vertical plane rests on a post B and against a wall at A, as represented in fig. 64: required the circumstances of equilibrium.

Distance of B from the wall $= b$: $AG = a$: $\angle GAD = \theta$. The reaction (P) of the post at B is perpendicular to the surfaces in contact, and therefore to the beam: the reaction (R) of the wall is perpendicular to the wall for the same reason: W the weight of the beam. We may consider the

beam in equilibrium under the action of P, R, W, and suppose the post and wall removed.

Now the object of the problem might be solely to determine the position of equilibrium, or also to determine P and not R, or R and not P, or to determine both P and R and also the position of equilibrium. We shall solve the problem by the Principle of Virtual Velocities under these four suppositions in order to explain the method of proceeding so as to avoid as much trouble as possible according to the nature of the question.

1. Suppose the position of equilibrium only required. We must then give the beam a small arbitrary geometric motion such that the unknown pressures P and R shall not occur in the equation of virtual velocities: the beam must therefore remain in contact with the wall and the post: as in fig. 64.

Let $\delta\theta$ be the increase of θ owing to the displacement. Then height of G above the horizontal through B (or h)

$$= GB \cos\theta = (a - b \operatorname{cosec}\theta) \cos\theta = a\cos\theta - b\cot\theta;$$

$$\therefore \text{ vertical space described by } G = \delta h = \left(\frac{b}{\sin^2\theta} - a\sin\theta\right) d\theta,$$

and by virtual velocities $W\delta h = 0$;

$$\therefore\ b - a\sin^3\theta = 0, \quad \sin\theta = \sqrt[3]{\frac{b}{a}},$$

and this determines the *position of equilibrium*.

2. But suppose we wished to find the pressure P as well as the position of equilibrium.

We ought in this case to have moved the beam off the post, as in fig. 65, in order that the virtual velocity of B with respect to P may not vanish, and consequently P not disappear as in case (1).

Let $AA' = c$, and let, as before, $\delta\theta$ be the change of θ.

Then the space described by B in direction of P's action, (since BP is perpendicular to AB) equals the difference of the resolved parts of AA' and $A'B'$ in the direction of P

$$= AA'\sin\theta - A'B'\cos(90^\circ - \delta\theta), \quad A'B' = AB = b\operatorname{cosec}\theta$$

$$= c\sin\theta - b\operatorname{cosec}\theta\,\delta\theta.$$

Also space described by G in direction of W

$$= AG\cos\theta - AA' - A'G'\cos(\theta + \delta\theta)$$

$$= a\cos\theta - c - a\cos\theta + a\sin\theta\,\delta\theta = a\sin\theta\,\delta\theta - c;$$

therefore by the equation of virtual velocities

$$W(a\sin\theta\,\delta\theta - c) + P(c\sin\theta - b\operatorname{cosec}\theta\,\delta\theta) = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ \delta\theta(Wa\sin\theta - Pb\operatorname{cosec}\theta) - c(W - P\sin\theta) = 0;$$

and since c and $\delta\theta$ may be any independent small quantities

$$Wa\sin\theta - Pb\operatorname{cosec}\theta = 0, \quad W - P\sin\theta = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ \sin\theta = \sqrt[3]{\frac{b}{a}} \text{ and } \frac{P}{W} = \sqrt[3]{\frac{a}{b}}.$$

3. Suppose we wished to know R and the position of equilibrium, and not P.

Then we should give the beam such an arbitrary motion (fig. 66.) as to give A a virtual velocity with respect to R, but not one to B with respect to P. Let $AA' = c$, $BAA' = a$;

$\therefore\ \delta\theta = \dfrac{c\sin a}{AB - c\cos a} = \dfrac{c}{b}\sin a\sin\theta$; and the virtual vel. of G

$$= AG\cos\theta - c\cos(\theta - a) - A'G'\cos(\theta + \delta\theta)$$

$$= \left(\frac{a}{b}\sin^2\theta - \sin\theta\right) c\sin a - c\cos a\cos\theta;$$

and virtual velocity of $A = c\sin(\theta - a)$;

$$\therefore\ W\left\{\left(\frac{a}{b}\sin^2\theta - \sin\theta\right) c\sin a - c\cos a\cos\theta\right\}$$

$$+ R(c\cos a\sin\theta - c\sin a\cos\theta) = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ W\left(\frac{a}{b}\sin^2\theta - \sin\theta\right) - R\cos\theta = 0, \quad W\cos\theta - R\sin\theta = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ \sin\theta = \sqrt[3]{\frac{b}{a}} \text{ and } \frac{R}{W} = \frac{\sqrt{a^{\frac{2}{3}} - b^{\frac{2}{3}}}}{b^{\frac{1}{3}}}.$$

4. Lastly, suppose we wished to determine P and R and the position of equilibrium.

These three equations are the equations which we should have obtained by the principles of Art 53. they give by elimination

$$\sin\theta = \sqrt[3]{\frac{b}{a}}\,; \quad \frac{P}{W} = \left(\frac{a}{b}\right)^{\frac{1}{3}}, \quad \frac{R}{W} = \frac{\sqrt{a^{\frac{2}{3}} - b^{\frac{2}{3}}}}{b^{\frac{1}{3}}}.$$

We have thus illustrated the method of application of this principle: and we observe, in general, that when the object of the problem does not require certain unknown forces we must give the body the most arbitrary geometrical motion possible without giving the points of application of these forces any motion in their direction.

The first case of the four just solved is an application of the principle proved in Art. 78. and which was deduced from the principle of virtual velocities. We may determine whether

the equilibrium be stable or unstable (Art. 79.) by differentiating h a second time:

$$\frac{dh}{d\theta} = \frac{b}{\sin^2\theta} - a\sin\theta; \quad \therefore \frac{d^2h}{d\theta^2} = -\left(\frac{2b}{\sin^3\theta} + a\right)\cos\theta,$$

which is negative when $\frac{dh}{d\theta} = 0$: hence h is a maximum and the equilibrium is unstable.

We may frequently make use of this method to discover the nature of the equilibrium.

PROB. 11. A body with a convex surface rests on a fixed body with a convex surface: required whether the equilibrium is stable or unstable: fig. 68.

Let CAO be a normal to the two surfaces at the point of contact A of the two bodies when the upper body is at rest: then the centre of gravity of the upper body is in that line: let C be its distance from O the centre of curvature at A: let a and b be the radii of curvature at A of the curves in which the plane of the paper (supposed vertical) cuts the bodies: displace the upper body through a very small angle as in the figure: angle $C = \theta$:

$\therefore$ h = dist. of cen. of grav. from horizontal through C,

$$= (a+b)\cos\theta - c\cos(\theta + A'O'B), \quad A'O'B = \frac{A'B}{b} = \frac{a\theta}{b}$$

$$= (a+b)\cos\theta - c\cos\left(1 + \frac{a}{b}\right)\theta$$

$$= (a+b)\left(1 - \frac{c}{b}\right) - \left\{(a+b) - \frac{c}{b^2}(a+b)^2\right\}\frac{\theta^2}{2}.$$

Hence h is a maximum or minimum, or the equilibrium is unstable or stable, according as c is $<$ or $> \frac{b^2}{a+b}$

or as AG is $>$ or $<$ $(b - c$ or$)$ $\frac{ab}{a+b}$.

We shall close this Chapter with a few examples of Problems in which Friction is considered. The only change

will be that we must substitute some unknown force for the friction acting at right angles to the pressure; if we suppose the parts acted on by friction to be on the point of slipping, this force $= \mu . P$, where P is pressure of the rough surfaces and μ a constant known by experiment: see Art. 118.

PROB. 12. A cylinder with its axis horizontal is held at rest on an inclined plane by a string coiled round its middle and then fastened on the plane; fig. 69: find the conditions of equilibrium friction being considered. The forces act as drawn in the figure.

The conditions of equilibrium are

$$W - R \sin \alpha - F \cos \alpha - T \cos (\theta + \alpha) = 0 \ldots\ldots (1),$$

$$R \cos \alpha - F \sin \alpha - T \sin (\theta + \alpha) = 0 \ldots\ldots (2),$$

moments about the axis, $Ta - Fa = 0 \ldots\ldots (3)$,

these are the only equations; and they contain four unknown quantities R, T, F, x: but we know that F cannot be greater than $\mu . R$: this limits the indeterminateness of the problem.

Eliminate T from (2) (3); $\quad \therefore \dfrac{F}{R} = \dfrac{\cos \alpha}{\sin \alpha + \sin (\theta + \alpha)}$;

$$\therefore \sin \alpha + \sin (\theta + \alpha) \text{ cannot be less than } \frac{\cos \alpha}{\mu},$$

$$\theta + \alpha \text{ cannot be less than } \sin^{-1} \left(\frac{\cos \alpha - \mu \sin \alpha}{\mu} \right),$$

but it may be greater.

PROB. 13. A cylinder lies upon two equal cylinders all in contact and having their axes parallel: and the lower cylinders rest on a horizontal plane: $\mu \mu'$ the coefficients of friction respectively between the cylinders and each cylinder and the plane: find the conditions of equilibrium, and the relation of μ and μ' that all the points of contact may begin to slip at the same instant: fig. 70.

The forces as in the figure.

The upper cylinder, $W - 2R \cos \alpha - 2F \sin \alpha = 0 \ldots\ldots (1)$,

the other two equations of this cylinder are identical.

One of the lower cylinders,

$$W' - R' + R\cos\alpha + F\sin\alpha = 0 \ldots\ldots (2),$$

$$F' - R\sin\alpha + F\cos\alpha = 0 \ldots\ldots (3),$$

$$F' - F = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (4),$$

these are all the equations.

By (3) (4) $\dfrac{F}{R} = \dfrac{\sin\alpha}{1+\cos\alpha} = \tan\dfrac{\alpha}{2}$, not greater than μ.

By (1) (2) $2R' = 2W' + W$,

by (1) (3) (4) $F' = \dfrac{W\sin\alpha}{2(1+\cos\alpha)} = \dfrac{W}{2}\tan\dfrac{\alpha}{2}$;

$$\therefore \frac{F'}{R'} = \frac{W\tan\frac{\alpha}{2}}{2W' + W}, \text{ not greater than } \mu'.$$

If $\mu = \mu'$ then since W is less than $W + 2W'$ the lower cylinders will slip first as we continually increase the weight of the upper cylinder. In order that the points of contact may all slip together, we must have

$$\tan\frac{\alpha}{2} = \mu \text{ and } \frac{W\tan\frac{\alpha}{2}}{2W' + W} = \mu';$$

$$\therefore \frac{W'}{W} = \frac{\mu - \mu'}{2\mu'}.$$

PROB. 14. Three equal rough rods are loosely connected together by one extremity of each, and placed on a rough horizontal plane. Shew how to graduate one of the rods so that by noting the position of a smooth ring resting in a horizontal position on the rods and *just* in equilibrium we may know the coefficient of friction between the rods and the plane.

147. THE phenomena of the motion of the heavenly bodies lead us to conjecture, as we shall hereafter perceive, that the various particles of matter in the universe attract each other with a force which varies directly as the mass of the attracting particle and inversely as the square of the distance of the attracted from the attracting particle. Now in anticipation of this it will be an interesting and useful enquiry to calculate the resultant attraction of an assemblage of molecules which constitute a mass such as the Earth, the Sun, or any of the heavenly bodies. We shall commence with the calculations of the attraction of homogeneous bodies bounded by surfaces of the second order, and then of any homogeneous bodies differing but little in figure from a sphere, and lastly of heterogeneous bodies consisting of homogeneous strata all differing but little from spherical shells in their form. Also in the course of these calculations we shall introduce a few Propositions which we shall find of use hereafter.

PROP. *To find the resultant attraction of an assemblage of particles constituting a homogeneous spherical shell of very small thickness upon a particle outside the shell: the law of attraction of the particles being that of the inverse square of the distance.*

148. Let O be the centre of the shell (fig. 71), P any particle of it, dr its thickness: C the attracted particle $OC = c$, $\angle POC = \theta$. $OP = r$: $mPMn$ a plane perpendicular to OC, $\angle mMP = \phi$, $PC = y$.

The attraction of the whole shell C acts in CO.

Let OP revolve about O through a small angle $d\theta$ in the plane MOP: then $rd\theta$ is the space described by P. Again, let OPM revolve about OC through a small angle $d\phi$, then $r \sin\theta d\phi$ is the space described by P. Likewise the thickness of the shell equals dr. Hence the volume of the elementary solid at P equals $dr\,rd\theta\, r\sin\theta d\phi$ ultimately, since its sides are ultimately at right angles to each other.

Then, if the unit of attraction be chosen to be the attraction of a unit of mass at a unit of distance, the attraction of the elementary mass at P on C in the direction CP

$$= \frac{\rho r^2 \sin\theta dr d\theta d\phi}{y^2}, \quad \rho \text{ the density of the shell;}$$

$$\therefore \text{ attraction of } P \text{ on } C \text{ in } CO = \frac{\rho r^2 \sin\theta dr d\theta d\phi}{y^2} \cdot \frac{c - r\cos\theta}{y}.$$

We shall eliminate θ from this equation by means of

$$y^2 = c^2 + r^2 - 2cr\cos\theta,$$

$$\therefore \sin\theta \frac{d\theta}{dy} = \frac{y}{cr}, \quad c - r\cos\theta = \frac{y^2 + c^2 - r^2}{2c};$$

$$\therefore \text{ attrac. of } P \text{ on } C \text{ in direct. } CO = \frac{\rho r dr}{2c^2}\left(1 + \frac{c^2 - r^2}{y^2}\right) dy d\phi.$$

To obtain the attraction of all the particles of the shell we integrate this with respect to ϕ and y, the limits of ϕ being 0 and 2π, those of y being $c - r$ and $c + r$;

$$\therefore \text{ att}^{\text{n}}. \text{ of shell on } C \text{ in } CO = \frac{\rho r dr}{2c^2}\int_{c-r}^{c+r}\int_0^{2\pi}\left(1 + \frac{c^2 - r^2}{y^2}\right) dy d\phi$$

$$= \frac{\pi\rho r dr}{c^2}\int_{c-r}^{c+r}\left(1 + \frac{c^2 - r^2}{y^2}\right) dy$$

$$= \frac{\pi\rho r dr}{c^2}(2r + 2r) = \frac{4\pi\rho r^2 dr}{c^2}$$

$$= \frac{\text{mass of the shell}}{c^2}.$$

This result shews that the shell attracts the particle at C in the same manner as if the mass of the shell were condensed into its centre.

149. It follows also that a sphere which is either homogeneous or consists of concentric spherical shells of uniform density will attract the particle at C in the same manner as if the whole mass were collected at its centre.

PROP. *To find the attraction of a homogeneous spherical shell of small thickness on a particle placed within it.*

150. We must proceed as in the last Proposition: but the limits of y are in this case $r - c$ and $r + c$: hence

$$\text{attraction of shell} = \frac{\pi \rho r dr}{c^2} \int_{r+c}^{r-c} \left(1 - \frac{r^2 - c^2}{y^2}\right) dy$$

$$= \frac{\pi \rho r dr}{c^2} (2c - 2c) = 0;$$

therefore a particle within the shell is equally attracted in every direction.

PROP. *To find the attraction of a homogeneous spherical shell on a particle without it; the law of attraction being represented by* ϕ (y), y *being the distance.*

151. The calculation is exactly analogous to that of Art. 148: we have only to alter the law of attraction: then attraction on C in CO

$$= \frac{\pi \rho r dr}{c^2} \int_{c-r}^{c+r} (y^2 + c^2 - r^2)\, \phi(y)\, dy, \text{ (integrated by parts)}$$

$$= \frac{\pi \rho r dr}{c^2} \left\{(y^2 + c^2 - r^2) \int \phi(y)\, dy - 2 \int \left[y \int \phi(y)\, dy\right] dy\right\}$$

$$= \frac{\pi \rho r dr}{c^2} \left\{(y^2 + c^2 - r^2)\, \phi_1(y) - 2\psi(y) + \text{const.}\right\} \text{ suppose}$$

between the specified limits

$$= 2\pi \rho r dr \left\{\frac{c+r}{c} \phi_1(c+r) - \frac{1}{c^2} \psi(c+r) - \frac{c-r}{c} \phi_1(c-r) + \frac{1}{c^2} \psi(c-r)\right\}$$

$$= 2\pi \rho r dr \frac{d}{dc} \left\{\frac{\psi(c+r) - \psi(c-r)}{c}\right\},$$

this latter form being introduced merely as an analytical artifice to simplify the expression.

PROP. *To find the attraction of the shell on an internal particle.*

152. The calculation is the same as in the last article except that the limits of y are $r-c$ and $r+c$;

$$\therefore \text{attraction} = 2\pi\rho r dr \left\{\frac{r+c}{c}\phi_1(r+c) - \frac{1}{c^2}\psi(r+c) + \frac{r-c}{c}\phi_1(r-c) + \frac{1}{c^2}\psi(r-c)\right\}$$

$$= 2\pi\rho r dr \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{\psi(r+c)-\psi(r-c)}{c}\right\}.$$

The formulæ of these two Articles will give the attraction when the law of attraction is known.

Ex. 1. Let $\phi(r) = \frac{1}{r^2}$;

$$\therefore \phi_1(r) = -\frac{1}{r} + A$$

$$\psi(r) = -r + \frac{A}{2}r^2 + B: \ A \text{ and } B \text{ arbitrary constants};$$

therefore attraction on an external particle

$$= 2\pi\rho r dr \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{-4r + A\{(c+r)^2 - (c-r)^2\}}{2c}\right\}$$

$$= 2\pi\rho r dr \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{-2r}{c} + 2Ar\right\}$$

$$= \frac{4\pi\rho r^2 dr}{c^2}, \text{ (see Art. 148.)}$$

Attraction on an internal particle

$$= 2\pi\rho r dr \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{-4c + A\{(r+c)^2 - (r-c)^2\}}{2c}\right\}$$

$= 4\pi\rho r^2 dr\, c =$ mass of shell $\times\, c$.

The attraction is the same as if the shell were collected at its centre. This property we discovered for the law of the inverse square. We shall now ascertain whether there are any other laws which give the same property.

PROP. *To find what laws of attraction allow us to suppose a spherical shell condensed into its centre when attracting an external particle.*

153. Let $\phi(r)$ be the law of force: then if c be the distance of the centre of the shell from the attracted point and r the radius of the shell, and $\psi(r) = \int\{r\int\phi(r)\,dr\}\,dr$, then the attraction of the shell

$$= 2\pi\rho r\,dr\,\frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{\psi(c+r)-\psi(c-r)}{c}\right\}.$$

But if the shell be condensed into its centre this attraction

$$= 4\pi r^2 dr\,\rho\phi(c);$$

$$\therefore\ 2r\phi(c) = \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{\psi(c+r)-\psi(c-r)}{c}\right\}$$

$$\therefore 2r\phi(c) = 2\frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{d\psi c}{dc}\frac{r}{c} + \frac{d^3\psi c}{dc^3}\frac{r^3}{c}\frac{1}{1.2.3} + \ldots\right\}$$

$$= 2r\phi(c) + 2\frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{d^3\psi(c)}{dc^3}\frac{r^3}{c}\frac{1}{1.2.3} + \ldots\right\};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{1}{c}\frac{d^3\psi(c)}{dc^3} + \ldots\right\} = 0 \text{ whatever } r \text{ be};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{1}{c}\frac{d^3\psi c}{dc^3}\right\} = 0, \quad \frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{1}{c}\frac{d^5\psi c}{dc^5}\right\} = 0\ldots$$

But $\dfrac{d\psi c}{dc} = c\int\phi(c)\,dc$, $\dfrac{d^2\psi c}{dc^2} = \int\phi(c)\,dc + c\phi c$

$$\frac{d^3\psi c}{dc^3} = 2\phi c + c\frac{d\phi c}{dc};$$

therefore by the first of the above equations of condition for $\psi(c)$

$$\frac{2}{c}\phi c + \frac{d\phi c}{dc} = 3A,$$

and multiplying by c^2 and integrating

$$c^2\phi(c) = Ac^3 + B\text{: } A \text{ and } B \text{ being independent of } c$$

$$\phi(c) = Ac + \frac{B}{c^2},$$

and this satisfies all the other equations of condition for $\psi(c)$; therefore the required laws of attraction are those of the direct distance, the inverse square, and a law compounded of these.

PROP. *To find for what laws the shell attracts an internal point equally in every direction.*

154. When this is the case

$$\frac{d}{dc}\left\{\frac{\psi(r+c) - \psi(r-c)}{c}\right\} = 0$$

$$\frac{d\psi(r)}{dr} + \frac{d^3\psi(r)}{dr^3}\cdot\frac{c^2}{1.2.3} + \ldots = -A$$

whatever c is, A being a constant independent of c;

$$\therefore \frac{d\psi(r)}{dr} = -A, \quad \frac{d^2\psi(r)}{dr^2} = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

These conditions are all satisfied if the first is: this gives

$$r\int\phi(r)\,dr = -A, \quad \phi(r) = \frac{A}{r^2},$$

and therefore the inverse square is the only law which satisfies the condition.

PROP. *To find the attraction of a homogeneous oblate spheroid on a particle at its pole: the law being the inverse square of the distance.*

155. Let $APBp$, $AQBq$ be sections of the spheroid and the sphere touching it made by a plane through the axis of the spheroid: fig. 72. $AM = x$, $MP = y$, $AC = c$, $CD = a$, $c = a(1-\epsilon)$, ϵ very small. The mass of the annulus Pp between the sphere and spheroid and of thickness dx

$$= \pi\rho y^2 dx\left(1 - \frac{c^2}{a^2}\right): \text{ also } AQ = \sqrt{2cx}; \; y^2 = \frac{a^2}{c^2}(2cx - x^2),$$

and if we consider every particle of the annulus Pp equidistant from A, the attraction of this annulus on A in direction AB

$$= \pi\rho y^2 dx\left(1 - \frac{c^2}{a^2}\right)\frac{1}{2cx}\frac{x}{\sqrt{2cx}} = \frac{2\pi\rho\epsilon}{(2c)^{\frac{3}{2}}}(2cx^{\frac{1}{2}} - x^{\frac{3}{2}})\,dx;$$

therefore attraction of whole difference of sphere and spheroid

$$= \frac{2\pi\rho\epsilon}{(2c)^{\frac{3}{2}}}\int_0^{2c}(2cx^{\frac{1}{2}} - x^{\frac{3}{2}})\,dx$$

$$= 2\pi\rho\epsilon\left\{\frac{4c}{3} - \frac{4c}{5}\right\} = \frac{16\pi\rho\epsilon c}{15}$$

the attraction of the sphere on $A = \frac{4\pi\rho c}{3}$ (Art. 149.)

therefore attraction of spheroid on $A = \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1 + \frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right)c$.

PROP. *To find the attraction on a particle at the equator.*

156. Let DC be the axis of revolution (fig. 73), $APBp$ and $AQBq$ sections of the spheroid and circumscribing sphere by the plane of the paper passing through the axis of revolution: $AM = x$, $MP = y$, $AC = a$, $CD = c$, $y^2 = \frac{c^2}{a^2}(2ax - x^2)$.

Let an elementary slice of the spheroid and sphere be made by planes perpendicular to the axis of x, one passing through P and the other at a distance dx from it; therefore mass of the part of this slice between the sphere and spheroid

$$= \pi\rho\,(QM^2 - MN \cdot PM)\,dx$$

$$= \pi\rho \left\{\frac{a^2}{c^2}y^2 - \frac{a}{c}y^2\right\} dx; \text{ because } MN = QM$$

$$= \pi\rho \left(1 - \frac{c}{a}\right)(2ax - x^2)\,dx.$$

Now the distance of each portion of this from A nearly $= AQ = \sqrt{2ax}$; therefore attraction of the part between the sphere and spheroid in the direction AC

$$= \pi\rho \left(1 - \frac{c}{a}\right) \int_0^{2a} (2ax - x^2) \frac{x\,dx}{(2ax)^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$= \pi\rho \left(1 - \frac{c}{a}\right) \int_0^{2a} \frac{1}{(2a)^{\frac{3}{2}}} (2ax^{\frac{1}{2}} - x^{\frac{3}{2}})\,dx$$

$$= \pi\rho \left(1 - \frac{c}{a}\right) \left(\frac{4a}{3} - \frac{4a}{5}\right) = \frac{8\pi\rho a\epsilon}{15},$$

and the attraction of the sphere $= \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}a$;

therefore attraction of the spheroid $= \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1 - \frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right)a$

$$= \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1 + \frac{3\epsilon}{5}\right)c.$$

157. In the same manner it might be shewn that the attractions of a homogeneous prolate spheroid of small ellipticity on particles at the pole and equator are respectively

$$\frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1-\frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right)c \text{ and } \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1-\frac{3\epsilon}{5}\right)c,$$

$2c$ being the axis of revolution of the spheroid.

PROP. *To find the attraction of a homogeneous oblate spheroid upon a particle within its mass: the law of attraction being that of the inverse square of the distance.*

158. Let a, c be the semi-axes, the minor-axis of $2c$ coinciding with the axis of z: then the equation to the spheroid from the centre is

$$\frac{x^2+y^2}{a^2}+\frac{z^2}{c^2}=1,$$

fgh the co-ordinates to the attracted particle: we shall take this as the origin of polar co-ordinates, A in fig. 30.

r = radius vector of any particle of the attracting mass:

θ = angle which r makes with a line parallel to z:

ϕ = angle which the plane rz makes with the plane xz:

$$\therefore\ x=f+r\sin\theta\cos\phi,\quad y=g+r\sin\theta\sin\phi,\quad z=h+r\cos\theta,$$

and the equation to the spheroid becomes

$$\frac{(f+r\sin\theta\cos\phi)^2+(g+r\sin\theta\sin\phi)^2}{a^2}+\frac{(h+r\cos\theta)^2}{c^2}=1,$$

$$\text{or } r^2\left\{\frac{\sin^2\theta}{a^2}+\frac{\cos^2\theta}{c^2}\right\}+2r\left\{\frac{f\sin\theta\cos\phi+g\sin\theta\sin\phi}{a^2}+\frac{h\cos\theta}{c^2}\right\}$$

$$=1-\frac{f^2+g^2}{a^2}-\frac{h^2}{c^2}$$

$$\text{put } \frac{\sin^2\theta}{a^2}+\frac{\cos^2\theta}{c^2}=K,\quad \frac{f\sin\theta\cos\phi+g\sin\theta\sin\phi}{a^2}+\frac{h\cos\theta}{c^2}=I$$

and $F^2 + K\left(1 - \frac{f^2+g^2}{a^2} - \frac{h^2}{c^2}\right) = H$, then

$$K^2r^2 + 2KFr + F^2 = H$$

and the values of r are

$$r' = \frac{-F+\sqrt{H}}{K} \text{ and } r'' = \frac{-F-\sqrt{H}}{K}.$$

Volume of element at $P = r^2 \sin\theta dr d\theta d\phi$ as in p. 68. let ρ be the density of the spheroid: then the attraction of this element on the attracted particle is $\rho \sin\theta dr d\theta d\phi$; and the resolved parts of this parallel to the axes of xyz are

$$\rho \sin^2\theta \cos\phi dr d\theta d\phi, \quad \rho \sin^2\theta \sin\phi dr d\theta d\phi$$

$$\text{and } \rho \sin\theta \cos\theta dr d\theta d\phi.$$

Let A, B, C be the attractions of the whole spheroid in the directions of the axes estimated positive towards the centre of the spheroid: then these equal the integrals of the attractions of the element; the limits of r being $-r'$ and r'', of θ being 0 and π, and of ϕ being 0 and π: hence

$$A = -\int_{-r'}^{r''}\int_0^\pi\int_0^\pi \rho \sin^2\theta \cos\phi dr d\theta d\phi,$$

$$B = -\int_{-r'}^{r''}\int_0^\pi\int_0^\pi \rho \sin^2\theta \sin\phi dr d\theta d\phi$$

$$\text{and } C = -\int_{-r'}^{r''}\int_0^\pi\int_0^\pi \rho \sin\theta \cos\theta dr d\theta d\phi.$$

$$\text{Then } A = -\rho\int_0^\pi\int_0^\pi (r''+r')\sin^2\theta\cos\phi\, d\theta d\phi$$

$$= 2\rho\int_0^\pi\int_0^\pi \frac{F}{K}\sin^2\theta\cos\phi d\theta d\phi.$$

Now it is easily seen that if $R(\sin\alpha, \cos^2\alpha)$ be a rational function of $\sin\alpha$ and $\cos^2\alpha$ then $\int_0^\pi R(\sin\alpha, \cos^2\alpha)\cos\alpha\, d\alpha = 0$. Wherefore by substituting for F and K we have

$$A = 2f\rho c^2 \int_0^{\pi}\int_0^{\pi} \frac{\sin^3\theta\cos^2\phi\, d\theta d\phi}{c^2\sin^2\theta + a^2\cos^2\theta}$$

$$= \pi f\rho c^2 \int_0^{\pi} \frac{\sin^3\theta d\theta}{c^2\sin^2\theta + a^2\cos^2\theta}$$

$$= \pi f\rho c^2 \int_0^{\pi} \frac{(1-\cos^2\theta)\sin\theta d\theta}{c^2 + (a^2-c^2)\cos^2\theta} *$$

$$= \pi f\rho \frac{c^2}{a^2-c^2} \int_0^{\pi} \left\{ \frac{a^2\sin\theta}{c^2 + (a^2-c^2)\cos^2\theta} - \sin\theta \right\} d\theta$$

$$= \pi f\rho \frac{c^2}{a^2-c^2} \left\{ -\frac{a^2}{c\sqrt{a^2-c^2}} \tan^{-1}\left(\frac{\sqrt{a^2-c^2}}{c}\cos\theta\right) + \cos\theta + C \right\}$$

between specified limits,

$$= 2\pi f\rho \frac{c^2}{a^2-c^2} \left\{ \frac{a^2}{c\sqrt{a^2-c^2}} \tan^{-1}\frac{\sqrt{a^2-c^2}}{c} - 1 \right\}, \quad \frac{c^2}{a^2} = 1 - e^2$$

$$= 2\pi f\rho \left\{ \frac{\sqrt{1-e^2}}{e^3} \tan^{-1}\frac{e}{\sqrt{1-e^2}} - \frac{1-e^2}{e^2} \right\}$$

$$= 2\pi f\rho \left\{ \frac{\sqrt{1-e^2}}{e^3} \sin^{-1} e - \frac{1-e^2}{e^2} \right\}.$$

In the same manner we should find that

$$B = 2\pi g\rho \left\{ \frac{\sqrt{1-e^2}}{e^3} \sin^{-1} e - \frac{1-e^2}{e^2} \right\}.$$

$$\text{Also } C = 2\rho \int_0^{\pi}\int_0^{\pi} \frac{F}{K} \sin\theta\cos\theta d\theta d\varphi$$

$$= 2\rho h a^2 \int_0^{\pi}\int_0^{\pi} \frac{\sin\theta\cos^2\theta d\theta d\varphi}{c^2\sin^2\theta + a^2\cos^2\theta}$$

* If the spheroid be *prolate* c is $> a$ and the denominator of this must be written $c^2 - (c^2 - a^2)\cos^2\theta$, and the integral would involve logarithms instead of circular arcs.

$$= 2\pi\rho h \frac{a^2}{a^2 - c^2} \int_0^\pi \left\{ \sin\theta - \frac{c^2 \sin\theta}{c^2 + (a^2 - c^2)\cos^2\theta} \right\} d\theta$$

$$= 4\pi\rho h \frac{a^2}{a^2 - c^2} \left\{ 1 - \frac{c}{\sqrt{a^2 - c^2}} \tan^{-1} \frac{\sqrt{a^2 - c^2}}{c} \right\}$$

$$= 4\pi\rho h \left\{ \frac{1}{e^2} - \frac{\sqrt{1 - e^2}}{e^3} \sin^{-1} e \right\}.$$

159. Cor. 1. We see from these expressions that the attraction is independent of the magnitude of the spheroid, and depends solely upon the eccentricity.

Hence the attraction of the spheroid similar to the given one and passing through the attracted particle is the same as of any other similar concentric spheroid comprising the attracted particle in its mass. Hence a spheroidal shell the surfaces of which are similar and concentric, attracts a point within it equally in all directions.

160. Cor. 2. If we put the ellipticity of the spheroid $= \epsilon$ and suppose ϵ very small so that we may neglect its square, we have $e^2 = 1 - \frac{c^2}{a^2} = 1 - (1 - \epsilon)^2 = 2\epsilon$;

$$\therefore A = \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1 - \frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right) f, \quad B = \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1 - \frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right) g,$$

$$C = \frac{4\pi\rho}{3}\left(1 + \frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right) h.$$

161. Cor. 3. By the values of A, B, C after integrating with respect to r we have

$$\frac{A}{f} + \frac{B}{g} + \frac{C}{h} = 2\rho \int_0^\pi \int_0^\pi \frac{(c^2 \sin^3\theta + a^2 \sin\theta \cos^2\theta)\, d\theta d\phi}{c^2 \sin^2\theta + a^2 \cos^2\theta}$$

$$= 2\rho \int_0^\pi \int_0^\pi \sin\theta d\theta d\phi = 2\pi\rho \int_0^\pi \sin\theta d\theta = 4\pi\rho.$$

But if $V = \int \frac{\text{element of mass}}{\text{distance from attracted point}}$

$$= \int \frac{dm}{\{(x - f)^2 + (y - g)^2 + (z - h)^2\}^{\frac{1}{2}}};$$

$$\therefore -\frac{dV}{df} = -\int \frac{dm\,(x-f)}{\{(x-f)^2+(y-g)^2+(z-h)^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} = A;$$

$$\therefore -\frac{d^2V}{df^2} = \frac{dA}{df} = \frac{A}{f} \text{ by the form of } A.$$

In the same manner $-\dfrac{d^2V}{dg^2} = \dfrac{B}{g}$, $\quad -\dfrac{d^2V}{dh^2} = \dfrac{C}{h}$.

Hence for an internal particle

$$\frac{d^2V}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dh^2} = -4\pi\rho.$$

162. Cor. 4. If we had taken an ellipsoid instead of a spheroid we should have had

$$A = \frac{3fM}{a^3}L, \qquad B = \frac{3gM}{a^3}\frac{d\,(\lambda L)}{d\lambda}, \qquad C = \frac{3hM}{a^3}\frac{d\,(\lambda' L)}{d\lambda'},$$

where M is the mass of the ellipsoid, $\lambda^2 = \dfrac{a^2-b^2}{a^2}$, $\lambda'^2 = \dfrac{a^2-c^2}{a^2}$,

$$\text{and } L = \int_0^1 \frac{x^2\,dx}{\sqrt{1-\lambda^2x^2}\sqrt{1-\lambda'^2x^2}},$$

the integration of this depends upon the properties of elliptic transcendants: see Legendre's *Traité des Fonctions Elliptiques*, Tome 1, p. 545.

163. Cor. 5. If we wished to find the attraction on an external particle we should have the same integrals for A, B, C as in the Proposition, but the limits of r would be r' and r'' (and not $-r'$ and r''), since the point from which r is measured, the attracted particle, is outside the spheroid:

$$\therefore A = -\rho\int_{r'}^{r''}\int_0^{\pi}\int_0^{\pi} \sin^2\theta\cos\phi\,dr\,d\theta\,d\phi$$

$$= \rho\int_0^{\pi}\int_0^{\pi}(r'-r'')\sin^2\theta\cos\phi\,d\theta\,d\phi$$

$$= 2\rho\int_0^{\pi}\int_0^{\pi}\frac{\sqrt{H}}{K}\sin^2\theta\cos\phi\,d\theta\,d\phi,$$

and this cannot be integrated by any known method

Mr Ivory has, however, discovered a relation between the attractions of ellipsoids on external and internal particles: so that by means of this relation we can calculate the attraction on an external particle.

PROP. *To enunciate and prove Ivory's Theorem.*

164. Let $\frac{x^2}{a^2}+\frac{y^2}{b^2}+\frac{z^2}{c^2}=1$ and $\frac{x^2}{\alpha^2}+\frac{y^2}{\beta^2}+\frac{z^2}{\gamma^2}=1$

be the equations to the surfaces bounding two homogeneous ellipsoids having the same centre and foci: then

$$a^2-b^2=\alpha^2-\beta^2, \quad a^2-c^2=\alpha^2-\gamma^2 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1).$$

Let fgh, $f'g'h'$ be the co-ordinates to two particles so situated on the surfaces of these ellipsoids that

$$\frac{f}{f'}=\frac{a}{\alpha}, \quad \frac{g}{g'}=\frac{b}{\beta}, \quad \frac{h}{h'}=\frac{c}{\gamma} \ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

Also since (fgh) and $(f'g'h')$ are points in the surfaces of the first and second ellipsoids respectively, we have

$$\frac{f^2}{a^2}+\frac{g^2}{b^2}+\frac{h^2}{c^2}=1, \quad \frac{f'^2}{\alpha^2}+\frac{g'^2}{\beta^2}+\frac{h'^2}{\gamma^2}=1 \ldots\ldots (3).$$

Then *the attraction of the first ellipsoid parallel to the axis of* z *on the particle situated at the point* (f'g'h') *on the surface of the second is to the attraction of the second ellipsoid on the particle situated at the point* (fgh) *on the surface of the first in the same direction as* ab: $a\beta$ *the law of attraction being any function of the distance: and similarly with respect to the axes of* y *and* z. This is Ivory's Theorem. We shall, for convenience, represent the law of attraction by the function $r\phi(r^2)$, r being the distance.

The attraction of the first ellipsoid on the particle $(f'g'h')$ parallel to the axis of z

$$=\rho\iiint(h'-z)\,\phi\left\{(f'-x)^2+(g'-y)^2+(h'-z)^2\right\}dxdydz,$$

the limits of z are $-c\sqrt{1-\frac{x^2}{a^2}-\frac{y^2}{b^2}}$ and $c\sqrt{1-\frac{x^2}{a^2}-\frac{y^2}{b^2}}$, the limits of y are $-b\sqrt{1-\frac{x^2}{a^2}}$ and $b\sqrt{1-\frac{x^2}{a^2}}$, the limits of x are $-a$ and a

$$= \rho \iint \{\psi [(f'-x)^2+(g'-y)^2+(h'+z)^2] - \psi [(f'-x)^2+(g'-y)^2+(h'-z)^2]\} dxdy$$

between the specified limits: $\psi(r) = 2\int \phi(r)\, dr$: it must be remembered that in this expression $z = c\sqrt{1-\frac{x^2}{a^2}-\frac{y^2}{b^2}}$, we do not substitute this value merely for preserving the functions under as simple a form as possible. Now put $x = ar$, $y = bs$, $z = ct$, then the attraction

$$= \rho ab \iint \{\psi [(f'-ar)^2+(g'-bs)^2+(h'+ct)^2] - \psi [(f'-ar)^2+(g'-bs)^2+(h'-ct)^2]\} drds,$$

the limits of s being $-\sqrt{1-r^2}$ and $\sqrt{1-r^2}$, and those of r being -1 and 1: also $t = \sqrt{1-r^2-s^2}$.

Now $(f'-ar)^2+(g'-bs)^2+(h'\pm ct)^2$

$$= f'^2+g'^2+h'^2-2(f'ar+g'bs\pm h'ct)+a^2r^2+b^2s^2+c^2t^2,$$

substituting for h'^2 by (3) and putting $1-r^2-s^2$ for t^2

$$= f'^2\left(1-\frac{\gamma^2}{a^2}\right)+g'^2\left(1-\frac{\gamma^2}{\beta^2}\right)+\gamma^2-2(f'ar+g'bs\pm h'ct) + (a^2-c^2)r^2+(b^2-c^2)s^2+c^2;$$

eliminating $f'g'h'$ by (2) and making use of (1)

$$= \frac{f^2}{a^2}(a^2-c^2)+\frac{g^2}{b^2}(b^2-c^2)+c^2-2(far+g\beta s\pm h\gamma t)$$

$= f^2 + g^2 + h^2 - 2(far + g\beta s \pm h\gamma t) + a^2r^2 + \beta^2 s^2 + \gamma^2 t^2$ by (3)

$= (f - ar)^2 + (g - \beta s)^2 + (h \pm \gamma t)^2$.

Hence the attraction of the first ellipsoid on $(f'g'h')$ parallel to x

$$= \rho ab \iint \{\psi[(f - ar)^2 + (g - \beta s)^2 + (h + \gamma t)^2] - \psi[(f - ar)^2 + (g - \beta s)^2 + (h - \gamma t)^2]\}\, dr\, ds,$$

the limits of s being $-\sqrt{1 - r^2}$, $\sqrt{1 - r^2}$; of r being -1, 1

$= \frac{ab}{a\beta} \times$ attraction of second ellipsoid on (fgh) parallel to x:

the same may be proved for the attractions parallel to the other axes: and consequently the Theorem, as enunciated, is true.

We observe that one of these ellipsoids lies wholly within the other: for if not the points in which they cut each other lie in the line of which the equations are

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{b^2} + \frac{z^2}{c^2} = 1 \text{ and } \frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{\beta^2} + \frac{z^2}{\gamma^2} = 1.$$

We shall suppose a less than α: the points of intersection must therefore satisfy the equation

$$x^2\left(\frac{1}{a^2} - \frac{1}{\alpha^2}\right) + y^2\left(\frac{1}{b^2} - \frac{1}{\beta^2}\right) + z^2\left(\frac{1}{c^2} - \frac{1}{\gamma^2}\right) = 0,$$

and this by (1) becomes $\left(\frac{x}{a\alpha}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{y}{b\beta}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{z}{c\gamma}\right)^2 = 0$, an equation which can be satisfied solely by $x = 0$, $y = 0$, $z = 0$: but these do not satisfy the equations above, and therefore the surfaces do not intersect in any point.

Hence to find the attraction of an ellipsoid of which the semi-axes are a, b, c on an external particle of which the co-ordinates are $f'g'h'$, we must first calculate the attraction of an ellipsoid of which the semi-axes are α, β, γ parallel to the axes on an internal particle of which the co-ordinates are f, g, h, these six quantities being determined by the equations

$$a^2 - \beta^2 = a^2 - b^2, \quad a^2 - \gamma^2 = a^2 - c^2, \quad \frac{f'^2}{a^2} + \frac{g'^2}{\beta^2} + \frac{h'^2}{\gamma^2} = 1,$$

$$f = \frac{af'}{\alpha}, \quad g = \frac{bg'}{\beta}, \quad h = \frac{ch'}{\gamma},$$

and then the attractions required will be these three calculated attractions multiplied respectively by

$$\frac{bc}{\beta\gamma}, \quad \frac{ac}{\alpha\gamma}, \quad \frac{ab}{\alpha\beta}.$$

The following Proposition we shall find of use in a subsequent part of this work.

PROP. *To prove that the resultant attraction of the particles of a body of any figure upon a body of which the distance is very great in comparison with the greatest diameter of the attracting body, is very nearly the same, as if the particles were condensed into their centre of gravity and attracted according to the same law, whatever that law be.*

165. Let the origin of co-ordinates be taken at the centre of gravity of the attracting body, the axis of x through the attracted particle; let c be its abscissa and xyz the co-ordinates of any particle of the body, ρ the density of that particle.

Then the distance between these two particles, or r, $= \sqrt{(c-x)^2 + y^2 + z^2}$.

Let $r\phi(r^2)$ be the law of attraction: then the whole attraction parallel to the axis of x, or A

$$= \iiint \rho\,(c-x)\,\phi\,(c^2 - 2cx + x^2 + y^2 + z^2)\,dx\,dy\,dz,$$

the limits being obtained from the equation to the surface of the body

$$= \iiint \rho\,(c-x)\,\{\phi(c^2) - (2cx - x^2 - y^2 - z^2)\,\phi'(c^2) + \ldots\}\,dx\,dy\,dz$$

$$= c\phi(c^2)\iiint \rho \left\{1 - \frac{x}{c}\left(1 + \frac{2c^2\phi'(c^2)}{\phi(c^2)}\right) + (y^2 + z^2 - x^2)\frac{\phi'(c^2)}{\phi(c^2)} + \ldots\right\} dx\,dy\,dz$$

$$= Mc\phi(c^2) + c^3\phi'(c^2)\iiint \rho\,\frac{y^2 + z^2 - x^2}{c^2}\,dx\,dy\,dz + \ldots\ldots$$

M being the mass of the body: also $\iiint \rho x\,dx\,dy\,dz = 0$ since x is measured from the centre of gravity of the body (p. 67).

Now suppose xyz to be exceedingly small in comparison with c; then all the terms of A after the first are extremely small in comparison with that term, it being observed that $c^3\phi'(c^2)$ is of the same order as $c\phi(c^2)$ in terms of c. Hence the Proposition is true.

Cor. It appears also that to produce a given resultant law, the law of attraction of the constituent molecules must be the same.

166. We shall now proceed to the calculation of the attraction of bodies differing but little from a sphere in figure. The object of these calculations will be seen when we come to the higher branches of Physical Astronomy. The reader may therefore, if he please, omit the remainder of this Chapter till he enters upon those investigations. We shall suppose that the law of attraction is that of the inverse square of the distance.

Prop. *To obtain formulæ for the calculation of the attraction of a heterogeneous mass upon any particle.*

167. Let ρ be the density of the body at the point (xyz): fgh the co-ordinates of the attracted particle: and, as before, suppose A, B, C are the attractions parallel to the axes of x, y, z. Then

$$A = \iiint \frac{\rho\,(f-x)\,dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}},$$

$$B = \iiint \frac{\rho\,(g-y)\,dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}},$$

$$C = \iiint \frac{\rho\,(h-z)\,dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}},$$

the limits being determined by the equation to the surface of the body.

Let $V = \iiint \frac{\rho dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{1}{2}}}$;

$$\therefore\ A = -\frac{dV}{df},\qquad B = -\frac{dV}{dg},\qquad C = -\frac{dV}{dh}.$$

It follows, then, that the calculation of the attractions A, B, C depends upon that of V. This function cannot be calculated except when expanded into a series: it satisfies a differential equation, which leads to some remarkable properties of the coefficients of the terms of the series into which V is developed. We proceed to determine this equation.

PROP. *To prove that* $\frac{d^2V}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dh^2} = 0$, *or* $-4\pi\rho'$, *according as the attracted particle is not or is part of the mass itself:* ρ' *being the density of the attracted particle in the latter case.*

168. By differentiating V we have

$$\frac{dV}{df} = \iiint \frac{-\rho(f-x)\,dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}},$$

$$\frac{d^2V}{df^2} = \iiint \frac{\rho\{2(f-x)^2-(g-y)^2-(h-z)^2\}\,dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{5}{2}}}.$$

In the same manner we should have

$$\frac{d^2V}{dg^2} = \iiint \frac{\rho\{2(g-y)^2-(f-x)^2-(h-z)^2\}\,dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{5}{2}}},$$

$$\frac{d^2V}{dh^2} = \iiint \frac{\rho\{2(h-z)^2-(f-x)^2-(g-y)^2\}\,dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{5}{2}}};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2V}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dh^2} = \iiint \frac{0 \times dxdydz}{\{(f-x)^2+(g-y)^2+(h-z)^2\}^{\frac{5}{2}}}.$$

When the attracted particle is not a portion of the attracting mass itself then xyz will never equal fgh respectively: and consequently the expression under the signs of integration vanishes for every particle of the mass:

$$\therefore \frac{d^2V}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dh^2} = 0.$$

This equation was first given by Laplace: and Poisson was the first who shewed that it was not true when the attracted

particle is part of the attracting mass. The error arises in consequence of the expression under the signs of integration not vanishing for all values of xyz; since it equals $\frac{0}{0}$ when $x = f$, $y = g$, $z = h$.

To determine the value of $\frac{d^2V}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dh^2}$ in this case, suppose a sphere described in the body so that it shall include the attracted particle: and let $V = U + U'$, U referring to the sphere, and U' to the excess of the body over the sphere. Then, by what is already proved,

$$\frac{d^2U'}{df^2} + \frac{d^2U'}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2U'}{dh^2} = 0.$$

$$\text{Hence } \frac{d^2V}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dh^2} = \frac{d^2U}{df^2} + \frac{d^2U}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2U}{dh^2}.$$

The centre of the sphere may be chosen as near the attracted particle as we please, and therefore the radius of the sphere may be taken so small that its density may be considered ultimately uniform and equal to that at the particle (fgh), which we shall call ρ'.

Let $f'g'h'$ be the co-ordinates to the centre of the sphere; then the attractions of the sphere on the attracted particle parallel to the axes are, by Art. 149, 150,

$$\frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}(f - f'), \quad \frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}(g - g'), \quad \frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}(h - h'),$$

$$\text{or } -\frac{dU}{df}, \quad -\frac{dU}{dg}, \quad -\frac{dU}{dh} \text{ by Art. 167.;}$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2U}{df^2} + \frac{d^2U}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2U}{dh^2} = -4\pi\rho';$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2V}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dg^2} + \frac{d^2V}{dh^2} = -4\pi\rho',$$

when the attracted particle is within the attracting mass.

Since the attracting body is supposed to be nearly spherical we shall find it most convenient to transform our rectangular

to polar co-ordinates, the origin of the radius vector of the surface being near the centre.

PROP. *To transform the partial differential equation in* V *to polar co-ordinates.*

169. Let r, θ, ω be the co-ordinates to the point (fgh),

r', θ', ω' ..... (xyz),

the angles θ and θ' being measured from the axis of z: ω and ω' being the angles which the planes on which θ and θ' are measured make with the plane zx; as in fig. 30. and at p. 67 ϕ being replaced by ω;

$$\therefore\ f = r\sin\theta\cos\omega, \quad g = r\sin\theta\sin\omega, \quad h = r\cos\theta,$$

$$x = r'\sin\theta'\cos\omega', \quad y = r'\sin\theta'\sin\omega', \quad z = r'\cos\theta'.$$

Also the volume of an element of the mass $= dr'r'd\theta'r'\sin\theta'd\omega'$; therefore V = the sum of the elements of the mass divided respectively by their distances from the attracted particle

$$= \int_0^r \int_0^\pi \int_0^{2\pi} \frac{\rho r'^2 \sin\theta' dr' d\theta' d\omega'}{\{r^2+r'^2-2rr'[\cos\theta\cos\theta'+\sin\theta\sin\theta'\cos(\omega-\omega')]\}^{\frac{1}{2}}}$$

r being the value of r' at the surface of the body.

Now $r^2 = f^2+g^2+h^2$, $\cos\theta = \dfrac{h}{\sqrt{f^2+g^2+h^2}}$, $\tan\omega = \dfrac{g}{f}$ .... (1)

$$\therefore \frac{dV}{df} = \frac{dV}{dr}\frac{dr}{df} + \frac{dV}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{df} + \frac{dV}{d\omega}\frac{d\omega}{df},$$

$$\frac{d^2V}{df^2} = \frac{d}{df}\frac{dV}{dr}\frac{dr}{df} + \frac{d}{df}\frac{dV}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{df} + \frac{d}{df}\frac{dV}{d\omega}\frac{d\omega}{df}$$

$$+ \frac{dV}{dr}\frac{d^2r}{df^2} + \frac{dV}{d\theta}\frac{d^2\theta}{df^2} + \frac{dV}{d\omega}\frac{d^2\omega}{df^2}$$

$$= \frac{d^2V}{dr^2}\frac{dr^2}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{d\theta^2}\frac{d\theta^2}{df^2} + \frac{d^2V}{d\omega^2}\frac{d\omega^2}{df^2}$$

$$+2\frac{d^2V}{dr\,d\theta}\frac{dr}{df}\frac{d\theta}{df}+2\frac{d^2V}{dr\,d\omega}\frac{dr}{df}\frac{d\omega}{df}+2\frac{d^2V}{d\theta\,d\omega}\frac{d\theta}{df}\frac{d\omega}{df}$$

$$+\frac{dV}{dr}\frac{d^2r}{df^2}+\frac{dV}{d\theta}\frac{d^2\theta}{df^2}+\frac{dV}{d\omega}\frac{d^2\omega}{df^2}.$$

The expresssions for $\frac{d^2V}{dg^2}$ and $\frac{d^2V}{dh^2}$ are of the same form. These must all be added together and equated to zero or $-4\pi\rho'$. When this is effected the formulæ (1) make

the coefficient of $\frac{d^2V}{dr^2}=\frac{dr^2}{df^2}+\frac{dr^2}{dg^2}+\frac{dr^2}{dh^2}=1$,

the coefficient of $\frac{d^2V}{d\theta^2}=\frac{d\theta^2}{df^2}+\frac{d\theta^2}{dg^2}+\frac{d\theta^2}{dh^2}=\frac{1}{r^2}$,

the coefficient of $\frac{d^2V}{d\omega^2}=\frac{d\omega^2}{df^2}+\frac{d\omega^2}{dg^2}+\frac{d\omega^2}{dh^2}=\frac{1}{r^2\sin^2\theta}$,

the coefficient of $\frac{d^2V}{dr\,d\theta}=2\frac{dr}{df}\frac{d\theta}{df}+2\frac{dr}{dg}\frac{d\theta}{dg}+2\frac{dr}{dh}\frac{d\theta}{dh}=0$,

the coefficient of $\frac{d^2V}{dr\,d\omega}=2\frac{dr}{df}\frac{d\omega}{df}+2\frac{dr}{dg}\frac{d\omega}{dg}+2\frac{dr}{dh}\frac{d\omega}{dh}=0$,

the coefficient of $\frac{d^2V}{d\theta\,d\omega}=2\frac{d\theta}{df}\frac{d\omega}{df}+2\frac{d\theta}{dg}\frac{d\omega}{dg}+2\frac{d\theta}{dh}\frac{d\omega}{dh}=0$,

the coefficient of $\frac{dV}{dr}=\frac{d^2r}{df^2}+\frac{d^2r}{dg^2}+\frac{d^2r}{dh^2}=\frac{2}{r}$,

the coefficient of $\frac{dV}{d\theta}=\frac{d^2\theta}{df^2}+\frac{d^2\theta}{dg^2}+\frac{d^2\theta}{dh^2}=\frac{\cos\theta}{r^2\sin\theta}$,

the coefficient of $\frac{dV}{d\omega}=\frac{d^2\omega}{df^2}+\frac{d^2\omega}{dg^2}+\frac{d^2\omega}{dh^2}=0$.

Hence the equation in V becomes

$$\frac{d^2V}{dr^2}+\frac{2}{r}\frac{dV}{dr}+\frac{1}{r^2}\frac{d^2V}{d\theta^2}+\frac{\cos\theta}{r^2\sin\theta}\frac{dV}{d\theta}+\frac{1}{r^2\sin^2\theta}\frac{d^2V}{d\omega^2}=0 \text{ or } -4\pi\rho';$$

$$\therefore r\frac{d^2rV}{dr^2}+\frac{d^2V}{d\theta^2}+\frac{\cos\theta}{\sin\theta}\frac{dV}{d\theta}+\frac{1}{\sin^2\theta}\frac{d^2V}{d\omega^2}=0 \text{ or } -4\pi\rho' r'^2.$$

Put $\cos\theta=\mu$ and $\cos\theta'=\mu'$: then

$$V=\int_0^r\int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi}\frac{\rho r'^2 dr'\,d\mu'\,d\omega'}{\{r^2+r'^2-2rr'[\mu\mu'+\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\cos(\omega-\omega')]\}^{\frac{1}{2}}}$$

and $$r\frac{d^2rV}{dr^2}+\frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dV}{d\mu}\right\}+\frac{1}{1-\mu^2}\frac{d^2V}{d\omega^2}=0 \text{ or } -4\pi\rho' r'^2.$$

By integrating this equation we should determine the value of V. But this has never been accomplished, and we are consequently obliged to resort to approximation by series.

PROP. *To explain the method of expanding* V *in a series.*

170. The expression

$$\{r^2+r'^2-2rr'[\mu\mu'+\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\cos(\omega-\omega')]\}^{-\frac{1}{2}},$$

may be expanded into either of the series

$$\left.\begin{aligned} &P_0\frac{1}{r'}+P_1\frac{r}{r'^2}+\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots+P_i\frac{r^i}{r'^{i+1}}+\ldots\ldots\\ \text{or }\ &P_0\frac{1}{r}+P_1\frac{r'}{r^2}+\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots+P_i\frac{r'^i}{r^{i+1}}+\ldots\ldots\end{aligned}\right\}\ldots\ldots(1),$$

where P_0, P_1, ... P_i, ... are all rational and entire functions of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, and $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$, and the same functions of μ', $\sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\cos\omega'$, and $\sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\sin\omega'$: the general coefficient P_i is of i dimensions in μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$ and $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$.

The greatest value of P_i (disregarding its sign) is unity.

For if we put

$$\mu\mu'+\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\cos(\omega-\omega')=\cos\phi=\tfrac{1}{2}\left(z+\frac{1}{z}\right),$$

then P_i = coefficient of c^i in

$$(1 + c^2 - 2c\cos\phi)^{-\frac{1}{2}} \text{ or } (1 - cx)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(1 - \frac{c}{x}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$

= coefficient of c^i in

$$\left\{1 + \tfrac{1}{2}cx + \frac{1.3}{2.4}c^2x^2 + \ldots\ldots\right\}\left\{1 + \tfrac{1}{2}\frac{c}{x} + \frac{1.3}{2.4}\frac{c^2}{x^2} + \ldots\ldots\right\}$$

$$= A\left(x^i + \frac{1}{x^i}\right) + B\left(x^{i-2} + \frac{1}{x^{i-2}}\right) + \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

$$= 2A\cos i\phi \quad + 2B\cos(i-2)\phi + \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

A, B ..... being all positive and finite: the greatest value of this is when $\phi = 0$: hence P_i is greatest when $\phi = 0$.

But then P_i = coefficient of c^i in $(1 + c^2 - 2c)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$ or $(1 - c)^{-1}$

$$= \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1 + c + c^2 + \ldots + c^i \ldots)$$

$$= 1.$$

Hence 1 is the greatest value of P_i. It follows that the first or second of the series (1) will be convergent according as r is less than or greater than r'.

Using the first series we have

$$V = \int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r' \left\{P_0 + P_1\frac{r}{r'} + P_2\frac{r^2}{r'^2} + \ldots\ldots + P_i\frac{r_i}{r'^i} + \ldots\right\} dr'd\mu'd\omega'.$$

We substitute this in the equation in V of Art. 169, and then remove the powers of r outside the signs of integration and equating the coefficients of the same powers of r on each side of the equation we have a series of equations of which the general one is

$$\int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \rho \left\{\frac{d}{d\mu}\left((1-\mu^2)\frac{dP_i}{d\mu}\right) + \frac{1}{1-\mu^2}\frac{d^2P_i}{d\omega^2} + i(i+1)P_i\right\}\frac{dr'd\mu'd\omega'}{r'^{i-1}} = 0,$$

excepting the single case when $i = 2$ and the particle is internal, in which case the second side is $-4\pi\rho'$.

It follows, then, that in every case

$$\frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dP_i}{d\mu}\right\} + \frac{1}{1-\mu^2}\frac{d^2P_i}{d\omega^2} + i(i+1)P_i = 0.$$

For this is evidently true in every case but the excepted one mentioned above; and in that case it is equally true, for if the multiplier of $\frac{1}{r'}$ did not equal zero, the definite integral would be infinitely great (instead of equalling $-4\pi\rho'$) since r' can become infinitely small. When P_i is determined from this equation then V will be known.

171. This equation we meet with very frequently in the higher branches of Physical Science. It has never yet been integrated except by series. Laplace has demonstrated various properties of the integral, and Mr Murphy has effected the same by a new analysis: *Treatise on Electricity.* We shall call the functions which satisfy this equation *Laplace's Coefficients* of the first, second,...orders according as $i = 1, 2, \ldots$: and the equation itself *the Equation of Laplace's Coefficients.*

PROP. *To calculate the value of* V *for a homogeneous sphere.*

172. Let the sphere be referred to polar co-ordinates the centre being the pole (fig. 71): C the attracted particle; $OC = r$; P a particle in a shell of the sphere of which the radius $OP = r_1$, $\angle POC = \theta$, $\angle PMm = \omega$; a the radius of the sphere: then $PC = \sqrt{r^2 + r_1^2 - 2rr_1\cos\theta}$; and the mass of the element at $P = \rho r_1^2 \sin\theta dr_1 d\theta d\omega$, the limits of ω are 0 and 2π; of θ are 0 and π; of r_1 are 0 and a;

$$\therefore V = \int_0^a \int_0^\pi \int_0^{2\pi} \frac{\rho r_1^2 \sin\theta dr_1 d\theta d\omega}{\sqrt{r^2 + r_1^2 - 2rr_1\cos\theta}}$$

$$= 2\pi\rho \int_0^a \int_0^\pi \frac{r_1^2 \sin\theta dr_1 d\theta}{\sqrt{r^2 + r_1^2 - 2rr_1\cos\theta}}$$

$$= 2\pi\rho \int_0^a \frac{r_1}{r} \left\{\sqrt{r^2 + r_1^2 - 2rr_1\cos\theta} + \text{const.}\right\} dr_1$$

$$= 2\pi\rho \int_0^a \frac{r_1}{r} \{(r + r_1) \mp (r - r_1)\} dr_1$$

– when C is without, and + when C is within the shell,

$$= \frac{4\pi\rho}{r} \int_0^a r_1^2 dr_1 = \frac{4\pi\rho a^3}{3r},$$

when C is without the sphere.

And when C is within the sphere, the part of V for the shells which enclose $C = 2\pi\rho \int_r^a 2r_1 dr_1 = 2\pi\rho (a^2 - r^2)$: and the part of V for the other shells of the sphere

$$= \frac{4\pi\rho}{r} \int_0^r r_1^2 dr_1 = \frac{4\pi\rho r^2}{3}.$$

Hence $V = \dfrac{4\pi\rho a^3}{3r}$ for an *external* particle

$$V = 2\pi\rho a^2 - \frac{2\pi\rho r^2}{3} \text{ for an } \textit{internal} \text{ particle.}$$

We shall find the use of these in the next two Propositions.

PROP. *To find the attraction of a homogeneous body, differing little from a sphere in form, upon a particle without it.*

173. Since the attracted particle is without the attracting mass we must expand V in a descending series of powers of r:

$$\text{let } V = \frac{V_0}{r} + \frac{V_1}{r^2} + \frac{V_2}{r^3} + \ldots\ldots + \frac{V_i}{r^{i+1}} + \ldots\ldots$$

But by Art. 170. taking the *second* of expansions (1),

$$V = \int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \rho \left\{P_0 \frac{r'^2}{r} + P_1 \frac{r'^3}{r^2} + \ldots + P_i \frac{r'^{i+2}}{r^{i+1}} + \ldots\right\} dr' d\mu' d\omega';$$

$$\therefore V_i = \int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \rho P_i r'^{i+2} dr' d\mu' d\omega'$$

Let the mean radius of the body = a: and let $a(1+\alpha y')$ be the variable radius, y' being a function of μ' and ω', and α being a very small numerical quantity whose square and higher powers are to be neglected.

Then, for the excess of the attracting mass over the sphere of which the radius = a, the value of v_i

$$= \alpha a^{i+3}\rho\int_0^{y'}\int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi} P_i dy'\,d\mu'\,d\omega' = \alpha a^{i+3}\rho\int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi} P_i y'\,d\mu'\,d\omega'.$$

$$\text{Let } \int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi} P_i y'\,d\mu'\,d\omega' = U_i,$$

hence for the excess over the sphere we have

$$V = \alpha\rho\left\{\frac{a^3}{r}U_0 + \frac{a^4}{r^2}U_1 + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a^{i+3}}{r^{i+1}}U_i + \ldots\right\}.$$

But for the sphere of which the radius is a, $V = \frac{4\pi\rho a^3}{3r}$ by Art. 172.

Hence for the whole mass

$$V = \frac{4\pi\rho a^3}{3r} + \frac{\alpha\rho a^3}{r}\left\{U_0 + \frac{a}{r}U_1 + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a^i}{r^i}U_i + \ldots\right\}$$

and the attraction $= -\frac{dV}{dr}$, (see Art. 167.)

$$= \frac{4\pi\rho a^3}{3r^2} + \frac{\alpha\rho a^3}{r^2}\left\{U_0 + \frac{2a}{r}U_1 + \ldots\ldots + \frac{(i+1)a^i}{r^i}U_i + \ldots\right\}.$$

Prop. ***To find the attraction of a homogeneous body, differing but little from a sphere in form, upon an internal particle.***

174. We must in this case expand V in an ascending series of powers of r: let

$$V = v_0 + v_1 r + v_2 r^2 + \ldots\ldots + v_i r^i + \ldots$$

But by Art. 170.

$$V = \int\int\int \rho\left\{P_0 r' + P_1 r + P_2\frac{r^2}{r'} + \ldots + P_i\frac{r^i}{r'^{i-1}} + \ldots\right\} dr'\,d\mu'\,d\omega';$$

$$\therefore \nu_i = \int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \frac{\rho P_i}{r'^{i-1}} dr' d\mu' d\omega',$$

and as in the preceding Proposition the value of ν_i for the excess of the attracting mass over the sphere of which the radius is (a)

$$= \frac{a\rho}{a^{i-2}} \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} P_i y' d\mu' d\omega' = \frac{a\rho}{a^{i-2}} U_i.$$

Also for the sphere of which the radius $= a$ the value of V is $2\pi\rho a^2 - \frac{2\pi\rho r^2}{3}$ (Art. 172). Hence for the whole mass

$$V = 2\pi\rho a^2 - \frac{2\pi\rho r^2}{3} + a\rho a^2 \left\{ U_0 + \frac{r}{a} U_1 + \ldots + \frac{r^i}{a^i} U_i + \ldots \right\}$$

and the attraction $= -\frac{dV}{dr}$

$$= \frac{4\pi\rho r}{3} - a\rho a \left\{ U_1 + \frac{2r}{a} U_2 + \ldots + \frac{ir^{i-1}}{a^{i-1}} U_i + \ldots \right\}.$$

175. The calculation of the functions $U_0, U_1, \ldots U_i, \ldots$ can be effected without integration when we know the equation to the surface of the body. We proceed to demonstrate this in the three following Propositions.

PROP. *To prove that a function of* μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$ and $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$, *as* $F(\mu, \omega)$, *can be expanded in a series of Laplace's Coefficients: provided that* $F(\mu, \omega)$ *do not become infinite between the values* -1 *and* 1 *of* μ, *and* 0 *and* 2π *of* ω.

176. Let $\mu'\mu + \sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos(\omega' - \omega) = p$: then by Art. 170.

$$(1 + c^2 - 2cp)^{-\frac{1}{2}} = P_0 + P_1 c + P_2 c^2 + \ldots + P_i c^i + \ldots$$

c being any quantity not greater than unity.

Differentiating with respect to c,

$$\frac{p - c}{(1 + c^2 - 2cp)^{\frac{3}{2}}} = P_1 + 2P_2 c + \ldots + iP_i c^{i-1} + \ldots$$

Multiply the latter equation by $2c$ and add it to the former,

$$\therefore \frac{1-c^2}{(1+c^2-2cp)^{\frac{3}{2}}} = P_0 + 3P_1c + 5P_2c^2 + \ldots + (2i+1)P_ic^i + \ldots$$

$$\therefore \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} \frac{(1-c^2)F(\mu',\omega')d\mu'd\omega'}{(1+c^2-2cp)^{\frac{3}{2}}} = \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} \{P_0 + 3P_1c + \ldots + (2i+1)P_ic^i + \ldots\} F(\mu',\omega')d\mu'd\omega'.$$

Now c being arbitrary we may put it $= 1$. Then the fraction under the symbols of integration on the left-hand side of this equation vanishes, except when $p = 1$, in which case the fraction equals $\frac{0}{0}$. We proceed, then, to determine the value of the integral, we shall call it X. When $p = 1$ then

$$\cos(\omega' - \omega) = \frac{1-\mu'\mu}{\sqrt{(1-\mu'^2)(1-\mu^2)}} = \sqrt{\frac{1-2\mu'\mu+\mu'^2\mu^2}{1-\mu'^2-\mu^2+\mu'^2\mu^2}},$$

and that this may not be greater than unity we must take $\mu'^2 + \mu^2$ not greater than $2\mu'\mu$, or $(\mu' \sim \mu)^2$ not greater than zero: hence $\mu' = \mu$, and therefore $\cos(\omega' - \omega) = 1$ and $\omega' = \omega$. We shall therefore put $\mu' = \mu + \nu$ and $\omega' = \omega + z$ and $1 - c = g$: ν, z being small quantities which vanish when $p = 1$, and g a small quantity which vanishes when $c = 1$. Then we have

$$1 - c^2 = 2g, \quad p = 1 - (1-\mu^2)\frac{z^2}{2} - \frac{\nu^2}{2(1-\mu^2)},$$

in which we retain only the lowest powers of g, z, ν which occur, since the higher powers must ultimately vanish in comparison with the lower:

$$\therefore \frac{1-c^2}{(1+c^2-2cp)^{\frac{3}{2}}} = \frac{1-c^2}{\{(1-c)^2 + 2c(1-p)\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$= \frac{2g}{\left\{g^2 + \frac{\nu^2}{1-\mu^2} + (1-\mu^2)z^2\right\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}.$$

Also since, by hypothesis, $F(\mu', \omega')$ does not become infinite between the specified limits of μ' and ω', then

$$F(\mu', \omega') = F(\mu + \nu, \omega + \varkappa) = F(\mu, \omega) + \xi$$

where ξ is a very small quantity which vanishes with ν and $\varkappa$: then after the substitutions

$$X = 2F(\mu, \omega) \iint \frac{g d\nu d\varkappa}{\left\{g^2 + \frac{\nu^2}{1-\mu^2} + \varkappa^2(1-\mu^2)\right\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$+ 2 \iint \frac{\xi g d\nu d\varkappa}{\left\{g^2 + \frac{\nu^2}{1-\mu^2} + \varkappa^2(1-\mu^2)\right\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

between proper limits.

Now, since when $c = 1$ or $g = 0$ the fraction under the symbols of integration in X vanishes for all values of ν and $\varkappa$ that are not indefinitely small, it follows, that we may choose limiting values for ν and $\varkappa$ of any magnitude that we please, if we put $g = 0$ after the integration. We shall take $-h$ and h for the limits of ν and $-\infty$ and ∞ for the limits of $\varkappa$.

Put $\varkappa^2(1-\mu^2) = \left(g^2 + \frac{\nu^2}{1-\mu^2}\right) x^2$;

therefore the first term of X

$$= 2F(\mu, \omega) \int_{-h}^{h} \frac{g\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\, d\nu}{g^2(1-\mu^2) + \nu^2} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{dx}{(1+x^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$= 4F(\mu, \omega) \int_{-h}^{h} \frac{g\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\, d\nu}{g^2(1-\mu^2) + \nu^2} = 8F(\mu, \omega) \tan^{-1} \frac{h}{g\sqrt{1-\mu^2}}$$

$$= 4\pi F(\mu, \omega), \text{ when } g = 0, \text{ or } c = 1.$$

Now ξ being a very small quantity, let β be its greatest value within given small values of ν and $\varkappa$: then the second term of X is less than

$$\beta \int_{-h}^{h} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{g d\nu d\varkappa}{\left\{g^2 + \frac{\nu^2}{1-\mu^2} + \varkappa^2(1-\mu^2)\right\}}$$

or is less than $2\pi\beta$: but β ultimately vanishes and therefore $X = 4\pi F(\mu, \omega)$. Thus we have determined the value of the integral;

$$\therefore F(\mu, \omega) = \frac{1}{4\pi}\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi}\{P_0 + 3P_1 + 5P_2 + \ldots\ldots + (2i+1)P_i + \ldots\}F(\mu', \omega')\,d\mu'\,d\omega'.$$

Now the general term $\frac{2i+1}{4\pi}\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} P_i F(\mu', \omega')\,d\mu'\,d\omega'$ is a function of μ and ω which satisfies the equation of Laplace's Coefficients (see Art. 171.)

Hence $F(\mu, \omega)$ can be expanded in a series of Laplace's Coefficients.

177. If ω or μ have one of its limiting values 0 and 2π or -1 and 1, we must not take the limits of integration which we have used in the last Article.

For it is only for the values of ω' and μ' which differ by indefinitely small quantities from ω and μ that the fraction under the symbols of integration in X does not vanish. Now if $\omega = 0$ then $\omega' = 0$ and 2π; and therefore it is for indefinitely small positive or negative values of ω' and for values a very little less and a very little greater than 2π that X does not vanish: but the negative values and the values greater than 2π are not included between the specified limits (0 and 2π) of ω' and must therefore be left out of consideration, though this was not necessary in the general case, because the fraction X then vanished for these values. Hence if $\omega = 0$ the value of X is found by putting $\omega' = 0$ and integrating with respect to z from 0 to ∞, and adding to it the result of putting $\omega' = 2\pi$ and integrating from $z = -\infty$ to $z = 0$: we then have

$$X = 2\pi\{F(\mu, 0) + F(\mu, 2\pi)\} = 4\pi F(\mu, 0) \text{ and } 4\pi F(\mu, 2\pi)$$

$$\text{for } F(\mu, 0) = F(\mu, 2\pi)$$

since $F(\mu, \omega)$ is a function of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, and $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$.

The same will be the result if ω have its other limiting value 2π.

Again, suppose $\mu = -1$; then $\mu' = -1$, and we must not take the limits of ν negative since μ' cannot be less than -1: but since in this case ω' is quite indeterminate we shall refer to the original form of X. Since $F(\mu', \omega')$ is a function of μ', $\sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\cos\omega'$ and $\sqrt{1-\mu'^2}\sin\omega'$ which does not become infinite between the specified limits of μ' and ω', it follows, that $F(-1, \omega')$ is independent of ω': hence, since $p = -\mu'$ when $\mu = -1$, we have

$$X = \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} \frac{(1-c^2)\,F(\mu', \omega')\,d\mu'\,d\omega'}{(1+c^2+2c\mu')^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$= F(-1, \omega') \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} \frac{(1-c^2)\,d\mu'\,d\omega'}{(1+c^2+2c\mu')^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$= 2\pi F(-1, \omega') \int_{-1}^{1} \frac{(1-c^2)\,d\mu'}{(1+c^2+2c\mu')^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$= 2\pi F(-1, \omega') \left\{\text{const.} - \frac{(1-c^2)}{c\,(1+c^2+2c\mu')^{\frac{1}{2}}}\right\}$$

$$= 2\pi F(-1, \omega') \frac{1}{c}\left\{(1+c) - (1-c)\right\} = 4\pi F(-1, \omega').$$

In the same way, when $\mu = 1$, $X = 4\pi F(1, \omega')$: and consequently the result of the last Article is correct even in these limiting cases.

178. The demonstration of this Proposition is the substance of that given by Poisson in several memoirs: the last place in which it appeared is in the *Théorie Mathématique de la Chaleur*, Chap. VIII. He intoduces this Theorem with these words, "La démonstration que j'en ai donnée dans plu-"sieurs mémoires, et que je vais reproduire ici, me semble "propre à dissiper tous les doutes que l'on avait élevés sur "sa généralité." If the reader be inclined to enquire into the merits of the controversy hinted at in this passage, he may consult the *Mécanique Céleste*, Livre III. Chap. II., two Papers by Mr Ivory, in the Philosophical Transactions for 1812 and 1822, a Memoir by Lagrange in the Journal de l'Ecole Polytechnique, Cahier 15, Poisson's Papers, and a Paper in the Cambridge Philosphical Transactions, Vol. II. by Mr (Professor) Airy, Astronomer Royal.

It will be observed, that in the enunciation of the Proposition we have restricted the nature of the function $F(\mu, \omega)$ to such forms as fulfil the conditions of Art. 107. of the *Théorie de la Chaleur*, by supposing it a function of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$. It is the opinion of those mathematicians who most restrict the generality of this theorem, that it is demonstrated only in such cases as $F(\mu, \omega)$ is a *rational and entire* function of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, and $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$. The doubt attending this question will not affect any results to which we come in this work, since it will be seen that we apply the theorem only to such functions as prove in the end to be rational and entire functions of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, and $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$.

179. It results from this Proposition that in spheroids of which the radius vector can be expressed in terms of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$ we can expand y in a series of Laplace's Coefficients

$$Y_0 + Y_1 + Y_2 + \ldots\ldots\ldots + Y_i + \ldots\ldots$$

We proceed to demonstrate in the course of the next two Propositions that y can be expanded in only one such series, a result of the utmost importance in the future calculations.

We must first prove the following property of Laplace's Coefficients.

PROP. *To prove that if* Q_i *and* R_i *be two of Laplace's Coefficients, then* $\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} Q_i R_{i'} d\mu d\omega = 0$, i *and* i′ *being different integers.*

180. By the equation of Laplace's Coefficients, (Art. 170.)

$$i(i+1)\,Q_i = -\frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dQ_i}{d\mu}\right\} - \frac{1}{1-\mu^2}\frac{d^2Q_i}{d\omega^2};$$

$$\therefore \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} Q_i R_i\, d\mu d\omega$$

$$= -\frac{1}{i(i+1)}\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi}\left(\frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dQ_i}{d\mu}\right\} + \frac{1}{1-\mu^2}\frac{d^2Q_i}{d\omega^2}\right) R_i\, d\mu d\omega,$$

Now by a double integration by parts

$$\int \frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dQ_i}{d\mu}\right\} R_{i'}d\mu = (1-\mu^2)\frac{dQ_i}{d\mu}R_{i'} - (1-\mu^2)\frac{dR_{i'}}{d\mu}Q_i$$

$$+ \int \frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dR_{i'}}{d\mu}\right\} Q_i d\mu;$$

$$\therefore \int_{-1}^{1} \frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dQ_i}{d\mu}\right\} R_{i'}d\mu = \int_{-1}^{1} \frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dR_{i'}}{d\mu}\right\} Q_i d\mu.$$

Again, $$\int R_{i'}\frac{d^2Q_i}{d\omega^2}d\omega = R_{i'}\frac{dQ_i}{d\omega} - Q_i\frac{dR_{i'}}{d\omega} + \int Q_i\frac{d^2R_{i'}}{d\omega^2}d\omega;$$

$$\therefore \int_0^{2\pi} R_{i'}\frac{d^2Q_i}{d\omega^2}d\omega = \int_0^{2\pi} Q_i\frac{d^2R_{i'}}{d\omega^2}d\omega,$$

since when $\omega = 0$ and 2π, each of the functions Q_i, $R_{i'}$, $\frac{dQ_i}{d\omega}$, $\frac{dR_{i'}}{d\omega}$ has the same values, because they are functions of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$.

$$\text{Hence } \int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi} Q_i R_{i'}d\mu d\omega$$

$$= -\frac{1}{i(i+1)}\int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi}\left(\frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dR_{i'}}{d\mu}\right\} + \frac{1}{1-\mu^2}\frac{dR_{i'}}{d\omega^2}\right) Q_i d\mu d\omega$$

$$= \frac{i'(i'+1)}{i(i+1)}\int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi} Q_i R_{i'}d\mu d\omega$$

by the equation of Laplace's Coefficients.

Hence $\int_{-1}^{1}\int_0^{2\pi} Q_i R_{i'}d\mu d\omega = 0$, when i and i' are unequal.

If $i = i'$ the above equation becomes identical and therefore gives no condition.

We are enabled now to prove the following very important Proposition.

PROP. *To prove that* $F(\mu, \omega)$ *can be expanded in only* one *series of Laplace's Coefficients.*

181. We have shewn in Art. 176. that

$$F(\mu, \omega) = \frac{1}{4\pi} \int_{-1}^{1} \int_{0}^{2\pi} \{P_0 + 3P_1 + \ldots\ldots\ldots + (2i+1) P_i + \ldots\ldots\} F(\mu', \omega') \, d\mu' d\omega' \ldots\ldots\ldots (1)$$

$$= R_0 + R_1 + \ldots\ldots\ldots + R_i + \ldots\ldots \text{ suppose,}$$

this being a *determinate* series of Laplace's Coefficients, since $P_0, P_1 \ldots\ldots P_i \ldots\ldots$ are determinate (Art. 170).

We have now to shew, that use what artifice of development we may instead of that used in Art. 176, it will be impossible to expand $F(\mu, \omega)$ in a series of Laplace's Coefficients differing from $R_0, R_1 \ldots\ldots R_i \ldots$ respectively.

For, if possible, let $Q_0 + Q_1 + \ldots\ldots + Q_i + \ldots$ be another development of $F(\mu, \omega)$ in which Q_i differs from R_i;

$$\therefore (Q_0 - R_0) + (Q_1 - R_1) + \ldots\ldots + (Q_i - R_i) + \ldots\ldots = 0.$$

Multiply by P_i, then by Art. 180.

$$\int_{-1}^{1} \int_{0}^{2\pi} P_i (Q_i - R_i) \, d\mu d\omega = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

But, by hypothesis, $Q_i - R_i$ does not $= 0$, but equals some function of μ and ω which does not become infinite between the limits of μ and ω: hence interchanging μ and μ', ω and ω' in (1) and putting $Q_i - R_i$ for $F(\mu, \omega)$ and $Q_i' - R_i'$ for $F(\mu', \omega')$ and observing that $P_0 P_1 \ldots\ldots$ are not altered by this substitution (Art. 170), we have by the general principle expressed in the formula (1)

$$Q_i' - R_i' = \frac{1}{4\pi} \int_{-1}^{1} \int_{0}^{2\pi} (P_0 + \ldots + (2i+1) P_i + \ldots) (Q_i - R_i) \, d\mu d\omega$$

$$= \frac{2i+1}{4\pi} \int_{-1}^{1} \int_{0}^{2\pi} P_i (Q_i - R_i) \, d\mu d\omega \text{ (Art. 180.)}$$

$$= 0 \text{ by (2)};$$

$\therefore Q_i' = R_i'$ and therefore $Q_i = R_i$ and our hypothesis is false, and $F(\mu, \omega)$ admits of only one expansion.

182. We are now able to shew, as we promised in Art. 175, that the functions $U_0, U_1, U_2 \ldots\ldots$ can be calculated

without integration where the equation of the surface of the attracting body is known.

For y can be expanded in a series of Laplace's Coefficients

$$\frac{1}{4\pi}\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi}\{P_0 + 3P_1 + \ldots\ldots + (2i+1)P_i + \ldots.\}\, y' d\mu' d\omega'$$
$$= Y_0 + Y_1 + \ldots\ldots + Y_i + \ldots\ldots$$

and this series admits of only one form by what has just been proved. Hence when the equation to the surface, and therefore y, is known the functions Y_0, Y_1, ... Y_i, ... are determinate, and we may equate terms of the same order in the two series for y written above:

$$\therefore \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi}(2i+1)\,P_i y' d\mu' d\omega' = 4\pi Y_i;$$

$$\therefore U_i = \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} P_i y' d\mu' d\omega' \text{ (Art. 173.)} = \frac{4\pi}{2i+1} Y_i,$$

and consequently when the equation to the surface is known $U_0\, U_1\, U_2$ ..... U_i, ... are also known, as was mentioned in Art. 175.

By substituting for $U_0\, U_1$ ... in the expressions of Arts. 173, 174. we have for an *external* particle

$$V = \frac{4\pi\rho a^3}{3r} + \frac{4\pi\rho\alpha a^3}{r}\left\{Y_0 + \frac{a}{3r}Y_1 + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a^i}{(2i+1)r^i}Y_i + \ldots\right\};$$

and for an *internal* particle

$$V = 2\pi\rho a^2 - \frac{2\pi\rho r^2}{3} + 4\pi\rho\alpha a^2\left\{Y_0 + \frac{r}{3a}Y_1 + \ldots + \frac{r^i}{(2i+1)a^i}Y_i + \ldots\right\}.$$

The property of Laplace's Coefficients proved in Art. 180, enables us to prove that Y_0 and Y_1 may be made to disappear from the expression for y by properly choosing the value of (a) and the origin of the radius-vector of the surface.

PROP. *By choosing* a *equal to the radius of the sphere of which the mass equals that of the attracting body we cause* Y_0 *to vanish from the series* $Y_0 + Y_1 + \ldots + Y_i + \ldots$; *and by*

taking the centre of gravity of the body as the origin of the radius-vector we cause Y_1 *to vanish.*

183. If r, θ, ω be the co-ordinates to any point in the body, an element of the mass

$$= \rho dr r d\theta r \sin\theta d\omega = -\rho r^2 dr d\mu d\omega ;$$

therefore the mass of the body

$$= \rho \int_0^r \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} r^2 dr d\mu d\omega = \frac{\rho}{3} \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} r^3 d\mu d\omega,$$

then putting $r = a(1 + \alpha y)$ we have

mass of body = mass of sphere (rad. = a) $+ \rho a^3 \alpha \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} y d\mu d\omega$

= mass of sphere $+ \rho a^3 \alpha \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} Y_0 d\mu d\omega$ by Art. 180.

= mass of sphere $+ 4\pi\rho a^3 \alpha Y_0$, since Y_0 is constant.

If, then, a be taken equal to the radius of the sphere of which the mass equals the mass of the body $Y_0 = 0$, as was stated.

184. Again: let $\bar{x}\,\bar{y}\,\bar{z}$ be the co-ordinates to the centre of gravity of the body, M its mass: the co-ordinates to the element, of which the mass is $-\rho r^2 dr d\mu d\omega$, are

$$r\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega, \quad r\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega, \text{ and } r\mu ;$$

$$\therefore M\bar{x} = \int_0^r \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^3 \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega \, dr d\mu d\omega$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{4} \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^4 \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega \, d\mu d\omega,$$

$$M\bar{y} = \int_0^r \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^3 \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega \, dr d\mu d\omega$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{4} \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^4 \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega \, d\mu d\omega,$$

$$M\bar{z} = \int_0^r \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^3 \mu dr d\mu d\omega = \tfrac{1}{4} \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^4 \mu d\mu d\omega,$$

putting $r = a(1 + \alpha y) = a(1 + \alpha Y_0 + \alpha Y_1 + \ldots - \alpha Y_i + \ldots)$, and observing that $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$, μ satisfy Laplace's Equation (Art. 170), and are of the first order (Art. 171), we have by Art. 180,

$$M\bar{x} = \rho a^4 a \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} Y_1 \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega\, d\mu\, d\omega,$$

$$M\bar{y} = \rho a^4 a \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} Y_1 \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega\, d\mu\, d\omega,$$

$$M\bar{z} = \rho a^4 a \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} Y_1 \mu\, d\mu\, d\omega.$$

But Y_1, being a function of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$ of the first order, is of the form

$$A\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega + B\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega + C\mu;$$

$$\therefore M\bar{x} = \frac{4\pi\rho a^4 a}{3} A, \quad M\bar{y} = \frac{4\pi\rho a^4 a}{3} B, \quad M\bar{z} = \frac{4\pi\rho a^4 a}{3} C.$$

Hence if we take the origin of co-ordinates at the centre of gravity $\bar{x} = 0$, $\bar{y} = 0$, $\bar{z} = 0$, and consequently $A = 0$, $B = 0$, $C = 0$ and therefore $Y_1 = 0$, as stated in the enunciation.

We shall in future parts of this work require to know the attraction of a body consisting of strata nearly spherical and varying in density according to any law. We shall therefore proceed to the calculation of these attractions.

PROP. *To find the attraction of a heterogeneous body upon a particle without it: the body consisting of thin strata nearly spherical, homogeneous in themselves, but differing one from another in density.*

185. Let $a'(1 + ay')$ be the radius of the external surface of any stratum, a' being chosen so that

$$y' = Y_1' + Y_2' + \ldots\ldots\ldots + Y_i' + \ldots \text{ (Art. 183).}$$

Since the strata are supposed not to be similar to each other y' is a function of a' as well as of μ' and ω'. Let ρ' be the density of the stratum of which the mean radius is a'. Now the value of V for this stratum equals the difference between the values of V for two homogeneous bodies of the density ρ' and mean radii a' and $a' - da'$. But for the body of which the mean radius is a' (Art. 182.)

$$V = \frac{4\pi\rho' a'^3}{3r} + \frac{4\pi a\rho' a'^3}{r}\left\{\frac{a'}{3r} Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a'^i}{(2i+1)\, r^i} Y_i' + \ldots\right\}$$

hence for the stratum of which the external mean radius is a'

$$V = \frac{4\pi\rho' a'^2}{r}\,da' + \frac{4\pi a\rho'}{r}\frac{d}{da'}\left\{\frac{a'^4}{3r}Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a'^{i+3}}{(2i+1)r^i}Y_i' + \ldots\right\}da',$$

and therefore for the whole body

$$V = \frac{4\pi}{r}\int_0^a \rho'\left\{a'^2 + a\frac{d}{da'}\left(\frac{a'^4}{3r}Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a'^{i+3}}{(2i+1)r^i}Y_i' + \ldots\right)\right\}da'.$$

The attraction $= -\dfrac{dV}{dr}$, and is easily found by differentiation.

PROP. *To find the attraction of the same body on an internal particle.*

186. Let $r = a(1 + \alpha y)$ be the radius of the attracted particle. Then for the strata within the surface of which the radius is $a(1 + \alpha y)$ we have (Art. 185.)

$$V = \frac{4\pi}{r}\int_0^a \rho'\left\{a'^2 + a\frac{d}{da'}\left(\frac{a'^4}{3r}Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a'^{i+3}}{(2i+1)r^i}Y_i' + \ldots\right)\right\}da'.$$

But for a stratum external to the attracted particle we obtain by Art. 182.

$$V = 4\pi\rho' a'\,da' + 4\pi\rho' a\frac{d}{da'}\left(\frac{ra'}{3}Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{r^i}{(2i+1)a'^{i-2}}Y_i' + \ldots\right)da',$$

and therefore for all the strata external to the particle

$$V = 4\pi\int_a^a \rho'\left\{a' + a\frac{d}{da'}\left(\frac{ra'}{3}Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{r^i}{(2i+1)a'^{i-2}}Y_i' + \ldots\right)\right\}da'.$$

and consequently for the whole body

$$V = \frac{4\pi}{r}\int_0^a \rho'\left\{a'^2 + a\frac{d}{da'}\left(\frac{a'^4}{3r}Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{a'^{i+3}}{(2i+1)r^i}Y_i' + \ldots\right)\right\}da'$$

$$+ 4\pi\int_a^a \rho'\left\{a' + a\frac{d}{da'}\left(\frac{a'^2}{3}Y_1' + \ldots\ldots + \frac{r^i}{(2i+1)a'^{i-2}}Y_i' + \ldots\right)\right\}da'$$

From this the attraction, or $-\dfrac{dV}{dr}$, is easily obtained.

DYNAMICS.

CHAPTER I.

DEFINITIONS. LAWS OF MOTION.

187. In this part of our Work we are engaged with the laws which regulate the motion of bodies. We shall proceed therefore to explain the means we use for measuring the motion of a body algebraically.

The *position* of a body in space, considering the body as a material particle, is determined at any instant by its distances from three fixed planes at right angles to each other: these distances are called the *co-ordinates* of the particle; and the position of a rigid body in space is determined at any instant by the co-ordinates of a given point of the body and the angles which three fixed lines in the body make with three fixed lines in space.

If the body be in motion the co-ordinates will be continually changing in magnitude: and one of the chief objects of the Science of Dynamics is to find the analytical relation between each co-ordinate and the time of motion.

188. We shall pause, however, a little to make a few remarks which cannot be too carefully remembered.

All our ideas of the magnitude of quantities (such as space, time, and so on) are ideas of *comparative* and not *absolute* magnitude: for a quantity may be great when compared with one standard, and small when compared with another. In consequence of this it is necessary, in order to avoid ambiguity, to choose for quantities of the same kind a certain standard to

which they may be referred. This standard is called the *unit* of these quantities. Thus we speak of the unit of time, and the unit of space; by which we mean the duration of time and the extent of space which we choose as standards to which all other quantities of these species are to be severally referred.

It is by this means that quantities are made the subjects of numerical calculation. For instance, when we say that a body describes a space x in a time t, we mean, that x and t represent the ratios which the space described and the time of describing it bear to their respective units: and so of all other quantities. We forbear choosing these units at once because it generally happens, as we shall see, that by a judicious selection our formulæ may be materially simplified. Before closing these remarks we will observe, that though in the same calculation we must have only one standard of quantities of the same kind, yet in different calculations we need not retain the same unit, so long as we bear in mind what unit is chosen in each calculation. Thus in one calculation we might take the length of the mean day as the unit to which we should refer all portions of time; while in another calculation we might take a year as the unit of time. We return now to the consideration of the means of measuring the motion of a body.

189. *Velocity* is a term used to indicate the degree of quickness or slowness with which a body moves. Velocity may be uniform or variable.

190. *Uniform Velocity.* Velocity is said to be uniform when the body passes through equal spaces in equal times.

It appears, then, that the magnitude of the velocity of a body moving uniformly depends conjointly upon the space described and the time of describing the space; and is greater or less exactly in the proportion in which the space described in any given time is greater or less, and the time of describing any given space is less or greater.

Consequently when bodies move with different uniform velocities, these velocities are in the proportion of the ratios which the spaces described in any times bear respectively to the times of describing them.

Suppose, then, that a body moving uniformly with the velocity v describes a space s in the time t: also suppose that a body moving uniformly with the *unit* of velocity describes a space S in the time T: then by what precedes

$$v : 1 :: \frac{s}{t} : \frac{S}{T};$$

$$\therefore v = \frac{T}{S}\frac{s}{t}.$$

In this formula the only arbitrary quantities are S and T; we shall choose them so as to simplify the formula as much as possible: in choosing their values we fix the unit of velocity.

We shall take $S = 1$ and $T = 1$; we then have

$$v = \frac{s}{t},$$

the unit of uniform velocity being the velocity of a body moving uniformly through the unit of space in the unit of time.

It will be seen that the units of space and time are as yet quite arbitrary.

191. *Variable Velocity.* Velocity is said to be variable when the body in motion does not describe equal spaces in equal times.

Suppose a body moves uniformly and at the time t we wish to estimate its velocity. Let s' be the space described in *any* portion of time t', this time either terminating or commencing with the instant of expiration of the time t. Then, by what precedes, the velocity will equal $\frac{s'}{t'}$, however large or small t' be taken.

But when the velocity is not uniform the ratio $\frac{s'}{t'}$ is not the same for different values of t', and therefore cannot be taken as a measure of the velocity at the time t: unless we select some particular value of t' always to be used.

Now if the time t' terminate with the time t, then the space $s - s'$ is described by the body in the time $t - t'$; and therefore by Taylor's Theorem, since s is a function of t,

$$s - s' = s - \frac{ds}{dt}t' + \frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\frac{t'^2}{1.2} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

$$\therefore \frac{s'}{t'} = \frac{ds}{dt} - \frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\frac{t'}{1.2} + \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

If t' commence with the expiration of t, then $s + s'$ is the space described in the time $t + t'$, and

$$s + s' = s + \frac{ds}{dt}t' + \frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\frac{t'^2}{1.2} + \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

$$\therefore \frac{s'}{t'} = \frac{ds}{dt} + \frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\frac{t'}{1.2} + \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

We gather from these expressions that when t' is taken indefinitely small the values of the ratio $\frac{s'}{t'}$ are the same, and each equal to $\frac{ds}{dt}$. We shall therefore select this particular value as the measure of variable velocity.

It will be observed that in selecting this as the measure of variable velocity we do not violate any conditions previously established in reference to uniform velocity: we only restrict those conditions, inasmuch as t' may be of any value in the case of uniform velocity, but we take it indefinitely small in that of variable velocity. But, notwithstanding this, the formula $v = \frac{ds}{dt}$ includes the case of uniform motion: for if v be constant we have by integration $vt = s$ (the constant of integration vanishes, since when $t = 0$, $s = 0$), and this is the formula already adopted for uniform motion.

Hence, then, *if* v *be the velocity of a body moving uniformly or not at the time* t *and* s *be the space described in that time, the quantities* v, s, t *are connected by the formula*

$$v = \frac{ds}{dt}.$$

192. Having thus explained the means of measuring algebraically the motion of a body we shall enter upon an

enquiry into the laws which regulate this motion. Since, as far as we know, it might have pleased the Author of the Universe to endue matter with laws and properties different from those which He has chosen to impress, it is evident that these laws can be discovered by no process of abstract reasoning, but solely by an appeal to experiment.

193. As the simplest case we shall first consider the motion of a body uninfluenced by external forces. We have already defined *force* to be any cause which produces or tends to produce motion in a body; see Art. 5.

Throughout the whole universe it is impossible to find a single spot free from the action of force. It is consequently beyond our power to determine by direct experiment the nature of the motion of a body uninfluenced by external causes. But by combining the results of various experiments we shall be able to eliminate, so to speak, the principles which are foreign to our enquiry, and in that way ascertain the laws we are seeking.

Experience teaches us that the more external causes are removed the more nearly uniform is the motion of a body.

A bowl thrown along a bowling green is observed to move slower and slower till it finally stops: but the smoother the green is made, the longer does the motion continue. If the bowl be thrown with the same velocity along a pavement the motion is of longer duration; and still longer when the motion takes place on a sheet of ice. One cause of the diminution of velocity is the friction of the body on the plane: this is inferred from the fact, that the retardation is less the smoother the plane on which the motion takes place. Also any change in the uniformity of the decrease of the velocity can always be attributed to some disturbing cause; as the greater roughness of the surface and the deficiency in perfect horizontality.

The experiment shews likewise that the motion is in a straight line, unless some assignable cause produce a deviation.

Steam-carriages moving on horizontal rail-roads, when once in motion, require a constant power of the engine to maintain a uniform velocity: and since, when the motion is uniform, the retarding effect of friction and the resistance of the air may be assumed to be constant, we infer (after what we have said in the

case of the bowl) that the constant power of the engine exactly counterbalances the constant retarding force, and that therefore supposing them both removed the result would be a uniform motion.

The reader is referred to Desaguliers' *Course of Experimental Philosophy*, 4to. 1734, Vol. I. Lecture V. for more experiments upon the motion of bodies.

194. Philosophers have assumed, then, as a fundamental principle of the motion of matter that

A body in motion, not acted on by any external force, will move uniformly and in a straight line.

This is called the *First Law of Motion.*

195. It must not be imagined that these experiments *prove* the truth of the law here enunciated: for the law embraces an infinite variety of cases, and many in which it would be impracticable to make experiments. Also the roughness of the experiments prevents our supposing it proved even for the cases we have mentioned. The truth is, that the law is only *suggested* by the facts we have detailed; and it remains to be seen whether or no this, in conjunction with other laws (which we shall soon consider), satisfies the tests we shall hereafter have to submit them to; whether, combined in endless variety, they will account for the numerous phenomena continually coming under our observation. It is found that they do lead to results which precisely accord with observation. Of the more obvious phenomena, the explanation of which depends on the truth of these laws, we may mention the prediction of the time of an eclipse and the certainty of its fulfilment. Results of this nature are the only satisfactory proofs.

196. It appears from the First Law of Motion that a body has no internal forces residing in it that influence its motion; for when all external forces are removed the velocity is uniform and in a straight line. In other words, matter has no inherent property of changing its state of motion. It is equally a result of experiment and observation that matter has no inherent property of changing its state of rest (Art. 4). This property of matter, that when not acted on by any external force it continues in the same state whether of rest or uniform rectilinear motion, is called its *Inertia*.

197. We proceed now to discover the laws which regulate the motion of a body when acted on by external forces.

198. But previous to this we must explain the means we use for measuring forces in terms of the magnitude of the motion they generate in a body subjected to their influence. We infer from the First Law of Motion, that when a body moves with a variable velocity force is acting on the body: and, conversely, when force acts upon a body its velocity is continually changing. Now we take the magnitude of the change of velocity during a given time as the measure of the magnitude of the force which acts upon the body: and, for the sake of distinction, when force is measured in this manner it is termed *Accelerating Force.** We have already mentioned that when force is measured statically, it is called *Pressure* (Art. 7).

199. Although the sources of force are very various yet its effect in accelerating the motion is always measured in Dynamics by the change in velocity in a given time. Thus when a body is dropped from the hand, the accelerating force of the Earth's attraction at any instant is estimated dynamically by the velocity generated in a given time after that instant. Suppose a body placed on a smooth horizontal table is drawn along by means of a thread passing over the edge of the table and attached to a falling body. The magnitude of the accelerating force which causes the body to move on the table, is measured by the change in velocity in a given time. When a body is moved along a smooth horizontal table by means of a constrained spring, the accelerating force which causes the body to move, though differing in its source from the force mentioned in the last case, is measured in the same way. If a body resting on a smooth horizontal table be set in motion by the sudden blow of another body upon it, the accelerating force which causes the motion is measured as before. When

* When a force retards the velocity of a body, it is called a *retarding force*; but still it is of exactly the same nature as an accelerating force since it is measured by the decrements instead of the increments of velocity in a given time. In short, a retarding force is an accelerating force when estimated in the direction of its action, and if the body were moving in the direction in which the force acts instead of the opposite direction, the force would become an accelerating force. Thus it will be seen that *retarding force* is merely a relative term and is included in the term accelerating force.

a ball is fired from a cannon the accelerating force which causes the motion is still measured by the velocity generated.

It will be seen in the first two of these cases (especially in the second if the descending body be small), that the motion is *gradually* communicated, the velocity increasing continuously. But in the last two cases it may perhaps be thought that the motion is *instantaneously* communicated: this is not, however, true: for the time occupied in generating the velocity is of finite duration, although, to our senses, it is of inappreciable magnitude. That it is of finite duration appears in the case of the collision of the bodies from the fact, that if a small spot of ink be put upon the point of contact of either of the bodies before the motion takes place, then after the collision the ink is found spread over a larger surface than it occupied before, and on both bodies; shewing that the bodies suffered mutual compression and then separated, and this must have occupied time. In the case of the cannon ball, the expansive force of the ignited powder acts during the time that the ball takes to move along the bore of the cannon. In both these instances, as well as in the others, the velocity of the body commences from zero and passes through successive and continuous gradations of magnitude, the only difference being that the intensity of the force originating from the collision and from the explosion is very far greater than the intensity of the force arising from the Earth's attraction; and consequently the velocity which is generated in a falling body, in a few seconds by the attraction of the Earth may be generated by impact, or other such means, in an extremely short portion of time.

200. When a body moves under the action of a force a continual change of velocity takes place; and if the force cease to act the body will move uniformly in a straight line with its last acquired velocity, as the First Law of Motion teaches us. If the force act for a finite time, then our object is to discover such laws of nature and to establish such conventional rules as shall enable us to determine the velocity acquired and the space described by the body during any portion of the time that the force is in action. If, however, the force act for only an indefinitely short time, we are concerned only with the velo-

city and position after the action of the force ceases, since the changes that take place during the action of the force are so rapid that the whole process of the action appears to our senses to be instantaneous.

We have a popular illustration of the effects of forces which act for a finite time and for an indefinitely short time in the game of cricket. The bowler rotates his arm in order to give the ball velocity, he opens his hand and the ball flies from him with the velocity acquired, and (supposing he delivers the ball *full pitch*) after moving in a curve slightly deflected downwards by the Earth's attraction is received upon the bat. Now this velocity was generated by the muscular effort of the bowler's arm acting on the ball during the finite time that he retained it in his grasp. While this is going on the batter swings his bat that it may acquire a great velocity; and the ball and bat come in collision: and what is the consequence? the ball flies back; not only is its original motion destroyed, but new motion is given to it, as if instantaneously, in an opposite direction.

We explain the phenomenon of this sudden recoil in the following manner. When the ball and bat come in contact their particles are moving in opposite directions, and tend to penetrate each other: but the molecular forces by which the particles of each of the bodies are bound together are too powerful to allow of this separation; nevertheless the relative positions of the particles are slightly changed by the yielding of the bodies, and in consequence of their unnatural restraint a mutual resultant pressure is exerted by the bat on the ball and by the ball on the bat, till their relative motion is destroyed: but the particles of the two bodies are still under restraint when the motion is destroyed, and the mutual pressure of the bodies now acts to effect their separation, and new velocity is generated: this process, which we conceive represents the actual process in nature, goes on with inconceivable rapidity in consequence of the great intensity of the molecular forces which bind the particles of each body together. If the bat split or the ball burst, then the molecular forces which held together those particles which separate were not powerful enough to resist the separation. It is evident that we are

concerned not with the changes which take place during the collision but the whole change produced.

201. We have made these remarks in this place in order to shew that it is necessary in explaining the means of measuring force dynamically to consider two cases: first when the force acts for a finite time; and, secondly, when the force acts for an indefinitely short time.

In the second case the accelerating force is measured by the whole velocity generated during the action of the force. And such forces we shall term, for the sake of distinction, *Impulsive Accelerating Forces:* and in contradistinction accelerating forces which require an appreciable duration of time to manifest their effects may be termed *Finite Accelerating Forces.* We shall, however, generally drop the term *Finite:* and it must therefore be remembered that when we speak of accelerating forces we mean finite accelerating forces, and never impulsive accelerating forces unless the term *impulsive* be prefixed.

202. We proceed now to explain more fully how accelerating forces which require an appreciable duration of time to manifest their effects are measured.

Accelerating force may be uniform or variable.

203. *Uniform Accelerating Force.* When equal velocities are generated in equal times the force is said to be uniform.

It appears, then, that the magnitude of the force depends conjointly upon the velocity generated by the action of the force and the time in which this velocity is generated: and is greater or less exactly in the proportion in which the velocity generated in a given time is greater or less, and the time in which a given velocity is generated is less or greater.

Consequently when bodies are acted upon by different uniform accelerating forces, these forces are in the proportion of the ratios which the velocities generated in any times bear respectively to the times in which they are generated.

Suppose, then, that a body acted on by the constant accelerating force f has the velocity v generated in the time t: also suppose that a body acted on by the unit of uniform accelerating force has a velocity V generated in the time T: then by what precedes

$$f : 1 :: \frac{v}{t} : \frac{V}{T}; \quad \therefore f = \frac{T}{V}\frac{v}{t}.$$

In this formula the only arbitrary quantities are V and T: we shall choose them so as to simplify the formula as much as possible: in choosing their values we fix the unit of uniform accelerating force.

We shall take $V = 1$ and $T = 1$, we then have $f = \frac{v}{t}$,

the unit of uniform accelerating force being the force which generates in a body a unit of velocity in a unit of time.

We have already chosen the unit of velocity (Art. 190); we may consequently say that the unit of uniform accelerating force is the force that causes a body during each successive unit of time in its motion to describe a space greater by the unit of space than it did during the unit of time immediately preceding.

204. Hence, in uniformly accelerated motion, s the space described from rest, t the time of describing it, v the velocity acquired during that time, and f the constant force are connected by the equations

$$v = \frac{ds}{dt} \text{ and } f = \frac{v}{t};$$

the units of v and f being given in Arts. 190. and 203. By means of these equations we can obtain four equations differing from each other, and each containing three of the quantities s, t, v, f. Thus, if we eliminate v we have

$$\frac{ds}{dt} = ft; \quad \therefore s = \frac{ft^2}{2} \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1), \; f \text{ is constant.}$$

By eliminating t we have

$$\frac{ds}{dv} = \frac{v}{f}; \quad \therefore s = \frac{v^2}{2f} \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

Also $v = ft \ldots\ldots (3)$, $2s = vt \ldots\ldots (4)$, by (2) (3).

205. *Variable Accelerating Force.* Accelerating force is said to be variable when equal degrees of velocity are not generated in equal times.

Suppose a body is moving under the action of a uniform accelerating force and at the time t we wish to estimate the magnitude of the force. Let v' be the velocity generated in *any* portion of time t', this time either terminating or commencing with the instant of expiration of the time t. Then, by what precedes, the uniform force will equal $\frac{v'}{t'}$, however large or small t' be taken.

But when the force is not uniform the ratio $\frac{v'}{t'}$ is not the same for all values of t', and therefore cannot be taken as a measure of the force at the time t, unless we select some particular value of t' always to be taken.

Now if the time t' terminate with the time t, then the velocity $v - v'$ is generated in the time $t - t'$, and therefore by Taylor's Theorem, since v is a function of t,

$$v - v' = v - \frac{dv}{dt}t' + \frac{d^2v}{dt^2}\frac{t'^2}{1.2} - \ldots\ldots$$

$$\therefore \frac{v'}{t'} = \frac{dv}{dt} - \frac{d^2v}{dt^2}\frac{t'}{2} + \ldots\ldots$$

If t' commence with the expiration of t then $v + v'$ is the velocity generated in the time $t + t'$;

$$\therefore v + v' = v + \frac{dv}{dt}t' + \frac{d^2v}{dt^2}\frac{t'^2}{1.2} + \ldots\ldots$$

$$\therefore \frac{v'}{t'} = \frac{dv}{dt} + \frac{d^2v}{dt^2}\frac{t'}{2} + \ldots\ldots$$

We gather from these expressions that when t' is taken indefinitely small the values of the ratio $\frac{v'}{t'}$ are the same and each equal to $\frac{dv}{dt}$. We shall therefore select this particular value as the measure of variable accelerating force.

It will be observed (as in the case of variable velocity) that in selecting this as the measure of variable accelerating

force we do not violate any conditions previously established in reference to uniform accelerating force: we only restrict these conditions, inasmuch as t' may be of any value in the case of uniform force, but we take it indefinitely small in the case of variable force. But, notwithstanding this, the formula $f = \frac{dv}{dt}$ includes the case of uniform motion: for if f be constant we have by integration $ft = v$ (the constant of integration vanishes since when $t = 0$, then $v = 0$), and this is the formula already adopted for uniform accelerating force. Hence, *if* f *be the accelerating force, uniform or variable, which generates the velocity* v *in a body in the time* t, then f, v, t *are connected by the equation* $\mathrm{f} = \frac{\mathrm{dv}}{\mathrm{dt}}$.

206. We have seen (Art. 191.) that $v = \frac{ds}{dt}$. Hence the equations connecting f, v, s, t are

$$v = \frac{ds}{dt}, \quad f = \frac{dv}{dt}\left(= \frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\right),$$

in which it must be observed that the unit of velocity is the velocity of a body moving uniformly through a unit of space in a unit of time: and the unit of accelerating force is the uniform force which generates a unit of velocity in a unit of time.

We have thus explained the methods of estimating the magnitude of forces dynamically.

207. The next enquiry we shall make into the laws which regulate the motion of bodies is, how to calculate the combined effect of two or more causes acting simultaneously on a body.

We must, as before, appeal to experimental facts for the solution of this question. And first we will take the case of two causes acting upon the body, each of which would by itself make the body move uniformly: for instance, suppose the body projected at the same instant by impulsive forces acting in different directions.

A ball rolled along the horizontal deck of a vessel moving equably will move on the deck as it would if the vessel were at rest; this is proved by experiment. Suppose S is the deck of a boat moving uniformly on a sheet of water, fig. 74: and in a given time suppose it moves to S'. Let A be the place of the ball at the beginning of the time of motion: and B' its place in space at the end. Draw AA' in the direction of the boat's motion, and equal to the distance through which the boat has moved; and join $A'B'$. Suppose AB is the space the ball would have described if the vessel had not moved. Now, as we have already stated, experiment shews that $A'B'$, the space actually described on the deck, is the same in reference to the vessel as if the vessel had been stationary. Hence $A'B'$ is equal and parallel to AB. From this we gather, that if two causes act simultaneously on a body to produce uniform motions, each cause will have its full effect in its own direction; and the body will be found at the extremity of the diagonal of the parallelogram described on the linear spaces, which the body would have passed through under the action of the causes separately.

This principle is found to be true if one or both of the separate motions be not uniform. For a ball dropped from the top of the vertical mast of a vessel sailing uniformly, falls at the foot of the mast, although the vertical motion is not uniform.

The following experiment well illustrates this principle. Two balls are placed at the same height above the ground: one is projected horizontally, the other suffered to fall of itself: it is so contrived that the motions shall commence at the same instant. The result is that they are heard to strike the ground at the same time, although they describe very different paths, one ball having moved in a straight line, the other in a curve. This experiment shews that although one ball had a horizontal motion, still the attraction of the Earth produced the same effect on the two balls in a vertical direction.

The muscular efforts necessary to raise the arm, move the head, or raise the body are the same on board a vessel sailing equably, or in a steam-carriage moving uniformly on a rail-road, as when the ship or carriage is at rest.

It can be proved independently of any mechanical principles that the Earth revolves round its axis from east to west; but the effort of moving a body from one place to another does not depend, *cæteris paribus*, on the point of the compass towards which the motion is directed. To bring to our aid, however, more delicate tests, it is found that the motion of a pendulum is presisely the same in whatever vertical plane it vibrates, whether east and west, or north and south, or in any other direction.

For more facts and experiments we refer again to Lecture V. of Desaguliers' *Experimental Philosophy*.

208. These facts point out to us the following general principle:

When a force acts upon a body in motion, the change of motion in magnitude and direction is the same as if the force acted on the body at rest.

This is called the *Second Law of Motion*.

For the full elucidation and proof of this Law we ought to make experiments with forces of all degrees of magnitude and motions combined in all directions; since, however, this can never be accomplished, we must have recourse to the expedient spoken of in Art. 195, to satisfy ourselves of the truth of this as well as the First Law.

209. We shall now shew the importance of this Law in enabling us to refer the motion of a particle to three rectangular axes.

Since the various positions of a material particle in space are generally determined by means of co-ordinate axes, it becomes necessary to refer the motion to these lines. At any proposed instant of the motion the particle is moving with a definite velocity and in a definite direction. Now this motion may be supposed to be the result of three motions taking place simultaneously parallel to the three axes of co-ordinates. Imagine the particle, in the first place, to have only its motions parallel to the axes of y and z combined. Then, in the second place, by combining with these the motion parallel to the axis of x, we have the actual motion of the particle in space: and the *change* in the motion by this last step is, that the particle has moved to a distance x parallel to the axis of x in the time t.

But by the Second Law of Motion this change is the same as if the other motions did not exist. Hence the velocity and accelerating force of the particle parallel to the axis of x are the same as if the particle described the space x in the time t: and we have proved in Arts. 191, 205, that these are $\frac{dx}{dt}$ and $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}$: and in a similar way it may be shewn that those parallel to the axes of y and z are $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$ and $\frac{dz}{dt}$, $\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$.

210. It follows then that when a particle is moving in space, and xyz are its co-ordinates at the expiration of the time t, the velocities of the particle parallel to the axes are

$$\frac{dx}{dt}, \quad \frac{dy}{dt}, \quad \frac{dz}{dt},$$

and the accelerating forces parallel to the three axes are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \quad \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}.$$

Cor. By the Differential Calculus

$$\frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2},$$

s being the length of the curve described. If we compare this with the formula $R^2 = X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2$ taken from Arts. 20, 21, it follows that velocities may be resolved and compounded in exactly the same way that we resolve and compound statical forces.

211. The grand Problem of Dynamics is to find the relation which exists between the motion of a system of bodies and the forces which act upon them: so that when the forces are known the motion may be determined, and vice versâ.

We have seen that if no forces act upon any part of the system, each part will move uniformly in a straight line, when once put in motion. This will also happen if the forces acting upon each particle of the system are in equilibrium with each other.

In the general case, however, each particle will move in a determinate curvilinear path, and the acceleration (or retardation) of its motion will take place whenever the forces acting on the particle are not in equilibrium, *i. e.* whenever they have a resultant. This resultant is measured at every instant by the change of velocity produced in a given time, as explained in Art. 198. Let xyz be the co-ordinates of position of any particle of the system at the expiration of the time t, then the resultant is measured dynamically by the accelerating forces $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ acting parallel to the fixed axes of co-ordinates. These are termed the *effective accelerating forces* of the particle at the time t parallel to the axes of co-ordinates. The forces which act upon the particle to produce the motion, not including the molecular actions of the particles on each other (if there be any), are termed the *impressed forces* by way of distinction.

212. Now it is immediately evident that if at any instant of the motion we were to apply to each particle of the system forces equal in magnitude but opposite in direction to the effective forces of that particle, these would at that instant check the acceleration of the motion, or, in other words, would be in equilibrium with the impressed and molecular forces which act upon the system: and will therefore together with them satisfy the equations of condition we have deduced in the former part of this Work for the equilibrium of forces.

By this principle, the truth of which is self-evident, we shall obtain equations which connect together the forces that act upon the system and the analytical quantities $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ and all similar quantities for the other particles. If the question be to determine the motion when the forces are given in terms of xyz and t, the solution is effected by integrating these equations. If, on the other hand, the question be to determine the forces which will cause the system of particles to move in given curves, we must differentiate the equations to the curves with respect to t, and substitute for $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\cdots$

in the equations resulting from the application of the above principle: in this way the forces will become known.

213. But we have been supposing that the forces which act upon the system are of the nature described in Art. 201. as requiring time to manifest their effect. We shall now consider the case of impulsive forces.

Let $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$ be the resolved parts parallel to the axes of the velocity of any particle of the system arising from the action of the impulsive forces. Then the effect of the impulsive forces is the same as three impulsive accelerating forces acting parallel to the axes and equal to $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$, (Art. 201); these are termed the *effective* impulsive accelerating forces: and the original forces are termed the *impressed* impulsive forces.

Wherefore it is immediately evident that if, at the instant of the action of the impulsive forces on the system, we were to apply to each particle impulsive forces equal but opposite to the effective impulsive forces of that particle, these would check the effect of the impulsive forces actually impressed on the system and would consequently with them satisfy the equations of condition for the equilibrium of forces.

As before, then, we obtain equations by means of which the motion of the system may be calculated.

214. Now in the calculations of the conditions of equilibrium of forces acting upon a single particle, a rigid body, or any material system given in Chapters I, II, and III of Statics we have considered the magnitudes of the forces to be estimated statically; in other words, we have supposed them to be pressures. Wherefore before we can make use of the results of those Chapters for determining the equations of motion of a system, in the manner explained in Arts. 212, 213, we must discover the relation that connects the dynamical and statical measures of force; so that when we know the degree of acceleration of a force, we may be able to determine the magnitude of the pressure that the force causes the body on which it acts to exert; and *vice versâ*. It is manifest that

some relation between these two measures of force must exist, since the cause of the pressure and the cause of the motion and of the change of motion are the same. But since causing pressure and causing motion are two properties of force which, abstractedly speaking, have no common character, we cannot discover the relation they bear to each other by reasoning *à priori;* but must again appeal to experiment.

215. When two balls of the same size and substance are dropped at the same instant from the same altitude they move downwards in exactly the same manner; having the same velocity at every instant and having moved through the same spaces during any given time. If the bodies be connected the motion is the same. And the same would be the case whatever number of balls were connected. Hence it appears that although the weight of a body of homogeneous structure, or the statical measure of the Earth's attraction, varies as the mass of the body, yet the accelerating force, or the dynamical measure, is invariable when the experiments are made at the same place. Newton made a variety of experiments with gold, silver, lead, glass, sand, common salt, wood, water, and wheat, and arrived at the same result. *Principia*, Vol. III. Prop. VI. It is found by experiments made under a receiver exhausted of air that a guinea and a feather fall in exactly the same manner and strike the plate of the air pump at the same instant, if they are set at liberty together and from the same altitude. These experiments shew that the accelerating force of all falling bodies at the same place is the same: and, after what has been proved of a homogeneous mass of matter, these experiments lead us to conclude that bodies differ in weight at the same place in the same proportion as their masses differ. We therefore infer that at the same place on the Earth's surface the weight of a body varies as its mass. Let M be the mass of a body of which the weight is W; then $W = Mg$, g being some arbitrary quantity which is constant for the same place and depends upon the units of weight and mass. It remains to be determined what change the weight undergoes if the body be removed to a place where the accelerating force is different: or if by any contrivance the accelerating force of a body be changed without changing the

place of the experiment. We shall for this purpose describe a machine invented by Atwood: see Atwood on *Rectilinear Motion* for a full explanation.

216. Four wheels, two of which A and B are represented in figure 75, the other two being hid by these, are placed parallel to each other, their centres being fixed so as to allow of rotation with as little friction as possible: A and B are placed as near as possible without touching: and so are the other two wheels. Upon these four rests the axle of another wheel C placed midway between A and B and the other two wheels: a fine string as flexible and inextensible as possible is passed over the circumference of C and two weights P and Q are attached to its extremities. When P and Q are left to themselves the heavier will descend and draw up the lighter of the two. It will be readily understood that the object of the four wheels is to diminish the friction on the axle of C; which it does very considerably, since the friction of *rolling* is far less than that of *rubbing*. Suppose that P descends, then $P - Q$ is the weight or pressure which causes the motion and $P + Q$ is the weight put in motion. It is found by experiment that the inertia of the wheels produces the effect of adding to the weight moved without adding to the pressure producing motion. Atwood determines by experiment what this weight is, we shall call it W. Hence $P - Q$ is the weight causing the motion and $P - Q - W$ is the weight put in motion. A graduated scale of inches is placed behind the thread supporting P in order to mark the motion of P. The excellence of this machine consists in this, that we can have bodies falling with various degrees of acceleration and as slowly as we please by altering P and Q. The time of motion is marked by a seconds pendulum.

Now suppose P is placed with its lowest surface level with the zero point of the scale and set at liberty at any tick of the pendulum: it is always found, however much P and Q are altered, that in each experiment the spaces described by P in successive seconds form an arithmetic progression, and therefore that the accelerating force in each case is uniform. Also it is found that the common differences of the series in the various experiments are proportional to the respective values

of the ratio $\frac{P-Q}{P+Q+W}$. This is proved by numerous experiments, for the details of which we refer to the work of Atwood.

We gather, then, from this that the accelerating force varies as $\frac{P-Q}{P+Q+W}$ in the different experiments, and therefore the pressure producing motion (or $P-Q$) varies as the product of the accelerating force and the weight moved (or $P+Q+W$), and therefore as the product of the accelerating force and the mass moved, since the weight of a body at the same place varies as the mass (Art. 215), and these experiments were made at the same place.

217. The product of the mass of a body and the accelerating force is called by Newton the *Moving Force* of the body: and the product of the velocity and mass of a body he calls its *Momentum*, or quantity of motion. These experiments therefore shew that the pressure communicating the motion varies as the moving force, or as the momentum generated in the body: for moving force must be measured by the momentum generated in a given time, since accelerating force is measured by the velocity generated in a given time, Art. 198.

218. We shall now give the results of experiments with pendulums. It is found by numberless trials that the time of oscillation of a leaden ball suspended by a fine thread and moving through any very small angle is constant for the same length of thread, but for different lengths it varies as the square root of the length. Now let s be the small circular arc measuring the distance of the centre of the ball from its point of rest, fig. 76, t the time of describing s, l the length of the pendulum: then l varies as t^2, by experiment. M the mass of the ball, and Mg its weight, Art. 215. Pt a tangent to the arc s at P: then the weight Mg is employed partly in producing the motion and partly in stretching the thread: the part producing motion $= Mg \cos tPW = Mg \sin A$;

$$\therefore \text{ the pressure} = Mg \sin A = Mg \frac{s}{l} \text{ nearly} \propto M \frac{s}{t^2}.$$

case is ultimately uniform) then $2s = ft^2$;

$\therefore$ the pressure $\propto Mf \propto$ moving force, as before.

219. We must now enquire into the connexion between pressure and the motion generated or destroyed when impulsive forces act.

We have already explained the nature of impulsive forces; and have shewn that they differ from finite forces solely in intensity, and that we measure them dynamically by the velocity generated during the action, and not by the velocity generated in a unit of time*. The result of the last four Articles must therefore be true for impulsive forces; and we shall assume that impulsive pressure is proportional to the momentum generated or destroyed. In fact, the pressure is so enormous that to make its measure a matter of experiment would be very difficult. We can nevertheless mention some experiments which illustrate, and in part prove, that impulsive pressure varies as the momentum generated. We shall, however, first speak of the elasticity of bodies.

220. It is found that all rigid bodies rebound more or less when struck together: this property is termed their *elasticity*. Consequently no bodies are totally devoid of this property: yet some have it more eminently than others; balls of clay have little elasticity, but ivory balls and balls of glass are considerably elastic. The degree of elasticity is measured

* The following experimental fact seems to shew that impulsive forces are of the same nature as finite forces, generating or destroying velocity by continuous gradations.

Robins' experiments on the velocity of bullets and cannon balls lead to the following result. If bullets of the same diameter and density impinge on the same solid substance with different velocities they will penetrate that substance to different depths, which will be in the duplicate ratio of those velocities nearly; Robins' *Mathematical Tracts*, edited by Wilson, Vol. I. p. 152.

This was proved by various experiments. Now a property of uniformly accelerating (or retarding) forces is, that the squares of the velocities generated (or destroyed) are proportional to the spaces described: Art. 204. Hence the retarding force of the solid substance used in each experiment was a uniform force. But the duration of its action was so short and its intensity so great, that although the changes effected by the force were continuous, yet they were so rapid, that the force comes under the denomination of what we term impulsive forces.

by the ratio which the velocity of rebound bears to the velocity at the first contact. The elasticity is perfect when these two velocities are the same, but this is a limit which no bodies actually attain. The cause of this property of matter is of course conjectural, and our conclusions as to its laws are deduced solely from experiment.

Tables of the results of a series of experiments made by Mr Hodgkinson, of Manchester, on the elasticity of bodies will be found in Vol. III. p. 534. of the Reports of the British Association for the Advancement of Science. The following are the Conclusions deduced.

(1). All rigid bodies are possessed of some degree of elasticity: and among bodies of the same nature, the hardest are generally the most elastic.

(2). There are no perfectly hard inelastic bodies, as assumed by the earlier, and some modern writers on Mechanics.

(3). The elasticity as measured by the velocity of recoil divided by the velocity of impact is a ratio, which, though decreasing as the velocity increases, is nearly constant, when the same rigid bodies are struck together with considerably different velocities.

(4). The elasticity, as defined in (3), is the same whether the impinging bodies be great or small.

(5). The elasticity is the same, whatever be the relative weights of the impinging bodies.

(6). In impacts between bodies differing very much in hardness, the common elasticity is nearly that of the softer body.

(7). In impacts between bodies of which the hardness differs in any degree the resulting elasticity is made up of the elasticities of both; each body contributing a part of its own elasticity in proportion to its relative softness or compressibility.

221. Hence when one body impinges on another a mutual pressure takes place, which by incessantly acting as the compression of the bodies goes on finally checks their relative motion; after this new velocities are generated and the balls separate: and our object now is to enquire what the connexion is between the velocity destroyed during the compression of the balls and the pressure that destroyed it, and also between the velocity gene-

rated and the pressure by which it is generated. The difficulty of discovering this from experiment arises partly from the immediate action of the forces of restitution after the force of compression ceases to act: in consequence of which any experiment upon impinging balls is sure to involve the action of two sets of impulsive forces; first, those that act while the compression of the figures of the bodies is taking place, and secondly, those that act during the restitution of figure. We may call the first kind *impulsive forces of the nature of collision*, and the second kind *impulsive forces of the nature of explosion*: by the first velocity is destroyed, by the second velocity is generated. By certain artifices, however, we may overcome this difficulty.

222. We shall mention a few experiments which will lead us to a satisfactory conclusion.

Let A and B be two balls (fig. 77.) suspended by threads from two points C and D, so that they may just touch when at rest and have their centres in the same horizontal line: FAE, fBe circular arcs with centres C, D: now the velocities of a ball in falling through different arcs of a circle to the lowest point are in the proportion of the chords of those arcs, as is proved in the note*. Let therefore a scale be placed

* The pressure producing motion $= W \cos rPt = W \sin\theta$ (fig. 76): therefore the moving force (Art. 218), and also the accelerating force (since the mass of the body is invariable) varies as $\sin\theta$. Let α be the greatest value of θ: l the length of the thread: then $l(\alpha - \theta)$ is the space described by the body in the time t; and, supposing that at each instant the body is moving in the tangent line to the arc, the accelerating force $= l\,\frac{d^2(\alpha-\theta)}{dt^2} = -l\,\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2}$;

$$\therefore -\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} \text{ varies as } \sin\theta, \text{ and } = 2c^2 \sin\theta \text{ suppose:}$$

$$\therefore \left(\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right)^2 = 4c^2(\cos\theta + \text{const.})$$

When $\theta = \alpha$, velocity $= 0$, $\frac{d\theta}{dt} = 0$:

$$\therefore \left(\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right)^2 = 4c^2(\cos\theta - \cos\alpha),$$

$$\text{angular velocity at lowest point} = 2c\sqrt{1-\cos\alpha} = 4c\sin\frac{\alpha}{2}$$

$$= 2c \text{ chord } \alpha.$$

Hence the velocity varies as the chord of the arc.

below A and B so graduated as to mark the velocities of the balls A and B when at the lowest positions by knowing the arcs through which they move.

Now suppose a small steel point is fixed in A so that when A and B come in contact separation is prevented. It is found that if A and B are drawn through arcs of which the chords are inversely as the masses of the bodies, and then left to themselves, they will impinge and exactly destroy each others velocity, a small allowance being made for the resistance of the air. If one of the balls be moved through a greater arc, then when the balls come in contact they will not be at rest, but move in the direction in which that ball was moving before impact. This shews, that when the bodies impinge on each other with equal momenta, their mutual pressures exactly balance the momenta; but if the momentum of one ball be greater than the momentum of the other the mutual pressure is not sufficient to overcome the momentum of the first, but not only overcomes the momentum of the second but generates new momentum. This is found to be true for masses and velocities of all finite magnitudes.

Desaguliers mentions an experiment (*Experimental Philosophy*, Vol. II. Lecture VI. p. 62.) in which he replaced A and B by two cylinders closed at the outer extremities; one was introduced a short way into the other, and the cavity filled with gunpowder: it was found that after the explosion the cylinders rose through arcs varying inversely as their masses. Consequently the momenta generated by the action of the impulsive force of the explosion were the same.

In these experiments suppose that the mass and velocity of the body A remains the same: then if we vary the mass or velocity of B we must change them so that the pressure on A shall be the same: and this condition is that their product shall be constant. Hence, then, a given impulsive pressure generates in different bodies the same momentum. This is all that these experiments prove: they do not shew that the pressure varies directly as the momentum generated. This, however, we infer as in Art. 219.

223. Wherefore the results of the last nine Articles lead us to the following Principle.

When pressure communicates motion to a body, the mo
mentum generated in a given short time is proportional t
the pressure.

This is called the *Third Law of Motion*.

Newton has given this Law under the more general form that *Action and Reaction are equal and opposite*. If actio and reaction in dynamics be measured by the quantity o motion gained and lost, this is an immediate deduction fron our Third Law of Motion.

224. Leibnitz in the *Acta Eruditorum* 1695, p. 149 and after him Jean Bernoulli and others raised objections t Newton's measure of force, contending that it ought to b proportional to the product of the mass and the square of th velocity.

In their own words, "A force is said to be dead (*vi mortua*) which consists in nothing but the endeavour, or th tendency to motion. Such is gravity" it was said "as long as a heavy body hung by a thread endeavours to descend, bu cannot actually descend. A force is said to be alive or quick (*vis viva*) which always accompanies actual motion, and tends to produce a local motion. There is such a force in a body falling by gravity when it has already acquired some degrees of velocity." Professor Wolfius, quoted by Desaguliers; *Exp. Phil.* Vol. II. p. 72, 80.

Our object in making this quotation is to shew the origin of the term *vis viva*, which, as a term only, is still in use among us. The incorrectness of the above notion appears from the fact that it implies that matter has some inherent power of exerting force when in motion which it has not when at rest.

The reasoning by which these philosophers were led to the idea that pressure should be measured by the product of mass and the square of the velocity generated appears from the nature of the experiments from which they argued. It was found that when balls of equal size and density impinged upon clay they penetrated the clay by spaces which are as the squares of the velocities of impact: as in the example of the note in page 197. It was reasoned (as in that note) that when balls are projected against different solid substances so

as to penetrate to the same depth the forces will be as the squares of the velocities: and hence arises the mistake, for this supposes that we measure force by the velocity generated or destroyed in moving through a given space irrespective of the time of motion: but we measure force by the velocity generated in a given time irrespective of the space described. If then we retain our definition of force estimated dynamically by the velocity generated in a given time, the force must vary as the product of the mass and the velocity generated in a given time: but if we were to adopt the second measure of force estimated dynamically by the velocity generated in moving through a given space we should find that the force varies as the product of the mass and the square of the velocity generated.

The term *vis viva* is still used to express the product of the mass and square of the velocity.

225. We shall now choose the *units* of pressure, or statical force, and mass.

Let P be the pressure, f the accelerating force and M the mass, then P varies as Mf. Let the unit of pressure be that of a body of which the mass is M' and the accelerating force f': then

$$P : 1 :: Mf : M'f';$$

$$\therefore P = \frac{Mf}{M'f'};$$

we shall choose M' and f' so as to simplify this formula as much as possible: let $M' = 1$, $f' = 1$; then

$$P = Mf \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

the unit of pressure being the pressure of a body of a unit of mass and acted on by the unit of accelerating force.

When the pressure is impulsive *its unit is that of a body of mass unity moving with a unit of velocity:* if we, as above, suppose

$$P = Mv \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

Let W be the weight of a body of which the mass is M, and let the accelerating force of the Earth's attraction, or gravity, equal g: then

$$W = Mg \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3).$$

Also suppose that the body is homogeneous, of density ρ, and volume V: let ρ' and V' be the density and volume of a body of which the mass equals the unit of mass: then

$$M : 1 :: \rho V : \rho' V';$$

$$\therefore M = \frac{\rho V}{\rho' V'};$$

we shall choose ρ' and V' so as to simplify this formula as much as possible: let $\rho' = 1$, $V' = 1$: then

$$M = \rho V \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (4),$$

the unit of mass being the mass of a body of a unit of volume and a unit of density.

By (3) (4) we have

$$W = \rho V g \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (5).$$

Now by experiments made by Atwood's Machine described in Art. 216, it is found that the spaces described by a body falling freely from rest are 16.1, 3×16.1, 5×16.1, ... feet in the first, second, third, ... seconds of time. Hence gravity is a constant force and generates a velocity of 2×16.1 or 32.2 feet in a second of time. Wherefore if we take *a foot as the unit of length and a second as the unit of time we have*

$$g = 32.2 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (6),$$

$$W = 32.2\ V\rho \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (7);$$

and when $\rho = 1$ and $W = 1$, $V = \frac{1}{32.2}$; hence the relation among the units chosen gives this result, *that the unit of weight is the weight of a body of the unit of density and volume equal the* 32.2^{th} *part of the unit of volume.* The density of distilled water is taken generally as the unit of density; and a cubic foot as the unit of volume.

226. Having discovered the relation between the statical and dynamical measures of force, (which was the desideratum in Art. 214), we may now enunciate the Principles mentioned in Arts. 212, 213.

The Third Law of Motion and the units of measure chosen in the last Article shew, that finite statical force equals the moving force of the body resulting from its action; and impulsive statical force equals the momentum of the body resulting from its action. We shall suppose in what follows that statical forces are all replaced by these dynamical measures.

Let m be the mass of any particle of a material system, xyz its rectangular co-ordinates, then,

I. *If the system be in motion under the action of* finite *forces, the forces*

$$-m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \quad -m\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \quad -m\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$$

acting on m *parallel to the axes of* x y z *respectively, and similar forces acting on each of the other particles of the system, must, together with the impressed moving forces (Art.* 211*), satisfy the conditions of equilibrium.*

II. *If the system be acted on by* impulsive *forces, the forces*

$$-m\frac{dx}{dt}, \quad -m\frac{dy}{dt}, \quad -m\frac{dz}{dt}$$

acting on m *parallel to the axes, and similar forces acting on each of the other particles of the system, must, together with the impressed impulsive forces or momenta, satisfy the conditions of equilibrium.*

227. These Principles are the interpretation of the Three Laws of Motion into mathematical language. The Laws themselves are the results solely of observation and experiment. But these Principles are the results not only of the Laws, but also of certain conventional rules for measuring the quantities treated of; without which indeed we could not make the phenomena resulting from the Laws subjects of calculation. We must therefore be careful to interpret all results to which they lead us in conformity to these conventional rules.

CHAPTER II.

THE MOTION OF A MATERIAL PARTICLE.

228. LET xyz be the co-ordinates to the particle at the end of the time t, and m its mass.

Suppose the accelerating forces acting on the particle are resolved parallel to the axes and compounded into three X, Y, Z in these directions.

Then by the first of the Principles enunciated in Art. 226, the moving forces

$$mX, \quad mY, \quad mZ$$

$$-m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \quad -m\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \quad -m\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$$

will be in equilibrium with each other at the time t.

Hence by the conditions of equilibrium of a particle acted on by any forces given in Art. 23, we have the equations

$$mX - m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0, \qquad mY - m\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = 0,$$

$$mZ - m\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = 0,$$

$$\text{or } \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = X, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = Y, \quad \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = Z.$$

These are called the equations of motion of the material particle: and by integration we shall have three equations involving x, y, z, t and constant quantities.

By eliminating t we have two equations involving x, y, z without t. These are the equations to the curve described by the particle.

229. In the course of the integration six arbitrary constants will be introduced: these are determined by the initial circumstances of the motion: by the term *initial* we mean at the epoch from which t is measured*. The general integrals determine the *nature* only and not the *dimensions* of the curve described. The dimensions depend upon the initial conditions. These are, first, the three co-ordinates which give the position of the particle at the commencement of the motion. By substituting these in the three integrals and putting $t = 0$ we have three equations involving the six arbitrary constants and known quantities. The other initial quantities are the velocity and direction of projection, or, which amounts to the same, the initial velocities* parallel to the three axes.

By differentiating the three integrals with respect to t, we shall have three equations involving x, y, z, $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$ and the arbitrary constants: and giving the variable quantities their initial values we have three more equations involving the arbitrary constants and known quantities.

From these six equations, then, we can determine the six arbitrary constants and the problem is completely solved.

230. Suppose, on the other hand, the problem to be solved be the converse of the one already considered, namely, to determine the forces which will make a body describe a given curve.

* If any particle of the system commence its motion with a finite velocity, this is imparted to it by an impulsive force, which acts for so short a time as to produce its effect instantaneously: for this reason it is evidently indifferent whether we measure the time from the commencement or termination of the action of the impulsive force: and the term *initial velocity*, though there is no velocity, rigorously speaking, at the commencement of the motion, is perfectly allowable.

In short, when a system of material particles is projected into space and submitted to the action of surrounding bodies, two entirely different systems of forces act upon the particles. The first is a system of impulsive forces, of the nature described in Arts. 199, 200: these produce their effect in an indefinitely short time, after which they cease to act. The second system consists of forces of the nature described in the same Articles: these require a length of time of sensible duration to produce their effect. This latter system differs from the former merely in *intensity*.

We shall in this case have given *two* equations involving $x\,y\,z$, from which we are to obtain the *three* quantities $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ or X, Y, Z: this shews that the problem is indeterminate.

The following is the way to proceed.

The two equations involving x, y and z must be differentiated twice with respect to t: by this means we have two equations involving the four quantities X, Y, Z, and velocity (v).

$$\text{But } v^2 = \frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2};$$

$$\therefore \tfrac{1}{2}\frac{d \cdot v^2}{dt} = X\frac{dx}{dt} + Y\frac{dy}{dt} + Z\frac{dz}{dt},$$

$$\tfrac{1}{2}\frac{d \cdot v^2}{dx} = X + Y\frac{dy}{dx} + Z\frac{dz}{dx}.$$

This is a third equation involving X, Y, Z, v. By assuming a value of any one of these four quantities the other three may be determined, in terms of $x\,y\,z$.

RECTILINEAR MOTION.

231. PROP. *A body is acted on by a uniform force (that of gravity for instance) the motion being in the line of action of the force: required to determine the motion.*

Let x be the distance of the body at the time t from a fixed point in its course, measured in the direction of the force: and let g be the force.

Then the equation of motion is

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = g.$$

By integration we have

$$\frac{dx}{dt} = gt + C, \; C \text{ being an arbitrary constant.}$$

To determine C we must refer to the *initial* circumstances of the motion.

Suppose the body is projected with a velocity u in the direction in which the force acts.

$$\text{Then when } t = 0, \quad \frac{dx}{dt} = u; \quad \therefore\ u = C;$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{dx}{dt} = gt + u.$$

Integrating again

$$x = \tfrac{1}{2} g t^2 + ut + C'.$$

Let a be the distance of the body from the origin of x at the commencement of the motion: then the initial circumstances are that when $t = 0$, $x = a$; $\therefore\ C' = a$;

$$\therefore\ x = a + ut + \tfrac{1}{2} g t^2,$$

or the space described in the time t is $ut + \frac{1}{2} g t^2$.

This is a necessary consequence of the second law of motion.

If the body be not projected then $u = 0$ and $x = a + \frac{1}{2} g t^2$.

If the body be projected with a velocity u in a direction *opposite* to that in which x is measured, then when $t = 0$, $-\frac{dx}{dt} = u$ since x is diminished as t increases:* and

$$x = a - ut + \tfrac{1}{2} g t^2.$$

* In Art. 191, it was shewn that if s be the space described in the time t by a body, and v its velocity at the end of that time, then $\frac{ds}{dt} = v$.

But if the space be measured in a direction opposite to that in which the *motion* takes place, then, b and s' being the distances of the point from which the space is measured at the commencement of the motion and at the end of the time t, then $s = b - s'$ and $-\frac{ds'}{dt} = v$.

Also in Art. 205, it was shewn that if f be the magnitude of the force at the end of the time t, then $\frac{d^2 s}{dt^2} = f$. If, as before, the space be measured in the direction opposite to that of the action of the *force*, then $-\frac{d^2 s'}{dt^2} = f$.

PROP. *A body falls towards a centre of force the intensity of which varies directly as the distance of the body from the centre: required to determine the motion.*

232. Let μ be the magnitude of the force at a distance unity from the centre of force: this is called the *absolute* force of the centre: a the distance of the body from the centre at the commencement of the motion, x the distance at the time t.

Then μx is the magnitude of the force at the distance x: and the equation of motion is

$$-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = \mu x,$$

the negative sign being taken because the tendency of the force is to diminish x;

$$\therefore\ 2\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -2\mu x\frac{dx}{dt}$$

$$\text{integrating, } \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} = C - \mu x^2,$$

C being an arbitrary constant to be determined by the initial circumstances of the motion: these are that when $t=0$, $x=a$, and the velocity, or $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $=0$; $\therefore C = \mu a^2$;

$$\therefore \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} = \mu(a^2 - x^2);$$

$$\therefore -\frac{dt}{dx} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}\frac{1}{\sqrt{a^2 - x^2}},$$

the negative sign being taken in extracting the square root because x diminishes as t increases.

$$\text{Integrating, } t = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}}\cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a} + C'$$

$$\text{when } t = 0,\ x = a,\ \therefore C' = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ t = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}} \cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a}$$

when $x = 0$, the body arrives at the centre;

$$\therefore \text{ time of falling into the centre } = \frac{\pi}{2\sqrt{\mu}}.$$

The velocity is zero when $\frac{dx}{dt} = 0$, or when $x = a$ and $-a$: hence the body passes through the centre and stops at a distance on the other side equal to the original distance. From this point it will return to its original position and continually oscillate over the same space: the time of oscillation from rest to rest is $\frac{\pi}{\sqrt{\mu}}$. It is remarkable that this is independent of the initial distance of the body from the centre of force.

The expression for the time shews, that the body will oscillate backwards and forwards: for suppose α is the least positive value of $\cos^{-1}\frac{x}{a}$ for any given value of x, then

$$t = \frac{\alpha}{\sqrt{\mu}} \text{ or } \frac{2\pi - \alpha}{\sqrt{\mu}} \text{ or } \frac{2\pi + \alpha}{\sqrt{\mu}} \ldots\ldots$$

or, generally, $\frac{2n\pi \mp \alpha}{\sqrt{\mu}}$, n being any integer.

This proves that the body will periodically arrive at any given point of its path: the intervals of time between the successive arrivals being $\frac{2\pi - 2\alpha}{\sqrt{\mu}}$ and $\frac{2\alpha}{\sqrt{\mu}}$ alternately.

PROP. *Suppose the body in the last Proposition is projected with a velocity* u *in the line in which the force acts.*

233. As before we have

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} = C - \mu x^2$$

jection is from or towards the centre: in both cases

$$u^2 = C - \mu a^2$$

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} = u^2 + \mu (a^2 - x^2).$$

Considering the motion *towards* the centre

$$-\frac{dt}{dx} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{a^2 + \frac{u^2}{\mu} - x^2}}$$

$$t = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}} \cos^{-1} \frac{x}{\sqrt{a^2 + \frac{u^2}{\mu}}} + C$$

when $t = 0$, $x = a$;

$$\therefore\ t = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\mu}} \left\{ \cos^{-1} \frac{x}{\sqrt{a^2 + \frac{u^2}{\mu}}} - \cos^{-1} \frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2 + \frac{u^2}{\mu}}} \right\}.$$

The greatest distance to which the body goes from the centre is $\sqrt{a^2 + \frac{u^2}{\mu}}$, and the time of a complete oscillation from rest to rest is as before $\frac{\pi}{\sqrt{\mu}}$.

PROP. *A body falls towards a centre of force the intensity of which varies inversely as the square of the distance of the body: required to determine the motion.*

234. Let μ be the *absolute* force of the centre as before: then the force at distance x is equal to $\frac{\mu}{x^2}$: and the equation of motion is

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{\mu}{x^2};$$

$$\therefore\ 2\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{2\mu}{x^2}\frac{dx}{dt};$$

$$\text{integrating, } \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} = \frac{2\mu}{x} + C$$

$$\text{when } x = a,\ \frac{dx}{dt} = 0;\ \therefore\ 0 = \frac{2\mu}{x} + C$$

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} = 2\mu\left(\frac{1}{x} - \frac{1}{a}\right)$$

$$-\frac{dt}{dx} = \sqrt{\frac{a}{2\mu}}\sqrt{\frac{x}{a-x}} = \sqrt{\frac{a}{2\mu}}\frac{x}{\sqrt{ax - x^2}};$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{dt}{dx} = \sqrt{\frac{a}{2\mu}}\frac{\frac{a}{2} - x - \frac{a}{2}}{\sqrt{ax - x^2}}$$

$$t = \sqrt{\frac{a}{2\mu}}\left\{\sqrt{ax - x^2} - \frac{a}{2}\operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{2x}{a}\right\} + C$$

$$\text{when } t = 0,\ x = a;\ \therefore\ 0 = -\sqrt{\frac{a}{2\mu}}\frac{a\pi}{2} + C$$

$$t = \sqrt{\frac{a}{2\mu}}\left\{\frac{\pi}{2}a - \frac{a}{2}\operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{2x}{a} + \sqrt{ax - x^2}\right\}$$

when the body arrives at the centre $x = 0$, therefore time of falling to the centre $= \frac{\pi}{\sqrt{\mu}}\left(\frac{a}{2}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}}$.

235. In a subsequent part of this work we shall see, that the attraction of the Earth on external bodies varies inversely as the square of the distance from its centre, supposing the Earth a sphere. And that the attraction on any bodies within the Earth varies directly as the distance from the centre.

It is for this reason that in the foregoing Propositions we have selected these particular laws of force. No other laws are known to exist in the universe.

PROP. *A body acted on by the constant force of gravity moves down an inclined plane: required to calculate the motion.*

236. Let the plane of the paper be the vertical plane in which the motion takes place: AB (fig. 78.) the intersection of this with the inclined plane: P the position of the body at the time t, A being its place when $t = 0$: a the angle the plane makes with the horizon. Now the forces which are acting upon the body at the time t are the force of gravity g, which acts vertically and the pressure of the plane on the body. If we resolve the forces in the direction of the motion we shall not introduce the pressure.

$$\text{Let } AP = x.$$

Now the part of g resolved along the line AP is $g \sin a$, hence the equation of motion is

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = g \sin a,$$

and the results will be precisely the same as those in Art. 231, if we there substitute $g \sin a$ instead of g.

If we wish to know the pressure P upon the plane, by resolving the forces perpendicularly to the line of motion we have, since no space is described by the body in that direction,

$$0 = mg \cos a - P \quad \text{(Art. 225.)}$$

Hence $P = mg \cos a$, and is constant and is in proportion to the weight of the body in the ratio $\cos a : 1$.

CURVILINEAR MOTION OF A PARTICLE.

PROP. *A body is acted on by the constant force of gravity, which acts in parallel lines: required to determine the motion of the body when it is projected in a direction not vertical.*

237. Let the axis of y be vertical and reckoned positive upwards and drawn through the point of projection. The motion will evidently take place wholly in a vertical plane.

Let the axis of x be drawn in this plane the origin being the point of projection A, (fig. 79.) Let also g be the accelerating force of gravity.

Then the equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0, \quad -\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = g.$$

By integration

$$\frac{dx}{dt} = c, \quad \frac{dy}{dt} = c' - gt,$$

c and c' being constants to be determined by the circumstances of projection.

Let u be the velocity of projection, α the angle its direction makes with the axis of x.

$$\text{Then when } t = 0, \ \frac{dx}{dt} = u\cos\alpha, \ \frac{dy}{dt} = u\sin\alpha;$$

$$\therefore u\cos\alpha = c, \ u\sin\alpha = c';$$

$$\therefore \frac{dx}{dt} = u\cos\alpha, \quad \frac{dy}{dt} = u\sin\alpha - gt.$$

Integrating again

$$x = ut\cos\alpha, \quad y = ut\sin\alpha - \tfrac{1}{2}gt^2 \ldots\ldots (1),$$

no constants are added after integration because when $t = 0$, $x = 0$ and $y = 0$ by the circumstances of the problem.

These two equations determine the position of the body at any time.

238. To find the curve described we eliminate t from equations (1); Art. 228;

$$\therefore y = x\tan\alpha - \frac{gx^2}{2u^2\cos^2\alpha}.$$

This is the equation to a parabola.

For it may be written

$$(x - \frac{u^2}{g}\cos\alpha\sin\alpha)^2 = -\frac{2u^2}{g}\cos^2\alpha\,(y - \frac{u^2}{2g}\sin^2\alpha).$$

And by transferring the origin to a point of which the co-ordinates are

$$\frac{u^2}{g}\cos\alpha\sin\alpha \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{u^2}{2g}\sin^2\alpha$$

the equation becomes

$$x^2 = -\frac{2u^2}{g}\cos^2\alpha\, y,$$

which is the equation to a parabola with its axis vertical and measured downwards,

$$\text{and latus rectum} = \frac{2u^2}{g}\cos^2\alpha.$$

The *range* is the distance between the point of projection and the point where the body strikes the ground. The curve described is called the *projectile*.

PROP. *To find the range of the projectile, the time of flight, and the greatest height the body reaches.*

239. When $y = 0$, $x\tan\alpha - \dfrac{gx^2}{2u^2\cos^2\alpha} = 0$;

$$\therefore\ x = 0 \text{ and } x = \frac{2u^2}{g}\cos^2\alpha\tan\alpha = \frac{u^2}{g}\sin 2\alpha,$$

this latter value of x is the *range on a horizontal plane.*

If the body be projected from an inclined plane perpendicular to the plane of the projectile, then, if i be the angle of inclination of the plane to the horizon, $y = x\tan i$ is the equation to the intersection of this plane and the plane of motion: and the value of x when the body strikes the plane is found from

$$x\tan i = x\tan\alpha - \frac{gx^2}{2u^2\cos^2\alpha};$$

$$\therefore\ x = 0, \text{ and } x = \frac{2u^2}{g}\cos^2\alpha(\tan\alpha - \tan i) = \frac{2u^2\cos\alpha\sin(\alpha - i)}{g\cos i},$$

this latter value of x is the *range on the inclined plane.*

By (1) $x = ut\cos\alpha$;

therefore time of flight on the inclined plane

$$= \frac{x}{u\cos\alpha} = \frac{2u}{g}\frac{\sin(\alpha - i)}{\cos i}; \quad = \frac{2u}{g}\sin\alpha, \text{ if } i = 0.$$

When the body reaches its greatest height

$$\frac{dy}{dx} = 0; \ \therefore x = \frac{u^2}{g}\tan\alpha\cos^2\alpha = \frac{u^2}{g}\sin\alpha\cos\alpha;$$

$$\therefore \text{ greatest height } = \frac{u^2}{g}\left\{\sin^2\alpha - \tfrac{1}{2}\sin^2\alpha\right\} = \frac{u^2}{2g}\sin^2\alpha.$$

CENTRAL FORCES.

240. Forces which continually tend towards a given point, and the intensity of which depends upon the distance from that point, whether fixed or in motion, are called *Central Forces.* All the forces with which we are acquainted in nature are of this description, as will appear in the sequel. For this reason we shall devote a large portion of these pages to the consideration of their action.

We shall, in the first place, investigate the most important general properties of orbits described by bodies moving under the influence of central forces, and in the next place determine the nature of the orbits when the law and intensity of the forces are given, and, conversely, determine the forces requisite to cause a body to describe given orbits.

PROP. *When a body is acted on by one central force the motion is wholly in one plane.*

241. Suppose xyz are the co-ordinates at the time t to a material particle moving about a centre of force, the origin of co-ordinates being at this centre: r the distance of the particle from the centre: and let P, some function of r, represent the intensity of the force at the distance r.

The resolved parts of this force parallel to the three axes of co-ordinates are

$$P\frac{x}{r}, \quad P\frac{y}{r}, \quad \text{and } P\frac{z}{r},$$

and since these tend to diminish the co-ordinates the equations of motion are

$$-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = P\frac{x}{r}, \quad -\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = P\frac{y}{r}, \quad -\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = P\frac{z}{r} \ldots\ldots\ldots (1).$$

Multiplying the first by y and the second by x and subtracting the equations we have

$$x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0;$$

$$\therefore x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} = h,$$

h being an arbitrary constant.

In like manner $z\frac{dx}{dt} - x\frac{dz}{dt} = h_1,$

$$y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt} = h_2,$$

h_1 and h_2 being arbitrary constants, which, as well as h, are to be determined by the circumstances of the motion at any given time.

Now multiply these last three equations by z, y, x respectively and add them together;

$$\therefore 0 = hz + h_1y + h_2x.$$

This is the equation to an invariable plane passing through the origin of co-ordinates, its position depending on the values of $h\,h_1\,h_2$.

Hence the motion takes place wholly in a plane passing through the centre of force, the position depending upon the initial (or any other *given*) circumstances of the motion.

PROP. *The areas described by the body about the centre of force are proportional to the time*

242. In consequence of the property proved in the last Proposition we shall refer the body's motion to two co-ordinates instead of three. Let the plane of motion be the plane xy.

Then the equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -P\frac{x}{r} \quad \ldots\ldots (1), \qquad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -P\frac{y}{r} \quad \ldots\ldots (2),$$

and, as before, we obtain

$$x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} = h,$$

and let A be the sectorial area swept out during the time t by the radius vector;

$$\therefore \frac{dA}{dt} = \tfrac{1}{2}\left(x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt}\right) \text{ by Diff. Calc.} = \frac{h}{2};$$

$$\therefore A = \frac{ht}{2},$$

if t and A be both measured from the commencement of the motion. This proves that the area swept out by the radius-vector is proportional to the time of describing it.

When polar co-ordinates are used let θ be the angle that the radius-vector r makes with the axis of x; then $x = r\cos\theta$ and $y = r\sin\theta$: and by substitution

$$\frac{dA}{dt} = \tfrac{1}{2}r^2\frac{d\theta}{dt}; \qquad \therefore r^2\frac{d\theta}{dt} = h.$$

The following is an immediate consequence of this property.

PROP. *To prove that the velocity of the body at different parts of its path is inversely proportional to the perpendicular on the tangent.*

243. Velocity $= v = \dfrac{ds}{dt} = \dfrac{ds}{d\theta}\dfrac{d\theta}{dt}$

$$= \frac{r^2}{p}\frac{d\theta}{dt}, \text{ by the Differential Calculus,}$$

p is the perpendicular on the tangent at the distance r,

$$= \frac{r^2}{p}\,\frac{h}{r^2} \text{ by last Art.} = \frac{h}{p}.$$

PROP. *To prove that the velocity is independent of the path described.*

244. Multiply equations (1) (2) of Art. 242. by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$, $2\frac{dy}{dt}$ respectively and add them, then

$$2\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + 2\frac{dy}{dt}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -\frac{2P}{r}\left(x\frac{dx}{dt} + y\frac{dy}{dt}\right)$$

$$= -2P\frac{dr}{dt}, \quad \because x^2 + y^2 = r^2;$$

$$\text{but } v^2 = \frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d.v^2}{dt} = -2P\frac{dr}{dt};$$

$$\therefore v^2 = V^2 - 2\int_R^r P dr, \quad r = R \text{ when } v = V;$$

and since this, when integrated from one position of the body to another, will be a function only of the corresponding distances, it follows, that the velocity is independent of the orbit described, and at any given distance depends solely on the magnitude and law of the force and the velocity and distance of projection.

COR. This is true also when the body is acted on by any number of central forces tending to fixed centres.

There is one more property of central orbits which we shall demonstrate owing to its utility in determining the velocity whenever the force and orbit are known.

PROP. *To prove that the velocity at any point of a central orbit is that due to a body falling through one fourth of the chord of curvature at that point through the centre of force under the action of the force at that point supposed to remain constant.*

245. By last Article $v\frac{dv}{dr} = -P$.

Also by Art. 243. $v = \frac{h}{p}$:

differentiate the logarithm of each side of this equation;

$$\therefore \frac{1}{v}\frac{dv}{dr} = -\frac{1}{p}\frac{dp}{dr},$$

divide the first equation by this;

$\therefore v^2 = Pp\frac{dr}{dp} = 2P \frac{1}{4}$ chord of curvature through the centre of force at dist. r.

Hence the Proposition is true.

Having demonstrated these Properties of Central Orbits we shall proceed to the determination of the nature of the orbits themselves.

PROP. *A body being acted on by a central force: required to find the polar equation to its path.*

246. The equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -P\frac{x}{r} \ldots (1), \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -P\frac{y}{r} \ldots (2);$$

$$\therefore x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0,$$

$$x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} = \text{constant} = h,$$

putting $x = r\cos\theta$ and $y = r\sin\theta$; we have

$$r^2\frac{d\theta}{dt} = h.$$

Again, multiplying (1) and (2) by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$ and $2\frac{dy}{dt}$ and adding,

$$2\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}+2\frac{dy}{dt}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}=-\frac{2P}{r}\left(x\frac{dx}{dt}+y\frac{dy}{dt}\right);$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{dt}\left\{\frac{dx^2}{dt^2}+\frac{dy^2}{dt^2}\right\}=-2P\frac{dr}{dt}, \quad \because x^2+y^2=r^2,$$

and introducing polar co-ordinates

$$\frac{d}{dt}\left\{\left(\frac{dr^2}{d\theta^2}+r^2\right)\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\right\}=-2P\frac{dr}{dt}.$$

$$\text{But } \frac{d\theta}{dt}=\frac{h}{r^2};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{d\theta}\left\{\frac{1}{r^4}\frac{dr^2}{d\theta^2}+\frac{1}{r^2}\right\}=-\frac{2P}{h^2}\frac{dr}{d\theta}.$$

$$\text{Put } \frac{1}{r}=u: \quad \text{and } \therefore -\frac{1}{r^2}\frac{dr}{d\theta}=\frac{du}{d\theta};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{d\theta}\left\{\frac{du^2}{d\theta^2}+u^2\right\}=\frac{2P}{h^2u^2}\frac{du}{d\theta},$$

and then performing the differentiation on the left-hand side and dividing by $2\frac{du}{d\theta}$,

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2}+u=\frac{P}{h^2u^2}.$$

This is the differential equation to the orbit described. The force P being given in terms of r, we must integrate this equation: and the solution will be the equation to the orbit described.

The integral will contain three arbitrary constants, two introduced in the process of integration and the other, h, existing in the differential equation. These are determined by the initial (or any other given) circumstances of the motion: viz. the velocity, distance, and direction of projection.

The general integral determines only the *nature* of the orbit described: but the circumstances of the motion at any given time determine the *species* and *dimensions* of the orbit.

247. The differential equation $P = h^2u^2\left\{\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u\right\}$ may be used to ascertain the law of force which must act upon a body to cause it to describe a given curve. To effect this we must determine the relation between u and θ from the equation to the orbit: we must then differentiate u twice with respect to θ and substitute the result in the expression for P, eliminating θ, if it occur, by means of the relation between u and θ. In this way we shall obtain P in terms of u alone, and therefore of r alone.

248. When we know the relation between r and θ, we make use of the equation $r^2\frac{d\theta}{dt} = h$ to determine the time of describing a given portion of the orbit: or, conversely, to find the position of the body in its orbit at any time.

We proceed now to exemplify these principles by various applications.

PROP. *A body moves about a centre of force varying directly as the distance: required to determine the motion.*

249. Let μ be the absolute force: then $P = \mu r = \frac{\mu}{u}$.

In order to simplify the calculation we shall first suppose the body projected perpendicular to the radius vector.

Let V, R be the velocity and distance of projection;

$\therefore$ $h = 2$ area described in $1'' = VR$ by Art. 243.

$$\therefore \frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u = \frac{\mu}{V^2R^2u^3};$$

multiplying by $2\frac{du}{d\theta}$ and integrating

$$\frac{du^2}{d\theta^2} + u^2 = C - \frac{\mu}{V^2R^2u^2},$$

when $\frac{1}{u} = R$, $\frac{dr}{d\theta} = 0$ and $\therefore \frac{du}{d\theta} = 0$;

$$\therefore C = \frac{1}{R^2} + \frac{\mu}{V^2},$$

$$\therefore \frac{du^2}{d\theta^2} = \frac{V^2 + R^2\mu}{R^2V^2} - \frac{\mu}{V^2R^2u^2} - u^2;$$

$$\frac{1}{4}\left(\frac{d.u^2}{d\theta}\right)^2 = \left(\frac{V^2 - R^2\mu}{2R^2V^2}\right)^2 - \left(u^2 - \frac{V^2 + R^2\mu}{2R^2V^2}\right)^2;$$

extracting the square root, inverting, and integrating

$$2\theta + C = \sin^{-1}\frac{2R^2V^2u^2 - (V^2 + R^2\mu)}{V^2 - R^2\mu},$$

when $\theta = 0$, $u = \frac{1}{R}$, $\therefore C = \sin^{-1} 1 = \frac{\pi}{2}$;

$$\therefore \frac{1}{r^2} = u^2 = \frac{(V^2 + R^2\mu) + (V^2 - R^2\mu)\cos 2\theta}{2R^2V^2}$$

$$= \frac{V^2\cos^2\theta + R^2\mu\sin^2\theta}{R^2V^2}$$

$$1 = \left(\frac{r\cos\theta}{R}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{\sqrt{\mu}\, r\sin\theta}{V}\right)^2.$$

Hence the orbit is an ellipse, the force being in the centre. The semiaxes are R and $\frac{V}{\sqrt{\mu}}$.

250. The periodic time may be found by integrating the equation $\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{r^2}{h}$, (Art. 242). But the following method is more simple.

$$\text{Periodic time} = \frac{2\,\text{area of ellipse}}{h}, \quad \text{(see Art. 242.)}$$

$$= \frac{2\pi R\,\frac{V}{\sqrt{\mu}}}{VR} = \frac{2\pi}{\sqrt{\mu}}.$$

This result is remarkable: for it shews that the period is independent of the dimensions of the ellipse and depends solely on the *intensity* of the force.

251. Cor. 1. If the angle of projection be β instead of $\frac{\pi}{2}$ it will be found, that the orbit is still an ellipse, the force being in the centre; and if a, b be the semi-axes*,

* This may be demonstrated with greater facility by using the equations of motion, which are, in this case,

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\mu x, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -\mu y.$$

Multiplying them respectively by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$, $2\frac{dy}{dt}$ and integrating we have

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} = \mu(h^2 - x^2), \quad \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} = \mu(k^2 - y^2) \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

h and k being arbitrary constants, introduced in the above form for the sake of symmetry;

$$\therefore \frac{dy^2}{dx^2} = \frac{k^2 - y^2}{h^2 - x^2}, \quad \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2 - y^2}}\frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{h^2 - x^2}};$$

$$\therefore \sin^{-1}\frac{y}{k} = \sin^{-1}\frac{x}{h} + \sin^{-1} c \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2),$$

c being an arbitrary constant;

$$\therefore \frac{y}{k} = \frac{x}{h}\sqrt{1 - c^2} + c\sqrt{1 - \frac{x^2}{h^2}},$$

by transposing and squaring and transposing again

$$\frac{y^2}{k^2} + \frac{x^2}{h^2} - \frac{2\sqrt{1 - c^2}\,xy}{hk} = c^2.$$

This is the equation to an ellipse from the centre: since $B^2 - 4AC = \frac{4(1-c^2)}{h^2k^2} - \frac{4}{h^2k^2}$ $= -\frac{4c^2}{h^2k^2}$ is essentially negative; A, B, C being the coefficients of y^2, xy, x^2 respectively.

In order to determine the constants h, k, c, let V be the velocity of projection, α the angle which the direction of projection makes with the axis of x, a, b, the coordinates to the point of projection: then equations (1) give

$$V^2\cos^2\alpha = \mu(h^2 - a^2), \quad V^2\sin^2\alpha = \mu(k^2 - b^2),$$

and (2) gives $\sin^{-1}\frac{b}{k} - \sin^{-1}\frac{a}{h} = \sin^{-1} c$,

by which h, k, c are known.

If, as in Art. 249, we suppose the body projected from the axis of x at right angles to that line, then $b = 0$, $\alpha = 90^\circ$;

$$\therefore h^2 = a^2, \quad \mu k^2 = V^2,$$

$$\sin^{-1} c = \sin^{-1}\frac{b}{k} - \sin^{-1}\frac{a}{h} = -\sin^{-1}, \text{ therefore } c^2 = 1,$$

and the equation to the orbit becomes

$$\frac{\mu}{V^2}y^2 + \frac{1}{a^2}x^2 = 1.$$

The equation to an ellipse of which the semi-axes are a and $\frac{V}{\sqrt{\mu}}$.

$\frac{1}{a^2}$ and $\frac{1}{b^2} = \frac{V^2+\mu R^2 \pm \sqrt{(V^2+\mu R^2)^2 - 4\mu V^2 R^2 \sin^2\beta}}{2V^2R^2\sin^2\beta}$ respectively.

$$\text{Hence periodic time} = \frac{2\pi ab}{(h=)\ VR\sin\beta} = \frac{2\pi}{\sqrt{\mu}},$$

the same result as before.

Cor. 2. The result of this Proposition is of great importance in Physical Optics. For the forces which act upon the disturbed molecules of the vibrating medium of light all vary as the distance so long as the displacements are not very great. Now the *colour* of the light is assumed to depend upon the *time of vibration* of the molecules: and the *intensity* of the light upon the extent and magnitude of the vibrations, that is, upon the quantity of motion. The preceding Proposition shews, then, that light may alter in intensity without changing in colour, since the time of vibration is independent of the magnitude of the motion, when the law of force is that of the direct distance.

Prop. *A body is acted on by a central force varying inversely as the square of the distance: required to determine the orbit described.* *

* Many Propositions of this description may be solved in the following manner.

By Arts. 243, 244, $v^2 = V^2 - 2\int_R^r P\,dr$, $v = \frac{h}{p}$; $\therefore \frac{h^2}{p^2} = V^2 - 2\int_R^r P\,dr$.

Ex. 1. Let $P = \mu r$; $\therefore \frac{h^2}{p^2} = V^2 + \mu R^2 - \mu r^2$,

which is the equation to an ellipse about the centre, the axes being given by the equations

$$a^2 + b^2 = \frac{V^2}{\mu} + R^2, \quad a^2 b^2 = \frac{h^2}{\mu}.$$

Ex. 2. Let $P = \frac{\mu}{r^2}$, $\therefore \frac{h^2}{p^2} = \frac{2\mu}{r} - \frac{2\mu}{R} + V^2$.

This is the equation to a conic section about the focus.

The equation to the ellipse is $\frac{1}{p^2} = \frac{2a}{b^2 r} - \frac{1}{b^2}$

..... hyperbola is $\frac{1}{p^2} = \frac{2a}{b^2 r} + \frac{1}{b^2}$

..... parabola is $\frac{1}{p^2} = \frac{1}{mr}$.

252. Let μ be the absolute force: then $P = \frac{\mu}{r^2} = \mu u^2$, V, R, β the velocity, distance, and angle of projection: then $h = VR\sin\beta$ (Art. 243.)

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u = \frac{\mu}{h^2},$$

multiplying by $2\frac{du}{d\theta}$ and integrating

$$\frac{du^2}{d\theta^2} + u^2 = \frac{2\mu}{h^2}u + C,$$

when $\frac{1}{u} = R$, $r\frac{d\theta}{dr}$, or the tangent of the angle between the radius vector and the tangent line, $= \tan\beta$:

$$\therefore\ u\frac{d\theta}{du} = -\tan\beta;$$

$$\therefore\ C = \frac{1}{R^2\tan^2\beta} + \frac{1}{R^2} - \frac{2\mu}{h^2R} = \frac{1}{R^2\sin^2\beta} - \frac{2\mu}{h^2R} = \frac{V^2R - 2\mu}{h^2R};$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{du^2}{d\theta^2} = \frac{V^2R - 2\mu}{h^2R} + \frac{\mu^2}{h^4} - \left(\frac{\mu}{h^2} - u\right)^2;$$

extracting the square root, inverting, and integrating

$$\theta + C' = \cos^{-1}\frac{\frac{\mu}{h^2} - u}{\sqrt{\frac{V^2R - 2\mu}{h^2R} + \frac{\mu^2}{h^4}}},$$

C' is found by the condition, that when $u = \frac{1}{R}$, $\theta = 0$.

In the case of the ellipse

$$\frac{a}{b^2} = \frac{\mu}{h^2},\quad \frac{1}{b^2} = \frac{2\mu}{Rh^2} - \frac{V^2}{h^2};$$

$$\therefore\ a = \frac{R\mu}{2\mu - V^2R},\quad b = \sqrt{\frac{Rh^2}{2\mu - V^2R}}.$$

The path is an ellipse, hyperbola, or parabola according as V^2 is less than, greater than, or equal to $\frac{2\mu}{R}$.

$$\text{Then } \frac{1}{r} = \frac{\mu}{h^2} + \sqrt{\frac{V^2R - 2\mu}{h^2R} + \frac{\mu^2}{h^4}} \cos(\theta + C')$$

is the equation to the path: it is the equation to a conic section from the focus, and may be written

$$\frac{1}{r} = \frac{1 + e\cos(\theta + C')}{a(1 \sim e^2)};$$

the angle $\theta + C'$ being measured from the shorter length of the axis major, and $2a$ and $2a\sqrt{1 - e^2}$ being the axes:

$$\text{Then } e^2 = \frac{V^2R - 2\mu}{R\mu^2} h^2 + 1, \text{ subs. for } h$$

$$= \frac{V^2R - 2\mu}{\mu^2} RV^2 \sin^2\beta + 1 \ldots (1);$$

$$\text{and } a(1 \sim e^2) = \frac{h^2}{\mu} = \frac{V^2R^2\sin^2\beta}{\mu} \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

Now the conic section is an ellipse, parabola, or hyperbola according as e is less than, equal to, or greater than unity.

Hence, from equation (1), the orbit described is an ellipse, parabola, or hyperbola about the focus according as V^2 is less than, equal to, or greater than $\frac{2\mu}{R}$. This proves the remarkable property, that the species of the conic section described is independent of the direction of projection.

In the case of the ellipse and hyperbola the axis major $= 2a = \frac{2\mu R}{V^2R \sim 2\mu}$ and *this* is also independent of the direction of projection.

In the case of the parabola, the distance of the vertex from the focus, or $D = a(1 - e)$ $(e = 1) = \frac{V^2R^2\sin^2\beta}{2\mu}$.

The position of the axis major with respect to the radius vector R, is determined by C', which is the angle between these two lines.

Put $\theta = 0$ and $r = R$ in the value of $\frac{1}{r}$:

$$\therefore \cos C' = \frac{a(1 \sim e^2)}{Re} - \frac{1}{e} = \frac{V^2 R \sin^2\beta - \mu}{\mu e}.$$

By referring to Art. 234, we see that the velocity of a body falling from an infinite distance to a distance R from a centre of force $\frac{\mu}{r^2}$ is equal to $\sqrt{\frac{2\mu}{R}}$. Hence the orbit described about this centre of force will be an ellipse, parabola, or hyperbola according as the velocity is less than, equal to, or greater than that from infinity.

253. We might make use of the equation

$$P = h^2 u^2 \left(\frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} + u\right)$$

to discover the law of force when the orbit is given.

Thus if the orbit be a conic section with the force in one of the foci, and m be the distance of the pole from the nearest vertex, then the equation to the orbit is

$$u = \frac{1 + e\cos\theta}{m(1+e)}; \quad \therefore P = \frac{h^2 u^2}{m(1+e)} = \frac{h^2}{m(1+e)} \frac{1}{r^2};$$

or the only law of force is that of the inverse square of the distance.

If the orbit be the ellipse the centre being the centre of force, then, a and b being the semi-axes,

$$u^2 = \frac{\cos^2\theta}{a^2} + \frac{\sin^2\theta}{b^2}; \quad u\frac{du}{d\theta} = \left(\frac{1}{b^2} - \frac{1}{a^2}\right)\cos\theta\sin\theta,$$

$$u\frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} + \frac{du^2}{d\theta^2} = \left(\frac{1}{b^2} - \frac{1}{a^2}\right)(\cos^2\theta - \sin^2\theta);$$

$$\therefore P = \frac{h^2}{u}\left\{u^4 + u^3\frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2}\right\} = \frac{h^2}{u}\left\{u^4 - u^2\frac{du^2}{d\theta^2} + u^2\left(u\frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} + \frac{du^2}{d\theta^2}\right)\right\}$$

$$= \frac{h^2}{u}\left\{\left(\frac{\cos^2\theta}{a^2} + \frac{\sin^2\theta}{b^2}\right)^2 - \left(\frac{1}{b^2} - \frac{1}{a^2}\right)^2 \cos^2\theta\sin^2\theta\right.$$

$$\left. + \left(\frac{\cos^2\theta}{a^2} + \frac{\sin^2\theta}{b^2}\right)\left(\frac{1}{b^2} - \frac{1}{a^2}\right)(\cos^2\theta - \sin^2\theta)\right\}$$

$$= \frac{h^2}{u}\left\{\frac{\cos^4\theta + 2\cos^2\theta\sin^2\theta + \sin^4\theta}{a^2b^2}\right\} = \frac{h^2}{a^2b^2}r,$$

and therefore the only law is that of the direct distance.

254. If the orbit be a circle the centre of force being in the centre of the circle: then a being the radius $r = a$ is its equation: and

$$P = h^2u^3 = \frac{h^2}{a^5}.$$

Also by Art. 242, $\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{r^2}{h} = \frac{a^2}{h}$ in this case, and therefore the velocity is constant;

$$\therefore\ ht = a^2\theta + \text{const.}$$

when $t = 0$, suppose $\theta = 0$; and when $t = T$, the time of revolution, $\theta = 2\pi$;

$$\therefore\ hT = 2\pi a^2.$$

Let V be the velocity, then $h = Va$ Art. 243;

$$\therefore\ P = \frac{V^2}{a} \text{ and } T = \frac{2\pi a}{V}.$$

Since the velocity is uniform it follows that the force produces no effect upon the velocity: in short, the only effect of the force is to deflect the body from the rectilinear path which it would describe with the uniform velocity V if no force acted. Consequently the central force is a measure of the tendency that the body has at every instant to preserve a rectilinear course. This tendency is sometimes called the *Centrifugal Force*; and the central force is then called in reference to this the *Centripetal Force*.

When a particle describes a curve in space the force which acts upon it is employed partly in changing the velocity and partly in deflecting the course of the body. A force equal and opposite to the part of the force which deflects the course of the body is called the centrifugal force in this general case as well as in that specified above.

PROP. *To prove that the centrifugal force of a particle moving in space at any point of its course equals the square of the velocity divided by the radius of absolute curvature at that point, and acts in the osculating plane.*

255. If X, Y, Z be the accelerating forces acting on the particle, the equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = X, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = Y, \quad \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = Z.$$

Now if s, the arc described, be the independent variable the absolute radius of curvature (ρ) is given by the equations

$$\frac{1}{\rho^2} = \left(\frac{d^2x}{ds^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2y}{ds^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2z}{ds^2}\right)^2 \ldots\ldots\ldots (1).$$

Hence if we change the independent variable in the equations of motion from t to s, we have

$$X = \frac{\dfrac{dt}{ds}\dfrac{d^2x}{ds^2} - \dfrac{dx}{ds}\dfrac{d^2t}{ds^2}}{\dfrac{dt^3}{ds^3}} = v^2\frac{d^2x}{ds^2} + \frac{dx}{ds}\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}, \quad v = \frac{ds}{dt},$$

in like manner

$$Y = v^2\frac{d^2y}{ds^2} + \frac{dy}{ds}\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}, \quad Z = v^2\frac{d^2z}{ds^2} + \frac{dz}{ds}\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}.$$

If, then, P be the resultant of X, Y, Z we have

$$P^2 = X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2 = v^4\left\{\left(\frac{d^2x}{ds^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2y}{ds^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2z}{ds^2}\right)^2\right\}$$

$$+ 2v^2\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\left\{\frac{dx}{ds}\frac{d^2x}{ds^2} + \frac{dy}{ds}\frac{d^2y}{ds^2} + \frac{dz}{ds}\frac{d^2z}{ds^2}\right\}$$

$$+ \left\{\frac{dx^2}{ds^2} + \frac{dy^2}{ds^2} + \frac{dz^2}{ds^2}\right\}\left(\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\right)^2.$$

But $\dfrac{dx^2}{ds^2} + \dfrac{dy^2}{ds^2} + \dfrac{dz^2}{ds^2} = 1$, and therefore by equation (1)

$$P^2 = \left(\frac{v^2}{\rho}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}\right)^2 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

Now $\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}$ is the part of the force P that produces the change in velocity (Art. 206): and the other part $\frac{v^2}{\rho}$ acts at right angles to the former, as the form of equation (2) shews, and consequently is what we have termed the centrifugal force: this expression proves the first part of the Proposition.

The force P acts through the point (xyz), let

$$x_1 - x = A(z_1 - z), \quad y_1 - y = B(z_1 - z)$$

be the equations to its direction: then the cosines of the angles which this line makes with the axes are

$$\frac{A}{\sqrt{1 + A^2 + B^2}}, \quad \frac{B}{\sqrt{1 + A^2 + B^2}}, \quad \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 + A^2 + B^2}},$$

but these cosines are also

$$\frac{X}{\sqrt{X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2}}, \quad \frac{Y}{\sqrt{X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2}}, \quad \frac{Z}{\sqrt{X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2}}.$$

$$\text{Hence } A = \frac{X}{Z}, \quad B = \frac{Y}{Z}:$$

and the equations to the direction of the resultant are

$$Z(x_1 - x) = X(z_1 - z), \quad Z(y_1 - y) = Y(z_1 - z),$$

the equations to the tangent line, or the line in which the force $\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}$ acts, are

$$(x_1 - x)\frac{dz}{ds} = (z_1 - z)\frac{dx}{ds}, \quad (y_1 - y)\frac{dz}{ds} = (z_1 - z)\frac{dy}{ds}:$$

Hence the equation to the plane passing through these lines, or the plane in which the centrifugal force acts, is

$$(z_1 - z)\left(X\frac{dy}{ds} - Y\frac{dx}{ds}\right) + (y_1 - y)\left(Z\frac{dx}{ds} - X\frac{dz}{ds}\right)$$

$$+ (x_1 - x)\left(Y\frac{dz}{ds} - Z\frac{dy}{ds}\right) = 0.$$

and substituting in this equation the values of X, Y, Z it becomes

$$(z_1 - z)\left(\frac{dy}{ds}\frac{d^2x}{ds^2} - \frac{dx}{ds}\frac{d^2y}{ds^2}\right) + (y_1 - y)\left(\frac{dx}{ds}\frac{d^2z}{ds^2} - \frac{dz}{ds}\frac{d^2x}{ds^2}\right)$$
$$+ (x_1 - x)\left(\frac{dz}{ds}\frac{d^2y}{ds^2} - \frac{dy}{ds}\frac{d^2z}{ds^2}\right) = 0,$$

which is the equation to the osculating plane at the point (xyz), the arc s being the independent variable.

Hence the second part of the Proposition is true.

After this digression respecting centrifugal force we shall return to the subject of central forces.

256. Kepler discovered by calculation depending on observations, that the planet Mars moves in an ellipse having the Sun in the focus. He also discovered that the areas described by the planet when near its perihelion and aphelion distances (that is, the nearest and farthest distances from the Sun) were proportional to the times of describing them. These two empiric laws have since been proved to hold for the other planets and also for every part of their course. Kepler likewise discovered that the squares of the periodic times of the planets about the Sun were in the same proportion as the cubes of their mean distances. These three laws are known by the name of *Kepler's Laws* and may be thus enunciated.

I. *The planets move in ellipses, each having one of its foci in the Sun's centre.*

II. *The areas swept out by each planet about the Sun are, in the same orbit, proportional to the time of describing them.*

III. *The squares of the periodic times of the planets about the Sun are proportional to the cubes of the mean distances.*

We shall shew how we are led by these empiric laws to conjecture respecting the nature of the force which acts upon the planetary system.

Prop. *To determine the nature of the force which acts upon the planetary system.*

257. Let XY be the forces which act on a planet parallel to two co-ordinate axes drawn through the Sun in the plane of motion of the planet: then the equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = X, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = Y;$$

$$\therefore\ x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = xY - yX.$$

But by Kepler's Second Law the area is proportional to the time: therefore area $= c \cdot t$, c being the area described in a unit of time:

$$\therefore\ \frac{d.\text{area}}{dt} \text{ or } \tfrac{1}{2}\left(x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt}\right) = c;$$

$$\therefore\ x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ xY - yX = 0; \quad \therefore\ \frac{X}{Y} = \frac{x}{y}.$$

This shews that the resolved parts of the force acting upon the planet are proportional to the co-ordinates from the Sun's centre: and therefore, by the composition of forces, the force itself must pass through the Sun's centre.

Hence the forces acting on the planets all pass through the Sun's centre.

Let $\frac{1}{r}$ or $u = \dfrac{1 + e\cos(\theta - \alpha)}{a(1 - e^2)}$ be the equation to the elliptic orbit: Kepler's First Law.

Then the force P, since we have shewn it to be central,

$$= h^2u^2\left\{\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u\right\} \text{ Art. 246.}$$

$$= h^2u^2\left\{\frac{-e\cos(\theta - \alpha)}{a(1 - e^2)} + \frac{1 + e\cos(\theta - \alpha)}{a(1 - e^2)}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{h^2}{a(1 - e^2)}\,\frac{1}{r^2}.$$

Hence the *law* of the force acting upon the planets is that of the inverse square of the distance.

Let T be the periodic time of a planet and a the semi-axis major of its orbit, and therefore the *mean* distance from the Sun's centre.

$$\text{Then } T = \frac{2 \text{ area of ellipse}}{h} = \frac{2\pi a^2 \sqrt{1-e^2}}{h};$$

$$\therefore \frac{h^2}{a(1-e^2)} = \frac{4\pi^2 a^3}{T^2},$$

$$\text{and } P = \frac{4\pi^2 a^3}{T^2} \frac{1}{r^2}.$$

But by Kepler's Third Law $\frac{a^3}{T^2}$ is the same for all the planets. Hence not only is the *law* of force the same for all the planets; but the *absolute* force is the same: and consequently the same cause seems to act on all the planets.

From this calculation, then, we conclude that the Sun attracts the planets, and that with a force which varies as the inverse square of their distances from his centre.

258. The elliptical orbits of the planets are nearly *circular:* since, then, in a circle there is no *variation* of distance, it may at first sight be a matter of doubt whether the calculations which prove Kepler's Laws are sufficiently accurate to allow us to believe the *law of variation* of the Sun's attraction to be correctly determined.

This doubt is, however, easily removed. For in the case here contemplated the Third of Kepler's Laws determines both the *law* and *intensity* of the Sun's attraction.

In this case u is constant and $= \frac{1}{a}$;

$$\therefore P = \frac{h^2}{a^3} = \frac{4\pi^2 a}{T^2} = \frac{4\pi^2 a^3}{T^2} \frac{1}{a^2}.$$

But T^2 varies as a^3, for different planets;

$$\therefore P \text{ varies as } \frac{1}{a^2} \text{ for different planets,}$$

and therefore the *law* of attraction is that of the inverse square as before: and the *magnitude* is the same.

259. Now the greatest diameters of the planets are proved by observation to be exceedingly small when compared with their distances from the Sun. But in Art. 165, Cor. we have shewn that the constituent particles of bodies of this description, if they attract, will attract according to the same law as that according to which the bodies themselves attract. And we have just shewn (Art. 257.) that the Sun attracts the planets with a force varying inversely as the square of the distance from his centre. It is therefore highly probable that the particles of the Sun attract the particles of the planets, and vice versâ, with a force varying directly as the mass of the attracting particle and inversely as the square of the distance.

260. These consequences to which we have been led by Kepler's Laws are equally satisfied whether we suppose the centre alone of each body to have an inherent property of attraction, or each particle of the system to attract. But this ambiguity is removed by Dr. Maskelyne's observations on the stars from stations near the mountain Shehallien in Scotland. By these it was proved that the mountain produced a sensible effect in drawing the plumb line out of the vertical: see the *Philosophical Transactions*, 1775. Also some beautiful experiments by Cavendish on the attraction of leaden balls, recorded in the *Philosophical Transactions*, 1798, shew the same thing; that the property of attraction does not reside only in the centres of the heavenly bodies but in every portion of their mass. We are therefore led to conjecture that matter is endowed with a general gravitating principle by which every particle attracts every other particle according to the law before mentioned.

261. Were, however, this principle universally true, not only would the Sun attract the planets, but the planets would attract the Sun (which we have imagined *immoveable**) and likewise one another: and our calculations are erroneous, but these depend on Kepler's Laws. Wherefore it follows, that

* See Arts. 240 246. In these the centre of force is *fixed*.

either Kepler's Laws are not true, or that Universal Gravitation is not a Principle of Nature.

Now in point of fact observations of greater nicety than those made by Kepler prove that his laws are not accurately true, though they differ but slightly from the reality.

Here then is an additional argument (as far as it goes) in favour of Universal Gravitation. For since the magnitudes of the planets are very small in comparison with that of the Sun, we should anticipate that the perturbations of their elliptic motion about the Sun and of the position of the Sun in space by the action of the heavenly bodies would be small; and, consequently, that the deviation from Kepler's Laws would not be considerable.

262. Our investigations thus far are only a *first approximation* to the truth: it yet remains to be determined whether the perturbations actually experienced agree, both in their *nature* and *magnitude*, with those which are calculated on this hypothesis of Universal Gravitation. These are the real tests of the existence of such a principle. Probably many imaginary laws would explain the ordinary phenomena of the motion of the heavenly bodies; but that alone is the law of nature which will stand the test of the more refined calculations of the perturbations.

It is by the complete harmony which is found to subsist between the numerical results deduced from theory and observation, that we become convinced of the truth of the Law of Universal Gravitation. To prove this complete accordance is the object of Physical Astronomy.

263. Having stated the main arguments which lead us to conjecture that the motions of the heavenly bodies are regulated by a universal principle of attraction with which all matter is endued, we proceed to a more strict investigation of the consequences of this principle, and shall now enter upon the consideration of the motion of a given number of material particles attracting each other with forces varying directly as the mass of the attracting body and inversely as the square of the distance. This Problem is one of insuperable difficulty when considered in a general point of view, and has baffled the combined exertions of mathematicians from the days of Newton to

the present time. In our Solar System, however, the masses of the planets are so small in comparison with that of the Sun, and the inclinations of the planes of their orbits to one another is also so small that the Problem is rendered capable of solution by methods of approximation. But it must not be imagined, that the results are for this reason not to be relied upon. For by the process of *successive approximation* in which we begin by obtaining a *first* approximation, thence proceeding to a *second*, and so on, we can by extending our calculations approach as near the truth as we please: and although the number of calculations must, strictly speaking, be infinite in order to arrive, by this method, at an *exact* result, yet the error in stopping at the third or fourth approximation is so slight as in fact to be inappreciable to our senses. Suppose, for example, that the longitude of the Sun's centre is *calculated* to be $134^{0}.\ 0'.\ 1''$ at some given time and that the *real* longitude is 134^{0}: what difference does this make in a practical point of view? But even if we were able to obtain an exact solution of the Problem, yet in calculating numerical results we are obliged to reduce the whole to decimals; and though the labour in this case would be perhaps diminished, yet the result would still be only approximate.

We shall first calculate the motions of two bodies, considered as particles, attracting each other, and then proceed to the more general question.

CHAPTER III.

MOTION OF TWO MATERIAL PARTICLES ATTRACTING EACH OTHER.

PROP. *Two material particles attract each other with forces varying inversely as the square of their distance and directly as the mass of the attracting body: required to determine the motion of their centre of gravity.*

264. Let M and m be the masses of the two particles: r their distance at the time t: then, if the unit of attraction be the attraction of a unit of mass at a unit of distance, the accelerating force produced in M by the attraction of $m = \frac{m}{r^2}$; and that produced in m by M's attraction $= \frac{M}{r^2}$.

Let xyz be co-ordinates to M at time t,

$x'y'z'$ ..... m .....

Then resolving the attractions parallel to the axes, and attending to the directions in which the resolved parts act, the equations of motion of M are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{m(x-x')}{r^3}, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -\frac{m(y-y')}{r^3}, \quad \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = -\frac{m(z-z')}{r^3}$$

and those of m are

$$\frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} = \frac{M(x-x')}{r^3}, \quad \frac{d^2y'}{dt^2} = \frac{M(y-y')}{r^3}, \quad \frac{d^2z'}{dt^2} = \frac{M(z-z')}{r^3}.$$

Multiply the first three equations by M and the last three by m, and add the first, second, and third of the first set to the first, second, and third of the second set respectively;

$$\left.\begin{aligned} M\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + m\frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} = 0, \quad M\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + m\frac{d^2y'}{dt^2} = 0, \\ M\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + m\frac{d^2z'}{dt^2} = 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad (1)$$

Let $\bar{x}, \bar{y}, \bar{z}$ be the co-ordinates of the centre of gravity of the two bodies at the time t then

$$(M+m)\bar{x} = Mx + mx', \quad (M+m)\bar{y} = My + my',$$

$$(M+m)\bar{z} = Mz + mz'.$$

Differentiating these twice with respect to t and by equations (1), we obtain

$$\frac{d^2\bar{x}}{dt^2} = \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d^2\bar{z}}{dt^2} = \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{d^2z'}{dt^2} = 0.$$

uniformly in a straight line. Which of these will be the case is determined by the initial circumstances of the motion of the bodies.

PROP. *To determine the orbits the bodies describe about each other, and about their centre of gravity.*

265. Let us subtract the equations of motion for m from those of M respectively, and we obtain

$$\frac{d^2(x-x')}{dt^2} = -\frac{(M+m)(x-x')}{r^3}, \quad \frac{d^2(y-y')}{dt^2} = -\frac{(M+m)(y-y')}{r^3},$$

$$\frac{d^2(z-z')}{dt^2} = -\frac{(M+m)(z-z')}{r^3}.$$

These are the equations we should obtain by supposing either of the bodies at rest, and the force acting on the other to be the *sum* of the masses divided by the square of the distance.

Hence (Art. 252) each will describe relatively to the other a conic section, the nature of the path being determined by the circumstances of projection of the bodies.

266. To determine their paths about their centre of gravity, let $r_,$ and r' be the distances of M and m from that point at the time t: then

$$r_, = \frac{m}{M+m} r, \quad r' = \frac{M}{M+m} r.$$

Also, if P and Q be the two particles (fig. 80), G their centre of gravity,

$$\frac{PN}{PQ} = \frac{PN'}{PG}, \quad \therefore \frac{x-x'}{r} = \frac{x-\bar{x}}{r_,}:$$

and in the same way $\frac{y-y'}{r} = \frac{y-\bar{y}}{r_,}$ and $\frac{z-z'}{r} = \frac{z-\bar{z}}{r_,}$:

Now subtract equations (2) of Art. 264. from the equations of motion of m in that Article respectively:

$$\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \quad r^3 \qquad (M+m)^2 \quad r_1^2$$

$$\frac{d^2(y-\bar{y})}{dt^2} = -\frac{m^3}{(M+m)^2}\frac{y-\bar{y}}{r_1^3} \text{ and } \frac{d^2(z-\bar{z})}{dt^2} = -\frac{m^3}{(M+m)^2}\frac{z-\bar{z}}{r_1^3}.$$

These are the equations of motion of M relatively to the centre of gravity of M and m, which as we have seen is at rest, or is moving uniformly in a straight line. They prove that the path about the centre of gravity is such as would be described about a force $\frac{m^3}{(M+m)^2}\cdot\frac{1}{r_1^2}$ residing in that point.

Hence the orbits of M and m relatively to the centre of gravity are conic sections, their nature and magnitude being determined by the circumstances of projection *relatively* to the centre of gravity of M and m.

PROP. *To compare the relative orbits of* M *and* m *about their centre of gravity.*

267. Let v, v' be the absolute velocities of projection of M and m: $\alpha\beta\gamma$, $\alpha'\beta'\gamma'$ the angles the directions of these velocities make with the axes.

V and V' the relative vels. of project. about centre of gravity,

R and R' the initial distances from the centre of gravity,

δ and δ' the relative angles of projection,

a and a' the semi-axes major of the orbits,

e and e' the eccentricities of the orbits,

μ and μ' the absolute forces.

Then by equations (1) (2) of Art. 252,

$$\frac{1-e^2}{1-e'^2} = \frac{2\mu - V^2R}{2\mu' - V'^2R'}\frac{RV^2\sin^2\delta}{R'V'^2\sin^2\delta'}\frac{\mu'^2}{\mu^2},$$

and $$\frac{a(1-e^2)}{a'(1-e'^2)} = \frac{V^2R^2\sin^2\delta}{V'^2R'^2\sin^2\delta'}\frac{\mu'}{\mu}.$$

Also $\frac{R}{R'} = \frac{m}{M}$, and $\frac{\mu'}{\mu} = \frac{M^3}{m^3}$ by Art. 266.

To find V, V', δ, δ' we proceed as follows:

The velocities of the centre of gravity parallel to the axes are at first and therefore during the motion respectively (Art. 264.)

$$\frac{Mv\cos\alpha+mv'\cos\alpha'}{M+m}, \quad \frac{Mv\cos\beta+mv'\cos\beta'}{M+m}, \quad \frac{Mv\cos\gamma+mv'\cos\gamma'}{M+m}.$$

Also the *absolute* velocities of projection of M parallel to the axes are $v\cos\alpha$, $v\cos\beta$, $v\cos\gamma$: and therefore the *relative* velocities of projection of M about the centre of gravity parallel to the axes are

$$\frac{m(v\cos\alpha-v'\cos\alpha')}{M+m}, \quad \frac{m(v\cos\beta-v'\cos\beta')}{M+m}, \quad \frac{m(v\cos\gamma-v'\cos\gamma')}{M+m}.$$

Adding the squares of these, (Art. 210. Cor.) the square of the relative velocity of M about the centre of gravity (V^2) =

$$\frac{m^2}{(M+m)^2}\{(v\cos\alpha-v'\cos\alpha')^2+(v\cos\beta-v'\cos\beta')^2+(v\cos\gamma-v'\cos\gamma')^2\}$$

$$= \frac{m^2}{(M+m)^2}(v^2+v'^2-2vv'\cos A),$$

where A is the angle between the directions of projection of M and m: and therefore determined by the equation

$$\cos A = \cos\alpha\cos\alpha'+\cos\beta\cos\beta'+\cos\gamma\cos\gamma'.$$

Similarly $V'^2 = \dfrac{M^2}{(M+m)^2}(v^2+v'^2-2vv'\cos A)$.

Let the line joining M and m at the commencement of the motion be the axis of x: then the cosine of the angle which the direction of V makes with the distance of projection (which coincides with the axis of x), or $\cos\delta$, equals the relative velocity parallel to the axis of x divided by the whole relative velocity (V) =

$$\frac{m}{M+m}\cdot\frac{v\cos\alpha-v'\cos\alpha'}{V}.$$

Substituting these in the expression given above for $\frac{1-e^2}{1-e'^2}$ we find

$$\frac{1-e^2}{1-e'^2} = 1\,; \quad \therefore\ e = e',$$

or the orbits are similar to each other.

$$\text{Also } \frac{a}{a'} = \frac{m^4}{M^4} \cdot \frac{M^3}{m^3} = \frac{m}{M},$$

or the linear dimensions of the orbits of M and m are in the ratio of m to M.

268. Cor. 1. It follows from this that the perturbation of the Sun by any planet is very small, because his mass is so much the greater of the two masses.

In the same way it will be shewn that the combined effect of the heavenly bodies in moving the Sun is very slight; and therefore the error in Kepler's Laws, anticipated in Art. 261, owing to the supposed immobility of the Sun, is not very great. Thus far, then, we are confirmed in our hypothesis of Universal Gravitation.

269. Cor. 2. We have seen (Art. 257.) that if μ be the absolute force of a centre of which the law is that of the inverse square, and a the semi-axis major of the orbit described, the periodic time

$$(T) = \frac{2\pi a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}} = \frac{2\pi a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{M+m}}. \quad \text{(Art. 265.)}$$

M and m being the masses of the Sun and a planet.

Let m' be the mass of another planet: and a' the semi-axis major of its orbit, T' its period;

$$\therefore\ T' = \frac{2\pi a'^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{M+m'}}, \quad \text{and} \quad \therefore\ \frac{T^2}{T'^2} = \frac{a^3}{a'^3} \frac{M+m'}{M+m}.$$

This shews that Kepler's Third Law would not be true even if we suppose that the planets do not attract each other,

unless their masses were equal to each other. The deviation, however, from the truth is extremely small.

270. The investigations in Arts. 252, 265, shew us that if our law of gravitation be true, the only orbits which a heavenly body will describe, supposed to be acted on only by the Sun, are an ellipse, a parabola, or a hyperbola with the Sun's centre in the focus.

The manner in which the magnitude and position of the orbit of a heavenly body is determined by actual observation will be found in Works on Plane Astronomy. We shall here briefly explain the process. There are six quantities which determine the position and magnitude of an elliptic or hyperbolic orbit, and the place of the body in its orbit: these are called the *elements* of the body's orbit, and are (1) the inclination of the orbit to the ecliptic, and (2) the longitude of the ascending node, these determine the *position of the plane of the orbit* in space: next (3) the longitude of the perihelion, (or point of the orbit nearest the Sun), which determines the *position of the orbit itself:* then (4) the mean distance, and (5) eccentricity, which determine the *magnitude* of the orbit, and lastly (6) the epoch, or the time of the planet's being in the perihelion, this determines the *position of the body itself* in its orbit.

The elements of a parabolic orbit are five in number, being the same as the above, if we replace the mean distance and eccentricity by the perihelion distance.

The elements of a circular orbit are only four in number, the eccentricity and longitude of the perihelion not being required.

In order to determine the numerical values of the elements of any heavenly body (supposed to move in a conic section with the Sun in the focus) two Trigonometrical equations* are deduced connecting the elements with the right ascension and

* For a parabolic and circular orbit see Maddy's Plane Astronomy, Chap. XIV. Woodhouse's Plane Astronomy, Chap. XXIV.

But for other orbits the reader may consult the Work of Lalande; Gauss's Theoria Motus Corporum Cœlestium; the Mécanique Céleste, Vol. I.; Lagrange's Mec. Analytique; Pontécoulant's Théorie Anal. du Système du Monde, and Mr Lubbock's Mathematical Tracts and various Papers in the Transactions of the Philosophical and Astronomical Societies.

declination of the body and the distance of the Earth from the Sun.

Since there are five or six quantities to be determined three independent observations must be made on the declination and right ascension of the body: when these are substituted successively in the two equations mentioned above we shall have six equations involving the elements: by means of which we shall be able to calculate the magnitude and position of the orbit.

271. By methods of this nature Kepler discovered his three planetary Laws.

Also Astronomers have in this way proved, that comets move in orbits most of which are parabolic, some elliptic, and others probably hyperbolic. In consequence of the vast distances to which comets penetrate into space, they are invisible except when near the Sun. During their appearance numerous observations are made, in order that the elements may be determined with the greatest possible accuracy. The calculations for parabolic motion are less laborious than for elliptic or hyperbolic motion. The elements are therefore first calculated on the supposition that the orbit is a parabola. If the elements thus calculated shew that the comet has passed so near any of the planets as to have experienced a sensible perturbation the elements must be corrected in a manner to be explained hereafter.

If a parabola will not coincide with the orbit calculations must be made for an ellipse or hyperbola. It is thus found that "three or four comets describe very long ellipses: and nearly all the others that have been observed are found to move in curves which cannot be distinguished from parabolas. There is reason to think that two or three comets move in hyperbolas." (Airy's *Gravitation*, page 15.)

272. Our calculations have been hitherto respecting the nature of the orbits described. We now proceed to deduce formulæ for determining the time that the body occupies in moving through a given angle; and conversely the angle described in a given time: by the former we know the time of the body being at a given place, and by the latter we know the place of the body at a given time.

PROP. *To find the time of motion of a planet or comet through any portion of an elliptic orbit, the Sun's centre being in the focus.*

273. Let θ and ϖ be the longitudes of the body and the perihelion, that is, the point of the orbit nearest the Sun: a the semi-axis major of the orbit: e the eccentricity: μ the sum of the masses of the Sun and the body (Art. 265): then the equation to the orbit is

$$\frac{1}{r} = \frac{1 + e\cos(\theta - \varpi)}{a(1 - e^2)}. \quad \text{Also } \frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{r^2}{h}, \text{ Art. 242.}$$

Now h must be determined in terms of the quantities above given, since the orbit to be described is known and not the original circumstances of projection. The following method, which we here apply to the ellipse, will answer our purpose in every case. By Art. 243, $h = vp$ at every point of a central orbit; v being the velocity and p the perpendicular from the centre of force on the tangent at that point: also by Art. 245, the velocity is that due to one-fourth the chord of curvature through the centre of force;

$$\therefore\ v^2 = \frac{2\mu}{r^2} \cdot \tfrac{1}{2} p \frac{dr}{dp}: \text{ but } p^2 = \frac{b^2 r}{2a - r} \text{ from the focus;}$$

$$\therefore\ h = vp = \sqrt{\frac{\mu}{r^2} p^3 \frac{dr}{dp}} = \sqrt{\frac{\mu b^2}{a}} = \sqrt{\mu a(1 - e^2)}.$$

Then the time of moving from the perihelion through the angle $\theta - \varpi =$

$$t = \int_{\varpi}^{\theta} \frac{r^2 d\theta}{h} = \frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}(1 - e^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}} \int_{\varpi}^{\theta} \frac{d\theta}{\{1 + e\cos(\theta - \varpi)\}^2}$$

$$= \frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}(1 - e^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}} \int_{\varpi}^{\theta} \frac{d\theta}{\{(1+e)\cos^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta - \varpi) + (1-e)\sin^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta - \varpi)\}^2}$$

$$= \frac{2a^{\frac{3}{2}}(1 - e^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}} \int_{\varpi}^{\theta} \frac{\sec^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta - \varpi) \dfrac{d\tan\frac{1}{2}(\theta - \varpi)}{d\theta} d\theta}{\{(1 + e) + (1 - e)\tan^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta - \varpi)\}^2}.$$

To simplify this let

$$\tan\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)=\sqrt{\frac{1+e}{1-e}}\tan\frac{u}{2}\ldots\ldots\ldots(1);$$

$$\therefore t=\frac{2a^{\frac{3}{2}}(1-e^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}}\int_0^u\frac{\left(1+\frac{1+e}{1-e}\tan^2\frac{u}{2}\right)}{(1+e)^2\sec^4\frac{u}{2}}\frac{d}{du}\left(\sqrt{\frac{1+e}{1-e}}\tan\frac{u}{2}\right)du$$

$$=\frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}}\int_0^u\left\{(1-e)\cos^2\frac{u}{2}+(1+e)\sin^2\frac{u}{2}\right\}du$$

$$=\frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}}\int_0^u(1-e\cos u)\,du$$

$$=\frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}}(u-e\sin u),\text{ let }\frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}}=\frac{1}{n};$$

$$\therefore\ nt=u-e\sin u\ldots\ldots\ldots(2).$$

When θ is given we calculate u by (1), and substituting in (2) we know t.

The angle $\theta-\varpi$, or the excess of the longitude of the body over the longitude of the perihelion, is called the *true anomaly*: and nt is called the *mean anomaly*, since it varies uniformly with the time and coincides with the true anomaly at the end of each revolution, as the formulæ (1) (2) shew. Also the angle u is called the *eccentric anomaly*, since it equals the angle QCA (fig. 81), as may easily be proved: P is the body, APa the ellipse, S the focus, AQa a circle on Aa.

Cor. 1. If t be not measured from the epoch of passing the perihelion, but from the time when $u=u_1$, then

$$t=\frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}}\left\{(u-u_1)-e(\sin u-\sin u_1)\right\}.$$

Cor. 2. Whenever u increases by 2π, θ increases by 2π, and t by $\frac{2\pi a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}}$. This, then, is the periodic time of the

planet: it is remarkable that it is independent of the eccentricity of the orbit.

To solve the converse of this Proposition, that is, to find the position of a heavenly body in its elliptic orbit at any time in terms of the time and the elements of the orbit, we must effect several expansions.

PROP. *To expand the true anomaly in terms of the eccentric anomaly.*

274. By last Article $\tan\frac{\theta-\varpi}{2}=\sqrt{\frac{1+e}{1-e}}\tan\frac{u}{2}$.

Substituting the exponential expressions for the tangents,

$$\frac{\epsilon^{(\theta-\varpi)\sqrt{-1}}-1}{\epsilon^{(\theta-\varpi)\sqrt{-1}}+1}=m\frac{\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}}-1}{\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}}+1},\qquad \sqrt{\frac{1+e}{1-e}}=m,$$

in which ϵ is the base of Naperian logarithms.

$$\therefore\ \epsilon^{(\theta-\varpi)\sqrt{-1}}=\frac{(m+1)\,\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}}-(m-1)}{(m+1)-(m-1)\,\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}}}=\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}}\frac{1-\lambda\epsilon^{-u\sqrt{-1}}}{1-\lambda\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}}},\ \lambda=\frac{m-1}{m+1};$$

$$\therefore\ (\theta-\varpi)\sqrt{-1}=u\sqrt{-1}+\log_\epsilon(1-\lambda\epsilon^{-u\sqrt{-1}})-\log_\epsilon(1-\lambda\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}})$$

$$=u\sqrt{-1}+\lambda\,(\epsilon^{u\sqrt{-1}}-\epsilon^{-u\sqrt{-1}})+\frac{\lambda^2}{2}\,(\epsilon^{2u\sqrt{-1}}-\epsilon^{-2u\sqrt{-1}})+\ldots$$

$$\therefore\ \theta-\varpi=u+2\lambda\sin u+\frac{2\lambda^2}{2}\sin 2u+\frac{2\lambda^3}{3}\sin 3u+\ldots$$

$$\text{in which }\lambda=\frac{\sqrt{1+e}-\sqrt{1-e}}{\sqrt{1+e}+\sqrt{1-e}}=\frac{1-\sqrt{1-e^2}}{e}.$$

PROP. *To expand the eccentric anomaly in terms of the mean anomaly.*

275. By Art. 273, $u=nt+e\sin u$.

Hence by Lagrange's Theorem, putting $nt=x$,

$$u = z + e \sin z + \frac{e^2}{1.2}\frac{d \sin^2 z}{dz} + \frac{e^3}{1.2.3}\frac{d^2 \sin^3 z}{dz^2} + \ldots.$$

$$= z + e \sin z + \tfrac{1}{2} e^2 \sin 2z + \tfrac{1}{2} e^3 (2 \sin z - 3 \sin^3 z) + \ldots$$

$$= nt + e \sin nt + \tfrac{1}{2} e^2 \sin 2nt + \tfrac{1}{8} e^3 (3 \sin 3nt - \sin nt) + \ldots$$

PROP. *To expand sin* u, *sin* 2u, ... *in terms of the mean anomaly.*

276. By Lagrange's Theorem,

$$\sin u = \sin z + e \sin z \frac{d \sin z}{dz} + \frac{e^2}{1.2}\frac{d}{dz}\left\{\sin^2 z \frac{d \sin z}{dz}\right\} + \ldots$$

$$= \sin z + e \sin z \cos z + \tfrac{1}{2} e^2 (2 \cos^2 z \sin z - \sin^3 z) + \ldots$$

$$= \sin z + \tfrac{1}{2} e \sin 2z + \tfrac{1}{8} e^2 (2 \sin 3z - \sin z) + \ldots$$

$$= \sin nt + \tfrac{1}{2} e \sin 2nt + \tfrac{1}{8} e^2 (3 \sin 3nt - \sin nt) + \ldots$$

Again, $\sin 2u = \sin 2z + e \sin z \dfrac{d \sin 2z}{dz} + \ldots$

$$= \sin 2nt + 2e \sin nt \cos 2nt + \ldots$$

$$= \sin 2nt + e (\sin 3nt - \sin nt) + \ldots$$

$$\sin 3u = \sin 3nt + \ldots$$

and so on.

PROP. *To expand the true anomaly in terms of the mean anomaly.*

277. By Art. 274 we have

$$\theta - \varpi = u + 2\lambda \sin u - \frac{2\lambda^2}{2} \sin 2u + \frac{2\lambda^3}{3} \sin 3u + \ldots$$

$$\text{where } \lambda = \frac{1 - \sqrt{1 - e^2}}{e} = \frac{e}{2} + \frac{e}{8} + \ldots$$

Then substituting for u, $\sin u$, $\sin 2u$ ... the values obtained in the last two Articles, and retaining powers of e a

$$\theta - \varpi = nt + e\sin nt + \tfrac{1}{2}e^2\sin 2nt + \tfrac{1}{8}e^3(3\sin 3nt - \sin nt) + \ldots$$
$$+ 2\lambda\{\sin nt + \tfrac{1}{2}e\sin 2nt + \tfrac{1}{8}e^2(3\sin 3nt - \sin nt) + \ldots\}$$
$$+ \lambda^2\{\sin 2nt + e(\sin 3nt - \sin nt) + \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\}$$
$$+ \tfrac{2}{3}\lambda^3\sin 3nt + \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$
$$= nt + \left(2e - \frac{e^3}{4}\right)\sin nt + \frac{5e^2}{4}\sin 2nt + \frac{13e^3}{12}\sin 3nt + \ldots$$

which is true as far as terms involving e^3.

278. Cor. If the time t be not measured from the time of perihelion passage, suppose ϵ is the mean longitude of the body when $t = 0$; then the mean longitude at the time t is $nt + \epsilon$; and the mean anomaly is $nt + \epsilon - \varpi$: in this case, then,

$$\theta - \varpi = nt + \epsilon - \varpi + \left(2e + \frac{e^3}{4}\right)\sin(nt + \epsilon - \varpi)$$
$$+ \frac{5e^2}{4}\sin 2(nt + \epsilon - \varpi) + \ldots$$

ϵ is called the *epoch*.

Prop. *To expand the radius vector* r *in terms of the mean anomaly.*

279. The radius vector

$$r = \frac{a(1-e^2)}{1+e\cos(\theta-\varpi)} = \frac{a(1-e^2)}{(1+e)\cos^2\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi) + (1-e)\sin^2\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)}$$
$$= \frac{a(1-e^2)\sec^2\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)}{1+e+(1-e)\tan^2\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)} = \frac{a(1-e^2)\left\{1 + \frac{1+e}{1-e}\tan^2\frac{u}{2}\right\}}{(1+e)\sec^2\frac{u}{2}}$$
$$= a\left\{(1-e)\cos^2\frac{u}{2} + (1+e)\sin^2\frac{u}{2}\right\} = a(1-e\cos u).$$

But $u = nt + e\sin u$; putting $nt = x$,

$$\cos u = \cos x + e\sin x\frac{d\cos x}{dx} + \frac{e^2}{1.2}\frac{d}{dx}\left\{\sin^2 x\frac{d\cos x}{dx}\right\} + \ldots$$
$$= \cos x - \tfrac{1}{2}e(1-\cos 2x) - \tfrac{1}{8}e^2(3\cos x - 3\cos 3x) + \ldots$$
$$\therefore \frac{r}{a} = 1 + \frac{e^2}{2} - e\cos nt - \frac{e^2}{2}\cos 2nt - \frac{3e^3}{8}(\cos 3nt - \cos nt) + \ldots$$

280. Cor. If t be measured as in Art. 278, then

$$r=a\left\{1+\tfrac{1}{2}e^2-e\cos(nt+\varepsilon-\varpi)-\tfrac{1}{2}e^2\cos 2(nt+\varepsilon-\varpi)-\ldots.\right\}.$$

The time of describing a given portion of an elliptic hyperbolic or parabolic orbit may be found in terms of the radius vectors at the extremities of the arc and the chord of the arc. These expressions are useful in determining the elements of a heavenly body. They will be found in Maddy's *Plane Astronomy*, Chapter XIII. New Edition: and in the *Système du Monde* of M. Pontécoulant, Tom. I. Liv. II. Chap. V.

Prop. *To find the time of describing a given portion of a parabolic orbit about the Sun in the focus.*

281. We have $r^2\dfrac{d\theta}{dt}=h$: $h=\sqrt{2\mu D}$, and $r=\dfrac{D}{\cos^2\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)}$ is the equation to the parabola, θ and ϖ being the longitude of the comet and of its perihelion measured from the Sun, and D the perihelion distance;

$$\therefore\ t=\frac{D^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{2\mu}}\int_{\varpi}^{\theta}\frac{d\theta}{\cos^4\frac{\theta-\varpi}{2}}$$

$$=\frac{2D^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{2\mu}}\int_{\varpi}^{\theta}\frac{d\tan\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)}{d\theta}\left\{1+\tan^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\right\}d\theta$$

$$=\sqrt{\frac{2}{\mu}}D^{\frac{3}{2}}\left\{\tan\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)+\tfrac{1}{3}\tan^3\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\right\},$$

t being measured from the time of the perihelion passage.

By this equation it is easy to calculate the time of describing a given angle.

Prop. *To find the position of the comet in a parabolic orbit at a given time.*

282. This would require the solution of the cubic equation in the last Article. This is, however, obviated in the following manner.

$$\text{Let } \sqrt{\frac{\mu}{2D^3}}=n;$$

$$\therefore\ nt=\tan\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)+\tfrac{1}{3}\tan^3\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi).$$

A Table is formed consisting of two columns: one with values of t and the other with the corresponding values of $\theta - \varpi$ calculated from this formula for an orbit in which $n = 1$. Suppose, then, that we wish to find the position of a comet in a given parabolic orbit (the mean motion in which is n) at a given time t. We must multiply t by n and look for the value of $\theta - \varpi$ opposite the value of nt in the first column. This gives the position of the comet.

PROP. *To find the place of a comet at a given time in a very eccentric elliptic orbit.*

283. By Art. 273. $$\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}(1-e^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}} \frac{1}{\{1+e\cos(\theta-\varpi)\}^2}.$$

Let D be the perihelion distance; $\therefore D = a(1-e)$;

$$\therefore \frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{D^{\frac{3}{2}}(1+e)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu}} \frac{\sec^4\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)}{\{(1+e)+(1-e)\tan^2\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\}^2}$$

$$= \frac{D^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\mu(1+e)}} \sec^4\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\left\{1+\frac{1-e}{1+e}\tan^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\right\}^{-2}.$$

Expanding in powers of $1-e$, and neglecting powers of $1-e$ higher than the first, because $e = 1$ nearly;

$$\therefore nt = \tfrac{1}{2}\left(1-\frac{1-e}{2}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}} \int_{\varpi}^{\theta} \sec^4\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\left\{1-(1-e)\tan^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\right\}d\theta$$

$$= \int_{\varpi}^{\theta} \frac{d\tan\frac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)}{d\theta}\left\{1+\tan^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\right.$$

$$\left.+(1-e)\left[\tfrac{1}{4}-\tfrac{3}{4}\tan^2\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)-\tan^4\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\right]\right\}d\theta;$$

$$\therefore nt = \tan\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)+\tfrac{1}{3}\tan^3\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)$$

$$+(1-e)\left\{\tfrac{1}{4}\tan\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)-\tfrac{1}{4}\tan^3\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)-\tfrac{1}{5}\tan^5\tfrac{1}{2}(\theta-\varpi)\right\}.$$

The following is a convenient method for calculating the value of $\theta - \varpi$ for a given value of t.

Suppose $\theta' - \varpi$ is the true anomaly of a comet at the time t moving in a parabolic orbit of which D is the perihelion distance; then by Art. 282.

$$nt = \tan \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi) + \tfrac{1}{3}\tan^3 \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi).$$

Let $\theta - \varpi = \theta' - \varpi + x$: then putting this for $\theta - \varpi$ in the first expression for nt, and neglecting the squares and products of x and e, we have by Taylor's Theorem

$$nt = \tan \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi) + \tfrac{1}{3}\tan^3 \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi)$$

$$+ \frac{x}{2}\sec^4 \frac{\theta' - \varpi}{2} + \frac{1-e}{4}\tan \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi)\left\{1 - \tan^2 \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi)\right.$$

$$\left. - \tfrac{4}{5}\tan^4 \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi)\right\},$$

and eliminating nt from these last two equations

$$x = \tfrac{1}{10}(1-e)\tan \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi)\left\{4 - 3\cos^2 \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi) - 6\cos^4 \tfrac{1}{2}(\theta' - \varpi)\right\}.$$

A third column must now be added to the Table mentioned in Art. 282. consisting of values of $\frac{x}{1-e}$ for the corresponding values of t and $\theta - \varpi$. When this is constructed the manner of using it is as follows. Suppose $\sqrt{\frac{\mu}{2D^3}} = n$ in our orbit: then in the first column look for the time nt; and take the corresponding values of $\theta - \varpi$ and $\frac{x}{1-e}$: multiply the latter by $1 - e$, which will depend upon the form of the orbit, and then the true anomaly at the time t will be this quantity added to the value of $\theta - \varpi$ thus found.

CHAPTER IV.

EXPLANATION OF THE LUNAR PERTURBATIONS.

284. In the last Chapter we have calculated completely the motion of two bodies, considered as particles, attracting each other according to the assumed law of gravitation. When the various formulæ there obtained are applied to calculate the motion of the planets about the Sun, and for that purpose are reduced to tables, they manifest an agreement with observation so far complete as to leave no doubt of the correctness of the principles, which form the basis of the calculation; provided that observations be made at times separated by moderately long intervals. If, however, we proceed to a more rigorous nicety, and especially if we compare together observations which embrace a very long series of years, it is found that the agreement is not so perfect. Minute irregularities are detected, and the planets are found sometimes a little in advance, sometimes a little falling short, sometimes a little above or below, to the right or left, of their places, calculated on the theory of elliptic motion.

Now this is exactly what was to be anticipated. For if the principle of gravitation be universal the heavenly bodies disturb each other in their motion about the Sun, and so derange the elliptic form of the orbits and the equable description of areas by the radius vector.

285. It is our object in Chapters V and VI to deduce formulæ by which the mutual perturbations of the heavenly bodies may be calculated. The equations of motion for three or more particles attracting each other according to the law of gravitation have never yet been integrated. In fact, their integrals depend upon the integration of a function analogous

to the function V in Art. 169. See note to Art. 323. We must therefore have recourse to methods of approximation.

286. The peculiar configuration of the Solar System renders this approximation practicable, though under most other arrangements it would not be so; the bodies of our system are arranged either singly as the planets Mercury, Venus and Mars, or in groups as the Earth and the Moon, Jupiter, Saturn, and Herschel each with their Satellites, the central masses of the groups being much greater than that of the attending bodies: likewise the single bodies and the groups are always at considerable distances from each other, and describe orbits about the Sun very nearly circular and in planes nearly coinciding. There is, however, an exception in the case of the four asteroids Ceres, Vesta, Pallas, and Juno, the orbits of these being not very far different from each other in magnitude; but their masses are so small that in this way a compensation takes place. The mass of the Sun is of enormous magnitude in comparison with that of the other bodies; since, as we have remarked in Art. 284, the calculations made on the supposition that the Sun is the only attracting body nearly coincide with observation. Again the mass of the Earth is large when compared with that of the Moon; because the Earth moves about the Sun and the Moon about the Earth, nearly as if the Moon did not disturb the Earth's elliptic motion about the Sun, and as if the Sun did not disturb the Moon's elliptic motion about the Earth. In the same way we argue that the mass of Jupiter is much larger than that of his satellites by observing that Kepler's Laws are nearly verified, and so of the other bodies.

It is in consequence of this peculiar configuration of the Solar System that we are able to approximate to the solutions of our equations of motion by converging series.

287. In the present Chapter we intend to explain the nature of the perturbations of the Moon's motion about the Earth by the attraction of the Sun. We shall introduce a few calculations as interpretations of Newton's geometry into analytical language (*Principia* Book I. Prop. 66. and Book III); but shall reserve for the next Chapter the solution of the problem by systematic approximation.

We shall first explain a principle of great importance in calculating the combined effect of several small perturbing causes, which we shall find important throughout this and the two following Chapters.

PROP. *To explain the principle of the superposition of small motions.*

288. Let xyz be the co-ordinates of a body at the time t when undisturbed by any other body: α a very small numerical quantity which depends upon the disturbing force, of which the square and higher powers may therefore be always neglected.

$x + \alpha x'$, $y + \alpha y'$, $z + \alpha z'$ the co-ordinates of the body at time t when disturbed by the body (m') only.

$x + \alpha x''$, $y + \alpha y''$, $z + \alpha z''$ the co-ordinates of the body at time t when disturbed by the body (m'') only, and so on.

Now suppose the planets m', m'', ... all to disturb together.

In this case the alterations in x, y, z arising from the several planets will not be the same as before; but they will themselves suffer perturbations, since the action of each planet is now modified by that of all the others.

Thus the value of x will not become

$$x + \alpha (x' + x'' + \ldots):$$

for each of the terms after the first will be modified, but since this modification arises from the disturbing forces, it follows, that the quantities to be added will be multiplied by α^2, α^3, ... and may therefore be neglected and, under this restriction, the co-ordinates of the body subjected to the combined perturbations of all the others will be

$$x + \alpha (x' + x'' + \ldots\ldots\ldots),$$

$$y + \alpha (y' + y'' + \ldots\ldots\ldots),$$

$$z + \alpha (z' + z'' + \ldots\ldots\ldots), \text{ at the time } t.$$

Hence the perturbation in any quantities $\phi (x, y, z) = (u)$ which depends upon the co-ordinates of the planet will

$$= \frac{du}{dx}\alpha(x' + x'' + \ldots\ldots) + \frac{du}{dy}\alpha(y' + y'' + \ldots\ldots)$$
$$+ \frac{du}{dz}\alpha(z' + z'' + \ldots\ldots).$$

$$\text{And this} = \frac{du}{dx}\alpha x' + \frac{du}{dy}\alpha y' + \frac{du}{dz}\alpha z'$$
$$+ \frac{du}{dx}\alpha x'' + \frac{du}{dy}\alpha y'' + \frac{du}{dz}\alpha z''$$
$$+ \ldots\ldots\ldots$$

But this latter form shews that the perturbation in $\phi(x, y, z)$ is equal to the sum of the separate perturbations of each planet supposing the others not to exist. Hence the Principle we enunciated is true. Its great use in our calculations is this, that it reduces the problem from one of several bodies to that of only three bodies. Hence the famous *Problem of Three Bodies.*

289. At an early period it was observed that the apparent motion of the Sun and Moon round the Earth was not uniform. This had been remarked by the Greek Astronomers. By observing the motion of the shadow of the gnomon they discovered a considerable difference in the intervals of time between the equinoxes and the solstices.

Hipparchus was the first who endeavoured to explain this: he supposed the orbits of the Sun and Moon described about the Earth to be eccentric circles, or circles of which the centres do not coincide with that of the Earth.

290. After a lapse of three centuries Ptolemy discovered that there was an error in the Moon's place in the heavens, which could not be accounted for on the hypothesis of Hipparchus: and he shewed that the magnitude of the error depended upon the position of the line of apsides, or axis major of the lunar orbit. This inequality was called the *Evection* of the Moon: we shall hereafter explain from what cause it arises

291. The next remarkable inequality of the Moon's motion was discovered by Tycho Brahe in the sixteenth century. This was proved to depend upon the angular distance of the Sun and Moon: and was greatest when the

Moon was about 45^0 or 135^0 from the Sun. In this respect this inequality, which was called the *Variation*, differed from the Evection, which Ptolemy found to be greatest when the Moon was ninety degrees from the Sun.

292. Tycho Brahe was the discoverer of one more inequality, which was called the *Annual Equation*, since it depends on the distance of the Sun from the Earth, and therefore goes through its changes in a year.

Not many years after these discoveries of Tycho Brahe, Kepler published to the world his Three Laws, which he had calculated with almost incredible labour and perseverance. Theory has led to the discovery of many other inequalities in the Moon's motion, but the above have been specified for their historical interest and because they are more sensible than the others.

293. All these, however, were merely bare facts, the results of continued and indefatigable observations and calculations. No common law appeared to connect them, no one cause was known of which they were necessary consequences. It was the glory of Newton, that he unravelled the mystery and demonstrated that these were all results of a universal principle with which matter is endowed by the Creator of the World.

Kepler and other Astronomers had conceived the notion of a universal gravitating principle: but it needed the master genius of Newton to demonstrate its existence.

We now proceed to explain the causes of these perturbations.

PROP. *To calculate the disturbing forces of the Sun on the Moon.*

294. The *disturbing forces* are the differences of the forces of the Sun on the Moon and Earth. Let E, M, S represent the masses of the Earth, Moon, and Sun. The law of force we assume to be that of the inverse square of the distance between the centres of the bodies. We shall consider the orbits of the Sun and Moon about the Earth nearly circular, since this is proved to be the case by observation*.

* The slight variations in the apparent magnitudes of the Sun and Moon convince us of this.

ω the angle SEM;

measured in the direction in which the hands of a watch move.

We must consider the motion of M about E as if E were fixed in order that we may discover the apparent perturbations: but the accelerating forces acting on E are $\frac{M}{r^2}$ and $\frac{S}{r'^2}$ in the directions EM and ES respectively: and in order that the relative motion may not be affected by supposing E fixed we must apply forces equal to these upon each body of the system in an opposite direction: the second law of motion shews the legitimacy of this process.

Hence the forces acting on M, E being considered fixed, are

$\frac{M+E}{r^2}$ in the direction ME,

$\frac{S}{y^2}$ ..... MS,

$\frac{S}{r'^2}$ ..... MK, MK being parallel to SE.

Then, resolving the second of these in the directions ME and ML (Art. 18), and combining the resolved parts of this with the other forces, the *disturbing* forces of S on M are

$\frac{Sr}{y^3}$ in the direction ME, and $\frac{Sr'}{y^3} - \frac{S}{r'^2}$ in the direction ML.

Again resolve these in the directions ME and perpendicular to this line: then the whole forces which act upon M about E at rest, are

$$\frac{M+E}{r^2} + \frac{Sr}{y^3} - \frac{S}{r'^2}\left(\frac{r'^3}{y^3} - 1\right)\cos\omega \text{ in the direction } ME,$$

$$\frac{S}{r'^2}\left(\frac{r'^3}{y^3} - 1\right)\sin\omega \text{ in the direction perpendicular to } ME,$$

and acting towards the nearest syzygy.

The Moon is said to be in *syzygy* when it is new or full; and in *quadrature* when ninety degrees from syzygy.

The first of the above forces deprived of its first term is called the *central disturbing force:* and the second is called the *tangential disturbing force.*

295. We proceed to obtain approximate expressions for these. Since the orbit of the Moon is nearly circular; and since $\frac{r}{r'}$ is a very small fraction, being about equal to $\frac{1}{400}$, we shall neglect its square and higher powers.

By the figure, $y^2 = r'^2 + r^2 - 2r'r\cos\omega$;

$$\therefore \frac{r'^3}{y^3} = (1 - \frac{2r}{r'}\cos\omega)^{-\frac{3}{2}} = 1 + \frac{3r}{r'}\cos\omega;$$

$$\therefore \text{central dist}^{\text{e}}.\ \text{force} = \frac{Sr}{r'^3} - \frac{3Sr}{r'^3}\cos^2\omega = -\frac{Sr}{2r'^3}(1 + 3\cos 2\omega)$$

$$\text{tangential dist}^{\text{e}}.\ \text{force} = \frac{3Sr}{r'^3}\sin\omega\cos\omega = \frac{3Sr}{2r'^3}\sin 2\omega.$$

In order still further to simplify these expressions; let f be the mean force of E upon M, E being supposed fixed: m the ratio of the periodic times of the Moon and Sun about the Earth ($m = \frac{1}{13}$ nearly): a and a' the mean distances of the Moon and Sun from the Earth: therefore by Art. 273. Cor. 2,

$$m^2 = \frac{4\pi^2 a^3}{M+E} \div \frac{4\pi^2 a'^3}{S+E} = \frac{S}{M+E}\frac{a^3}{a'^3} \text{ nearly};$$

$$\frac{M+E}{a^2} = f: \text{ and } \therefore \frac{Sr}{r'^3} = m^2 f \frac{a'^3}{r'^3}\frac{r}{a};$$

$$\therefore \text{central disturbing force} = -\frac{m^2}{2} f \frac{a'^3}{r'^3}\frac{r}{a}(1 + 3\cos 2\omega),$$

$$\text{tangential disturbing force} = \frac{3m^2}{2} f \frac{a'^3}{r'^3}\frac{r}{a}\sin 2\omega.$$

296. If we suppose the orbit of the Earth about the Sun and the undisturbed orbit of the Moon about the Earth to be circular, then $r' = a'$ and $r = a$; and

$$\text{central disturbing force} = -\tfrac{1}{2} m^2 f (1 + 3\cos 2\omega),$$

$$\text{tangential disturbing force} = \tfrac{3}{2} m^2 f \sin 2\omega.$$

297. The central disturbing force vanishes when

$$\omega = \tfrac{1}{2}\cos^{-1}(-\tfrac{1}{3}) = 55^0,\ 125^0,\ 235^0,\ 305^0 \text{ nearly.}$$

The points in the Moon's orbit determined by these angles are called *Octants*.

The central disturbing force is said to be *addititious* at points between those octants between which the quadratures lie, because at those points the above expression for the force is positive and consequently adds to the force of M to E. For a like reason the central disturbing force is said to be *ablatitious* between those octants between which the syzygies lie.

298. We proceed to examine the effects which the disturbing forces have upon the form and position of the Moon's orbit. We shall neglect quantities which depend upon the square and higher powers of the disturbing force. Whenever the undisturbed orbit is supposed to be nearly circular we may neglect all such terms as $\dfrac{dr^2}{d\theta^2}$. Thus

$$\text{radius of curvature} = \frac{\left\{r^2 + \dfrac{dr^2}{d\theta^2}\right\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}{r^2 + 2\dfrac{dr^2}{d\theta^2} - r\dfrac{d^2r}{d\theta^2}} = \frac{r^2}{r - \dfrac{d^2r}{d\theta^2}}.$$

$$\text{Also (velocity)}^2 = \left(\frac{ds}{dt}\right)^2 = r^2\left(\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{dr}{dt}\right)^2 = r^2\left(\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right)^2.$$

$$\text{Again central force} = h^2u^2\left(u + \frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2}\right) \text{ by Art. 246.}$$

$$= \frac{h^2}{r^2}\left\{\frac{1}{r} + \frac{2}{r^3}\frac{dr^2}{d\theta^2} - \frac{1}{r^2}\frac{d^2r}{d\theta^2}\right\} = \frac{h^2}{r^2}\left\{\frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{r^2}\frac{d^2r}{d\theta^2}\right\}$$

$$= r^2 \left(\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right)^2 \left\{\frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{r^3}\frac{d^2r}{d\theta^2}\right\} \text{ by Art. 242.}$$

$$= \frac{(\text{vel.})^2}{\text{rad. of curvature}}.$$

We have introduced these expressions since we shall find them useful hereafter.

PROP. *To find the effect of the Sun's disturbing forces on the periodic time of the Moon.*

299. Since the tangential force passes through all its degrees of magnitude positive and negative during half a revolution of the Moon, it will compensate during one quarter of the revolution for any loss or gain that the angular velocity of the Moon may have experienced in the preceding quarter. In fact the *mean** tangential force equals zero. For this reason the tangential force has no effect on the periodic time.

For the same reason we neglect the periodic term of the central force. The *mean* central force $= f\left(1 - \frac{m^2}{2}\right)$. Since this is less than f, it follows that the mean distance is increased by the disturbing forces.

The absolute force $= fa^2\left(1 - \frac{m^2}{2}\right)$;

$\therefore$ the periodic time $= \frac{2\pi a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{\text{abs. force}}}$ nearly, (Art. 273. Cor. 2.)

$$= 2\pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{f}}\left(1 + \frac{m^2}{4}\right) \text{ nearly.}$$

This is greater than if there were no disturbing force (or $m = 0$); especially when we remember that a is greater than in the undisturbed orbit.

* By the *mean* value of a function of a variable angle θ we mean, the part of the function which is independent of periodical terms which pass through all their changes positive and negative as θ is increased by certain equal increments. Thus a is the mean value of $a + b\sin n\theta$.

Hence the periodic time is increased by the disturbing force. (*Principia*, Lib. I. Prop. LXVI. Cor. 6.)

300. Cor. 1. If we suppose the Earth's orbit about the Sun not circular, then by Art. 295, the mean central force

$$= f\left\{1 - \frac{m^2}{2}\frac{a'^3}{r'^3}\right\},$$

and the length of the month

$$= 2\pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{f}}\left\{1 + \frac{m^2}{4}\frac{a'^3}{r'^3}\right\}.$$

Hence the months are longest when the Earth is in perihelion, and shortest when in aphelion. This accounts for the Winter Months at this epoch being longer than the Summer Months.

301. Cor. 2. The mean velocity (V) of the Moon =

$$\frac{2\pi a}{\text{per. time}} = a\sqrt{\frac{f}{a}}\left(1 - \frac{m^2}{4}\right) = \sqrt{af}\left(1 - \frac{m^2}{4}\right).$$

Prop. *To find the effect of the Sun's disturbing force on the velocity of the Moon, supposing the undisturbed orbit of the Moon to be circular.*

302. Since the angle ω is referred to a line moveable in space we must adopt another means of measuring the position of the Moon. Let θ be the longitude of the Moon at the time t: then $m\theta$ is the longitude of the Sun, supposing that θ is measured from the time when the Sun and Moon were in Aries together; and supposing the orbits nearly circular: and therefore $\omega = (1 - m)\theta$:

$$\therefore \text{ tangential disturbing force} = \tfrac{3}{2}m^2 f \sin 2(1 - m)\theta,$$

and this is the only disturbing force which *directly* affects the velocity. We shall see in Art. 305, that the velocity is affected *indirectly* by the central disturbing force.

Now the space described by the Moon in the time t is $a\theta$; and the tangential force is the only force which acts in the line of the Moon's motion:

$$\therefore\ a\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = -\frac{3m^2}{2} f \sin 2(1-m)\theta,$$

the *negative* sign being taken because the tangential force acts always towards the nearest syzygy, Art. 294, and consequently tends to diminish θ when the Moon is in the first and third quadrants, through which angles $\sin 2(1-m)\theta$ is positive, and to increase θ in the second and fourth quadrants, through which angles $\sin 2(1-m)\theta$ is negative.

Multiplying by $2a\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ and integrating

$$v^2 \text{ or } a^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = \text{const.} + \frac{3m^2}{2(1-m)} f a \cos 2(1-m)\theta.$$

Let V be the mean velocity; then

$$v^2 = V^2 + \frac{3m^2}{2(1-m)} f a \cos 2(1-m)\theta$$

$$= V^2\left\{1 + \frac{3m^2}{2(1-m)}\cos 2(1-m)\theta\right\} \text{ neg}^g.\, m^4,$$

since $V^2 = fa(1-\frac{1}{2}m^2)$ by Art. 301.

The effect, then, of the disturbing force is to increase the velocity above what it would be in the circular orbit, when the Moon is not more than 45^0 from syzygy; and in other positions to diminish it. This follows directly from the fact proved in Art. 294, that the tangential force always acts towards the nearest syzygy.

The velocity is greatest in syzygies and $= V\left\{1 + \frac{3m^2}{4(1-m)}\right\}$

..... least in quadratures and $= V\left\{1 - \frac{3m^2}{4(1-m)}\right\}$.

(*Principia*, Lib. I. Prop. LXVI. Cors. 2, 3.)

PROP. *To find the effect of the Sun's disturbing force on the form of the Moon's orbit; supposing the undisturbed orbit to be circular.*

303. The curvature at any point of the orbit is measured by the reciprocal of the radius of curvature: hence, by Art. 298, the curvature equals $\frac{\text{central force}}{(\text{velocity})^2}$.

Now the central force $= f - \frac{m^2}{2} f(1 + 3\cos 2\omega)$, Art. 296,

also $(\text{velocity})^2 = V^2 \left\{1 + \frac{3m^2}{2(1-m)} \cos 2\omega\right\}$, Art. 302.

$V = \text{mean vel.} = \sqrt{af}\left(1 - \frac{m^2}{4}\right)$ by Art. 301;

$$\therefore \text{ curvature} = \frac{f}{V^2}\left\{1 - \frac{m^2}{2} - \frac{3m^2}{2}\left(1 + \frac{1}{1-m}\right)\cos 2\omega\right\}$$

$$= \frac{1}{a}\left\{1 - \frac{3m^2}{2}\left(1 + \frac{1}{1-m}\right)\cos 2\omega\right\}.$$

This is greatest in quadrature, when $\omega = 90°$ and $270°$; and is least in syzygy, when $\omega = 0$ and $180°$.

This shews that the orbit will assume an oval form *with respect to the Sun*, having its minor axis in syzygy, (*Principia*, Lib. I. Prop. LXVI. Cor. 4). Its form in space will be an irregular curve, nearly circular, but not *re-entering*. Also the expression for the curvature shews that the equation to the orbit is $r = a(1 - x\cos 2\omega)$, the major and minor axes being $2a(1+x)$ and $2a(1-x)$.

PROP. *To find the ratio of the axes of the oval orbit*

304. The equation to the orbit is $r = a(1 - x\cos 2\omega)$, but since ω is measured from a moveable line we must put $\omega = (1-m)\theta$ as in Art. 302;

$$\therefore r = a\left\{1 - x\cos 2(1-m)\theta\right\};$$

$$\therefore \text{ curvature} = \frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{r^2}\frac{d^2 r}{d\theta^2} \text{ by Art. 298}$$

$$= \frac{1}{a}\left\{1 + x\left[1 - 4(1-m)^2\right]\cos 2(1-m)\theta\right\}$$

Equating this to the expression found in the last Article,

$$\frac{1}{a}\{1 + x[1 - 4(1-m)^2]\cos 2(1-m)\theta\}$$

$$= \frac{1}{a}\left\{1 - \frac{3m^2}{2}\left(1 + \frac{1}{1-m}\right)\cos 2(1-m)\theta\right\};$$

$$\therefore\ x = \frac{3m^2}{2}\,\frac{1 + \dfrac{1}{1-m}}{4(1-m)^2 - 1}.$$

If we put $m = \dfrac{1}{13.3}$, $\quad x = \dfrac{1}{139}$ nearly;

$$\therefore\ \frac{1+x}{1-x} = \frac{70}{69},$$

the ratio in the *Principia* Lib. III. Prop. XXVIII.

This is the ratio of the axes of the oval orbit which moves round with the Sun while the Moon moves in it.

In Art. 302, we found the effect of the tangential disturbing force on the velocity of the Moon; and we have just shewn that the tangential and central disturbing forces draw the orbit of the Moon into an oval figure with respect to the Sun. We proceed, then, to calculate the velocity of the Moon when both disturbing forces are considered.

PROP. *To find the velocity of the Moon in the oval orbit.*

305. In Art. 302, we found the effect of the tangential force on the velocity: but the velocity will be affected by the change in form of the orbit: and thus we see the indirect effect of the central disturbing force upon the velocity.

Let v be the velocity of the Moon at any distance,

v_1 ..... the mean distance,

then $v^2 = r^2\dfrac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}$, neglecting $\dfrac{dr^2}{dt^2}$ which depends on the square of the disturbing force: Art. 298.

$$= \left\{1 + \left(x + \frac{\quad}{4(1-m)}\right) \cos 2(1-m)\theta\right\}\left\{1 + x\cos 2(1-m)\theta\right\} - 1$$

$$= \left(2x + \frac{3m^2}{4(1-m)}\right) \cos 2(1-m)\theta;$$

$$\therefore \delta\theta = \left(\frac{x}{1-m} + \frac{3m^2}{8(1-m)^2}\right) \sin 2(1-m)\theta.$$

This error in longitude is greatest (disregarding its sign) when the Moon is 45° or 135° from the Sun on either side of syzygy and therefore explains the cause of the error in the Moon

place discovered by Tycho Brahe, and called the *Variation* (Art. 291).

If we put $x = \frac{1}{139}$ and $m^2 = \frac{1}{179}$

$$\text{Variation} = m^2 \left(1 + \frac{3}{8}\right) \sin 2(1 - m)\theta \text{ nearly}$$

$$= \frac{11 m^2}{8} \sin 2(1 - m)\theta,$$

which accords with the rigorous approximation of the second order in the next Chapter, Art. 341.

We shall now suppose the undisturbed orbit of the Moon to be an ellipse of very small eccentricity; the Earth's centre being in the focus.

Our calculations will receive a remarkable degree of simplification by considering the perturbations of the Moon to affect, not the Moon itself directly, but the elements of its orbit, and so the Moon indirectly. The legitimacy of this hypothesis will appear from the following Proposition.

PROP. *To prove that the motion of the Moon may be represented by supposing it to move in an ellipse, the elements of which are continually changing.*

307. We have to shew that at every instant an ellipse can be drawn with one of its foci in the Earth's centre; its circumference passing through the Moon's centre; its tangent at the Moon in the direction of the Moon's motion at that instant; and the velocity in this ellipse calculated according to the principles of elliptic motion (see Art. 252.) equal to the velocity of the Moon at that time.

If an ellipse can be found which satisfies these conditions it is clear that we may suppose the Moon to be moving in its circumference at the proposed instant: and the perturbations of the Moon's motion will be found by calculating the change in the elements of this *instantaneous orbit*, as it is termed.

Two of the elements, viz. the inclination and longitude of the node, are fixed by the condition that the plane of the

ellipse must pass through the direction of the Moon's motion and the centre of the Earth.

$$\text{Let } \frac{a}{r} = 1 + e\cos(\theta - \varpi)$$

be the equation to the required ellipse, neglecting powers of e higher than the first: also let $r_1\theta_1$ be the co-ordinates to the Moon in the plane of its orbit at the instant under consideration; v its velocity; ϕ the angle between the radius vector of the Moon and the direction of her motion: then the above conditions give

$$\frac{a}{r_1} = 1 + e\cos(\theta_1 - \varpi),$$

$$\tan\phi = \left(r\frac{d\theta}{dr} =\right) \frac{1}{e}\operatorname{cosec}(\theta_1 - \varpi),$$

$$v^2 = 2(E + M)\left\{\frac{1}{r_1} - \frac{1}{2a}\right\}.$$

From these three equations a, e, ϖ may be found. The sixth element, the epoch, determines the position of the Moon in the instantaneous ellipse.

Hence an ellipse can always be drawn as described in the enunciation.

308. We shall proceed to explain the nature of the alterations in the elements. Since these variations during a revolution of the Moon are small we shall, in accordance with the Principle proved in Art. 288, consider the variation of each element supposing all the others to remain invariable; and then add their effects together.

At any proposed instant the equation to the orbit is

$$\frac{a}{r} = 1 + e\cos(\theta - \varpi),$$

where a, e, ϖ have values depending upon the proposed instant. Hence also if v be the velocity

$$v^2 = 2(E + M)\left\{\frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{2a}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{\mu}{a} \{1 + 2e \cos(\theta - \varpi)\}$$

$$= fa \{1 + 2e \cos(\theta - \varpi)\}, \text{ since } \frac{\mu}{a^2} = f.$$

We shall use the symbol δ to indicate differentiation, not with respect to the motion of the Moon, but with respect to the geometric deviations of the actual orbit of the Moon from the undisturbed orbit. Thus, if we wish to ascertain the change in the eccentricity in consequence of a change δv in the velocity, we have by differentiating the above equation

$$v \delta v = fa \cos(\theta - \varpi) \delta e,$$

which gives δe in terms of δv: and so of other perturbations. If we wish to ascertain the change in eccentricity arising from a change δf in the force f, we have the equation

$$0 = \delta f (1 + e \cos(\theta - \varpi) + f \delta e \cos(\theta - \varpi),$$

which gives δe in terms of δf.

We repeat the remark, that the direct tendency of the tangential disturbing force is to change the velocity: but the central disturbing force has not this direct effect. Therefore when we consider the effect of the central force on the elements a, e, ϖ, we must take the variation of the equation

$$v^2 = fa \{1 + 2e \cos(\theta - \varpi)\}$$

considering v constant: and when we consider the effect of the tangential force we must take the variation considering f constant.

We shall first find the effect of the disturbing forces on the position of the line of apsides.

An *apse* is a point in a polar orbit where the radius vector is perpendicular to the tangent.

PROP. *To find the effect of the mean central disturbing force upon the position of the line of apsides.*

309. The mean central force $= f\frac{a^2}{r^2} - \frac{m^2}{2} f\frac{r}{a}$, Art. 295.

We shall find it most convenient, in this case, to use the equation $\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u = \frac{P}{h^2u^2}$ proved in Art. 246, for central orbits.

In this case $h = aV = a\sqrt{af}\,(1 - \frac{1}{4}m^2)$;

$$\therefore \frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u = \frac{1}{a}(1 + \tfrac{1}{2}m^2) - \frac{m^2}{2a^4}\frac{1}{u^3}.$$

Now $u - \frac{1}{a}$ varies as the eccentricity of the orbit; and therefore we neglect its square;

$$\therefore \frac{1}{u^3} = \left\{\frac{1}{a} + \left(u - \frac{1}{a}\right)\right\}^{-3} = a^3 - 3a^4\left(u - \frac{1}{a}\right);$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u = \frac{1}{a}\left(1 + \frac{m^2}{2}\right) - \frac{m^2}{2a} + \frac{3m^2}{2}\left(u - \frac{1}{a}\right),$$

$$a\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + \left(1 - \frac{3m^2}{2}\right)(au - 1) = 0,$$

the integral of this is

$$au \text{ or } \frac{a}{r} = 1 + e\cos\left(1 - \frac{3m^2}{4}\right)(\theta - \alpha),$$

e and α being arbitrary constants.

This is the equation to the path of the Moon, supposing the mean central disturbing force to be the only disturbing force. If the coefficient of $\theta - \alpha$ were unity it would be an ellipse. The following is the geometrical construction for the orbit.

Let $A'M'E$ be the ellipse supposing the coefficient of θ were unity (fig. 83). When $\theta - \alpha = 0$ the values of r in the real curve and the ellipse are the same. Let, then, $A'M$ be the real path of the Moon. Take the angle $A'EM = \theta - \alpha$: and the angle $A'EM' = (1 - \frac{3}{4}m^2)$ angle $A'EM$: and let EM' cut the ellipse in M'.

Then $\frac{a}{EM'} = 1 + e\cos A'EM'$ by the equation to the ellipse

$$= 1 + e\cos\left(1 - \frac{3m^2}{4}\right)(\theta - \alpha) \text{ by construction}$$

$$= \frac{a}{EM} \text{ by equation to Moon's path;}$$

$$\therefore\ EM' = EM.$$

Draw EA so that angle MEA = angle $M'EA'$: and make $EA = EA'$: we may then draw an ellipse about E as focus and through A and M exactly equal to $A'M'E$.

The motion of the Moon may therefore be geometrically represented by supposing it to move in an ellipse, the ellipse itself revolving in its own plane about the focus with an angular velocity $= \frac{dA'EA}{dt} = \frac{3m^2}{4}\frac{d\theta}{dt}$, or which is to the angular velocity of the Moon as $\frac{3}{4}m^2 : 1$ in the direction of the Moon's motion.

Hence the tendency of the mean central disturbing force is to make the line of apsides progress.

310. Observation shews that the above result is only half the amount of the progression. The reason will be explained in the next Chapter.

We cannot extend the approximation without introducing the tangential force, and therefore refer the reader to the Luner theory in the next Chapter, where the whole Problem is accurately solved to a second approximation. All that we shall here attempt is an explanation of the *tendency* of the disturbing forces in altering the motion of the Moon in her eccentric orbit.

PROP. *To explain the effect of the tangential disturbing force of the Sun on the line of apsides.*

311. Let the equation to the ellipse in which the Moon is moving at any instant be

$$\frac{a}{r} = 1 + e\cos(\theta - \varpi) \text{ neglecting } e^2 \ldots\ldots$$

Then by the principles of elliptic motion,

$$v^2 = 2\mu\left\{\frac{1}{r} - \frac{1}{2a}\right\} = \frac{\mu}{a}\left\{1 + 2e\cos(\theta - \varpi)\right\}.$$

But the tangential force is continually causing v to differ from what it would be in terms of θ on the supposition of elliptic

motion. But, as we have shewn in Art. 307, we may still suppose the velocity to be the same as in the ellipse by altering ϖ, the longitude of the line of apsides, in such a way as to make a compensation. By taking the variation of the above expression for v^2 in terms of ϖ, we have

$$a v \delta v = \mu e \sin(\theta - \varpi)\, \delta \varpi ;$$

$$\therefore\ \delta \varpi = \frac{a v}{\mu e} \frac{\delta v}{\sin(\theta - \varpi)}.$$

Now the effect of the tangential force is to diminish the velocity of the Moon as it is moving from syzygy to quadrature, and to increase the velocity as the Moon is moving from quadrature to syzygy; see Art. 302. Hence δv is negative as the Moon moves from syzygy to quadrature, and positive from quadrature to syzygy.

Also $\sin(\theta - \varpi)$ is positive or negative according as the Moon is moving from perigee to apogee, or from apogee to perigee.

Now the motion of the line of apsides during a revolution of the Moon is very small, since the disturbing forces are small. We may therefore suppose, in examining the effect that the particular position of the line of apsides with respect to syzygies and quadratures has upon their motion, that they remain stationary during a revolution of the Moon: otherwise we shall be introducing quantities which depend upon the square of the disturbing force, quantities which we have purposed to neglect. We shall consider the two cases when the line of apsides is in syzygies, and in quadratures: and then take the average effect.

I. *Suppose the line of apsides is in syzygies:* fig. 84.

Then as the Moon moves from quadrature to quadrature through perigee, (that is, through the arc qYQ), δv and $\sin(\theta - \varpi)$ are of different signs and therefore $\delta \varpi$ is negative, or the line of apsides is regressing: but as the Moon moves from quadrature to quadrature through apogee, (that is, through the arc Qyq) δv and $\sin(\theta - \varpi)$ have the same sign and therefore $\delta \varpi$ is positive, or the line of apsides is progressing. Now the time of moving from quadrature to quadrature through apogee is greater than that of moving through perigee, Art. 242

Also the alteration in velocity by the tangential force is greater in the latter case than in the former.

Hence, when the line of apsides is in syzygies, it *progresses* on the whole during one revolution of the Moon.

II. *Suppose the line of apsides is in quadratures:* fig. 85.

Then as the Moon is moving from syzygy to syzygy through apogee, (that is, through the arc yqY) $\delta\varpi$ is negative, or the line of apsides is regressing, and as the Moon is moving from syzygy to syzygy through perigee $\delta\varpi$ is positive, or the line of apsides progressing. Now the time of moving through perigee is less than that of moving through apogee. And the alteration in velocity in the former case is less than in the latter.

Hence when the line of apsides is in quadratures, it on the whole *regresses* during a revolution of the Moon.

If we attentively examine the steps of the above investigation, and observe that the circumstances of regression in one position of the line of apsides closely resemble those of progression in the other, and *vice versâ*, it will easily be seen that in these two positions of the apsidal line the progression is very nearly the same as the regression.

When, however, intermediate positions of the apsidal line are considered the progression decidedly has the preponderance, and for this reason: regression takes place when the line of apsides is *distant* from the Sun; but progression takes place when the line of apsides is *near* the Sun. Hence regression, which, from its nature, causes the line of apsides to *meet* the Sun, moves it towards a progressing position: while progression, from its nature, causes the line of apsides to linger in a progressing situation. Hence, on the whole, the tangential force causes the line of apsides to progress. See Airy's *Gravitation*, p. 99.

PROP. *To explain the effect of the tangential force on the eccentricity of the Moon's orbit.*

312. We shall resume the equation $v^2 = fa\{1 + 2e\cos(\theta - \varpi)\}$ by which we can represent the real motion, if we suppose the elements to alter.

$$\text{Now } v\delta v = fa\cos(\theta - \varpi)\,\delta e;$$

$$\therefore \delta e = \frac{v}{fa}\,\frac{\delta v}{\cos(\theta - \varpi)}.$$

Now, in consequence of the tangential force, δv has the same sign and nearly the same magnitude for opposite positions of the Moon in her orbit, Art. 305: and $\cos(\theta - \varpi)$ has the same magnitude with different signs. Hence δe has different signs, but nearly the same magnitude for opposite positions of the Moon in her orbit: and therefore the tangential force has little effect on the eccentricity, since a partial compensation takes place in one part of the orbit for errors caused in the opposite part.

But we must examine this a little more accurately: for although compensation will take place pretty accurately when the Moon is about 90° from perigee and apogee, since the distance of the Moon from the Earth is then about the same, yet it will not be so complete when the Moon is near perigee and apogee, since at those points the Moon's distances differ more than in any other parts of her orbit. We shall therefore consider the case in which the Moon is near perigee and apogee.

1. When the line of apsides is *before* syzygies: fig. 86. Then δv is negative near perigee and apogee; and $\cos(\theta - \varpi)$ is positive near perigee and negative near apogee. Hence δe is negative when the Moon is near perigee and positive when near apogee. And therefore in this position of the line of apsides e is increasing when the greatest change takes place, and consequently on the whole the tendency of the eccentricity is to increase during each revolution of the Moon.

2. When the line of apsides is *behind* syzygies: fig. 87. Then it will easily be seen that δe is positive when the Moon is near perigee and negative when near apogee. Hence in this position of the line of apsides the tendency of the eccentricity is to decrease during each revolution of the Moon.

PROP. *To explain the effect of the central disturbing force on the eccentricity of the Moon's orbit.*

313. Now $fa = v^2 \{1 - 2e\cos(\theta - \varpi)\}$, and we have to find the variation of e corresponding to any variation in f: we have

$$\delta e = -\frac{a}{2v^2}\cos(\theta - \varpi)\,\delta f$$

Now δf has the same sign, and nearly the same magnitude in opposite parts of the Moon's orbit: Art. 295. Also $\cos(\theta - \varpi)$ has different signs in opposite parts of the orbit. Hence δe has different signs and nearly the same magnitude in opposite parts of the orbit, and a partial compensation will take place in the changes in eccentricity.

But, as in the last Article, we must examine this a little more accurately. The values of δf differ more at apogee and perigee than at any other parts of the orbit, since the distances of the Moon from the Earth differ most at these points. We shall therefore consider the changes in eccentricity when the Moon is near perigee and apogee.

1. Suppose the line of apsides is near *octants:* figs. 86, 87. When the Moon is near perigee and apogee, and therefore near octants, δf nearly vanishes and the eccentricity does not undergo any material change; and therefore the compensation of eccentricity is pretty accurate during a revolution of the Moon.

2. Suppose the line of apsides is near *syzygies:* fig. 84. When the Moon is near apogee and perigee, and therefore near syzygies, δf is negative (Art. 297); and $\cos(\theta - \varpi)$ is negative near apogee and positive near perigee. Hence δe is positive when the Moon is in perigee, and negative when in apogee. Wherefore e is decreasing when the change is greatest: and on the whole the eccentricity decreases when the line of apsides is near syzygies.

3. Suppose the line of apsides is near *quadratures:* fig. 85. Then δf is positive when the Moon is near perigee and apogee; and we shall find that the eccentricity is on the whole increasing during a revolution of the Moon.

314. The result of the last two Articles is as follows. The tangential force tends to increase or diminish the eccentricity according as the line of apsides is *before* or *behind* the Sun. And the central disturbing force tends to increase or diminish the eccentricity according as the line of apsides is nearly 90^0 from the Sun or near the Sun: in other parts a compensation takes place.

Hence, then, during the Sun's motion from the Moon's line of apsides through 90^0 the eccentricity of the Moon's orbit is decreasing: and during the Sun's motion towards the line

of apsides the eccentricity is increasing. The eccentricity is greatest when the line of apsides is in syzygies and least when the line of apsides is in quadratures.

315. We shall now proceed to explain the effect of the disturbing forces on the inclination and the motion of the line of nodes.

Hitherto we have supposed the Moon to move in the plane of the ecliptic: let us now suppose that the planes of the ecliptic and the Moon's orbit are slightly inclined to each other, as is the case in nature. Let the disturbing force of the Sun on the Moon be resolved into two parts, one in the plane of the Moon's orbit, and the other perpendicular to this plane: this latter is the part which affects the inclination and the position of the line of nodes.

If we bear in mind that the Sun's disturbing force always acts *towards* the Sun when the Moon is nearer the Sun than the Earth, and *from* the Sun in the contrary case, we shall easily see, by referring to fig. 88, that the part of the disturbing force which is perpendicular to the plane of the Moon's orbit always acts *towards* the ecliptic, except when the Moon is between quadrature and the nearest node, in which case it acts *from* the ecliptic.

By the plane of the Moon's orbit we mean the plane drawn through the centres of the Moon and Earth, and through the direction of the Moon's motion at any instant. And since in consequence of the Sun's disturbing force the Moon is continually drawn out of the plane in which it is moving, the plane of the orbit is continually shifting its position by revolving about the Moon's radius vector as an instantaneous axis.

316. Before we begin to explain the effect on the inclination and line of nodes we shall enunciate the following Lemma, the truth of which is self-evident.

LEMMA. When a body is moving from or towards a plane and a force acts upon it in a direction from or towards the plane, then the inclination of the body's resulting motion will be increased or diminished according as the original motion and the force act in the same or opposite directions with respect to the plane.

PROP. *To explain the effect of the Sun's disturbing force upon the inclination of the Moon's orbit to the ecliptic and on the position of the line of nodes.*

317. I. *Suppose the line of nodes is in syzygies.*

It is clear that in this case the inclination and line of nodes will not be affected; since no part of the force acts perpendicularly to the plane of the orbit. The line of nodes would remain in this position were it not for the Sun's motion.

II. *Suppose the line of nodes is in advance of the Sun:* fig. 89.

Let Nn be the line of nodes: take $Nm = 90^0$ on the orbit: let Qq be the quadratures. Then as the Moon moves from N to Q she moves from the ecliptic, and the disturbing force acts from the ecliptic. Hence the inclination of the Moon's path (Art. 316), and therefore of the plane of her orbit, is increasing, and therefore in revolving about the radius vector EM the node N must move towards quadratures, or the line of nodes Nn must progress.

As the Moon moves from Q to m, her motion and the disturbing force act in opposite directions, and therefore the inclination is decreasing (Art. 316), and the line of nodes regressing.

As the Moon moves from m to n her motion and the disturbing force both tend towards the ecliptic and therefore the inclination of the plane of her orbit is increasing, and therefore in revolving about the radius vector EM' causes the point n to move back, or the line of nodes to regress.

In the other half of the orbit the effect will be exactly the same.

Hence, if ϕ be the angular distance of the line of nodes from syzygies (ϕ being less than 90^0), the inclination is increasing as the Moon is moving through an angle

$$= 2\,(NEQ + mEn) = 360^0 - 2\phi:$$

and is decreasing as the Moon is moving through the remaining angle 2ϕ. And the line of nodes regresses while the Moon is

moving through an angle $180^0 + 2\phi$; and progresses while the Moon is moving through the remaining angle $180^0 - 2\phi$.

III. *Suppose the line of nodes is in quadratures.*

Then as the Moon moves from quadrature to syzygy the disturbing force and motion tend in different directions, and therefore the inclination is decreasing and the line of nodes is regressing. And as the Moon moves from syzygy to quadrature the inclination is increasing and therefore the line of nodes still regresses.

Wherefore the increase and decrease of inclination counteract each other; but the motion of the nodes is wholly *regressive.*

IV. *Suppose the line of nodes is behind the Sun:* fig. 90.

Then as the Moon moves from N to m the inclination is decreasing and the line of nodes regressing: and as she moves from m to q the inclination is increasing and the nodes regressing. As the Moon moves from q to n the inclination is decreasing and the nodes progressing.

Hence, if as before ϕ be the angular distance of the line of nodes from syzygy, the inclination is increasing as the Moon moves through an angle 2ϕ, and decreasing as she moves through the angle $360^0 - 2\phi$. But the nodes regress and progress respectively while the Moon is moving through the angles $180^0 + 2\phi$ and $180^0 - 2\phi$.

It appears, then, that on the whole the nodes *regress* pretty steadily: but the inclination is much more fluctuating and on the whole is not affected during a revolution of the line of nodes.

We introduce the two following Propositions as examples of the method used by Newton in the Third Book of the Principia: they will be found in Props. 30 and 31. Newton's geometry is translated into analysis.

PROP. *To calculate the motion of the nodes of the Moon's orbit considered circular.*

318. Let MM' be the arc described by the Moon in a unit of time, fig. 91: $M'L = 2$ space through which the dis-

turbing force would draw the Moon in the same time: Nn the line of nodes, Qq the line of quadratures, AB of syzygies: Mm is a tangent to the Moon's orbit at M meeting the ecliptic in m: join LM and produce it to meet the ecliptic in l: this gives the position of the tangent at M after the small time of describing MM' and therefore $\angle mEl$ represents the motion of the node.

Now LM' is parallel to the ecliptic and therefore can meet no line in the ecliptic: but it is in the same plane with lm, therefore LM' is parallel to lm.

$$\text{Hence } \frac{\text{motion of Node}}{\text{motion of Moon}} = \frac{\angle lEm}{\angle MEM'} = \frac{\sin mlE}{\angle MEM'}\frac{lm}{Em} \text{ nearly}$$

$$= \frac{\sin AEn}{\angle MEM'}\frac{LM'}{MM'}\frac{Mm}{Em} = \frac{\sin AEn}{\angle MEM'}\frac{LM'}{MM'}\sin MEm.$$

Now the disturbing force in the direction $M'L$

$$= \frac{Sr'}{y^3} - \frac{S}{r'^2} \text{ (see Art. 294.)} = \frac{S}{r'^2}\left(\frac{r'^3}{y^3} - 1\right)$$

$$= \frac{3Sr}{r'^3}\cos MEA, \quad \because\ y = r' - r\cos MEA;$$

$$\therefore\ LM' = \frac{3Sr}{r'^3}\cos MEA.$$

$$MM'.\ \angle MEM' = \frac{MM'^2}{r} = \frac{(\text{vel.})^2}{\text{rad.}} = \text{force of Moon to } E$$

$$= \frac{E+M}{r^2};$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{LM'}{MM'.\ \angle MEM'} = \frac{3S}{M+E}\frac{r^3}{r'^3}\cos MEA = 3m^2\cos MEA, \text{ Art. 295;}$$

$$\therefore \text{ motion of Node}$$

$$= 3m^2\cos MEA\sin MEN\sin AEn \,.\, \text{motion of Moon.}$$

Let N = longitude of the Node,

θ = ... Moon,

$m\theta$ = ... Sun,

supposing that the Sun, Moon, and Node were all in the first point of Aries when $\theta = 0$.

Hence the above equation gives

$$\frac{dN}{d\theta} = -3m^2 \cos(\theta - m\theta) \sin(\theta - N) \sin(m\theta - N),$$

the negative sign being taken because the mean motion of the node is regressive.

319. We shall now transform this by the ordinary trigonometrical formula

$$2 \sin a \cos b = \sin(a + b) + \sin(a - b),$$

we have

$$\frac{dN}{d\theta} = -\frac{3m^2}{4}\{1 + \cos 2(\theta - m\theta) - \cos 2(\theta - N) - \cos 2(m\theta - N)\}.$$

For a first approximation we neglect the periodical terms and take the mean values:

$$\frac{dN}{d\theta} = -\frac{3m^2}{4} = -i \text{ suppose;}$$

$$\therefore N = -i\theta, \text{ constant} = 0.$$

For a second approximation we shall put this value of N in the periodical terms;

$$\therefore \frac{dN}{d\theta} = -i\{1 + \cos 2(1 - m)\theta - \cos 2(1 + i)\theta - \cos 2(m + i)\theta\};$$

$$\therefore N = -i\theta - \frac{i}{2(1 - m)} \sin 2(1 - m)\theta + \frac{i}{2(1 + i)} \sin 2(1 + i)\theta$$

$$+ \frac{i}{2(m + i)} \sin 2(m + i)\theta.$$

For a third approximation we shall put this value of N in $\frac{dN}{d\theta}$ after neglecting the terms divided by $1 - m$ and $1 + i$, because they are smaller than the term divided by $m + i$; then

$$N = -i\theta + \frac{i}{2(m + i)} \sin 2(m + i)\theta.$$

$$\therefore \frac{dN}{d\theta} = -i - i\cos 2(1-m)\theta + i\cos\left\{2(1+i)\theta - \frac{i}{m+i}\sin 2(m+i)\theta\right\}$$

$$+ i\cos\left\{2(m+i)\theta - \frac{i}{m+i}\sin 2(m+i)\theta\right\}.$$

If we expand these the last term gives

$$\frac{i^2}{m+i}\sin^2 2(m+i)\theta \text{ or } \frac{i^2}{2(m+i)} - \frac{i^2}{2(m+i)}\cos 4(m+i)\theta.$$

Hence we obtain

$$\frac{dN}{d\theta} = -i + \frac{i^2}{2(m+i)} + \text{periodic functions of } \theta,$$

and therefore the *mean* value of N is

$$N = -\left\{i - \frac{i^2}{2(m+i)}\right\}\theta = -\left\{1 - \frac{3m}{8\left(1+\frac{3m}{4}\right)}\right\}\frac{3m^2}{4}\theta.$$

If we expand in powers of m we have

$$N = -\left(\frac{3m^2}{4} - \frac{9m^3}{32} + \frac{27m^4}{128} + \ldots\ldots\right)\theta,$$

320. In this calculation we have supposed the Moon's angular velocity to be uniform. To correct for the oval orbit let N_1 be the corrected value of N.

Now the motion of the node varies as the magnitude of the disturbing force, which varies as the square of the time of the Moon's describing MM', and therefore as the square of the velocity at M inversely;

$$\therefore \frac{dN_1}{dN} = \frac{(\text{vel.})^2 \text{ in octants}}{(\text{vel.})^2 \text{ at } M} = 1 - \frac{3m^2}{2(1-m)}\cos 2(1-m)\theta;$$

$$\therefore \frac{dN_1}{d\theta} = -i\left\{1 - \frac{i}{2(m+i)} + \cos 2(1-m)\theta \ldots\right\}$$

$$N_1 = -i\left(1 - \frac{i}{2(m+i)} - \frac{i}{1-m}\right)\theta$$

$$= -\frac{3m^2}{4}\left\{1 - \frac{3m}{8\left(1+\frac{3m}{4}\right)} - \frac{3m^2}{4(1-m)}\right\}\theta$$

$$= -\left(\frac{3m^2}{4} - \frac{9m^3}{32} - \frac{45}{128}m^4 + \ldots\right)\theta,$$

this correction does not affect the first and second terms.

PROP. *To calculate the inclination of the Moon's orbit to the ecliptic at any time.*

321. Let ENm be the line of nodes (fig. 92), El its position after a unit of time: Mp perpendicular to the plane of the ecliptic, pG perpendicular to the line of nodes EN; produce pG to cut El in g; join MG, Mg and draw Gr perpendicular to Mg: I the inclination of the plane of the Moon's orbit to the ecliptic.

Now $\delta I = \angle MGp - \angle Mgp = \angle GMg = \dfrac{Gr}{GM}$.

Also $\delta N = \angle GEg = \dfrac{Gg}{GE}$;

$\therefore \delta I = \dfrac{Gr}{Gg}\dfrac{GE}{GM}\delta N = \sin I \cdot \cot MEN \cdot \delta N$;

$$\therefore \frac{dI}{d\theta} = 3m^2 \sin I \cos MEA \cos MEN \sin AEn$$

$$= -3m^2 \sin I \cos(\theta - m\theta) \cos(\theta - N) \sin(m\theta - N)$$

$$= -\frac{3m^2}{4} \sin I \left\{\sin 2(\theta - N) - \sin 2(\theta - m\theta) + \sin 2(m\theta - N)\right\}.$$

This expression shews that I will always be small: and therefore $\sin I = I$ nearly; let γ be the mean value of I: also

$$N = -\frac{3m^2}{4}\theta = -i\theta, \text{ (see Art. 319.)}$$

$$\therefore \frac{dI}{d\theta} = -\frac{3m^2}{4}\gamma \left\{\sin 2(1+i)\theta - \sin 2(1-m)\theta + \sin 2(m+i)\theta\right\};$$

$$\therefore I = \frac{3m^2}{4}\gamma \left\{\frac{1}{2(1+i)} \cos 2(1+i)\theta - \frac{1}{2(1-m)} \cos 2(1-m)\theta \right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{1}{2(m+i)} \cos 2(m+i)\theta \right\} + \text{const.}$$

The constant $= \gamma$, the mean value of I. Therefore, neglecting the first and second terms because they are of an order higher than the third,

$$I = \gamma \left\{1 + \frac{3m}{8\left(1 + \frac{3m}{4}\right)} \cos 2(m+i)\theta\right\}$$

$$= \gamma \left\{1 + \frac{3m}{8} \cos 2 \text{ (Sun's longitude—Node's longitude)}\right\},$$

neglecting γm^2, &c.

This accords with Chapter V. Art. 342.

methods of calculation for this reason. The perturbations of the Moon are much greater than those of any planet, because the Sun, the mass of which is so enormous (Art. 286), is one of the disturbing bodies. Likewise the ratio of the distances of the disturbed and disturbing bodies from the central body about which they move is very different in the two theories; being about $\frac{1}{400}$ in that of the Moon, and sometimes so large as $\frac{3}{4}$ in that of the planets. The difference of the methods of approximation will be seen in the calculations of this and the following Chapter.

Before entering upon the immediate subject of the present Chapter we must investigate the following Proposition.

PROP. *A number of bodies considered as material particles attract each other with forces which vary inversely as the square of their distances, and directly as the mass of the attracting body: required the equations of motion of any one of the bodies relatively to a second.*

323. Let M, m, m', m'' .... be the masses of the bodies; M being that of the body about which the motion is to be calculated: and m the mass of that body of which the equations of motion are to be determined.

Let X, Y, Z be the co-ordinates of M,

$X+x$, $Y+y$, $Z+z$ . ..... m,

$X+x'$, $Y+y'$, $Z+z'$ ..... m'

.....

Then the distance between m and m' is

$$\{(x'-x)^2+(y'-y)^2+(z'-z)^2\}^{\frac{1}{2}},$$

and the attraction of m' on m is

$$\frac{m'}{(x'-x)^2+(y'-y)^2+(z'-z)^2}.$$

Let this be resolved into three parts parallel to the axes: that parallel to the axis of x is

$$\frac{m'(x'-x)}{\{(x'-x)^2+(y'-y)^2+(z'-z)^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}},$$

$$\text{or } \frac{1}{m}\frac{d}{dx}\left\{\frac{mm'}{\{(x'-x)^2+(y'-y)^2+(z'-z)^2\}^{\frac{1}{2}}}\right\},$$

and so of the other bodies m'' .....

Now assume $\lambda = \Sigma . \dfrac{mm'}{\{(x'-x)^2+(y'-y)^2+(z'-z)^2\}^{\frac{1}{2}}}$,

which expression is the sum of the quantities found by dividing the product of every two of the masses m, m', m'' ..... by their respective distances.

Then the sum of the attractions of m', m'' ..... on m resolved parallel to the axis of x

$$= \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dx}.$$

In like manner $\dfrac{1}{m}\dfrac{d\lambda}{dy}$ and $\dfrac{1}{m}\dfrac{d\lambda}{dz}$ are the attractions of m', m''.... on m parallel to the axes of y and z.

Let $r\,r'\,r''$ .... be the distances of $m\,m'\,m''$ .... from M. Then the attraction of M on m parallel to x is $\dfrac{Mx}{r^3}$, and con-

sequently the equation of motion of m in space parallel to x is

$$\frac{d^2(X+x)}{dt^2} = \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dx} - \frac{Mx}{r^3}.$$

But $\frac{mx}{r^3}$, $\frac{m'x'}{r'^3}$, ... are the attractions of mm' ... on M parallel to x: and therefore the equation of motion of M parallel to x is

$$\frac{d^2X}{dt^2} = \Sigma \cdot \frac{mx}{r^3},$$

and by subtracting this from the equation above we have the equation of motion of m relatively to M

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{Mx}{r^3} - \Sigma \cdot \frac{mx}{r^3} - \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dx} = 0.$$

And in like manner

$$\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + \frac{My}{r^3} - \Sigma \cdot \frac{my}{r^3} - \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dy} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{Mz}{r^3} - \Sigma \cdot \frac{mz}{r^3} - \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dz} = 0.$$

Now assume

$$R^* = \frac{m'(xx' + yy' + zz')}{r^3} + \frac{m''(x''x' + y''y' + z''z')}{r''^3} + \ldots + \frac{\lambda}{m},$$

* The [illegible] Research Degree in Laws [illegible]

$$\frac{dR^*}{dx} = \frac{m'x'}{r^3} - \frac{m'x}{r^3} + \frac{3m'x(xx' + yy' + zz')}{r^5} + \frac{m''x''}{r''^3} - \frac{m''x}{r''^3} + \frac{3m''x(x''x' + y''y' + z''z')}{r''^5} + \ldots + \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dx},$$

$$\frac{dR^*}{dy} = \frac{m'y'}{r^3} - \frac{m'y}{r^3} + \frac{3m'y(xx' + yy' + zz')}{r^5} + \frac{m''y''}{r''^3} - \frac{m''y}{r''^3} + \frac{3m''y(x''x' + y''y' + z''z')}{r''^5} + \ldots + \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dy},$$

$$\frac{dR^*}{dz} = \frac{m'z'}{r^3} - \frac{m'z}{r^3} + \frac{3m'z(xx' + yy' + zz')}{r^5} + \frac{m''z''}{r''^3} - \frac{m''z}{r''^3} + \frac{3m''z(x''x' + y''y' + z''z')}{r''^5} + \ldots + \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dz},$$

$$\text{then } \frac{dR}{dx} = \frac{m'x'}{r'^3} + \frac{m''x''}{r''^3} + \ldots - \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dx}$$

$$= \Sigma . \frac{mx}{r^3} - \frac{mx}{r^3} - \frac{1}{m}\frac{d\lambda}{dx},$$

and the first equation of motion becomes

$$\left.\begin{aligned} &\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{(M+m)\,x}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dx} = 0 \\ \text{and similarly} \\ &\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + \frac{(M+m)\,y}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dy} = 0 \\ &\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{(M+m)\,z}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dz} = 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \ldots\ldots (1).$$

These are the equations by which the motion of the Moon about the Earth, or of a planet about the Sun, is determined when under the action of all the other bodies of the Solar System. They have never yet been completely integrated. For this reason we must resort to approximation. To effect this R, which is called the *disturbing function*, must be developed in a converging series. The difference of the methods adopted in the Lunar and Planetary Theories depends upon the different modes of expanding the function R. In the Lunar Theory R is expanded in powers of the ratio of the distances of the Sun and Moon, a very small fraction nearly equal $\frac{1}{400}$; but in the Planetary Theory R is expanded in powers of the eccentricities and inclinations of the planetary orbits, all of which are very small, with the exception of those of Juno and Pallas; the eccentricities of these being about $\frac{1}{4}$ and the inclination of the orbit of Pallas to the ecliptic being about 35^0: but the masses of these planets are very small.

324. We intend throughout our calculations in this and the following Chapter to neglect quantities which depend upon the square and higher powers of the disturbing forces. In consequence of this we may calculate separately the perturbations caused by the Sun or a planet on the supposition that the

other heavenly bodies do not attract, and then add together the separate perturbations: this follows from the Principle explained in Art. 288.

PROP. *To obtain equations for calculating the radius vector of the Moon; and the inclination of the lunar orbit to the ecliptic.*

325. The equations of motion are by the last Article

$$\left.\begin{aligned} \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu x}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dx} = 0 \\ \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu y}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dy} = 0 \\ \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu z}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dz} = 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots (1),$$

where μ = mass of the Earth + mass of the Moon.

Let the plane of the ecliptic be the plane of xy: also let ρ be the projection of r on the ecliptic: s the tangent of inclination of ρ to the same plane: θ the longitude, the axis of x passing through Aries: then

$$x^2 + y^2 = \rho^2; \quad z^2 + \rho^2 = r^2;$$

$$x = \rho \cos\theta, \quad y = \rho \sin\theta, \quad z = \rho s.$$

Multiply the first equation by y, and the second by x, and subtract;

$$\therefore x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = y\frac{dR}{dx} - x\frac{dR}{dy};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{dt}\left(x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt}\right) = \rho\left\{\sin\theta\frac{dR}{dx} - \cos\theta\frac{dR}{dy}\right\},$$

$$\text{or } \frac{d}{dt}\left(\rho^2\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right) = \rho T,$$

$$\text{if we put } \sin\theta\frac{dR}{dx} - \cos\theta\frac{dR}{dy} = T$$

Multiply each side by $\rho^2 \frac{d\theta}{dt}$;

$$\therefore \rho^2 \frac{d\theta}{dt} \frac{d}{dt}\left\{\rho^2 \frac{d\theta}{dt}\right\} = \rho^2 T \frac{d\theta}{dt};$$

$$\therefore \left(\rho^2 \frac{d\theta}{dt}\right)^2 = h^2 + 2\int \rho^2 T d\theta;$$

h^2 being a constant introduced by integration;

$$\therefore \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = \frac{h^2}{\rho^4} + \frac{2}{\rho^4}\int \rho^2 T d\theta; \quad \rho = \frac{1}{u}$$

$$= h^2 u^4 + 2u^4 \int \frac{T d\theta}{u^2} \ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

Again, multiply the first and second equations (1) respectively by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$, $2\frac{dy}{dt}$ and add,

$$\therefore \frac{d}{dt}\left\{\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2}\right\} + \frac{2\mu}{r^3}\left(x\frac{dx}{dt} + y\frac{dy}{dt}\right) + 2\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{dR}{dx} + 2\frac{dy}{dt}\frac{dR}{dy} = 0,$$

putting $x = \rho\cos\theta$, $y = \rho\sin\theta$, $x^2 + y^2 = \rho^2$;

$$\frac{d}{dt}\left\{\frac{d\rho^2}{dt^2} + \rho^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\right\} + \frac{2\mu\rho}{r^3}\frac{d\rho}{dt} - 2\rho\frac{d\theta}{dt}\left(\sin\theta\frac{dR}{dx} - \cos\theta\frac{dR}{dy}\right)$$

$$+ 2\frac{d\rho}{dt}\left(\cos\theta\frac{dR}{dx} + \sin\theta\frac{dR}{dy}\right) = 0.$$

$$\text{Let } \frac{\mu\rho}{r^3} + \cos\theta\frac{dR}{dx} + \sin\theta\frac{dR}{dy} = P;$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{dt}\left\{\frac{d\rho^2}{dt^2} + \rho^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\right\} + 2P\frac{d\rho}{dt} - 2\rho\frac{d\theta}{dt}T = 0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{d\theta}\left\{\frac{d\rho^2}{dt^2} + \rho^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\right\} + 2P\frac{d\rho}{d\theta} - 2\rho T = 0, \quad \rho = \frac{1}{u};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d}{d\theta}\left\{\frac{1}{u^2}\frac{du^2}{dt^2}+\frac{1}{u^2}\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\right\}-\frac{2P}{u^2}\frac{du}{d\theta}-\frac{2T}{u}=0,$$

Now $\dfrac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}=h^2u^4+2u^3\int\dfrac{T\,d\theta}{u^3}$ by (2),

this equation we can eliminate t, and we have

$$\frac{d}{d\theta}\left\{\left(\frac{du^2}{d\theta^2}+u^2\right)\left(h^2+2\int\frac{T\,d\theta}{u^3}\right)\right\}-\frac{2P}{u^2}\frac{du}{d\theta}-\frac{2T}{u}=0,$$

performing the differentiation

$$2\frac{du}{d\theta}\left(\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2}+u\right)\left(h^2+2\int\frac{T\,d\theta}{u^3}\right)$$

$$+\frac{2T}{u^3}\left(\frac{du^2}{d\theta^2}+u\right)-\frac{2P}{u^2}\frac{du}{d\theta}-\frac{2T}{u}=0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2}+u-\frac{\dfrac{P}{u^2}-\dfrac{T}{u^3}\dfrac{du}{d\theta}}{h^2+2\displaystyle\int\frac{T\,d\theta}{u^3}}=0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots (3).$$

326. To obtain an equation for calculating the inclinatio of the radius vector to the ecliptic, we have by the last equations (1).

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}=-\frac{uz}{r}-\frac{dR}{dz}=-S \text{ suppose.}$$

but $z=\dfrac{s}{u}$, $\therefore \dfrac{dz}{dt}=\dfrac{d\left(\frac{s}{u}\right)}{d\theta}\dfrac{d\theta}{dt}=\dfrac{1}{u}\dfrac{ds}{d\theta}-\dfrac{s}{u^2}\dfrac{du}{d\theta}\dfrac{d\theta}{dt}$

$$=\frac{1}{u}\frac{ds}{d\theta}-\frac{s}{u^2}\frac{du}{d\theta}\sqrt{h^2+2\int\frac{T\,d\theta}{u}}\text{ by (2)},$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}=\frac{1}{u}\frac{d^2s}{d\theta^2}-\frac{s}{u^2}\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2}-\frac{2}{u^2}\frac{du}{d\theta}\frac{ds}{d\theta}+\frac{2s}{u^3}\left(\frac{du}{d\theta}\right)^2+\frac{s}{u}\left(h^2+2\int\frac{T\,d\theta}{u}\right)$$

$$= \left\{ \left(u \frac{d^2 s}{d\theta^2} - s \frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} \right) \sqrt{h^2 + 2 \int \frac{T d\theta}{u^3}} \right.$$

$$\left. + \left(u \frac{ds}{d\theta} - s \frac{du}{d\theta} \right) \frac{T}{u^2 \sqrt{h^2 + 2 \int \frac{T d\theta}{u^3}}} \right\} \frac{d\theta}{dt}$$

$$= \left(u \frac{d^2 s}{d\theta^2} - s \frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} \right) u^2 \left(h^2 + 2 \int \frac{T d\theta}{u^3} \right) + \left(u \frac{ds}{d\theta} - s \frac{du}{d\theta} \right) \frac{T}{u} = -S;$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2 s}{d\theta^2} - \frac{s}{u} \frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} + \frac{\frac{S}{u^3} + \frac{T}{u^3} \left(\frac{ds}{d\theta} - \frac{s}{u} \frac{du}{d\theta} \right)}{h^2 + 2 \int \frac{T d\theta}{u^3}} = 0;$$

but by the last Article

$$\frac{s}{u} \frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} + s - \frac{\frac{Ps}{u^3} - \frac{Ts}{u^4} \frac{du}{d\theta}}{h^2 + 2 \int \frac{T d\theta}{u^3}} = 0,$$

adding these last equations we have

$$\frac{d^2 s}{d\theta^2} + s + \frac{\frac{S - Ps}{u^3} + \frac{T}{u^3} \frac{ds}{d\theta}}{h^2 + 2 \int \frac{T d\theta}{u^3}} = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots (4).$$

327. It is necessary that we estimate the comparative magnitude of the various small quantities involved in our calculations.

Let e, e' be the eccentricities of the lunar and solar orbits; k the tangent of the mean inclination of the lunar orbit to the ecliptic; m the ratio of the Sun's mean motion to the Moon's mean motion, a and a' the mean distances of the Moon and Sun from the Earth: the values of these quantities are nearly

$$e = \tfrac{1}{20}, \quad e' = \tfrac{1}{60}, \quad k = \tfrac{1}{12}, \quad m = \tfrac{1}{13},$$

these we shall reckon of the first order of small quantities.

But $\frac{a}{a'} = \frac{1}{400}$ nearly is a quantity of the second order of magnitude, since it $= e^2$ nearly. The Sun's disturbing force is greatest when the Moon is between the Sun and Earth: in which case it $= \frac{m'}{(a'-a)^2} - \frac{m'}{a'^2}$: the ratio which this bears to the action of the Earth on the Moon

$$= \left\{\frac{m'}{(a'-a)^2} - \frac{m'}{a'^2}\right\} \div \frac{\mu}{a^2} = \frac{m'}{\mu}\,\frac{2a^3}{a'^3} \text{ nearly} = 2m^3$$

by Kepler's third law. Hence the disturbing force is of the second order.

We proceed to expand the values of T, P, S.

PROP. *To expand the values of* T, P, S *neglecting small quantities of the fourth order.*

328. By Arts. 325, 326,

$$T = \sin\theta \frac{dR}{dx} - \cos\theta \frac{dR}{dy};$$

$$P = \frac{\mu\rho}{r^2} + \cos\theta \frac{dR}{dx} + \sin\theta \frac{dR}{dy};$$

$$S = \frac{\mu z}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dz}, \text{ and by Arts. 323, 324,}$$

$$R = \frac{m'(xx' + yy' + zz')}{r'^3} - \frac{m'}{\{(x-x')^2 + (y-y')^2 + (z-z')^2\}^{\frac{1}{2}}},$$

m' = mass of Sun; $x'y'z'$ co-ordinates of Sun: r' = dist. of Sun.

Let $x = \rho\cos\theta$, $y = \rho\sin\theta$, $z = \rho s$ as before:

$$x' = r'\cos\theta', \quad y' = r'\sin\theta', \quad z' = 0,$$

since the plane of xy is the plane of the ecliptic.

$$\therefore R = \frac{m'\rho}{r'^2}\cos(\theta - \theta') - \frac{m'}{\{\rho^2 + r'^2 - 2\rho r'\cos(\theta - \theta')\}^{\frac{1}{2}}}$$

$$R = \frac{m'\rho}{r'^2}\cos(\theta-\theta') - \frac{m'}{r'}\left\{1 - \frac{2\rho}{r'}\cos(\theta-\theta') + (1+s^2)\frac{\rho^2}{r'^2}\right\}^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$= -\frac{m'}{r'} + \frac{m'}{2r'}\left\{1 + s^2 - 3\cos^2(\theta-\theta')\right\}\frac{\rho^2}{r'^2}$$

$$= -\frac{m'}{r'} - \frac{m'}{4r'}\left\{1 - 2s^2 + 3\cos 2(\theta-\theta')\right\}\frac{\rho^2}{r'^2}.$$

Also $\theta = \tan^{-1}\frac{y}{x}$, $\rho = \sqrt{x^2+y^2}$, $s = \frac{z}{\sqrt{x^2+y^2}}$.

Hence $\frac{dR}{dx} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{dx} + \frac{dR}{d\rho}\frac{d\rho}{dx} + \frac{dR}{ds}\frac{ds}{dx}$

$$= -\frac{3m'\rho}{2r'^3}\sin 2(\theta-\theta')\sin\theta - \frac{m'\rho}{2r'^3}\left\{1 + 3\cos 2(\theta-\theta')\right\}\cos\theta$$

$$= -\frac{m'\rho}{2r'^3}\cos\theta - \frac{3m'\rho}{2r'^3}\cos(\theta-2\theta');$$

$$\frac{dR}{dy} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{dy} + \frac{dR}{d\rho}\frac{d\rho}{dy} + \frac{dR}{ds}\frac{ds}{dy}$$

$$= \frac{3m'\rho}{2r'^3}\sin 2(\theta-\theta')\cos\theta - \frac{m'\rho}{2r'^3}\left\{1 + 3\cos 2(\theta-\theta')\right\}\sin\theta$$

$$= -\frac{m'\rho}{2r'^3}\sin\theta + \frac{3m'\rho}{2r'^3}\sin(\theta-2\theta');$$

$$\frac{dR}{dz} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{dz} + \frac{dR}{d\rho}\frac{d\rho}{dz} + \frac{dR}{ds}\frac{ds}{dz} = \frac{m's\rho}{r'^3}.$$

Hence $T = \sin\theta\frac{dR}{dx} - \cos\theta\frac{dR}{dy} = -\frac{3m'\rho}{2r'^3}\sin 2(\theta-\theta')$;

$$P = \frac{\mu\rho}{r^3} + \cos\theta\frac{dR}{dx} + \sin\theta\frac{dR}{dy}$$

$$= \frac{\mu\rho}{(\rho^2 + \rho^2 s^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{m'\rho}{2r'^3} - \frac{3m'\rho}{2r'^3}\cos 2(\theta - \theta')$$

$$= \frac{\mu}{\rho^2}\left(1 - \frac{3s^2}{2}\right) - \frac{m'\rho}{2r'^3} - \frac{3m'\rho}{2r'^3}\cos 2(\theta - \theta');$$

$$S = \frac{\mu z}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dz} = \frac{\mu\rho s}{(\rho^2 + \rho^2 s^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}} + \frac{m's\rho}{r'^3}$$

$$= \frac{\mu}{\rho^2}\left(s - \frac{3s^3}{2}\right) + \frac{m's\rho}{r'^3}.$$

PROP. *To integrate the differential equations, first approximation.*

329. We here neglect all small quantities of an order higher than the first, and therefore the disturbing force (Art. 327): hence by last Article

$$T = 0, \quad P = \frac{\mu}{\rho^2} = \mu u^2, \quad S = \frac{\mu s}{r^3} = \mu s u^3,$$

and the differential equations (3) (4) of Arts. 325, 326 become

$$\frac{d^2 u}{d\theta^2} + u - \frac{\mu}{h^2} = 0;$$

and $$\frac{d^2 s}{d\theta^2} + s = 0.$$

The solutions of these equations are

$$u = \frac{\mu}{h^2}\{1 + e\cos(\theta - \alpha)\} = h\{1 + e\cos(\theta - \alpha)\}, \quad h = \frac{\mu}{h^2},$$

and $s = k\sin(\theta - \gamma)$: e, α, h, γ are constants.

The first of these proves that the orbit of the Moon is an ellipse: and the second proves that the tangent of the latitude bears a constant ratio to the sine of the longitude reckoned from the node, and therefore the Moon moves in a constant plane.

PROP. *To shew that to integrate the differential equations to a second approximation we must introduce all terms of the* third *order, in which the coefficient of* θ *is either nearly equal to unity, or is small.*

330. By approximating to the values of the small quantities we shall arrive at a differential equation in u of the form

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u + \alpha + \alpha' \cos(n\theta + n') + \ldots\ldots = 0,$$

the integral of which is of the form

$$u = -\alpha + A\cos(\theta + B) + C\cos(n\theta + n') + \ldots$$

A, B being arbitrary constants, and C...constants to be determined by putting this value of u in the differential equation. This gives

$$C(1 - n^2) = -\alpha'; \quad \therefore\ C = \frac{-\alpha'}{1 - n^2},$$

from which we learn that if n nearly $= 1$, then C will be large. Wherefore when the coefficient of the argument of a cosine or sine is nearly unity we must retain coefficients of the *third* order, since these terms rise into importance by the process of integration.

Again, the function R and therefore the differential equation in u contains terms depending on r': and the reciprocal of r'

$$= b'\{1 + e'\cos(\theta' - \alpha')\} = b'\{1 + e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha') + \ldots\}$$

the accented letters refer to the Sun: m = ratio of the Moon's period to the Sun's period: β = longitude of the Sun when the Moon is in Aries. Hence

$$\frac{dt}{d\theta} \text{ calculated from } \frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{1}{hu^2}\left\{1 + 2\int\frac{T\,d\theta}{h^2u^3}\right\}^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$

(Art. 325, equation (2)) will contain a term $C\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')$, and therefore t contains a term

$$\frac{C}{m}\sin(m\theta + \beta - \alpha'):$$

hence C must be calculated to the *third* order. Wherefore all terms in which the coefficient of θ is small must be calculated to the third order; as well as those in which the coefficient of θ is nearly equal to unity.

PROP. *To calculate* $\sin 2(\theta - \theta')$ *and* $\cos 2(\theta - \theta')$ *to the first order.*

331. We need calculate these only to the first order because they occur only in terms multiplied by quantities of the second order.

$$\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{1}{hu^2}\left\{1 + 2\int\frac{Td\theta}{h^2u^3}\right\}^{-\frac{1}{2}} = \frac{1}{hu^2}, \text{ first order:}$$

$$= \frac{1}{b^2h}\{1 - 2e\cos(\theta - \alpha)\}, \quad b^2h = n = \text{Moon's mean motion;}$$

$$\therefore\ nt = \theta - 2e\sin(\theta - \alpha),$$

$t = 0$ when the Moon's mean longitude $= 0$; also let the Sun's mean longitude then $= \beta$:

$$\therefore\ n't + \beta = \theta' - 2e'\sin(\theta' - \alpha'),\ n' = \text{Sun's mean motion.}$$

Now $\frac{n'}{n} = m$: hence multiplying the first equation by m and subtracting, we have

$$\theta' - 2e'\sin(\theta' - \alpha') = m\theta + \beta;\ \text{neg}^{\text{s}}.\ me, \text{ of second order;}$$

$$\therefore\ \theta' = m\theta + \beta + 2e'\sin(m\theta + \beta - \alpha');$$

$$\therefore\ \sin 2(\theta - \theta') = \sin\{[(2 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta] - 4e'\sin(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')\}$$

$$= \sin\{(2 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta\} - 4e'\cos\{(2 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta\}\sin(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')$$

$$= \sin\{(2 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta\} - 2e'\sin\{(2 - m)\theta - \beta - \alpha'\}$$
$$+ 2e'\sin\{(2 - 3m)\theta - 3\beta + \alpha'\}$$

$$\cos 2(\theta - \theta') = \cos\{(2 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta\}$$
$$- 4e'\sin\{(2 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta\}\sin(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')$$

$$= \cos\{(2 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta\} - 2e'\cos\{(2 - 3m)\theta - 3\beta - \alpha'\}$$

PROP. *To calculate* $\frac{T}{h^2u^3}$, $\int\frac{T\,d\theta}{h^2u^2}$, $\frac{T}{h^2u^3}\frac{du}{d\theta}$ *to the third order.*

332. By Art. 328, $\frac{T}{h^2u^3} = -\frac{3m'}{2u^4h^2r'^3}\sin 2(\theta-\theta')$

$$= -\frac{3m'b'^3}{2h^2b^4}\{1+e\cos(\theta-\alpha)\}^{-4}\{1+e'\cos(\theta'-\alpha')\}^3\sin 2(\theta-\theta')$$

$$= -\tfrac{3}{2}m^2\{1-4e\cos(\theta-\alpha)+3e'\cos(m\theta+\beta-\alpha')\}$$
$$\times\{\sin[(2-2m)\theta-2\beta]-2e'\sin[(2-m)\theta-\beta-\alpha']$$
$$+2e'\sin[(2-3m)\theta-3\beta+\alpha']\}$$
$$= -\tfrac{3}{2}m^2\{\sin[(2-2m)\theta-2\beta]-2e\sin[(1-2m)\theta-2\beta+\alpha]\}.$$

Again $u=b\{1+e\cos(\theta-\alpha)\}$; $\therefore\ \frac{du}{d\theta}=-be\sin(\theta-\alpha)$;

$$\therefore\ \frac{T}{h^2u^3}\frac{du}{d\theta}=\tfrac{3}{4}bm^2e\cos\{(1-2m)\theta-2\beta+\alpha\}.$$

Again $\int\frac{Td\theta}{h^2u^3}=\tfrac{3}{2}m^2\left\{\frac{1}{2-2m}\cos[(2-2m)\theta-2\beta]\right.$

$$\left.-\frac{2e}{1-2m}\cos[(1-2m)\theta-2\beta+\alpha]\right\}$$
$$=\tfrac{3}{4}m^2\cos\{(2-2m)\theta-2\beta\}-3m^2e\cos\{(1-2m)\theta-2\beta+\alpha\}$$

PROP. *To calculate* $\frac{P}{h^2u^2}$ *to the third order.*

333. By Art. 328.

$$\frac{P}{h^2u^2}=b(1-\tfrac{3}{2}s^2)-\frac{m'}{2u^3h^2r'^3}\{1+3\cos 2(\theta-\theta')\}.$$

First. $b(1-\frac{3}{2}s^2)=b\{1-\frac{3}{4}k^2+\frac{3}{4}k^2\cos 2(\theta-\gamma)\}$.

Secondly.

$$-\frac{m'}{2u^3h^2r'^3}=-\frac{m'b'^3}{2h^2b^3}\{1+e\cos(\theta-\alpha)\}^{-3}\{1+e'\cos(\theta'-\alpha')\}^3$$
$$=-\tfrac{1}{2}bm^2\{1-3e\cos(\theta-\alpha)+3e'\cos(m\theta+\beta-\alpha')\};$$

unity, we have this third part of $\frac{1}{h^2u^2} =$

$$-\tfrac{3}{2}bm^2\{\cos[(2-2m)\theta-2\beta]-\tfrac{3}{2}e\cos[(1-2m)\theta-2\beta+\alpha]\}.$$

Hence the value of $\frac{P}{h^2u^2}$ is

$$b\{1-\tfrac{3}{4}k^2+\tfrac{3}{4}k^2\cos 2(\theta-\gamma)\}-\tfrac{1}{2}bm^2\{1-3e\cos(\theta-\alpha)$$
$$+3e'\cos(m\theta+\beta-\alpha')+3\cos[(2-2m)\theta-2\beta]$$
$$-\tfrac{9}{2}e\cos[(1-2m)\theta-2\beta+\alpha]\}.$$

PROP. *To form the differential equation for* u.

334. By Art. 325, equation (3),

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2}+u-\frac{\frac{P}{u^2}-\frac{T}{u^3}\frac{du}{d\theta}}{h^2+2\int\frac{Td\theta}{u^3}}=0.$$

By expanding the reciprocal of the denominator of the fractional part and neglecting the square of the disturbing force which is of the fourth order, and neglecting all other quantities of the fourth order, and observing that P contains a term μu^2, or by Art. 329 bh^2u^2, which is not small, we have

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u - \frac{P}{h^2u^2} + \frac{T}{h^2u^3}\frac{du}{d\theta} + \frac{2b}{h^2}\int\frac{Td\theta}{u^3} = 0.$$

By the last two Articles, we have

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + u - b\left(1 - \tfrac{3}{4}k^2 - \tfrac{1}{2}m^2\right) - \tfrac{3}{2}bm^2e\cos(\theta - \alpha)$$

$$- \tfrac{3}{4}bk^2\cos 2(\theta - \gamma) + 3bm^2\cos\left\{(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta\right\}$$

$$- \tfrac{15}{2}bm^2e\cos\left\{(1-2m)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha\right\} + \tfrac{3}{2}bm^2e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha') = 0.$$

Now this equation cannot be integrated, as it stands, according to the method mentioned in Art. 330; because the term $\frac{3}{2}bm^2e\cos(\theta - \alpha)$ would introduce an infinite coefficient into the expression of u since the coefficient of θ = unity. But this may be remedied by putting for $be\cos(\theta - \alpha)$ in the term $\frac{3}{2}bm^2e\cos(\theta - \alpha)$, which is of the third order, its first approximate value $u - b$: then the equation becomes

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + (1 - \tfrac{3}{2}m^2)(u - b) + \tfrac{1}{4}b(3k^2 + 2m^2) - \tfrac{3}{4}bk^2\cos 2(\theta - \gamma)$$

$$+ 3bm^2\cos\left\{(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta\right\} - \tfrac{15}{2}bm^2e\cos\left\{(1-2m)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha\right\}$$

$$+ \tfrac{3}{2}bm^2e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha') = 0.$$

Let $1 - \frac{3}{2}m^2 = c^2$; then if we neglect all coefficients of the second order, we have

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2} + c^2(u - b) = 0, \quad \therefore\ u = b\left\{1 + e\cos(c\theta - \alpha)\right\}.$$

Now although c differs from unity only by a quantity of the second order, yet $\cos(c\theta - \alpha)$ will differ very sensibly from $\cos(\theta - \alpha)$ after several revolutions of the Moon. Wherefore the peculiarity of the differential equation in u (mentioned in the last page) when we proceed to a second approximation teaches us, that the value of u in Art. 329 will cease to be a first approximate value after several revolutions of the Moon; the true first approximate value being $b\left\{1 + e\cos(c\theta - \alpha)\right\}$. We must therefore carefully retrace our steps, and replace θ by $c\theta$ in every place where θ is introduced in consequence of

its depending immediately on the first approximate value of ι This may very easily be accomplished by putting $\alpha + (1 - e)$ instead of α in every place where it occurs: for α enters th equations solely in consequence of its dependence on θ and u b the equation $u = h\{1 + \cos(\theta - \alpha)\}$.

The same will be the case with the value of s, as we sha shew in the next Proposition. We shall write down th corrected equations of u and s in Art. 336.

PROP. *To form the differential equation for* s.

335. By Art. 326, equation (4),

$$\frac{d^2 s}{d\theta^2} + s + \frac{\dfrac{S - Ps}{u^3} + \dfrac{T}{u^3}\dfrac{ds}{d\theta}}{h^2 + 2\displaystyle\int \frac{T d\theta}{u^3}} = 0.$$

Now $$\frac{S - Ps}{h^2 u^3} = \frac{3m's}{2u^4 h^2 r'^3}\{1 + \cos 2(\theta - \theta')\}$$

$$= \frac{3m'kb'^3}{2h^2 b^4}\sin(\theta - \gamma)\{1 + \cos[2(1 - m)\theta - 2\beta]\}$$

$$= \tfrac{3}{2}m'^2 k\{\sin(\theta - \gamma) - \tfrac{1}{2}\sin[(1 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta + \gamma]\},$$

retaining those terms of the third order which have the multiplier of θ nearly = 1.

Again, $$\frac{ds}{d\theta} = k\cos(\theta - \gamma):$$

$$\therefore \frac{T}{h^2 u^3}\frac{ds}{d\theta} = -\frac{3m'k}{2u^4 h^2 r'^3}\cos(\theta - \gamma)\sin 2(\theta - \theta')$$

$$= -\tfrac{3}{2}m'^2 k\cos(\theta - \gamma)\sin\{2(1 - m)\theta - 2\beta\}$$

$$= -\tfrac{3}{4}m'^2 k\sin\{(1 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta + \gamma\}.$$

Then the equation in s becomes

$$\frac{d^2 s}{d\theta^2} + s + \tfrac{3}{2}m'^2 k\{\sin(\theta - \gamma) - \sin[(1 - 2m)\theta - 2\beta + \gamma]\} = 0$$

This (as in the case of the equation in u) cannot be integrated by the method explained in Art. 330, because the term $\frac{1}{2}m^2k\sin(\theta-\gamma)$ would introduce an infinite coefficient into the value of s. But by putting for $k\sin(\theta-\gamma)$ its first approximate value s in the term $\frac{1}{2}m^2k\sin(\theta-\gamma)$, which is of the third order, this difficulty is overcome; the differential equation then becomes

$$\frac{d^2s}{d\theta^2}+(1+\tfrac{1}{2}m^2)s-\tfrac{1}{2}m^2k\sin\{(1-2m)\theta-2\beta+\gamma\}=0.$$

Let $1+\frac{1}{2}m^2=g^2$; then if we neglect the coefficient of the second order, we have

$$\frac{d^2s}{d\theta^2}+g^2s=0;\quad\therefore\ s=k\sin(g\theta-\gamma).$$

Hence (as in the last Article) although g differs from unity only by a quantity of the second order, yet $\sin(g\theta-\gamma)$ will differ sensibly from $\sin(\theta-\gamma)$ after several revolutions of the Moon. Therefore $k\sin(\theta-\gamma)$ ceases to be a first approximation of s after several revolutions of the Moon: and we must retrace our steps and put $g\theta$ for θ in every place where θ enters in consequence of its immediately depending on s. This may be done by putting $\gamma+(1-g)\theta$ for γ in every place where γ occurs.

PROP. *To integrate the differential equations in* u *and* s.

336. After replacing θ by $c\theta$ and $g\theta$ in all such places as θ enters the equations in consequence of its immediate dependence on u and s respectively, the equations of Arts. 334, 335, become

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\theta^2}+c^2(u-b)+\tfrac{1}{4}b(3k^2+2m^2)-\tfrac{3}{4}bk^2\cos2(g\theta-\gamma)$$
$$+3bm^2\cos\{(2-2m)\theta-2\beta\}-\tfrac{15}{2}bm^2e\cos\{(2-2m-c)\theta-2\beta+\alpha\}$$
$$+\tfrac{3}{2}bm^2e'\cos(m\theta+\beta-\alpha')=0;$$

and $$\frac{d^2s}{d\theta^2}+g^2s-\tfrac{3}{2}m^2k\sin\{(2-2m-g)\theta-2\beta+\gamma\}=0.$$

To integrate the first assume $u =$

$$b\{A + e\cos(c\theta - \alpha) + B\cos 2(g\theta - \gamma) + C\cos[(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta] + D\cos[(2-2m-c)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha] + E\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')\},$$

A, B, C, D, E being indeterminate coefficients: to find these substitute this value of u in the differential equation, and equate the coefficients to zero: then, remembering that $c^2 = 1 - \frac{3}{2}m^2$ and $g^2 = 1 + \frac{3}{2}m^2$, and neglecting small quantities of orders higher than the second, we have

$$c^2 A = c^2 - \tfrac{3}{4}k^2 - \tfrac{1}{2}m^2, \quad \therefore\ A = 1 - \tfrac{3}{4}k^2 - \tfrac{1}{2}m^2$$

$$(c^2 - 4g^2)B = \tfrac{3}{4}k^2, \quad \therefore\ B = -\tfrac{1}{4}k^2$$

$$\{c^2 - (2-2m)^2\}C = -3m^2, \quad \therefore\ C = m^2$$

$$\{c^2 - (2-2m-c)^2\}D = \tfrac{15}{2}m^2 e, \quad \therefore\ D = \tfrac{15}{8}me$$

$$(c^2 - m^2)E = -\tfrac{3}{2}m^2 e', \quad \therefore\ E = -\tfrac{3}{2}m^2 e'.$$

Hence $u = b\{1 - \frac{3}{4}k^2 - \frac{1}{2}m^2 + e\cos(c\theta - \alpha) - \frac{1}{4}k^2\cos 2(g\theta - \gamma) + m^2\cos[(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta] + \frac{15}{8}me\cos[(2-2m-c)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha] - \frac{3}{2}m^2 e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha)\}$.

337. Again, to integrate the equation in s assume

$$s = k\sin(g\theta - \gamma) + F\sin\{(2-2m-g)\theta - 2\beta + \gamma\},$$

F being an indeterminate coefficient. Substitute this in the differential equation, and we have

$$\{g^2 - (2-2m-g)^2\}F = \tfrac{3}{2}m^2 k, \quad \therefore\ F = \tfrac{3}{2}mk;$$

$$\therefore\ s = k\sin(g\theta - \gamma) + \tfrac{3}{2}mk\sin\{(2-2m-g)\theta - 2\beta + \gamma\}.$$

We shall now make use of these values of u and s to calculate the distance and longitude of the Moon.

PROP. *To find the distance of the Moon from the Earth.*

338. Let r be this distance; $\therefore\ r = \rho\sqrt{1 + s^2}$;

$\therefore\ \frac{1}{r} = u(1 - \frac{1}{2}s^2)$, neglecting quantities of the fourth order.

$$= u\left\{1 - \tfrac{1}{4}k^2 + \tfrac{1}{4}k^2\cos 2(g\theta - \gamma)\right\}, \text{ (Art. 337.)}$$

$$= b\left\{1 - k^2 - \tfrac{1}{2}m^2 + e\cos(c\theta - \alpha) + m^2\cos[(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta]\right.$$
$$+ \tfrac{15}{8}me\cos[(2-2m-c)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha]$$
$$\left. - \tfrac{3}{2}m^2e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')\right\}. \text{ (Art. 336.)}$$

$$= \mathrm{b}\left\{1 + e\cos(c\theta - \alpha) + m^2\cos[(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta]\right.$$
$$\left. + \tfrac{15}{8}me\cos[(2-2m-c)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha] - \tfrac{3}{2}m^2e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')\right\},$$
$$\text{where } \mathrm{b} = b(1 - k^2 - \tfrac{1}{2}m^2).$$

PROP. *To find the longitude of the Moon in terms of the time.*

339. By Art. 325. equation (2) we have

$$\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{1}{hu^2}\left\{1 + 2\int\frac{Td\theta}{h^2u^3}\right\}^{-\frac{1}{2}} = \frac{1}{hu^2}\left\{1 - \int\frac{Td\theta}{h^2u^3}\right\}.$$

Then substituting for $\int\frac{Td\theta}{h^2u^3}$ and u by Arts. 332, 336, and retaining those terms of the third order in which the coefficient of θ is small (Art. 330),

$$\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{1}{hb^2}\left\{1 + \tfrac{3}{4}k^2 + m^2 + \tfrac{3}{2}e^2 - 2e\cos(c\theta - \alpha)\right.$$
$$+ \tfrac{3}{2}e^2\cos 2(c\theta - \alpha) + \tfrac{1}{2}k^2\cos 2(g\theta - \gamma)$$
$$- \tfrac{11}{4}m^2\cos[(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta] - \tfrac{15}{4}me\cos[(2-2m-c)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha]$$
$$\left. + 3m^2e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha')\right\}.$$

Then putting $hb^2(1 - \frac{3}{2}k^2 - m^2 - \frac{3}{2}e^2) = n$, multiplying by n and integrating,

$$nt = \theta - 2e\sin(c\theta - \alpha) + \tfrac{3}{4}e^2\sin 2(c\theta - \alpha) + \tfrac{1}{4}k^2\sin 2(g\theta - \gamma)$$
$$- \tfrac{11}{8}m^2\sin\{(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta\} - \tfrac{15}{4}me\sin\{(2-2m-c)\theta - 2\beta + \alpha\}$$
$$+ 3me'\sin(m\theta + \beta - \alpha').$$

To obtain θ in terms of t we proceed as follows. Transpose all the terms but θ to one side of the equation. If all small

quantities are neglected $\theta = nt$; then for a *first approxima* we neglect small quantities of the second order, and put $\theta =$ in the small terms;

$$\therefore\ \theta = nt + 2e \sin (cnt - \alpha).$$

For a *second approximation* we put this value of θ in s terms and neglect small quantities of the third order;

$$\therefore\ \theta = nt + 2e \sin (cnt - \alpha) + \tfrac{5}{4} e^2 \sin 2 (cnt - \alpha) - \tfrac{1}{4} k^2 \sin 2 (gn$$

$$+ \tfrac{11}{8} m^2 \sin \{(2 - 2m) nt - 2\beta\} + \tfrac{15}{4} me \sin \{(2 - 2m - c) nt - 2\beta$$

$$- 3me' \sin (mnt + \beta - \alpha').$$

340. These expressions for the radius vector and the gitude of the Moon shew, that her distance from the E preserves nearly a constant value, fluctuating between small limits: and that her longitude varies nearly as the t of motion, departing from this law only by small quantities.

It will be an interesting enquiry to examine these form for the radius vector and the longitude, and see whether t will enable us to explain the various inequalities that obse tions have pointed out in the motion of the Moon. The p ciple of the superposition of small motions (Art. 288.) allow to examine the cause of each small term upon the supposi that all the other small terms do not exist.

PROP. *To interpret the physical meaning of the vari terms in the analytical expressions for the radius vector the longitude of the Moon.*

341. The first variable term of the reciprocal of radius vector, or $be \cos (c\theta - \alpha)$, may be thus interpreted.

If $c = 1$ this term would be the ordinary variation f circular motion when a body moves in an ellipse: but c not $= 1$. Let E be the focus and aEA' the axis major (fig. of the ellipse of which the equation is $\frac{1}{r} = b \{1 + e \cos \left(\theta - \frac{\alpha}{c}\right.$

then $\theta - \frac{\alpha}{c}$ is measured from the line EA': A' is a point in

Moon's orbit; let $A'M$ be her orbit; and let $\angle A'EM = \theta - \frac{a}{c}$: also let $\angle A'EM' = c \angle A'EM$, and let EM' cut the ellipse above mentioned in M': then

$$\frac{1}{EM} = b\{1 + e\cos c \angle A'EM\} = b\{1 + e\cos A'EM'\} = \frac{1}{EM'};$$

$$\therefore EM = EM'.$$

Draw EA equal to EA' making an angle equal to $\angle MEM'$ with EA': then through the variable points A and M an ellipse can always be drawn having its focus in E and equal in dimensions to the ellipse on aA'. Hence this inequality shews, that, if we neglect all the other terms, the Moon's motion may be represented by supposing that it moves in an ellipse, the perigee of which revolves about the Earth with an angular velocity $= (1-c)\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{3m^2}{4}\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ nearly. *Principia*, Lib. I. Prop. 66. Cor. 7.

The two terms of the longitude

$$2e\sin(cnt - a) + \tfrac{5}{4}e^2\sin 2(cnt - a)$$

correspond to the above term in the reciprocal of the radius vector; as may be seen by comparing the form of the terms with those in the expansion of $\theta - \varpi$ in Art. 277.

The second term in the reciprocal of the radius vector is

$$bm^2\cos\{(2-2m)\theta - 2\beta\}.$$

Now $(1-m)\theta - \beta = \theta - (m\theta + \beta) = \text{long}^{\text{e}}.$ of Moon $-$ long$^{\text{e}}.$ of Sun

= angular distance of Moon from the Sun.

Hence this inequality has its greatest positive value when the Moon is in syzygies, and its greatest negative value when the Moon is in quadratures. This agrees with the *Principia*, Prop. 66. Cor. 5. and also with Art. 303.

The term $\frac{11}{8}m^2\sin\{(2-2m)nt - 2\beta\}$ in the longitude corresponds to the above term: and is the inequality called the *Variation* discovered by Tycho Brahe (Art. 291, 305).

The third term in the reciprocal of the radius vector is

$$\tfrac{15}{8}bme\cos\{(2-2m-c)\theta - 2\beta + a\}.$$

Since $2 - 2m - c$ nearly equals unity it will be seen that this term is nearly analogous to the first term, though of much less importance because of the smallness of its coefficient. We shall take it in conjunction with that term (see *Airy's Tracts*, *Lunar Theory*), neglecting the motion of the perigee and other small quantities.

$$\text{Then } \frac{1}{r} = \mathrm{b}\left\{1 + e\cos(\theta - \alpha) + \tfrac{15}{8} me\cos(\theta - 2\beta + \alpha)\right\},$$

neglecting the other terms

$$= \mathrm{b}\left\{1 + e\cos(\theta - \alpha) + \tfrac{15}{8} me\cos\left[\theta - \alpha + 2(\alpha - \beta)\right]\right\}$$

$$= \mathrm{b}\left\{1 + \left[e + \tfrac{15}{8} me\cos 2(\alpha - \beta)\right]\cos(\theta - \alpha) - \tfrac{15}{8} me\sin 2(\alpha - \beta)\sin(\theta - \alpha)\right\}$$

$$= \mathrm{b}\left\{1 + e\left[1 + \tfrac{15}{8} m\cos 2(\alpha - \beta)\right]\cos\left[\theta - \alpha + \tfrac{15}{8} m\sin 2(\alpha - \beta)\right]\right\},$$

as will easily be seen upon expanding this latter expression and neglecting small quantities of the third order.

Hence the effect of this third term in the reciprocal of the Moon's distance is to increase the eccentricity of the elliptic orbit by $\frac{15}{8} me\cos 2(\alpha - \beta)$; and to diminish the longitude of the perigee by $\frac{15}{8} m\sin 2(\alpha - \beta)$.

If we suppose the Sun to be stationary during one revolution of the Moon, β = longitude of the Sun: therefore

$$\text{eccentricity} = e\left\{1 + \tfrac{15}{8} m\cos 2(\text{long. perigee} - \text{long. Sun})\right\}$$

$$\text{long. perigee (corrected)} = \alpha - \tfrac{15}{8} m\sin 2(\text{long. perigee} - \text{long. Sun}).$$

The term $\frac{15}{4} me\sin\left\{(2 - 2m - c)nt - 2\beta + \alpha\right\}$ in the longitude exactly corresponds with the term above. It is called the *Evection*, and was discovered by Ptolemy (Art. 290). When the perigee is in syzygies, then $\alpha - \beta = 0$ or π, and the eccentricity is increased by $\frac{15}{8} me$: and when the perigee is in quadratures the eccentricity is diminished by that quantity: *Principia*, Lib. 1. Prop. 66. Cor. 9. and Art. 314.

The last term in the reciprocal of the radius vector is

$$-\tfrac{3}{2}\,\mathrm{b}\,m^2e'\cos(m\theta + \beta - \alpha').$$

This is of the third order: but the corresponding term in the longitude, *viz.* $-3me'\sin(mnt+\beta-\alpha')$, is of the second order. This inequality in the longitude depends upon the Sun's mean anomaly: when the Sun is in perigee and apogee then $(mnt+\beta)-\alpha'=0$ and π, and this term vanishes: when the Sun is moving from perigee to apogee the term is negative, and positive as the Sun moves from apogee to perigee: hence the Moon is behind or before her mean place (in consequence of this inequality) according as the Sun is moving from perigee to apogee or from apogee to perigee. This is the ***Annual Equation***: (Art. 292, 300). Also see ***Principia***, Lib. I. Prop. 66. Cor. 6. and Lib. III. ***Scholium to Lunar Theory.***

There is another term $-\frac{1}{4}k^2\sin(2gnt-2\gamma)$ in the longitude. This depends upon the Moon's distance from the mean place of her node, and nearly equals the difference between her longitudes measured on the ecliptic and her orbit: hence it is called the ***Reduction.***

PROP. ***To explain the physical meaning of the terms in the analytical expression for the inclination of the Moon's orbit to the ecliptic.***

342. The first term is $k\sin(g\theta-\gamma)$.

Let N be the ascending node when $\theta-\frac{\gamma}{g}=0$, fig. 93. Take $\angle NEM'=\theta-\frac{\gamma}{g}$: and $\angle M'En=g\,.\,\angle M'EN$: also let M be the Moon, $\tan MEM'=s$: then n is the node, moving backwards. For in the right-angled triangle $MM'n$, we have

$$\sin M'n=\tan MM'\cot MnM',\quad \tan MnM'=\tan AB=k;$$

$$\therefore\ s=\tan MM'=k\sin g\ \angle M'EN=k\sin(g\theta-\gamma).$$

Hence the meaning of this term is that the node regresses with an angular velocity $=(g-1)\frac{d\theta}{dt}=\frac{3m^2}{4}\frac{d\theta}{dt}$.

The second term $\frac{3}{8}mk\sin\{(2-2m-g)\theta-2\beta+\gamma\}$ is best considered in connexion with the first, as we did the Evection: (Airy's *Tracts*).

Neglecting the motion of the Node

$$s = k\left\{\sin(\theta-\gamma)+\tfrac{3}{8}m\sin(\theta-\gamma+2\gamma-2\beta)\right\}$$

$$= k\left\{1+\tfrac{3}{8}m\cos 2(\gamma-\beta)\right\}\sin(\theta-\gamma)+\tfrac{3}{8}mk\sin 2(\gamma-\beta)\cos(\theta-\gamma)$$

$$= k\left\{1+\tfrac{3}{8}m\cos 2(\gamma-\beta)\right\}\sin\left\{\theta-\gamma+\tfrac{3}{8}m\sin 2(\gamma-\beta)\right\}.$$

Hence the effect of the second term in s is to increase the tangent of inclination of the lunar orbit by $\frac{3}{8}mk\cos 2(\gamma-\beta)$ or $\frac{3}{8}mk\cos 2$ (long. node − long. Sun), and to diminish the longitude of the node, calculated on the supposition of its uniformly regressing, by the angle $\frac{3}{8}m\sin 2(\gamma-\beta)$ or $\frac{3}{8}m\sin 2$ (long. node − long. Sun). *Principia*, Lib. III. Props. 33. and 35.

The inclination of the orbit is greatest when the node is in syzygies, and least when in quadratures: see Art. 321, and *Principia*, Lib. I. Prop. 66. Cor. 10.

343. The angle described by the perigee during a revolution of the Moon, as calculated in Art. 341, equals $\frac{3}{4}m^2.2\pi = \frac{3}{2}m^2\pi = 1^\circ.30'$ nearly: but its true value as proved by observation is about twice this. This apparent discrepancy between theory and observation shook Clairaut's belief in Newton's law of gravitation, and induced him to propose a new and more complicated law; pamphlets were already printed and about to be circulated by Clairaut, when he discovered that by extending the approximation the value of c is

$$1-\tfrac{3}{4}m^2-\tfrac{225}{32}m^3,$$

the third term of which, owing to the largeness of the coefficient, nearly equals the second term: and therefore reconciles the apparent difference.

344. The value of g is $1+\frac{3}{4}m^2-\frac{9}{32}m^3$, and therefore the ratio of the motion of the perigee to that of the node

$$= \left(\tfrac{3}{4}m^2+\tfrac{225}{32}m^3\right)\div\left(\tfrac{3}{4}m^2-\tfrac{9}{32}m^3\right) = \left(1+\tfrac{75}{8}m\right)\left(1+\tfrac{3}{4}m\right) = 2 \text{ nearly.}$$

This ratio is much larger than for one of Jupiter's satellites, because for that system m is very small indeed. *Principia*, Lib. [illegible] Prop. [illegible]

345. If m_1 be the ratio of the mean motion of Jupiter to that of one of his satellites; then the progression of the perijove and regression of the node during a revolution of the satellite each $= \frac{1}{2}\pi m_1^2$. Hence the regression of the node of this satellite *during a given time* equals the regression of the Moon's node $\times$ ($m_1^2 \div$ per. time of satellite) $\div$ ($m^2 \div$ per. time of Moon)

$$= \left(\frac{\text{mean motion of Jupiter}}{\text{mean motion of Earth}}\right)^2 \left(\frac{\text{mean motion of Moon}}{\text{mean motion of satellite}}\right) \text{regress}^n. \text{ of Moon's node.}$$

The same formula is true for the satellites of Saturn.

The progression of the perijove $= \frac{1}{2}\pi m_1^2$, and that of the Moon nearly $= 3\pi m^2$ (Art. 343): hence the progression of the perijove *during a given time*

$$= \frac{1}{6}\left(\frac{\text{mean motion of Jupiter}}{\text{mean motion of Earth}}\right)^2 \left(\frac{\text{mean motion of Moon}}{\text{mean motion of satellite}}\right) \text{regress}^n. \text{ of Moon's perigee.}$$

The same is true for the satellites of Saturn.

If the series for c were more converging (Art. 343), then the $\frac{1}{6}$ which multiplies this expression would be 1. *Principia*, Lib. III. Prop. 23. Newton omits the $\frac{1}{6}$ and says "diminui tamen debet motus augis sic inventus in ratione 9 ad 5 vel 2 ad 1 circiter, ob causam hîc exponere non vacat." So it seems that Newton had some way of accounting for this apparent anomaly.

The reader that wishes to enter more deeply into the calculation of the lunar inequalities must consult a memoir by Baron Damoiseau in the *Mémoires présentés par divers savans à l'Académie Royale des Sciences;* Tom. I: the *Lunar Theory* of Messrs. Plana and Carlini; and that of Mr Lubbock. In these works the approximation is carried so far as to enable us to deduce all the inequalities from theory alone.

346. In this Chapter we have given the inequalities of the first and second order: those of the third order are fifteen in number, these and some of the inequalities of the fourth and higher orders will be found in the *Méc. Cél.* Liv. VII. We shall mention some of the more interesting results.

Among the periodical inequalities of the Moon's motion in longitude, that which depends on the simple angular distance of the Sun and Moon is important on account of the great light it throws upon the Sun's parallax. The parallax is found

to be 8.56 seconds, being the same as several astronomers have found from the last transit but one of Venus over the Sun: *Méc. Cél.* Liv. VIII. § 24.

An inequality, which is not less important, is that which depends upon the longitude of the Moon's node: as it did not appear to depend on the theory of gravity, it was neglected by most astronomers; till a more thorough examination led Laplace to discover that its cause is the oblateness of the Earth: it gives an oblateness $= \frac{1}{305.05}$: *Méc. Cél.* Liv. VII. § 24.

There is also an inequality in the Moon's latitude, which Laplace discovered by theory: he shewed that it arises from the oblateness of the Earth's figure: it gives the oblateness $= \frac{1}{304.6}$: *Méc. Cél.* Liv. VII. § 25.

These two inequalities prove that the Moon's gravity to the Earth arises from the attraction of all the particles of the Earth, and not of the centre alone. (Art. 260.)

By examining the records of ancient eclipses of the Moon it was found that the Moon's mean motion was continually accelerated. The cause of this was long sought for in vain: till Laplace discovered by theory that it depends upon the variation (the secular variation, see Art. 377.) of the eccentricity of the Earth's orbit. All the observations which have been made during the last century and a half, have put beyond a doubt this result of analysis. When the acceleration of the Moon's mean motion was known, but not accounted for, conjectures were started as to its depending on the resistance of a medium, or the transmission of gravity; but analysis shews that neither of these causes produces any sensible alteration. *Méc. Cél.* Liv. VII. § 23.

PROP. *To prove that the centre of gravity of the Earth and Moon very nearly describes an ellipse about the Sun.*

347. Let $x' y' z'$ be the co-or. of the Earth from the Sun,

$x_1 y_1 z_1$ ..... Moon from the Sun,

$x\ y\ z$ ..... Moon from the Earth,

$\bar{x}\ \bar{y}\ \bar{z}$ ..... centre of grav. of Earth and Moon from the Sun,

m', E, M the masses of the Sun, Earth, and Moon.

r' r_1 the distances of the Earth and Moon from the Sun.

r the distance of the Moon from the Earth.

Then $x_1 - x' = x$, $y_1 - y' = y$, $z_1 - z' = z$.

The ratio of E to m' equals 1 : 354936 and may therefore be neglected.

The equations of motion of the Earth about the Sun, the Moon being the disturbing body, are

$$\left.\begin{aligned} \frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} + \frac{m'x'}{r'^3} + \frac{dR'}{dx'} &= 0 \\ \frac{d^2y'}{dt^2} + \frac{m'y'}{r'^3} + \frac{dR'}{dy'} &= 0 \\ \frac{d^2z'}{dt^2} + \frac{m'z'}{r'^3} + \frac{dR'}{dz'} &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1);$$

$$R' = \frac{M(x'x_1 + y'y_1 + z'z_1)}{\{x_1^2 + y_1^2 + z_1^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{M}{\sqrt{(x_1 - x')^2 + (y_1 - y')^2 + (z_1 - z')^2}}.$$

The equations of motion of the Moon about the Earth, the Sun being the disturbing body, are

$$\left.\begin{aligned} \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{(E+M)x}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dx} &= 0 \\ \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + \frac{(E+M)y}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dy} &= 0 \\ \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{(E+M)z}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dz} &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots (2);$$

$$R = -\frac{m'(x'x + y'y + z'z)}{\{x'^2 + y'^2 + z'^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{m'}{\sqrt{(x' + x)^2 + (y' + y)^2 + (z' + z)^2}};$$

since $-x'$, $-y'$, $=z'$ are the co-ordinates of the Sun from the Earth.

Now $\bar{x} = \dfrac{Ex' + Mx_1}{E+M}$, $= x' + \dfrac{Mx}{E+M}$, also $= x_1 - \dfrac{E}{E+}$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2\bar{x}}{dt^2} = \frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} + \frac{M}{E+M}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \text{ by equations (1) (2),}$$

$$= -\frac{m'x'}{r'^3} - \frac{Mx}{r^3} - \frac{dR'}{dx'} - \frac{M}{E+M}\frac{dR}{dx}$$

$$= -\frac{m'x'}{r'^3} - \frac{Mx}{r^3} - \frac{Mx_1}{r_1^3} + \frac{M(x_1-x')}{r^3} + \frac{M}{E+M}\left\{\frac{m'x'}{r'^3} - \frac{m'(x+}{r_1^3}\right.$$

$$= -\frac{E}{E+M}\frac{m'x'}{r'^3} - \frac{M}{E+M}\frac{m'x_1}{r_1^3}, \text{ neglecting } \frac{Mx_1}{r_1^3},$$

substituting for x' and x_1 in terms of x and $\bar{x}$,

$$= -\frac{m'}{r'^3}\frac{E}{E+M}\left(\bar{x} - \frac{Mx}{E+M}\right) - \frac{m'}{r_1^3}\frac{M}{E+M}\left(\bar{x} + \frac{Ex}{E+M}\right.$$

Now $\dfrac{1}{r^3} = \left\{\left(\bar{x} - \dfrac{Mx}{E+M}\right)^2 + \left(\bar{y} - \dfrac{My}{E+M}\right)^2 + \left(\bar{z} - \dfrac{Mz}{E+M}\right)\right.$

$$= \frac{1}{\bar{r}^3}\left\{1 + \frac{3M}{E+M}\frac{x\bar{x} + y\bar{y} + z\bar{z}}{\bar{r}^2} + \ldots\ldots\right\}.$$

Also $\dfrac{1}{r_1^3} = \left\{\left(\bar{x} + \dfrac{Ex}{E+M}\right)^2 + \left(\bar{y} + \dfrac{Ey}{E+M}\right)^2 + \left(\bar{z} + \dfrac{Ez}{E+M}\right)^2\right.$

$$= \frac{1}{\bar{r}^3}\left\{1 - \frac{3E}{E+M}\frac{x\bar{x} + y\bar{y} + z\bar{z}}{\bar{r}^2} + \ldots\ldots\right\};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2\bar{x}}{dt^2} = -\frac{m'\bar{x}}{\bar{r}^3}$$

$$-\frac{3EMm'}{(E+M)^2}\frac{x\bar{x} + y\bar{y} + z\bar{z}}{\bar{r}^5}\left\{\bar{x} - \frac{Mx}{E+M} - \bar{x} - \frac{Ex}{E+M}\right\} +$$

$$= -\frac{m'\bar{x}}{\bar{r}^3} + \frac{3EMm'}{\bar{r}^5}\left(x\bar{x} + y\bar{y} + z\bar{z}\right) +$$

$= -\frac{m'\bar{x}}{\bar{r}^3}$ + terms multiplied by the products and powers of $\frac{x}{r}$, $\frac{y}{r}$ and $\frac{z}{r}$ higher than the first.

Now $\frac{r}{r} = \frac{1}{400}$ nearly, and x, y, z cannot be greater than r: hence if we neglect small quantities of the fourth order, we have

$$\left.\begin{aligned} \frac{d^2\bar{x}}{dt^2} + \frac{m'\bar{x}}{\bar{r}^3} &= 0 \\ \text{and similarly } \frac{d^2\bar{y}}{dt^2} + \frac{m'\bar{y}}{\bar{r}^3} &= 0 \\ \frac{d^2\bar{z}}{dt^2} + \frac{m'\bar{z}}{\bar{r}^3} &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\}.$$

These equations shew that the path of the centre of gravity is a conic section in one plane the Sun being in the focus, (Arts. 241, 246, 252); it evidently must be an ellipse.

348. Mr Airy, Astronomer Royal, has proposed a method for determining the mass of the Moon, which depends upon this Proposition. Since the centre of gravity of the Earth and Moon describes an ellipse about the Sun, it follows that the Earth does not describe an ellipse about the Sun: this deviation from elliptic motion depends upon the mass of the Moon, and can easily be calculated by theory: and thence can be determined the error in the Sun's right ascension and declination on the supposition of the orbit of the Earth being an ellipse. Now when Venus is near inferior conjunction she is only a third of the distance of the Earth from the Sun, and consequently the errors in her right ascension and declination will be much greater than in the Sun's. Some observations for this end will be found in the *Memoirs of the Royal Astronomical Society*, Vol. V. p. 223.

CHAPTER VI.

PLANETARY THEORY.

349. We have already stated that the perturbations of the Moon are far larger than those of the planets, because the Sun, the mass of which is enormous and distance not proportionably great, is one of the disturbing bodies.

The perturbations of the planets, on the other hand, are very minute; and are not detected in short periods of time. These might, however, be calculated in the manner pursued in calculating the longitude, latitude, and radius vector of the Moon: but since the approximation is made by means of series which proceed by powers of the ratio of the distances of the disturbed and disturbing bodies from the central one, and since this fraction is much smaller in the Lunar Theory than in the Planetary Theory, it is necessary to retain many more terms in the calculation of the perturbations of the planets than in that of the perturbations of the Moon; and consequently the process is much slower in the former than in the latter calculation. For this reason R is expanded in powers of the eccentricities and inclinations of the orbits of the planets instead of the ratio of the distances of the disturbed and disturbing bodies: and the calculation then conducted as in the last Chapter.

350. But we shall make use of an entirely different mode of calculation. It is to Lagrange that we are indebted for the method we are about to lay before our readers of calculating the Planetary Perturbations.

If at any instant the disturbing forces were to cease acting, the planet would move in an exact ellipse; and this ellipse and the actual orbit of the planet would manifestly have a

common tangent, and the actual velocity of the planet and that calculated for the motion in this ellipse according to the elliptic theory would be the same. For this reason this ellipse is called the *ellipse of curvature* to the orbit at that instant: it is also denominated the *instantaneous ellipse* of the planet.*

* That this ellipse is an ellipse of curvature to the actual orbit, and that the contact is of the first order only may also be thus shewn.

The most general equations to an ellipse in space are the equations to a plane and to a surface of the second order. These contain *twelve* arbitrary constants. Now these constants are in our case, connected by the following relations.

1. The plane of the ellipse must pass through the Sun's centre. This gives *one* relation connecting the constants.

2. The focus of the ellipse must lie in the Sun's centre. This gives *three* more relations.

3. The co-ordinates of the planet at the instant under consideration must satisfy the equations of the ellipse.

This gives *two* more relations.

4. The velocities of the planet in the two orbits must be the same and their directions also at the instant under consideration: or, which comes to the same thing, the three velocities parallel to the axes of co-ordinates must be the same.

This gives *three* more relations.

5. The velocity in the ellipse must be equal to that which results from the theory of elliptic motion, viz: $2\mu\left(\frac{1}{r}-\frac{1}{2a}\right)$.

This gives *one* more relation.

These five considerations give *ten* relations among the constants of the equations to the ellipse. Hence these equations in our case involve only *two arbitrary constants*.

Now let xyz be the co-ordinates to the common point of the orbits: $x+\delta x$, $y+\delta y$, $z+\delta z$ the co-ordinates of a point near this in the path of the planet: and $x+\delta x'$, $y+\delta y'$, $z+\delta z'$ the co-ordinates of a point in the instantaneous orbit corresponding to the above: also let t become $t+\tau$:

$$\text{then } \delta x = \frac{dx}{dt}\tau + \frac{d^2x'}{dt^2}\frac{\tau^2}{2} + \dots$$

$$\delta x' = \frac{dx'}{dt}\tau + \frac{d^2x'}{dt^2}\frac{\tau^2}{2} + \dots$$

$$\therefore \delta x - \delta x' = \left(\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} - \frac{d^2x'}{dt^2}\right)\frac{\tau^2}{2} + \dots\dots \text{ by condition (4).}$$

$$\text{Similarly } \delta y - \delta y' = \left(\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - \frac{d^2y'}{dt^2}\right)\frac{\tau^2}{2} + \dots$$

$$\delta z - \delta z' = \left(\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} - \frac{d^2z'}{dt^2}\right)\frac{\tau^2}{2} + \dots$$

Hence the distance between the new points in the curves

$$\sqrt{(\delta x-\delta x')^2+(\delta y-\delta y')^2+(\delta z-\delta z')^2}$$

$$= \left\{\left(\frac{d^2x'}{dt^2}-\frac{d^2x'}{dt^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}-\frac{d^2y'}{dt^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}-\frac{d^2z'}{dt^2}\right)^2\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}\frac{\tau^2}{2} + \&c. \dots$$

In

From what precedes it is evident that the motion of the planet may be represented by supposing it to move in an ellipse of which the elements are continually and slowly changing. If we know the elements of the instantaneous ellipse at any proposed instant, we have nothing to do but to calculate the position of the planet in this ellipse by the ordinary formulæ in Chap. III.

351. Since the perturbations of the planetary motions are very small, it follows from the Principle of the superposition of small motions, that the perturbations will be the sum of the perturbations produced by the several disturbing bodies considered separately: (Art. 288). We shall therefore in the following calculations consider only one disturbing body.

PROP. *To explain the process of integrating the equations of motion of the disturbed planet.*

352. The equations of motion of a disturbed planet are by Art. 323.

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu x}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dx} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu y}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dy} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu z}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dz} = 0,$$

where $R = \dfrac{m'(xx' + yy' + zz')}{\{x'^2 + y'^2 + z'^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \dfrac{m'}{\sqrt{(x-x')^2 + (y-y')^2 + (z-z')^2}}$

μ = mass of Sun + mass of disturbed planet

m' = mass of the disturbing planet.

In order to make the ellipse have a contact nearer than that of the first order [which it has by condition (4)] we must make the first term of this expression $= 0$: but this we cannot do since it requires *three* conditions to be satisfied and we have only *two disposeable constants*.

Hence the ellipse described in the text is an ellipse of contact to the real orbit, the contact being of the first order.

We shall first integrate these equations of motion omitting the disturbing forces: by this process we shall obtain six integrals of the first order, containing six arbitrary constants. These six constants must be determined in terms of the six elements of the planet's orbit (Art. 270.); the inclination, the longitude of the node, the mean distance, the eccentricity, the longitude of the perihelion, and the epoch. By eliminating the three quantities $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$ from these six integrals we have the three final integrals of the equations of motion.

We shall then proceed to the integration of the equations of motion taking into consideration the disturbing forces.

The six integrals of the first order obtained on tbe supposition that there were no disturbing forces, contain the six arbitrary constants and also the quantities x, y, z, $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$. Now since the actual orbit and the instantaneous orbit touch each other in the point (xyz), and since the velocities in these two orbits at that point are the same (Art. 350), it follows that x, y, z, $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$ are the same in the actual orbit and in the instantaneous orbit. Consequently we shall consider these six integrals to be still the integrals of the equations of motion when the disturbing forces are not neglected; with this difference, that now we must consider the six constants as variable quantities. To determine their values we must differentiate the six integrals with respect to t and eliminate $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ by the equations of motion. In this way six equations will be obtained for calculating the six variable quantities.

We shall then use the equations which connect the elements of the instantaneous orbit with these six quantities (which are the six arbitrary constants when the disturbing forces are neglected), and in this manner obtain equations for calculating the variations which the elements of the instantaneous orbit undergo: so that if at any epoch these elements are known, they may be calculated for any other epoch. Then these

elements being put in the series of Arts. 278, 280, we know the position of the planet at any given time.

We proceed now to the investigation of the several Propositions necessary for these results.

PROP. *To integrate the equations of motion of an undisturbed planet.*

353. These equations are

$$\left.\begin{aligned} \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu x}{r^3} &= 0 \\ \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu y}{r^3} &= 0 \\ \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu z}{r^3} &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

where $\mu = M + m$ = mass of Sun + mass of planet.

Multiply the first by y and the second by x and take their difference; then

$$x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} = \text{const.} = h$$

$$\text{in like manner}\quad z\frac{dx}{dt} - x\frac{dz}{dt} = h_1$$

$$y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt} = h_2 \qquad \left.\begin{aligned} &\\ &\\ &\end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

These are three of the first integrals and they contain the three arbitrary constants h, h_1, h_2.

Again, multiply the equations of motion by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$, $2\frac{dy}{dt}$, $2\frac{dz}{dt}$ respectively, add them, and integrate: then

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} - \frac{2\mu}{r} = \text{const.} = c \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3).$$

This is a fourth integral of the first order and contains the arbitrary constant c.

Again, multiply the first and second of the equations of motion by the second and third of (2) respectively: then by subtraction we have

$$h_1\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}-h_2\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}=-\frac{\mu x}{r^3}\left(x\frac{dx}{dt}-x\frac{dx}{dt}\right)+\frac{\mu y}{r^3}\left(y\frac{dx}{dt}-x\frac{dy}{dt}\right)$$

$$=\frac{\mu}{r^3}(x^2+y^2+z^2)\frac{dx}{dt}-\frac{\mu x}{r^3}\left(x\frac{dx}{dt}+y\frac{dy}{dt}+z\frac{dz}{dt}\right)$$

$$=\frac{\mu}{r}\frac{dx}{dt}-\frac{\mu x}{r^2}\frac{dr}{dt}=\mu\frac{d\left(\frac{x}{r}\right)}{dt};$$

$$\therefore\ h_1\frac{dx}{dt}-h_2\frac{dy}{dt}=\frac{\mu x}{r}+f$$

$$\text{so also}\quad h_2\frac{dz}{dt}-h\frac{dx}{dt}=\frac{\mu y}{r}+f_1 \qquad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (4).$$

$$h\frac{dy}{dt}-h_1\frac{dz}{dt}=\frac{\mu x}{r}+f_2$$

Thus we have three more integrals of the first order, containing the arbitrary constants f, f_1, f_2.

It would appear, then, that we have seven, and not only six, integrals of the first order: but we can shew that any one of these seven is a consequence of the other six: and the constants h, h_1, h_2, f, f_1, f_2 are connected by an equation.

For by the last of equations (2) and (4) we have

$$h_2f_2=hh_2\frac{dy}{dt}-h_1h_2\frac{dz}{dt}-\frac{\mu x}{r}h_2$$

$$=h\left(h_2\frac{dy}{dt}-h_1\frac{dx}{dt}\right)+h_1\left(h\frac{dx}{dt}-h_2\frac{dz}{dt}\right)-\frac{\mu x}{r}h_2$$

$$=-hf-h_1f_1-\frac{\mu}{r}(xh_2+yh_1+zh) \text{ by equations (4)}$$

$$=-hf-h_1f_1 \text{ by equations (2)}$$

tegrals functions of xyz without t: but this evidently cannot be the case. It follows, then, that the seven integrals must be equivalent to only five independent integrals: and the constants h, h_1, h_2, c, f, f_1, f_2 are connected by another relation. This relation is found as follows. Add the squares of equations (4);

$$\therefore f^2 + f_1^2 + f_2^2 + \frac{2\mu}{r}(fz + f_1 y + f_2 x) + \mu^2$$

$$= (h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2)\left\{\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2}\right\} - \left\{h\frac{dz}{dt} + h_1\frac{dy}{dt} + h_2\frac{dx}{dt}\right\}^2$$

$$= (h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2)\left(\frac{2\mu}{r} + c\right) \text{ by equations (3) and (2).}$$

But by equations (1) $fz + f_1 y + f_2 x + \mu r$

$$= h\left(x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt}\right) + h_1\left(z\frac{dx}{dt} - x\frac{dz}{dt}\right) + h_2\left(y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt}\right)$$

$$= h^2 + h_1^2 + h^2;$$

$$\therefore f^2 + f_1^2 + f_2^2 = \mu^2 + (h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2)c \ldots\ldots (6),$$

this is the relation sought for.

We are unable to obtain a sixth integral of the first order by direct integration: and must therefore integrate the integrals already obtained to get a relation involving the time: this will be one of the final integrals.

To obtain the other two final integrals we must eliminate the differential coefficients $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$ from the integrals of the first order: to effect this multiply the equations (2) respectively by z, y, x and add

$$\therefore\ hz + h_1 y + h_2 x = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (7),$$

this proves that the undisturbed planet moves in a plane.

Again, multiply equations (4) by z, y, x respectively and add: then

$$fz + f_1 y + f_2 x + \mu\sqrt{x^2+y^2+z^2}$$

$$= h\left(x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt}\right) + h_1\left(z\frac{dx}{dt} - x\frac{dz}{dt}\right) + h_2\left(y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt}\right)$$

$$= h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2 \text{ by (2)} \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (8).$$

This is the equation to a surface of revolution of the second order, the origin of co-ordinates being in the focus: the equation to the plane generated by the directrix of the generating conic section being

$$fz' + f_1 y' + f_2 x' = h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2.$$

For the perpendicular from any point (xyz) of the surface on this plane

$$= \frac{fz + f_1 y + f_2 x - h^2 - h_1^2 - h_2^2}{\sqrt{f^2 + f_1^2 + f_2^2}} = -\frac{\mu r}{\sqrt{f^2 + f_1^2 + f_2^2}}.$$

Now r is the same for all points equally distant from the origin. Hence the surface must be one of revolution about an axis perpendicular to the plane of which the equation is

$$fz' + f_1 y' + f_2 x' = h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2.$$

Also the ratio of the perpendicular to the distance r is constant: and this is a property peculiar to the focus of conic sections. Hence the surface is a surface of the second order from the focus: and by combining this with the equation (7) we learn, that the planet moves in a conic section the Sun being in the focus: (Art. 252).

To obtain the third integral add the squares of equations (2): then

$$(x^2+y^2+z^2)\left\{\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2}\right\} - \left\{x\frac{dx}{dt} + y\frac{dy}{dt} + z\frac{dz}{dt}\right\}^2 = h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2,$$

$$\text{and } r^2 = x^2 + y^2 + z^2;$$

$$\therefore \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} - \frac{dr^2}{dt^2} = \frac{h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2}{r^2} \ldots\ldots (9).$$

Let θ be the longitude of the planet at the time t measured on the plane of its orbit: then

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} = r^2 \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dr^2}{dt^2};$$

$$\therefore \frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{r^2}{\sqrt{h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2}}.$$

In this we must substitute for r in terms of θ by means of the two other integrals: and in integrating we shall introduce the sixth independent arbitrary constant: this constant is called the *epoch*, since it depends upon the epoch of the planet's perihelion passage.

Having integrated the equations of motion for an undisturbed planet we proceed to the following Proposition.

PROP. *To calculate the elements of the orbit in terms of the arbitrary constants introduced by the integration.*

354. Let i be the inclination of the plane of the orbit to the plane of the ecliptic; the ecliptic we shall take to be the plane of xy,

Ω the longitude of the node, the axis of x being drawn through the first point of aries,

ϖ the longitude of the perihelion projected on the ecliptic,

$2a$ the axis-major of the orbit,

e the eccentricity,

ϵ the epoch

The equation to the plane of the orbit is $zh + yh_1 + xh_2 = 0$:

$$\therefore \cos i = \frac{h}{\sqrt{h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2}}, \text{ and } \tan i = \frac{\sqrt{h_1^2 + h_2^2}}{h}.$$

By putting $z = 0$ in the equation to the plane of the orbit, we have $h_1 y + h_2 x = 0$, the equation to the line of nodes:

$$\therefore \tan \Omega = -\frac{h_2}{h_1}.$$

At the perihelion r is a minimum; $\therefore x\frac{dx}{dt} + y\frac{dy}{dt} + z\frac{dz}{dt} = 0$,

also $\tan \varpi = \frac{y}{x}$ at that point:

we must therefore find the value of this ratio at the perihelion: for this end we have

$$\frac{\mu y}{r} = h_2 \frac{dz}{dt} - h\frac{dz}{dt} - f_1 \text{ by (4) of last Article}$$

$$= y\left(\frac{dz^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dx^2}{dt^2}\right) - \frac{dy}{dt}\left(z\frac{dz}{dt} + x\frac{dx}{dt}\right) - f_1 \text{ by (2)}$$

$$= y\left(\frac{dz^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dx^2}{dt^2}\right) - f_1 \text{ at the perihelion;}$$

so also $\frac{\mu x}{r} = x\left(\frac{dz^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dx^2}{dt^2}\right) - f_2$ at the perihelion;

$$\therefore \tan \varpi = \frac{y}{x} \text{ at perihelion} = \frac{f_1}{f_2}.$$

At the extremities of the axis-major $\frac{dr}{dt} = 0$, and therefore equations (3) and (9) of last Article give

$$\frac{h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2}{r^2} = \frac{2\mu}{r} + c;$$

$$\therefore r = -\frac{\mu}{c} \pm \frac{\sqrt{\mu^2 + (h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2)c}}{c};$$

$$\therefore a = -\frac{\mu}{c},$$

$$\text{and } e = \frac{\sqrt{\mu^2 + (h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2)c}}{\mu} = \frac{\sqrt{f^2 + f_1^2 + f_2^2}}{\mu}$$

by equation (6) of last Article.

Lastly to find the *epoch* (ϵ) we must integrate the equation $\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{r^2}{\sqrt{h^2 + h_1^2 + h_2^2}}$ after having substituted for r.

Having thus obtained the elements of the undisturbed orbit in terms of the constants we will proceed to shew the importance of these expressions in determining the perturbations of a disturbed planet.

PROP. *To integrate the equations of motion of a disturbed planet.*

355. The equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu x}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dx} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu y}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dy} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} + \frac{\mu z}{r^3} + \frac{dR}{dz} = 0.$$

In conformity with the method of the variation of parameters invented by Lagrange, and explained in Art. 352, we shall assume that the following integrals (taken from Art. 353.) satisfy these equations, $h\, h_1\, h_2\, c\, f\, f_1, f_2$ being *variables*,

$$h = x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt},$$

$$h_1 = z\frac{dx}{dt} - x\frac{dz}{dt},$$

$$h_2 = y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt},$$

$$c - \frac{2\mu}{r} = \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2},$$

$$f + \frac{\mu z}{r} = h_1\frac{dx}{dt} - h_2\frac{dy}{dt}.$$

$$f_1 + \frac{\mu y}{r} = h_2 \frac{dz}{dt} - h \frac{dx}{dt},$$

$$f_2 + \frac{\mu x}{r} = h \frac{dy}{dt} - h_1 \frac{dz}{dt},$$

and we now proceed to shew how to determine the values of the variables $h h_1 h_2 c f f_1 f_2$ in order that this may be the case.

Differentiate all these equations with respect to t and eliminate $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ by means of the equations of motion:

we have $$\frac{dh}{dt} = y \frac{dR}{dx} - x \frac{dR}{dy},$$

$$\frac{dh_1}{dt} = x \frac{dR}{dz} - z \frac{dR}{dx},$$

$$\frac{dh_2}{dt} = z \frac{dR}{dy} - y \frac{dR}{dz},$$

$$\frac{dc}{dt} = -2\left\{\frac{dR}{dx}\frac{dx}{dt} + \frac{dR}{dy}\frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{dR}{dz}\frac{dz}{dt}\right\} = -2\frac{d(R)}{dt},$$

the brackets surrounding R implying that the *total* differential coefficient with respect to t is to be taken, *but this only in so far as* R *is a function of* x y z*.

$$\frac{df}{dt} = \frac{dh_1}{dt}\frac{dx}{dt} - \frac{dh_2}{dt}\frac{dy}{dt} - h_1\frac{dR}{dx} + h_2\frac{dR}{dy},$$

$$\frac{df_1}{dt} = \frac{dh_2}{dt}\frac{dz}{dt} - \frac{dh}{dt}\frac{dx}{dt} - h_2\frac{dR}{dz} + h\frac{dR}{dx},$$

$$\frac{df_2}{dt} = \frac{dh}{dt}\frac{dy}{dt} - \frac{dh_1}{dt}\frac{dz}{dt} - h\frac{dR}{dy} + h_1\frac{dR}{dz}.$$

* R is also a function of t in consequence of being a function of $x'y'z'$, but the bracket is meant to imply that R is to be differentiated only in so far as it is a function of xyz.

The difference between all angles and distances measured on the plane of the orbit and their projections on the ecliptic varies as the versine of the orbit's inclination, and therefore as the square of the angle of inclination nearly. This shews that in calculating the perturbations of the mean distance, the eccentricity, the longitude of the perihelion, and the epoch, we may neglect i and therefore $h_1^2+h_2^2$ and consequently h_1 and h_2, and also f, Art. 353, equation (5): hence the equations of last Article become

$$\frac{dh}{dt} = y\frac{dR}{dx} - x\frac{dR}{dy},$$

$$\frac{dc}{dt} = -2\frac{d(R)}{dt},$$

$$\frac{df_1}{dt} = \frac{dx}{dt}\left\{x\frac{dR}{dy} - y\frac{dR}{dx}\right\} + h\frac{dR}{dx},$$

$$\frac{df_2}{dt} = -\frac{dy}{dt}\left\{x\frac{dR}{dy} - y\frac{dR}{dx}\right\} - h\frac{dR}{dy}.$$

357. When we have expanded the function R then we must calculate the terms of these equations which involve the partial differential coefficients of R. After this we shall obtain the variations of the elements of the instantaneous orbit of the planet in terms of these variations of the arbitrary quantities $h\,h_1h_2\,c\,f\,f_1f_2$. Then by integrating these we shall know the

elements of the instantaneous orbit. Let $a_,, e_,, \varpi_,, \epsilon_,, i_,, \Omega_,$ be these elements at the time t; the subscript accents being used to denote that *the elements are variable*. Then by substituting these in

$$\frac{r}{a_,} = 1 + \frac{e_,^2}{2} - e_, \cos(n_,t + \epsilon_, - \varpi_,) - \frac{e_,^2}{2}\cos 2(n_,t + \epsilon_, - \varpi_,) - \ldots.$$

$$\text{and } \theta = n_,t + \epsilon_, + \left(2e_, - \frac{e_,^3}{4}\right)\sin(n_,t + \epsilon_, - \varpi_,)$$

$$+ \frac{5e_,^2}{4}\sin 2(n_,t + \epsilon_, - \varpi_,) + \ldots\ldots$$

we know the position of the planet in its orbit; the position of the orbit being known by $i_,$ and $\Omega_,$.

At present, however, we shall proceed to the transformation of R to polar co-ordinates.

PROP. *To determine* $\frac{dR}{dx}, \frac{dR}{dy}$ *in terms of* $\frac{dR}{d\theta}, \frac{dR}{dr}$.

358. In calculating these disturbing forces we may suppose r and θ the same as their projections on the plane of xy: for otherwise we should be retaining quantities varying as the product of the square of the inclination and disturbing force;

$$\therefore\ x = r\cos\theta,\quad y = r\sin\theta,\quad r^2 = x^2 + y^2,\quad \tan\theta = \frac{y}{x};$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{dR}{dx} = \frac{dR}{dr}\frac{dr}{dx} + \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{dx} = \frac{dR}{dr}\cos\theta - \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{\sin\theta}{r},$$

$$\frac{dR}{dy} = \frac{dR}{dr}\frac{dr}{dy} + \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{dy} = \frac{dR}{dr}\sin\theta + \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{\cos\theta}{r}.$$

359. But since R is to be expanded in terms of t and the elements we must still further transform these partial differential coefficients.

Upon examining the expansions of r and θ we see that $\epsilon_,$ and $\varpi_,$ are remarkably connected with $n_,t$: r is a function of $n_,t + \epsilon_, - \varpi_,$, and θ equals $n_,t + \epsilon_,$ + a function of $n_,t + \epsilon_, - \varpi_,$; and $\epsilon_,$ and $\varpi_,$ occur in no other way in r and θ

and consequently in R. Hence by an analytical artifice we may consider R as a function of $\epsilon_{,}$ and $\varpi_{,}$ in consequence of its being a function of r and θ, and may change the variables from r and θ to $\epsilon_{,}$ and $\varpi_{,}$: this will be better understood by reading the next Proposition.

PROP. *To obtain* $\frac{\mathrm{d}(\mathrm{R})}{\mathrm{dt}}, \frac{\mathrm{dR}}{\mathrm{d}\theta}, \frac{\mathrm{dR}}{\mathrm{dr}}$ *in terms of the partial differential coefficients of* R *with respect to the elements.*

360. In $\frac{d(R)}{dt}$ R is supposed to be differentiated only inasmuch as it depends on the co-ordinates of the disturbed planet; viz. r and θ. Now by examining the expansions of r and θ we see that wherever t occurs $\epsilon_{,}$ is connected with it in the expression $n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,}$, and $\epsilon_{,}$ occurs in no other place in r and θ: hence

$$\frac{d(R)}{dt} = n_{,}\frac{dR}{d(n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,})} = n_{,}\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}.$$

Again, to obtain $\frac{dR}{d\theta}$ and $\frac{dR}{dr}$ we observe, as before, that R is a function of $\epsilon_{,}$ and $\varpi_{,}$ solely because it is a function of r and θ:

$$\therefore \frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{d\epsilon_{,}} + \frac{dR}{dr}\frac{dr}{d\epsilon_{,}},$$

$$\frac{dR}{d\varpi_{,}} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{d\varpi_{,}} + \frac{dR}{dr}\frac{dr}{d\varpi_{,}}.$$

Now by referring to the expansions of r and θ we have

$$\frac{d\theta}{d\epsilon_{,}} + \frac{d\theta}{d\varpi_{,}} = 1 \text{ and } \frac{dr}{d\epsilon_{,}} - \frac{dr}{d\varpi_{,}} = 0;$$

in consequence of these the above equations give by addition

$$\frac{dR}{d\theta} = \frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}} + \frac{dR}{d\varpi_{,}}.$$

361. Again, to obtain $\frac{dR}{dr}$ we observe that r is a function of ϵ_1 solely because it is a function of θ; for ϵ_1 does not occur in the equation $\frac{1}{r} = \frac{1 + e_1 \cos(\theta - \varpi_1)}{a_1(1 - e_1^2)}$;

$$\therefore \frac{dr}{d\epsilon_1} = \frac{dr}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{d\epsilon_1} = \frac{r^2 e_1 \sin(\theta - \varpi_1)}{a_1(1 - e_1^2)}\frac{d\theta}{d\epsilon_1}$$

and $$\frac{d\theta}{d\epsilon_1} = \frac{d\theta}{d(n_1 t + \epsilon_1)} = \frac{1}{n_1}\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{\sqrt{a_1 \mu (1 - e_1^2)}}{n_1 r^2} \text{ (Art 273.)}$$

$$= \frac{a_1^2\sqrt{1 - e_1^2}}{r^2}.$$

Substitute these in the formula

$$\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_1} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{d\epsilon_1} + \frac{dR}{dr}\frac{dr}{d\epsilon_1}$$

transposing and dividing by $\frac{dr}{d\epsilon_1}$ we have

$$\frac{dR}{dr} = \frac{\sqrt{1 - e_1^2}}{a_1 e_1 \sin(\theta - \varpi_1)}\left\{\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_1} - \frac{a_1^2\sqrt{1 - e_1^2}}{r^2}\frac{dR}{d\theta}\right\}.$$

We shall find the following Proposition of use hereafter in reducing our formulæ.

PROP. *To obtain* $\frac{dR}{de_1}$ *in terms of* $\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_1}$ *and* $\frac{dR}{d\varpi_1}$.

362. Since R is a function of e_1 solely because it is a function of r and θ;

$$\therefore \frac{dR}{de_1} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{de_1} + \frac{dR}{dr}\frac{dr}{de_1}.$$

We must therefore calculate $\frac{d\theta}{de_1}$ and $\frac{dr}{de_1}$.

Now $\theta = n_1 t + \epsilon_1 + (2e_1 - \frac{1}{4}e_1^3)\sin(n_1 t + \epsilon_1 - \varpi_1) + \ldots$

and $r = a_1\{1 + \frac{1}{2}e_1^2 - e_1 \cos(n_1 t + \epsilon_1 - \varpi_1) - \ldots\ldots\}$,

functions from which they were developed, viz: (Arts. 273, 279.)

$$\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{(1-e_{,}^{2})^{\frac{3}{2}}}{n_{,}\{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}^{2}}, \quad n_{,} = \sqrt{\frac{\mu}{a_{,}^{3}}}$$

$$\text{and } r = \frac{a_{,}(1-e_{,}^{2})}{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})},$$

θ is calculated by the first, and substituted in the value of r, and then r is expanded.

By integrating the first we shall have $t = \phi(\theta, e_{,})$;

$$\therefore dt = \frac{dt}{d\theta}d\theta + \frac{dt}{de_{,}}de_{,};$$

transposing and multiplying by $\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ we have

$$d\theta = \frac{d\theta}{dt}dt - \frac{dt}{de_{,}}\frac{d\theta}{dt}de_{,};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d\theta}{de_{,}} = -\frac{dt}{de_{,}}\frac{d\theta}{dt};$$

$$\text{Now } t = \frac{1}{n_{,}}\int \frac{(1-e_{,}^{2})^{\frac{3}{2}}d\theta}{\{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}^{2}};$$

$$\therefore \frac{dt}{de_{,}} = -\frac{1}{n_{,}}\int \frac{\sqrt{1-e_{,}^{2}}\{3e_{,}+(2+e_{,}^{2})\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}d\theta}{\{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}^{3}};$$

$$= -\frac{\sqrt{1-e_{,}^{2}}}{n_{,}}\left\{\frac{\sin(\theta-\varpi_{,})}{\{1-e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}^{2}} + \frac{\sin(\theta-\varpi_{,})}{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})}\right\}.$$ *

* This integral is obtained in the following manner.

Assume $\int \frac{3e_{,}+(2+e_{,}^{2})\cos\theta}{(1+e_{,}\cos\theta)^{3}}d\theta = \frac{L\sin\theta}{(1+e_{,}\cos\theta)^{2}} + \frac{B\sin\theta}{1+e_{,}\cos\theta} + \int \frac{C\,d\theta}{1+e_{,}\cos\theta}$;

$e_{,}$ is evidently the factor of the integral

$$\text{Also } \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}}{(1-e_{,}^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}}\{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}^2;$$

$$\therefore \frac{d\theta}{de_{,}} = \frac{\sin(\theta-\varpi_{,})}{1-e_{,}^2}\{2+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}.$$

Also, since the series for r is obtained by developing the function $\frac{a_{,}(1-e_{,}^2)}{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})}$ after substituting for θ,

$$\therefore \frac{dr}{de_{,}} = \left(\frac{dr}{de_{,}}\right) + \frac{dr}{d\theta}\frac{d\theta}{de_{,}}$$

$$= \frac{a_{,}\{-2e_{,}-(1+e_{,}^2)\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}}{\{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}^2} + \frac{a_{,}e_{,}\sin^2(\theta-\varpi_{,})\{2+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}}{\{1+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}^2}$$

$$= -a_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,});$$

$$\therefore \frac{dR}{de_{,}} = \frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{\sin(\theta-\varpi_{,})\{2+e_{,}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})\}}{1-e_{,}^2} - a_{,}\frac{dR}{dr}\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,}).$$

We now proceed to obtain the formulæ for calculating the variations of the elements.

PROP. *To calculate the variations of the mean distance, the eccentricity, and the longitude of the perihelion of the instantaneous orbit of the disturbed planet.*

363. Let $a_{,}$, $e_{,}$, $\varpi_{,}$ be these elements; the subscript accents indicating that the elements are functions of t. Then by Art. 354

Differentiating and multiplying by $(1+e\cos x)^3$

$$3e+(2+e^2)\cos x = A\{\cos x(1+e\cos x)+2e\sin^2 x\}+B(1+e\cos x)(\cos x+e) + C(1+e\cos x)^2.$$

Let $x=0$; $3e+(2+e^2)=A(1+e)+(B+C)(1+e)^2$

or $2+e=A+(B+C)(1+e)$.....(1)

$x=\frac{\pi}{2}$; $3e=2eA+eB+C$ .....(2)

$x=\pi$; $3e-2-e^2=-A(1-e)-(B-C)(1-e)^2$

or $2-e=A+(B-C)(1-e)$.....(3).

From these $A=1$, $B=1$, $C=0$.

Hence the integral in the text.

1. The mean distance $a_{,} = -\frac{\mu}{c}$; $\therefore \frac{1}{a_{,}} = -\frac{c}{\mu}$;

$$\therefore \frac{da_{,}}{dt} = \frac{a_{,}^2}{\mu}\frac{dc}{dt} = -\frac{2a_{,}^2}{\mu}\frac{d(R)}{dt} \text{ by Art. 356.}$$

$$= -\frac{2n_{,}a_{,}^2}{\mu}\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}} \text{ by Art. 360.}$$

2. The eccentricity

$$e_{,} = \frac{1}{\mu}\sqrt{f^2 + f_1^2 + f_2^2} = \frac{1}{\mu}\sqrt{f_1^2 + f_2^2} \text{ (Art. 356);}$$

$$\therefore \frac{de_{,}}{dt} = \frac{1}{\mu\sqrt{f_1^2+f_2^2}}\left\{f_1\frac{df_1}{dt} + f_2\frac{df_2}{dt}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{1}{\mu}\left\{\sin\varpi_{,}\frac{df_1}{dt} + \cos\varpi_{,}\frac{df_2}{dt}\right\}; \quad \because \tan\varpi_{,} = \frac{f_1}{f_2}.$$

But by Arts. 356, 358,

$$\frac{df_1}{dt} = \left\{\frac{dr}{dt}\cos\theta - r\sin\theta\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right\}\frac{dR}{d\theta} - h\left\{\frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{\sin\theta}{r} - \frac{dR}{dr}\cos\theta\right\},$$

$$\left\{\text{but in small terms } h = \sqrt{a_{,}\mu(1-e_{,}^2)}, \text{ and } = r^2\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right\}$$

$$= \sqrt{a_{,}\mu(1-e_{,}^2)}\left\{\left(\frac{\cos\theta}{r^2}\frac{dr}{d\theta} - \frac{2\sin\theta}{r}\right)\frac{dR}{d\theta} + \cos\theta\frac{dR}{dr}\right\}$$

$$\frac{df_2}{dt} = -\left\{\frac{dr}{dt}\sin\theta + r\cos\theta\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right\}\frac{dR}{d\theta} - h\left\{\frac{dR}{d\theta}\frac{\cos\theta}{r} + \frac{dR}{dr}\sin\theta\right\}$$

$$= -\sqrt{a_{,}\mu(1-e_{,}^2)}\left\{\left(\frac{\sin\theta}{r^2}\frac{dr}{d\theta} + \frac{2\cos\theta}{r}\right)\frac{dR}{d\theta} + \sin\theta\frac{dR}{dr}\right\}$$

$$\therefore \frac{de_{,}}{dt} = \sqrt{\frac{a_{,}(1-e_{,}^2)}{\mu}}$$

$$\left\{-\left(\frac{\sin(\theta-\varpi_{,})}{r^2}\frac{dr}{d\theta} + \frac{2\cos(\theta-\varpi_{,})}{r}\right)\frac{dR}{d\theta} - \sin(\theta-\varpi_{,})\frac{dR}{dr}\right\},$$

{putting $\frac{1}{r} = \frac{1 + e_1 \cos(\theta - \varpi_1)}{a_1(1 - e_1^2)}$ in small terms, and using the properties proved in Arts. 360, 361.}

$$= \sqrt{\frac{a_1(1 - e_1^2)}{\mu}}$$

$$\times \left\{ \frac{-e_1^2 \sin^2(\theta - \varpi_1) - e_1^2 \cos^2(\theta - \varpi_1) + 1}{a_1 e_1 (1 - e_1^2)} \frac{dR}{d\theta} - \frac{\sqrt{1 - e_1^2}}{a_1 e_1} \frac{dR}{d\epsilon_1} \right\}$$

$$= \sqrt{\frac{1 - e_1^2}{a_1 e_1^2 \mu}} \left(\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_1} + \frac{dR}{d\varpi_1} \right) - \frac{1 - e_1^2}{e_1 \sqrt{\mu a}} \frac{dR}{d\epsilon_1}.$$

3. For the longitude of the perihelion $\tan \varpi_2 = \frac{f_1}{f_2}$;

$$\therefore \frac{d\varpi_2}{dt} = \frac{1}{f_1^2 + f_2^2} \left\{ f_2 \frac{df_1}{dt} - f_1 \frac{df_2}{dt} \right\}$$

$$= \frac{1}{\mu e_2} \left\{ \cos \varpi_2 \frac{df_1}{dt} - \sin \varpi_2 \frac{df_2}{dt} \right\}$$

$$= \sqrt{\frac{a_2(1 - e_2^2)}{\mu e_2^2}}$$

$$\times \left\{ \left(\frac{\cos(\theta - \varpi_2)}{r^2} \frac{dr}{d\theta} - \frac{2 \sin(\theta - \varpi_2)}{r} \right) \frac{dR}{d\theta} + \cos(\theta - \varpi_2) \frac{dR}{dr} \right\}$$

$$= \sqrt{\frac{a_2(1 - e_2^2)}{\mu e_2^2}}$$

$$\times \left\{ - \frac{\sin(\theta - \varpi_2) \{2 + e_2 \cos(\theta - \varpi_2)\}}{a_2(1 - e_2^2)} \frac{dR}{d\theta} + \cos(\theta - \varpi_2) \frac{dR}{dr} \right\}$$

$$= - \sqrt{\frac{1 - e_2^2}{a_2 \mu e_2^2}} \frac{dR}{de_2} \text{ by Art. 362.}$$

PROP. *To find the variations of the inclination and the longitude of the node.*

364. We have by Art. 354 the formulæ

$$\tan i_{,} = \frac{\sqrt{h_1^2 + h_2^2}}{h}, \quad \tan \Omega_{,} = -\frac{h_2}{h_1};$$

$$\therefore \tan i_{,} \sin \Omega_{,} = -\frac{h_2}{h}, \quad \tan i_{,} \cos \Omega_{,} = \frac{h_1}{h}.$$

$$\text{Hence } \frac{d(\tan i_{,} \sin \Omega_{,})}{dt} = \frac{1}{h^2}\left\{h_2 \frac{dh}{dt} - h\frac{dh_2}{dt}\right\}.$$

Substituting by the equations of Art. 355, and neglecting $\frac{dz}{dt}$ as being small,

$$\sin \Omega_{,} \frac{d \tan i_{,}}{dt} + \cos \Omega_{,} \tan i_{,} \frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt} = \frac{y}{h}\frac{dR}{dz}.$$

In a similar manner by differentiating

$$\tan i_{,} \cos \Omega_{,} = \frac{h_1}{h}, \text{ we have}$$

$$\cos \Omega_{,} \frac{d \tan i_{,}}{dt} - \sin \Omega_{,} \tan i_{,} \frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt} = \frac{x}{h}\frac{dR}{dz}.$$

Multiplying these equations by $\sin \Omega_{,}$ and $\cos \Omega_{,}$ respectively and adding

$$\frac{d \tan i_{,}}{dt} = \frac{1}{h}(y \sin \Omega_{,} + x \cos \Omega_{,})\frac{dR}{dz}.$$

Multiplying by $\cos \Omega_{,}$, $\sin \Omega_{,}$ and subtracting

$$\tan i_{,} \frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt} = \frac{1}{h}(y \cos \Omega_{,} - x \sin \Omega_{,})\frac{dR}{dz}.$$

$$\text{Now } \frac{dR}{di_{,}} = \frac{dR}{dx}\frac{dx}{di_{,}} + \frac{dR}{dy}\frac{dy}{di_{,}} + \frac{dR}{dz}\frac{dz}{di_{,}} = \frac{dR}{dz}\frac{dz}{di_{,}} \text{ nearly;}$$

$$\text{and similarly } \frac{dR}{d\Omega_{,}} = \frac{dR}{dz}\frac{dz}{d\Omega_{,}} \text{ nearly.}$$

since for a given alteration in the inclination or longitude of the node the alteration in z is greater than in x or y.

Also $z = -\frac{h_2}{h}x - \frac{h_1}{h}y$ by Art. 353, equation (7).

$$= \tan i_{,}(x \sin \Omega_{,} - y \cos \Omega_{,}),$$

$$\therefore \frac{dz}{di_{,}} = \sec^2 i_{,}(x \sin \Omega_{,} - y \cos \Omega_{,});$$

$$\frac{dz}{d\Omega_{,}} = \tan i_{,}(x \cos \Omega_{,} + y \sin \Omega_{,}).$$

Hence $\frac{d \tan i_{,}}{dt} = \frac{1}{h \tan i_{,}} \frac{dR}{d\Omega_{,}}$;

$$\frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt} = -\frac{1}{h \tan i_{,}} \frac{dR}{di_{,}}, \text{ neglecting } \tan^2 i_{,} \ldots$$

Since the squares of $i_{,}$ are neglected and since $h = \frac{\mu\sqrt{1-e_{,}^2}}{n_{,}a_{,}}$ these may be written

$$\frac{di_{,}}{dt} = \frac{na}{\mu \sin i_{,}\sqrt{1-e_{,}^2}} \frac{dR}{d\Omega_{,}},$$

$$\frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt} = -\frac{na}{\mu \sin i_{,}\sqrt{1-e_{,}^2}} \frac{dR}{di_{,}};$$

which agree with those given by M. Pontècoulant *Théorie Analytique du Système du Monde*, Tom. I. p. 330.

PROP. *To find the variation of the epoch.*

365. Now R is a function of $a_{,}$ $e_{,}$ $\varpi_{,}$ $n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,}$ $i_{,}$ $\Omega_{,}$, and since the instantaneous ellipse is an ellipse of curvature to the orbit described of the first order (Art. 350), it follows that the first differential coefficients of r and θ with respect to t will be the same in the real orbit and in the instantaneous ellipse. The same will be the case with the first differential coefficient of any function of r and θ, as R.

Now in the ellipse $\frac{d(R)}{dt} = n_{,}\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}$; and in the real orbit, since R is a function of the variable quantities $a_{,}$, $e_{,}$, $\varpi_{,}$, $n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,}$, $i_{,}$, and $\Omega_{,}$;

$$\therefore \frac{d(R)}{dt} = \frac{dR}{da_{,}}\frac{da_{,}}{dt} + \frac{dR}{de_{,}}\frac{de_{,}}{dt} + \frac{dR}{d\varpi_{,}}\frac{d\varpi_{,}}{dt}$$

$$+ \frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}\left\{n_{,} + t\frac{dn_{,}}{dt} + \frac{d\epsilon_{,}}{dt}\right\} + \frac{dR}{di_{,}}\frac{di_{,}}{dt} + \frac{dR}{d\Omega_{,}}\frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt}.$$

Equating these values of $\frac{d(R)}{dt}$ and substituting for $\frac{da_{,}}{dt}$, $\frac{de_{,}}{dt}$, $\frac{d\varpi_{,}}{dt}$, $\frac{dn_{,}}{dt}\left(= -\frac{3n_{,}}{2a_{,}}\frac{da_{,}}{dt}\right)$, $\frac{di_{,}}{dt}$, $\frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt}$ the values found in Arts. 363, 364, and transposing $\frac{d\epsilon_{,}}{dt}$ and dividing by $\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}$, we have

$$\frac{d\epsilon_{,}}{dt} = -\frac{3n_{,}^{2}a_{,}}{\mu}\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}t + \frac{2n_{,}a_{,}^{2}}{\mu}\frac{dR}{da_{,}} - \frac{n_{,}a_{,}}{\mu e_{,}}\left\{\sqrt{1-e_{,}^{2}} - (1-e_{,}^{2})\right\}\frac{dR}{de_{,}}.$$

366. We shall now bring together the variations of the elliptic elements obtained in the last three Articles, and present them under one point of view.

(1) $$\frac{da_{,}}{dt} = -\frac{2a_{,}^{2}n_{,}}{\mu}\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}.$$

(2) $$\frac{de_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}a_{,}\sqrt{1-e_{,}^{2}}}{\mu e_{,}}\left(\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}} + \frac{dR}{d\varpi_{,}}\right) - \frac{n_{,}a_{,}(1-e_{,}^{2})}{\mu e_{,}}\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}$$

(3) $$\frac{d\varpi_{,}}{dt} = -\frac{n_{,}a_{,}\sqrt{1-e_{,}^{2}}}{\mu e_{,}}\frac{dR}{de_{,}}.$$

(4) $$\frac{d\epsilon_{,}}{dt} = -\frac{3n_{,}^{2}a_{,}}{\mu}\frac{dR}{d\epsilon_{,}}t + \frac{2n_{,}a_{,}^{2}}{\mu}\frac{dR}{da_{,}}$$

$$- \frac{n_{,}a_{,}}{\mu e_{,}}\left\{\sqrt{1-e_{,}^{2}} - (1-e_{,}^{2})\right\}\frac{dR}{de_{,}}.$$

$$(5)\quad \frac{d\tan i_1}{dt} = \frac{n_1 a_1}{\mu \tan i_1 \sqrt{1-e_1^2}} \frac{dR}{d\Omega_1}.$$

$$(6)\quad \frac{d\Omega_1}{dt} = -\frac{n_1 a_1}{\mu \tan i_1 \sqrt{1-e_1^2}} \frac{dR}{di_1}.$$

Before we can make use of these formulæ we must explain how R is to be developed.

PROP. *To explain the manner in which* R *is to be developed.*

367. If we recur to Art. 352 we see that

$$R = \frac{m'(xx' + yy' + zz')}{(x'^2 + y'^2 + z'^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{m'}{\sqrt{(x'-x)^2 + (y'-y)^2 + (z'-z)^2}}.$$

Let r and θ be the radius vector and longitude of m measured on the plane of xy as far as the node and then on the plane of m's orbit.

r_1 and θ_1 the rad. vect. and longitude projected on plane xy.

Ω_1 and i_1 the longitude of the node and inclination of m's orbit to the plane xy.

λ the latitude of m.

Then we have

$$x = r_1 \cos\theta_1, \quad y = r_1 \sin\theta_1, \quad z = r_1 \tan\lambda = r_1 \sin(\theta_1 - \Omega_1) \tan i_1,$$

Similar expressions are true for m'.

Hence R

$$= \frac{m'\{r_1 r_1' \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1') + zz'\}}{(r_1'^2 + z'^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{m'}{\sqrt{r_1^2 + r_1'^2 - 2r_1 r_1' \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1') + (z-z')^2}}.$$

Now $r_1 = r\cos\lambda = r\{1 - \frac{1}{2}\tan^2\lambda\}$ very nearly

$$= r\{1 - \tfrac{1}{2}\tan^2 i_1 \sin^2(\theta_1 - \Omega_1)\}$$

$$= r\{1 - \tfrac{1}{4}\tan^2 i_1 + \tfrac{1}{4}\tan^2 i_1 \cos 2(\theta_1 - \Omega_1)\}.$$

Also $\tan(\theta_1 - \Omega_1) = \cos i_1 \tan(\theta - \Omega_1)$;

$$\therefore \theta_1 - \Omega_1 = \theta - \Omega_1 - \tan^2 \frac{i_1}{2} \sin 2(\theta - \Omega_1), \text{ (see Art. 274).}$$

Substitute in these the values of r and θ given by Art. 357, and we have

$$r_1 = a_1 \{1 + \tfrac{1}{2} e_1^2 - e_1 \cos(n_1 t + \epsilon_1 - \varpi_1) - \tfrac{1}{2} e_1^2 \cos 2(n_1 t + \epsilon - \varpi_1)$$
$$- \tfrac{1}{4} \tan^2 i_1 + \tfrac{1}{4} \tan^2 i_1 \cos 2(n_1 t + \epsilon_1 - \Omega_1) + \ldots\}$$
$$= a_1 \{1 + u\}$$

and $\theta_1 = n_1 t + \epsilon_1 + 2e_1 \sin(n_1 t + \epsilon_1 - \varpi_1) + \frac{5}{4} e_1^2 \sin 2(n_1 t + \epsilon_1 - \varpi_1)$
$$- \tan^2 \tfrac{1}{2} i_1 \sin 2(n_1 t + \epsilon_1 - \Omega_1) + \ldots$$
$$= n_1 t + \epsilon_1 + \nu \text{ suppose.}$$

Now let R' be the value of R when a_1 and a_1' are put for r_1 and r_1' and suppose $r_1 = a_1(1 + u)$ and $r_1' = a_1'(1 + u')$ u and u' are small quantities because the orbits of the planets are nearly circular: then by Taylor's Theorem

$$R = R' + \frac{dR'}{da_1} a_1 u + \frac{dR'}{da_1'} a_1' u' + \ldots$$

also $R' = \dfrac{m' \{a_1 a_1' \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1') + a_1 a_1' \tan i_1 \tan i_1' \sin(\theta_1 - \Omega_1) \sin(\theta_1' - \Omega_1')\}}{\{a_1'^2 + a_1'^2 \tan^2 i_1' \sin^2(\theta_1' - \Omega_1')\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}$

$$- \frac{m'}{\sqrt{a_1^2 + a_1'^2 - 2a_1 a_1' \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1') + \{a_1 \tan i_1 \sin(\theta_1 - \Omega_1) - a_1' \tan i_1' \sin(\theta_1' - \Omega_1')\}^2}}$$

$$= \frac{m' a_1 \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1')}{a_1'^2} - \frac{m'}{\sqrt{a_1^2 + a_1'^2 - 2a_1 a_1' \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1')}}$$

$$+ \frac{m' a_1 \tan i_1 \tan i_1' \sin(\theta_1 - \Omega_1) \sin(\theta_1' - \Omega_1')}{a_1'^2}$$

$$- \frac{3m' a_1 \tan^2 i_1' \sin^2(\theta_1' - \Omega_1') \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1')}{2a_1'^2}$$

$$+ \frac{m' \{a_1 \tan i_1 \sin(\theta_1 - \Omega_1) - a_1' \tan i_1' \sin(\theta_1' - \Omega_1')\}^2}{2\{a_1^2 + a_1'^2 - 2a_1 a_1' \cos(\theta_1 - \theta_1')\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} + \ldots.$$

$$\text{Let } \frac{1}{\sqrt{a_,^2 + a_,'^2 - 2a_,a_,' \cos(\theta_, - \theta_,')}}$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{2} C_0 + C_1 \cos(\theta_, - \theta_,') + C_2 \cos 2(\theta_, - \theta_,') + \ldots\ldots$$

$$\frac{1}{\{a_,^2 + a_,'^2 - 2a_,a_,' \cos(\theta_, - \theta_,')\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{2} D_0 + D_1 \cos(\theta_, - \theta_,') + D_2 \cos 2(\theta_, - \theta_,') + \ldots\ldots$$

These coefficients should be calculated and then R' may be arranged in a series. When we have thus calculated R' we must find $\frac{dR'}{da_,}$, $\frac{dR'}{da_,'}$ ..... and substitute them in

$$R' + \frac{dR'}{da_,} a_, u + \frac{dR'}{da_,'} a_,' u' + \ldots\ldots$$

and we shall have R expressed in a series of terms depending on the time and the elements of the instantaneous orbits.

It is not our object to enter into the numerical calculation of the coefficients of the expansion of R: for this we refer the reader to M. Pontécoulant's *Theorie Analytique du Système du Monde*, Tom. I. p. 340, *Mécanique Céleste*, Tom. III. and Mr. Lubbock's Papers in the *Philos. Trans.* and *Astron. Trans.*

We proceed to demonstrate some Propositions relative to the general nature of the terms.

PROP. *To prove that the terms of* R *which depend on the mean anomalies* ($n_, t$ *and* $n_,' t$) *of the planets are of the form* P *cos* $\{(pn_, - qn_,')t + Q\}$ *or* P *cos* $\{(pn_, + qn_,')t + Q\}$, *where* P *is a function of the mean distances, eccentricities, and inclinations of the orbits, and* Q *is a function of the longitudes of the perihelia and nodes and of the epochs; and* p *and* q *are positive integers.*

368. We shall make use of the following elementary trigonometrical formulæ:

I. $\quad \text{Cos } a \cos b = \frac{1}{2}\cos(a-b) + \frac{1}{2}\cos(a+b).$

II. $\quad \text{Sin } a \sin b = \frac{1}{2}\cos(a-b) - \frac{1}{2}\cos(a+b).$

III. $\quad \text{Sin } a \cos b = \frac{1}{2}\sin(a+b) + \frac{1}{2}\sin(a-b).$

$$\text{Now } \theta_{,} - \theta_{,}' = (n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,}) - (n_{,}'t + \epsilon_{,}')$$

$$+(2e_{,} \ldots\ldots)\sin(n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,} - \varpi_{,}) + (\tfrac{5}{4}e_{,}^{2} + \ldots)\sin 2(n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,} - \varpi_{,}) + \ldots$$

$$-(2e_{,}' + \ldots)\sin(n_{,}'t + \epsilon_{,}' - \varpi_{,}') + (\tfrac{5}{4}e_{,}'^{2} + \ldots)\sin 2(n_{,}'t + \epsilon_{,}' - \varpi_{,}') + \ldots$$

$$-\tan^{2}\tfrac{1}{2}i_{,}\sin 2(n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,} - \Omega_{,}) + \ldots\ldots$$

$$+\tan^{2}\tfrac{1}{2}i_{,}'\sin 2(n_{,}'t + \epsilon_{,}' - \Omega_{,}') + \ldots\ldots$$

$$= (n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,}) - (n_{,}'t + \epsilon_{,}') + T \text{ suppose;}$$

$$\therefore \cos k(\theta_{,} - \theta_{,}') = \cos\{k(n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,}) - k(n_{,}'t + \epsilon_{,}')\}\cos kT$$

$$- \sin\{k(n_{,}t + \epsilon_{,}) - k(n_{,}'t + \epsilon_{,}')\}\sin kT,$$

$$\text{and } \cos kT = 1 - \tfrac{1}{2}k^{2}T^{2} + \ldots\ldots$$

$$\sin kT = kT - \frac{1}{1.2.3}k^{3}T^{3} + \ldots\ldots$$

Now by formulæ II. and I. the even powers of T, and $\therefore \cos kT$, will involve only simple cosines; and by formulæ II. and III. the odd powers of T, and therefore $\sin kT$, only simple sines.

Hence by formulæ I. and II. the expansion of $\cos k(\theta_{,} - \theta_{,}')$ given by the above formula will contain only simple cosines.

In the same manner we might shew that $\sin(\theta_{,} - \Omega_{,})$ and $\sin(\theta_{,}' - \Omega_{,}')$ will equal a series of simple sines (with no constant term), and therefore by formula II. the squares or product of these will contain only simple cosines.

We see then that when the complete development of R' given in Art. 367. is worked out and arranged in a series, it will consist only of simple cosines.

Again by Art. 367. we see that u and u' consist of a series of terms involving the simple cosines of angles. Hence, by formula I. each of the quantities u, u', u^{2}, uu', u'^{2}.... will consist of a series of simple cosines of angles formed by com-

bining the arguments* of terms of u and u' in endless variety by addition and subtraction.

It follows, then, finally, that the series into which R is to be developed (Art. 367.) will by formula I. consist only of terms of the form

$$P\cos\{(pn_{,}-qn_{,}')t+Q\} \text{ and } P\cos\{(pn_{,}+qn_{,}')t+Q\},$$

p and q being positive integers, P a function of the mean distances, eccentricities, and inclinations of the instantaneous orbits; and Q a function of the longitudes of the perihelia and nodes and the epochs.

369. We have already frequently remarked, that the eccentricities and inclinations of the planets are so small, that their higher powers will be of almost imperceptible magnitude. It becomes important then to search for some means of determining the relative magnitude of P in reference to the argument $(pn_{,}-qn_{,}')t+Q$ for this will materially shorten the calculation of R; by pointing out at once those terms of the infinite series into which R is developed, which are of sufficient importance to be retained.

In the following Article we shall prove a principle which answers our purpose.

Prop. *The lowest dimension of the quantities* $e_{,}$, $e_{,}'$, *tan* $i_{,}$, *tan* $i_{,}'$ *in the coefficient of* $P\cos\{(pn_{,}-qn_{,}')t+Q\}$ *is of the order* $p\sim q$.

370. We have by Art. 367.

$$R=R'+\frac{dR'}{da_{,}}a_{,}u+\frac{dR'}{da_{,}'}a_{,}'u_{,}+\ldots\ldots$$

(1) A remarkable law prevails in the expansions of u and u'. It is this (Art. 367). The number which multiplies $n_{,}t+\epsilon_{,}$ in the argument of any term in these expansions represents the dimensions in $e_{,}$, $e_{,}'$, tan $i_{,}$, tan $i_{,}'$ of the principal part of the coefficient of that term.

* In an expression $a\cos(pnt+q)$, the angle $pnt+q$ is called the *argument* of the term $a\cos(pnt+q)$.

tively. The coefficient of this is of the order $\ell + \ell'$.

(3) Let us next consider the law of the coefficients in $\cos k(\theta_\ell - \theta_\ell')$.

If we turn to Art. 368. and examine the expansions of $\cos kT$ and $\sin kT$, we shall find that the laws (1) and (2) hold equally in them. But in $\cos k(\theta_\ell - \theta_\ell')$, since it is equal to

$$\cos\{k(n_\ell t + \epsilon_\ell) - k(n_\ell' t + \epsilon_\ell')\}\cos kT$$

$$-\sin\{k(n_\ell t + \epsilon_\ell) - k(n_\ell' t + \epsilon_\ell')\}\sin kT,$$

the dimension of the coefficient of any term calculated by the laws (1), (2) will be higher or lower by $2k$ than it ought to be according as the argument is formed by addition or subtraction.

If, then, we turn to Art. 367. and examine the expression given for R we see that the laws (1), (2) just proved hold for R, if we leave out of consideration all the multipliers which are of the form $\cos k(\theta_\ell - \theta_\ell')$. Bearing this in mind we shall be able to prove our Proposition.

Any term $P\cos\{(pn_\ell - qn_\ell')t + Q\}$ in R has partly arisen from the multiplication of $\cos\{(kn_\ell - kn_\ell')t + Q'\}$ with $\cos\{[(p-k)n_\ell - (q-k)n_\ell']t + Q''\}$ and partly from multiplication with $\cos\{[(p+k)n_\ell - (q+k)n_\ell']t + Q'''\}$, and

in no other way can it have been formed: k being any number of the series 0, 1, 2, 3,.....

First: suppose k intermediate to p and q. Then the first of these cosines becomes

$$\cos\{[(p-k)\,n_{,}+(k-q)\,n_{,}']\,t+Q''\},$$

and the dimension of the principal coefficient of this and therefore of $\cos\{(pn_{,}-qn_{,}')\,t+Q\}$ is by law (2) equal to $(p\sim k)+(k\sim q)=p\sim q$, since k is intermediate to p and q.

Second: suppose k is not greater than the smaller of p and q. Then the dimension of the principal coefficient of

$\cos\{[(p-k)\,n_{,}-(q-k)\,n_{,}']\,t+Q''\}$ is $p+q-2k$:

and therefore the dimension of the principal coefficient of $\cos\{(pn'-qn_{,}')t+Q\}$ is the least value of which $p+q-2k$ is susceptible, and that is $p\sim q$.

Third: suppose k is not less than the greater of p and q. Then the dimension of the principal coefficient of

$\cos\{[(k-p)\,n_{,}-(k-q)\,n_{,}']\,t-Q''\}$ is $2k-p-q$,

and therefore the dimension of the principal coefficient of $\cos\{(pn_{,}-qn_{,}')t+Q\}$ is the least value of $2k-p-q$, and this is $p\sim q$, as before.

Hence the Proposition is true.

PROP. *To prove that the principal coefficient of the term* $\mathrm{P}\cos\{(\mathrm{pn_{,}}+\mathrm{qn_{,}'})\,\mathrm{t}+\mathrm{Q}\}$ *in* R *is of the dimension* $\mathrm{p}+\mathrm{q}$ *in* $\mathrm{e_{,}}$, $\mathrm{e_{,}'}$, $\tan \mathrm{i_{,}}$, $\tan \mathrm{i_{,}'}$.

371. This term arises from the multiplication of such terms as $P'\cos\{(kn_{,}-kn_{,}')\,t+Q'\}$ with

$$P''\cos\{[(p-k)\,n_{,}+(q+k)\,n_{,}']t+Q''\}$$

and $P''\cos\{[(p+k)\,n_{,}+(q-k)\,n_{,}']\,t+Q''\}$.

Hence, in both cases, the dimension will be $p+q$, since $(p-k)+(q+k)$ and $(p+k)+(q-k)$ each equals $p+q$: see law (2) of Art. 370. We have here supposed k is not greater than p and q: but if k be greater than p or q it will be easily seen that the dimension will be greater than $p+q$. Hence the Proposition is true.

PROP. *To determine the part of* R *which is independent of the periodic terms.*

372. We have

$$R = R' + \frac{dR'}{da_,} a_, u + \frac{dR'}{da_,} a_,' u'$$
$$+ \frac{d^2R'}{da_,^2} \frac{a_,^2 u^2}{2} + \frac{d^2R'}{da_, da_,'} a_, a_,' u u' + \frac{d^2R'}{da_,'^2} \frac{a_,'^2 u'^2}{2}$$
$$+ \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$

We shall neglect small quantities of the third order; hence we need calculate the first differential coefficients of R' only to the first order: and in the second differential coefficients we may neglect all small quantities.

Let us turn to the expression for R' and that for u in Art. 367, and it will be seen (after reduction) that the constant part of R' is

$$+ \frac{m' a_, e_, e_,'}{a_,'^2} \cos(\varpi_, - \varpi_,') \quad \left\{\text{from the first term of } R'\right\}$$
$$- \tfrac{1}{2} m' C_0 - m' e_, e_,' C_1 \cos(\varpi_, - \varpi_,') \quad \left\{\text{from the second term of } R'\right\}$$
$$+ \tfrac{1}{8} m' (a_,^2 \tan^2 i_, + a_,'^2 \tan^2 i_,') D_0 \quad \left\{\text{from the fifth term of } R'\right\}$$
$$- \tfrac{1}{4} m' a_, a_,' \tan i_, \tan i_,' D_1 \cos(\Omega_, - \Omega_,') \quad \left\{\text{from the fifth term of } R'\right\}.$$

The constant part of $\frac{dR'}{da_,} a_, u$ is

$$+ \frac{m' a_, e_, e_,'}{2 a_,'^2} \cos(\varpi_, - \varpi_,') \quad \left\{\text{from the first term of } R'\right\}$$
$$- \frac{dC_0}{da_,} \frac{m' a_,}{4} (e_,^2 - \tfrac{1}{2} \tan^2 i_,) \quad \left\{\text{from the second term of } R'\right\}$$
$$- \frac{dC_1}{da_,} \frac{m' a_, e_, e_,'}{2} \cos(\varpi_, - \varpi_,') \quad \left\{\text{from the second term of } R'\right\}.$$

The constant part of $\frac{dR'}{da_1'} a_1' u'$ is

$$-\frac{m' a_1 e_1 e_1'}{a_1'^2} \cos(\varpi_1 - \varpi_1') \quad \{\text{from the first term of } R'\}$$

$$-\frac{dC_0}{da_1'} \frac{m' a_1'}{4} (e_1'^2 - \tfrac{1}{2} \tan^2 i_1') \quad \{\text{from the second term of } R'\}$$

$$-\frac{dC_1}{da_1'} \frac{m' a_1' e_1 e_1'}{2} \cos(\varpi_1 - \varpi_1') \{\text{from the second term of } R'\}.$$

The constant part of $\frac{d^2 R'}{da_1'^2} \frac{a_1'^2 u'^2}{2}$ is

$$-\frac{d^2 C_0}{da_1'^2} \frac{m' a_1'^2 e_1'^2}{8} \text{ (from the second term of } R').$$

The constant part of $\frac{d^2 R'}{da_1 da_1'} a_1 a_1' u u'$ is

$$-\frac{m' a_1 e_1 e_1'}{2 a_1'^2} \cos(\varpi_1 - \varpi_1') \quad \{\text{from the first term of } R'\}$$

$$-\frac{d^2 C_1}{da_1 da_1'} \frac{m' a_1 a_1' e_1 e_1'}{4} \cos(\varpi_1 - \varpi_1') \{\text{from the second term of } R'\}.$$

The constant part of $\frac{d^2 R'}{da_1'^2} \frac{a_1'^2 u_1'^2}{2}$ is

$$-\frac{d^2 C_0}{da_1'^2} \frac{m' a_1'^2 e_1'^2}{8} \text{ (from the second term of } R').$$

The part of R which is independent of periodic terms equals the sum of these parts. We shall call this sum F;

$$\therefore F = -\frac{m'}{2} C_0$$

$$+\frac{m'}{8}\left(a'^2 D_0 + a_1 \frac{dC_0}{da_1}\right) \tan^2 i_1 + \frac{m'}{8}\left(a_1'^2 D_0 + a_1' \frac{dC_0}{da_1'}\right) \tan^2 i_1'$$

$$-\frac{m'}{4} a_1 a_1' \tan i_1 \tan i_1' D_1 \cos(\Omega_1 - \Omega_1')$$

$$-\frac{m'}{4}\left(a_{,}\frac{dC_0}{da_{,}}+\tfrac{1}{2}a_{,}^{2}\frac{d^2C_0}{da_{,}^{2}}\right)e_{,}^{2}-\frac{m'}{4}\left(a_{,}'\frac{dC_0}{da_{,}'}+\tfrac{1}{2}a_{,}'^{2}\frac{d^2C_0}{da_{,}'^{2}}\right)e_{,}'^{2}$$

$$-\frac{m'}{4}\left(4C_1+2a_{,}\frac{dC_1}{da_{,}}+a_{,}a_{,}'\frac{d^2C_1}{da_{,}da_{,}'}+2a_{,}'\frac{dC_1}{da_{,}'}\right)e_{,}e_{,}'\cos(\varpi_{,}-\varpi_{,}')$$

Now $\frac{1}{2}C_0+C_1\cos(\theta_{,}-\theta_{,}')+\ldots=\{a_{,}^2+a_{,}'^2-2a_{,}a_{,}'\cos(\theta_{,}-\theta_{,}')\}^{-\frac{1}{2}}$;

$$\therefore\ \tfrac{1}{2}\frac{dC_0}{da_{,}}+\ldots=-\{\tfrac{1}{2}D_0+D_1\cos(\theta_{,}-\theta_{,}')+\ldots\}\cdot\{a_{,}-a_{,}'\cos(\theta_{,}-\theta_{,}')\}$$

$$=-\left(\frac{a_{,}}{2}D_0-\frac{a_{,}'}{2}D_1\right)+\ldots\ldots$$

$$\therefore\ a_{,}^2D_0+a_{,}\frac{dC_0}{da_{,}}=a_{,}a_{,}'D_1.$$

Similarly, $a_{,}'^2D_0+a_{,}'\dfrac{dC_0}{da_{,}'}=a_{,}'a_{,}D_1$.

Wherefore putting the coefficients of the last three terms of F equal to B, B', C, we have

$$F=-\frac{m'}{2}C_0+\frac{m'a_{,}a_{,}'}{8}D_1(\tan^2 i_{,}+\tan^2 i_{,}')$$

$$-\frac{m'a_{,}a_{,}'}{1}\tan i_{,}\tan i_{,}'D_1\cos(\Omega_{,}-\Omega_{,}')$$

$$-m'Be_{,}^2-m'B'e_{,}'^2-m'Ce_{,}e_{,}'\cos(\varpi_{,}-\varpi_{,}')*$$

in which we observe that C is symmetrical with respect to $a_{,}$ and $a_{,}'$.

373. In Art. 366, we collected the formulæ for calculating the elements of the instantaneous ellipse at any time. Since the object of the present work is only to explain the theory and not to enter into the numerical calculations of the perturbations, we shall proceed to demonstrate a few of the most important and interesting results to which these equations conduct us.

* We might shew that $B=B'=\frac{1}{4}D_1$, but there is no occasion for this in [illegible]

PROP. *To shew that the effect of all the terms of* R *(after the first) upon the elements of the planetary orbits is periodical.*

374. Any term $P \cos \{(pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}')\, t + Q\}$ will produce a similar term in $\frac{dR}{da_{,}}$, $\frac{dR}{de_{,}}$ and $\frac{dR}{di_{,}}$; but a term of the form $P \sin \{(pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}')\, t + Q\}$ in $\frac{dR}{de_{,}}$, $\frac{dR}{d\varpi_{,}}$ and $\frac{dR}{d\Omega_{,}}$: since Q is independent of $a_{,}$, $e_{,}$, $i_{,}$; and P is independent of $e_{,}$, $\varpi_{,}$, $\Omega_{,}$. If then these be substituted in the equations of Art. 366. and the integrations be effected, the elements $a_{,}$, $e_{,}$, $\varpi_{,}$, $i_{,}$, $\Omega_{,}$ will receive, in consequence, a term of the form

$$\frac{P}{pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}'} \begin{matrix} \cos \\ \sin \end{matrix} \{(pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}')\, t + Q\};$$

since the formula for $\frac{de_{,}}{dt}$ contains a term multiplied by t, the element $e_{,}$ will receive, besides this, terms of the form (as may be shewn by integrating by parts)

$$\frac{Pt}{(pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}')} \cos \{(pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}')\, t + Q\}$$

$$+ \frac{P}{(pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}')^2} \sin \{(pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}')\, t + Q\}.$$

It follows, then, that after a period of time $= \frac{360}{pn_{,} \pm qn_{,}'}$ the perturbations of the elements, arising from the above term in R, will have gone through their changes.

These variations of the elements are therefore termed *Periodic Variations*.

It will be remarked that if $pn_{,} + qn_{,}'$ or $pn_{,} - qn_{,}'$ be a very small quantity the integration described in the last Article will increase the corresponding terms considerably: and therefore it may happen that terms in R, of which the coefficients are so small as to appear of no consequence may rise to

importance by receiving in the process of integration a small divisor.

PROP. *To find what terms in the development of* R *will be much increased by the process of integration in determining the elliptic elements.*

375. By reference to the last Article we see that either *First*, $pn_{,} + qn_{,}'$ must be a small quantity: hence, since p and q are positive integers or zero, $n_{,}$ and $n_{,}'$ must be small. By reference to the first Table in Art. 391. we see that this is not the case with any of the planets.

Or *Secondly*: $pn_{,} \sim qn_{,}'$ must be small.

Hence p and q must be in the ratio $n_{,}' : n_{,}$ as nearly as possible. Now the lowest dimension of the coefficient in terms of small quantities is $p \sim q$, Art. 370. If, then, we can find two integers p and q nearly in the ratio $n_{,}' : n_{,}$ and having a small difference, the corresponding term of R will rise into importance by the integration. If we turn, now, to the first Table in Art. 391, and by continued fractions find the convergents which express the ratio of the values of $n_{,}$ for any two planets, and choose those of them which have a small difference between the numerator and denominator, we shall be able to detect the most important of the terms of the development of R.

For Jupiter and Saturn $n_{,} : n_{,}' :: 5 : 2$ nearly, and $5 - 2 = 3$: hence the dimension of the coefficient of a term $P \cos \{(2n_{,} - 5n_{,}')t + Q\}$ will be of the third order and will be divided by the small quantities $(2n_{,} - 5n_{,}')$ and $(2n_{,} - 5n_{,}')^{2}$.

For the Earth and Venus $n_{,} : n_{,}' :: 8 : 13$ nearly and $13 - 8 = 5$: hence the order of small quantities in the coefficient will be of the fifth degree and the argument

$$(13n_{,} - 8n_{,}')t + Q.$$

376. These two examples present very remarkable instances of the agreement of theory with observation.

The observations upon Jupiter and Saturn from the times of the Chinese and Arabian Astronomers down to the present day prove, that for ages the mean motions of these planets have been affected by an inequality of long period. This

formed an apparent anomaly in the Planetary Theory till Laplace pointed out the real cause of the inequality, and rescued Newton's doctrine of Gravity from the reproach which had long attached to it in consequence of its inability to assign the cause of so remarkable a phenomenon. Laplace proved that the inequality depends upon the near commensurability of the mean motions of the planets (as explained in Art. 375), and succeeded in calculating its period and amount.

Mr Airy has discovered a similar inequality in the motion of the Earth and Venus. In the *Phil. Trans.* for 1832 he shews that it amounts to no more than a few seconds at its maximum, though its period is no less than 240 years. Mr Airy had detected an error in the solar tables, and this induced him to seek for the cause, which is so satisfactorily shewn to arise from the near commensurability of the mean motions of the Earth and Venus.

PROP. *To explain the difference between Periodic Variations and Secular Variations.*

377. In the last Proposition we have supposed the elements which are involved in the right hand side of the equations to be constant, while they are in fact functions of t. The only effect however which would result from this consideration would be that the *period* of the variations would be slightly altered.

But if we consider the effect of the first part of the expansion of R, which is independent of the periodic terms, and which we call F, and suppose the elements involved in F *constant*, it is evident, that by the integration of the equations of Art. 366. the elements will receive additions which continually increase or decrease with the time, unless in any instance the right hand side of the equation vanishes when F is put for R. If, however, we make a nearer approximation, and suppose that the elements in F are variable, and then integrate the equations of Art. 366, the integrals *may* give periodical values for the elements. If this be the case in any instance the variation is not called a *Periodic Variation*, though in fact it is periodical, but a *Secular Variation*; since

it arises from a cause quite different from that, which produces the periodic variations. In short a periodic variation arises from the fact of R involving r and θ the co-ordinates of the planet disturbed: but a secular variation arises from the fact that the elements of the orbit vary. And since they vary very slowly, the period in which they perform their secular variations is of immense duration*. Perhaps the following observations may throw light upon this subject.

The magnitude of the forces which disturb the elliptic motion of the planets depends solely upon their relative positions, and not on their velocities and the directions of their motion. When therefore, after a lapse of years, the planets return to the same relative positions that they occupied at the commencement of that period, the disturbing forces and the perturbations in the places of the planets will have gone through a series of changes, compensating in one part of this period for the errors they have caused in some other part. The inequalities produced during this interval of time are termed Periodical Variations. But although the configuration of the planetary system may become the same, yet, as was before mentioned, the velocities and directions of the motion of the planets will not necessarily become the same also; the original and final orbits intersecting respectively in those points which the planets occupy at the beginning and end of the time, which the periodic variations have taken to go through their changes. The inequalities produced in this way are termed Secular Variations in consequence of their very slow variation.

We proceed now to the examination of the Secular Variations.

PROP. *To obtain the equations for calculating the* ***Secular Variations*** *of the elliptic elements of a planet's orbit.*

378. We must first find the differential coefficients of F (the part of R independent of the periodic terms) with respect to the elements: hence by Art. 372.

* The *periodic variation* of longest duration among those that are of sufficient importance to be calculated has a period equal to 929 years. But some of the *secular variations* have a period of 70000 and even more years.

$$\frac{dF}{de_{,}} = 0,$$

$$\frac{dF}{d\varpi_{,}} = m' C e_{,} e_{,}' \sin(\varpi_{,} - \varpi_{,}'),$$

$$\frac{dF}{de_{,}} = -2m' B e_{,} - m' C e_{,}' \cos(\varpi_{,} - \varpi_{,}'),$$

$$\frac{dF}{d\Omega_{,}} = \frac{m'}{4} a_{,} a_{,}' \tan i_{,} \tan i_{,}' D_1 \sin(\Omega_{,} - \Omega_{,}'),$$

$$\frac{dF}{di_{,}} = m' \frac{a_{,} a_{,}'}{4} D_1 \tan i_{,} - \frac{m'}{4} a_{,} a_{,}' \tan i_{,}' D_1 \cos(\Omega_{,} - \Omega_{,}').$$

Substituting these in the equations of Art. 366.

$$\frac{da_{,}}{dt} = 0,$$

$$\frac{de_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,} a_{,} m' C e_{,}'}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_{,} - \varpi_{,}'),$$

$$\frac{d\varpi_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,} a_{,} m' \sqrt{1 - e_{,}^2}}{\mu e_{,}} \{2Be_{,} + Ce_{,}' \cos(\varpi_{,} - \varpi_{,}')\},$$

$$\frac{d \tan i_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,} a_{,} m' a_{,} a_{,}' \tan i_{,}' D_1}{4\mu} \sin(\Omega_{,} - \Omega_{,}'),$$

$$\frac{d\Omega_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,} a_{,}^2 a_{,}' m' D_1}{4\mu} \left\{-1 + \frac{\tan i_{,}'}{\tan i_{,}} \cos(\Omega_{,} - \Omega_{,}')\right\}.$$

We have retained the variable values of the elements on the right hand of these equations: but should it be necessary, we may use the constant values in approximating.

PROP. *To prove the stability of the mean distances of the planets from the Sun: and of their mean motions.*

379. By Art. 378 $\frac{da_{,}}{dt} = 0$; $\therefore\ a_{,} = \text{const.}$

The same is true of the mean motion $n_{,}$, since it $= \sqrt{\frac{\mu}{a_{,}^3}}$, and μ does not alter. We are hereby assured of the impossibility of any of the bodies of our system ever leaving it in consequence of the disturbances it may experience from the other bodies, and secures the general permanence of the whole by keeping the mean distances and periodic times perpetually fluctuating between certain limits (very restricted ones) which they can never exceed, nor fall short of.

PROP. *To prove the stability of the eccentricities of the planetary orbits.*

380. By Art. 378 we have

$$\frac{de_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}a_{,}m'Ce_{,}'}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_{,} - \varpi_{,}').$$

In the same way we should have

$$\frac{de_{,}'}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}'a_{,}'mCe_{,}}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_{,}' - \varpi_{,}).$$

Multiply these by $\frac{m}{n_{,}a_{,}}e_{,}$ and $\frac{m'}{n_{,}'a_{,}'}e_{,}'$ and add them

$$\therefore \frac{m}{n_{,}a_{,}}e_{,}\frac{de_{,}}{dt} + \frac{m'}{n_{,}'a_{,}'}e_{,}'\frac{de_{,}'}{dt} = 0$$

$$\therefore \frac{m}{n_{,}a_{,}}e_{,}^2 + \frac{m'}{n_{,}'a_{,}'}e_{,}'^2 = \text{constant}.$$

If we had considered three planets we should have had the following equations

$$\frac{de_1}{dt} = \frac{n_1 a_1 m' C e_1'}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_1 - \varpi_1') + \frac{n_1 a_1 m'' C' e_1''}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_1 - \varpi_1''),$$

$$\frac{de_1'}{dt} = \frac{n_1' a_1' m C e_1}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_1' - \varpi_1) + \frac{n_1' a_1' m'' C''' e_1''}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_1' - \varpi_1''),$$

and

$$\frac{de_1''}{dt} = \frac{n_1'' a_1'' m C' e_1}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_1'' - \varpi_1) + \frac{n_1'' a_1'' m' C''' e_1'}{\mu} \sin(\varpi_1'' - \varpi_1').$$

These equations give

$$\frac{m}{n_1 a_1} e_1 \frac{de_1}{dt} + \frac{m'}{n_1' a_1'} e_1' \frac{de_1'}{dt} + \frac{m''}{n_1'' a_1''} e_1'' \frac{de_1''}{dt} = 0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{m}{n_1 a_1} e_1^2 + \frac{m'}{n_1' a_1'} e_1'^2 + \frac{m''}{n_1'' a_1''} e_1''^2 = \text{constant}.$$

And the same formula would be true of any number of planets.

Now observation shews that the eccentricities of the orbits of the planets at present are very small indeed, with the exception of the Asteroids, the masses of which are very small. Hence the above constant must be small. Since, then, all the terms of the first side of the last equation are positive and their sum always equals a small constant it follows, that the terms are always small and the eccentricities are always small.

Hence the eccentricities of the orbits of the planets are confined within very restricted limits: and therefore the forms of the orbits are said to be stable.

381. The only quantities in the above equation, subject to a change of sign in applying it to a system of bodies, are the mean motions n_1, n_1', n_1'', ...But observation shews that all the planets revolve round the Sun in the same direction: and consequently the terms are all positive.

PROP. *To prove the stability of the inclinations of the planets of the Solar System.*

direction, Art. 381.

383. We are thus led to the following remarkable conclusion: *The fact that the planets revolve about the Sun in the same direction ensures the stability of the planetary system.*

The converse of this would not necessarily be true, as we shall see in Arts. 385, 387: the numerical relations of the dimensions and positions of the orbits of the planets might be such as to ensure stability although they revolved in opposite directions. But the above is independent of particular numerical relations.

384. We have given the two foregoing Propositions because of the simplicity of their demonstrations as well as the beauty of the results. We shall, however, in the following Articles obtain formulæ for calculating the magnitude of the variations of the orbits in dimension and position.

PROP. *To find the secular variation of the eccentricity of the planetary orbits.*

385. By Art. 378 we have for the planet m,

$$\frac{de_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}a_{,}m'Ce_{,}'}{\mu}\sin(\varpi_{,} - \varpi_{,}');$$

$$\frac{d\varpi_{,}}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}a_{,}m'\sqrt{1-e_{,}^{2}}}{\mu e_{,}}\{2Be_{,} + Ce_{,}'\cos(\varpi_{,} - \varpi_{,}')\}.$$

And for the other planet m',

$$\frac{de_{,}'}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}'a_{,}'mCe_{,}}{\mu}\sin(\varpi_{,}' - \varpi_{,}),$$

$$\frac{d\varpi_{,}'}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}'a_{,}'m\sqrt{1-e_{,}'^{2}}}{\mu e_{,}'}\{2B'e_{,}' + Ce_{,}\cos(\varpi_{,}' - \varpi_{,})\};$$

observing that C is the same for m and m', (Art. 372).

To integrate these equations assume

$$r = e_{,}\sin\varpi_{,}, \quad s = e_{,}\cos\varpi_{,},$$
$$r' = e_{,}'\sin\varpi_{,}', \quad s' = e_{,}'\cos\varpi_{,}';$$

$$\therefore \frac{dr}{dt} = e_{,}\cos\varpi_{,}\frac{d\varpi_{,}}{dt} + \frac{de_{,}}{dt}\sin\varpi_{,}$$

$$= \frac{n_{,}a_{,}m'}{\mu}\{2Be_{,}\cos\varpi_{,} + Ce_{,}'\cos\varpi_{,}'\}$$

$$= \frac{n_{,}a_{,}m'}{\mu}\{2Bs + Cs'\},$$

$$\frac{ds}{dt} = -e_{,}\sin\varpi_{,}\frac{d\varpi_{,}}{dt} + \frac{de_{,}}{dt}\cos\varpi_{,}$$

$$= -\frac{n_{,}a_{,}m'}{\mu}\{2Br + Cr'\},$$

$$\frac{dr'}{dt} = \frac{n_{,}'a_{,}'m}{\mu}\{2B's' + Cs\},$$

$$\frac{ds'}{dt} = -\frac{n_{,}'a_{,}'m}{\mu}\{2B'r' + Cr\}.$$

$$\left\{g - \frac{2n_{,}a_{,}m'B}{\mu}\right\} \cdot \left\{g - \frac{2n_{,}'a_{,}'mB'}{\mu}\right\} = \frac{n_{,}n_{,}'a_{,}a_{,}'mm'C^2}{\mu^2};$$

$$\therefore\ g = \frac{n_{,}a_{,}m'B + n_{,}'a_{,}'mB'}{\mu} \pm \frac{1}{\mu}\sqrt{(n_{,}a_{,}m'B - n_{,}'a_{,}'mB')^2 + n_{,}n_{,}'a_{,}a_{,}'mm'C^2}.$$

In a similar way we might shew that h has the same values.

Now these values of g and h are possible when $n_{,}$ and $n_{,}'$ have the same sign; that is, when the planets revolve in the same direction about the Sun. But even if they do not revolve in the same direction and $n_{,}a_{,}m'B + n_{,}'a_{,}'mB'$ be not less than $\sqrt{n_{,}n_{,}'a_{,}a_{,}'m'mC}$, then g and h are still possible.

Now $e_{,}^2 = r^2 + s^2 = D^2 + E^2 + 2DE\cos\{(g-h)t + k - l\}$, and a similar expression is true for $e_{,}'^2$.

This shews that the eccentricity of m's orbit fluctuates between the limits $D+E$ and $D\sim E$. Hence the *form* of the orbit will be stable: the same is true of m''s orbit.

The values of D and E are very small in all the planets, this is shewn by observation.*

The periods of the changes in the eccentricities of the orbits of the two planets are the same in each, being $\frac{360^0}{g-h}$. In the case of Jupiter and Saturn this equals 70414 years! The greatest and least eccentricities which Jupiter's orbit can attain are 0.06036 and 0.02606, and those of Saturn 0.08409 and 0.01345; the maximum of each taking place at the time of the minimum of the other, and vice versâ.

PROP. *To find the secular variation of the longitude of the perihelion.*

386. By Art. 385, $\tan \varpi_1 = \frac{r}{s}$

$$= \frac{D\sin(gt+k) + E\sin(ht+l)}{D\cos(gt+k) + E\cos(ht+l)}$$

The maxima and minima values of ϖ_1, or the greatest deviations of the perihelion, from its mean place are found by the equation

$$gD^2 + hE^2 + DE(g+h)\cos\{(g-h)t + (k-l)\} = 0,$$

$$\text{or } \cos\{(g-h)t + (k-l)\} = -\frac{gD^2+hE^2}{DE(g+h)}$$

which is obtained by equating to zero the differential coefficient of $\tan \varpi_1$.

* Sir John Herschel finds that

$$D = -0.01715, \quad E = 0.04321 \text{ for Jupiter,}$$

$$D' = 0.04877, \quad E' = 0.03532 \text{ for Saturn,}$$

$$g = 21''.9905, \quad h = 3''.5851, \quad k = 306^0\,34'\,40'', \quad l = 210^0\,16'\,40'',$$

t being the number of *years* since the year A.D. 1700. See Article *Physical Astronomy* in *Encyclop. Metrop.*

$$\frac{d\Omega_i}{dt} = \frac{n_i a_i' a_i^2 m' D_1}{4\mu} \left\{ -1 + \frac{\tan i_i'}{\tan i_i} \cos(\Omega_i - \Omega_i') \right\},$$

and for the planet m'

$$\frac{d \tan i_i'}{dt} = \frac{n_i' a_i' m a_i a_i' a_i \tan i_i D_1}{4\mu} \sin(\Omega_i' - \Omega_i)$$

$$\frac{d\Omega_i'}{dt} = \frac{n_i' a_i'^2 a_i m D_1}{4\mu} \left\{ -1 + \frac{\tan i}{\tan i_i'} \cos(\Omega_i' - \Omega_i) \right\}.$$

To integrate these, assume

$$p = \tan i_i \sin \Omega_i, \quad q = \tan i_i \cos \Omega_i$$

$$p' = \tan i_i' \sin \Omega_i', \quad q' = \tan i_i' \cos \Omega_i';$$

$$\therefore \frac{dp}{dt} = \tan i_i \cos \Omega_i \frac{d\Omega_i}{dt} + \sin \Omega_i \frac{d \tan i_i}{dt}$$

$$= \frac{n_i a_i^2 a_i' m' D_1}{4\mu} (q' - q)$$

$$\frac{dq}{dt} = \frac{n_i a_i^2 a_i' m' D_1}{4\mu} (p - p'),$$

$$\frac{dp'}{dt} = \frac{n_i' a_i' a_i'^2 m D_1}{4\mu} (q - q'), \quad \frac{dq'}{dt} = \frac{n_i' a_i' a_i'^2 m D_1}{4\mu} (p' - p).$$

The integrals are of the form

$$p = G \sin(\alpha t + \gamma) + H \sin(\beta t + \epsilon), \quad q = G \cos(\alpha t + \gamma) - H \cos(\beta t + \epsilon),$$

$$p' = G' \sin(\alpha t + \gamma) + H' \sin(\beta t + \epsilon), \quad q' = G' \cos(\alpha t + \gamma) - H' \cos(\beta t + \epsilon).$$

Substituting in the differential equations we have

$$G\alpha = \frac{n_1 a_1^2 a_1' m' D_1}{4\mu}(G'-G),\quad H\beta = \frac{n_1 a_1^2 a_1' m' D_1}{4\mu}(H'-H),$$

$$G'\alpha = \frac{n_1' a_1 a_1'^2 m D_1}{4\mu}(G-G'),\quad H'\beta = \frac{n_1' a_1 a_1'^2 m D_1}{4\mu}(H-H').$$

Eliminating G from the first and third

$$\left(\alpha + \frac{n_1 a_1^2 a_1' m' D_1}{4\mu}\right)\left(\alpha + \frac{n_1' a_1 a_1'^2 m D_1}{4\mu}\right) = \frac{n_1 n_1' a_1^3 a_1'^3 m m' D_1^2}{16\mu^2};$$

$$\therefore\ \alpha^2 + \frac{(n_1 a_1 m' + n_1' a_1' m)\, a_1 a_1' D_1}{4\mu}\alpha = 0.$$

We should arrive at the same equation for β: hence

$$\alpha = -\frac{n_1 a_1 m' + n_1' a_1' m}{4\mu} a_1 a_1' D_1 \text{ and } \beta = 0,$$

$$\tan^2 i_1 = p^2 + q^2 = G^2 + H^2 + 2GH\cos\{\alpha t + \gamma - \delta\}.$$

Observation proves that G and H are very small for all the planets (except the Asteroids). Hence the tangent of inclination fluctuates between the small limits $G + H$ and $G \sim H$*.

The period of the changes in the inclination equals $\frac{360^0}{\alpha}$ years. In the case of Jupiter and Saturn the number of years is 50673! The maximum and minimum inclinations of Jupiter's orbit to the ecliptic are $2^0\ 2'\ 30''$ and $1^0\ 17'\ 10''$: and those of Saturn are $2^0\ 32'\ 40''$ and $0^0\ 47'$. The maximum of each takes place at the time of the minimum of the other, and vice versâ.

* Sir John Herschel shews that when Jupiter and Saturn are the two planets,

$G = -0.00661$, $H = -0.02905$ for Jupiter.

$G' = 0.01537$, $H' = 0.02905$ for Saturn.

$\alpha = -25''.5756$, $\gamma = 125^0\ 15'\ 40''$, $\delta = 103^0\ 38'\ 40''$,

t being the number of years since A.D. 1700.

PROP. *To find the secular variation of the longitude of the node.*

388. By Art. 378, we have

$$\tan \Omega_{,} = \frac{p}{q} = \frac{G \sin (at + \gamma) + H \sin \delta}{G \cos (at + \gamma) + H \cos \delta}.$$

When $\Omega_{,}$ attains a maximum or minimum value the differential coefficient of $\tan \Omega_{,}$ equals zero: hence

$$0 = a G^2 + GHa \cos (at + \gamma - \delta);$$

$$\therefore \cos (at + \gamma - \delta) = -\frac{G}{H}.$$

If this (disregarding the sign) be not greater than unity, then the node fluctuates, the period of its fluctuation being $\frac{360^0}{a}$ years. But if this be greater than unity then there cannot be any stationary positions; but the node continually moves in one direction.

In the case of Saturn and Jupiter the node oscillates, the extent of oscillation being about $13^0\ 9'\ 46''$ in Jupiter's orbit and $31^0\ 56'\ 20''$ in Saturn's on either side of their mean positions: the plane of the ecliptic being supposed immoveable.

389. The conclusions at which we have arrived in Arts. 379—383, with regard to the stability of the planetary system are of especial interest. In consequence of the changes in the elements we might have fancied that in the lapse of ages the orbits would undergo such alterations in their dimensions as to bring the planets into collision or hurry them into boundless space. But we are assured that this can never be the case, unless by the action of a resisting medium; since analysis shews us that the orbits will continually fluctuate within very small limits, never departing considerably from circles; and the inclinations of the orbits will never change much.

390. Our calculations have not included the square of the disturbing forces. But the same conclusions are found to hold when the approximation is carried so far as analysts have at present advanced: see the *Mécanique Céleste*, Liv. VI; Pon-

técoulant's *Système du Monde*, Tom. III; Plana's *Planetary Theory* in the *Memoirs of the Astronomical Society*, Vol. II.; also a Memoir by Professor Hansen of Seeberg, the title of this Memoir is *Untersuchung ueber die gegenseitigen Störungen des Jupiters und Saturns*. In this method the true longitude is computed by means of the elements corresponding to the *invariable ellipse at the time of the epoch*, taking a function of t, instead of t, which corrects for the perturbations. See M. Pontécoulant's remarks on this in the *Connaissance des Tems* for 1837. And lastly Mr Lubbock's papers in the Transactions of the Royal Society and of the Astronomical Society may be consulted.

PROP. *To shew how the masses of the planets may be discovered.*

391. There are in general two methods of determining the masses of the planets; either by observing the elongations of a satellite, when the planet is accompanied by a satellite; or by comparing the inequalities produced in their motion by their mutual action. The secular variations are best adapted to give the most exact results; but these are not yet known with sufficient accuracy to allow of this use. We are therefore obliged to recur to the periodic variations, and, by combining a vast number of observations, gather from them the most probable results. It is by these means that Astronomers have obtained the following results.

Mass of Sun 1

..... Mercury ..... $\frac{1}{1909706}$

..... Venus ..... $\frac{1}{401839}$

..... Earth ..... $\frac{1}{356354}$

..... Mars ..... $\frac{1}{2680337}$

.... Herschel ..... $\frac{1}{17918}$.

these from M. Pontécoulant, *Système du*
p. 341. The following is the formula for
ıss when the planet has a satellite.
ɔe the masses of the Sun, the planet, and the
ɜ periodic times of the planet about the Sun,
ıbout the planet: A, a the mean distances of
the Sun, and the satellite from the planet.
9,

$$, \; t = \frac{2\pi a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{M+m}}; \quad \therefore \; \frac{M+m}{1+M} = \frac{a^3}{A^3}\,\frac{T^2}{t^2};$$

(if we neglect m) $M = \dfrac{1}{\dfrac{A^3}{a^3}\,\dfrac{t^2}{T^2} - 1}$.

piter and his fourth satellite, we find by this
$\frac{}{.69}$: this is more properly the mass of Ju-
his fourth satellite.
lue of the mass of Jupiter determined by
/. Liv. VI. §. 21.) is $\frac{1}{1067.09}$, and is founded
[illegible] of the satellites by Bouvard. These

makes it $\frac{1}{1050.117}$ by observing the motion of Vesta, and $\frac{1}{1054.4}$ by observations on the comet which bears his name. All these concur in proving that the mass of Jupiter assumed by Laplace is too small by about $\frac{1}{70}$th part. The observations of Bouvard, however, are at variance with this: he gives $\frac{1}{1070.5}$. The mass of the Earth may be determined as follows.

The attraction of the Earth on a body at its surface in the parallel of which the square of the sine of the latitude is $\frac{1}{3}$, is very nearly the same as if the Earth were condensed into its centre: as we shall see in *the Figure of the Earth* in a subsequent Chapter. Let $\sin^2 l = \frac{1}{3}$, g = gravity in latitude l, b the mean radius of the Earth, 1 and E the masses of the Sun and Earth, T the length of the year, a the mean radius of the Earth's orbit: hence

$$g = \frac{E}{b^2} \text{ and } T = 2\pi a^{\frac{3}{2}}; \quad \therefore E = \frac{T^2 g}{4\pi^2} \frac{b^2}{a^3},$$

$$\frac{b}{a} = \sin \text{ Sun's parallax} = \sin 8''.7.$$

The mass of the Moon $= \frac{1}{74}$ nearly. *Méc. Cél.* Liv. VI. §. 44. But this is not yet very satisfactorily determined: we have seen no value deduced from the observations mentioned in Art. 348.

392. We extract the following Table from M. Pontécoulant's *Système du Monde*. These results are obtained by the methods mentioned in Art. 270.

Epoch is Jan. 1. 1800.	Mean Motions in a Year of 365¼ Days.	Mean Distance from Sun.	Eccentricities.	Longitudes of Epochs.	Longitudes of Perihelia.	Inclinations.	Longitudes of Ascending Node.
Mercury	5323416″.79	0.38709812	0.2055149	110° 13′ 17″.9	74° 21′ 41″	7° 00′ 9″	45° 57′ 39″
Venus	2106641 .52	0.72333230	0.0068531	145 56 52 .1	128 43 6	3 23 29	74 52 39
Earth	1295977 .35	1.00000000	0.0168536	100 23 32 .6	99 29 53	0 00 00	0 00 00
Mars	689051 .12	1.52369352	0.0933061	232 49 50 .5	332 23 40	1 50 6	48 00 26
Jupiter	109256 .29	5.20116636	0.0481621	81 52 10 .3	11 7 36	1 18 52	98 25 45
Saturn	43996 .72	9.53787090	0.0561505	123 5 29 .4	89 8 20	2 29 38	111 56 7
Herschel	15424 .54	19.18330500	0.0466108	173 30 16 .6	167 30 24	46 26	72 59 21

Table of Secular Inequalities of the Planets calculated for the beginning of the Year 1801.

	In the Eccentricity.	In the Long. of Perihelion.	In the Long. of the Node.	In the Inclin. of Orbit to Ecliptic.
Mercury	0.000003867	9′ 43″.5	− 13′ 22″	19″.8
Venus	0.000062711	4′ 28″	− 31′ 10″	4″.5
Earth	0.000041200	11″.9496		
Mars	0.000090176	26″.22	− 38′ 48″	1″.5
Jupiter	0.00015935	11′ 4″	− 26′ 17″	23″
Saturn	0.000312402	31′ 17″	− 37′ 54″	15′ 5″
Herschel	0.000025072	4′	− 59′ 57″	3″.7

To obtain equations for calculating the effect of a resisting medium upon a comet we must refer the reader to the *Mécanique Céleste*, and also to Mr Airy's translation of the dissertation on Encke's Comet in the *Astronomische Nachrichten*.

Also for a very interesting paper on the orbits of revolving double stars the reader is referred to Vol. v. of the *Memoirs of the Astronomical Society*, in which Sir John F. W. Herschel has treated the subject in a very original manner.

The following are Tables of the elements of the four small planets Vesta, Juno, Pallas, and Ceres: and of the four known periodical comets. The comet of Olbers has been observed only once, at the time of its return to the perihelion in 1815: the others have been observed in several successive revolutions. It must be remarked that the elements of the small planets given in the Table are not their *mean* values, but their values at the specified epoch.

$84^d\ 17^m\ 03^s$	$195^d\ 33^m\ 26^s$	$249^d\ 11^m\ 37^s$	$103^d\ 20^m\ 28^s$	$7^d\ 07^m\ 57^s$	0.0885601	977".75540	2.361
74 39 44	20 22 31	54 17 13	170 52 34	13 02 10	0.2555592	813 .52533	2.669
290 38 12	169 33 11	121 05 01	172 38 30	34 35 49	0.2419986	768 .54421	2.772
307 03 26	159 22 02	147 41 23	80 53 50	10 36 56	0.0767379	769 .26059	2.770

Period	Time of Perihelion Passage.	Longitude of Perihelion on the Orbit.	Longitude of Asc. Node.	Inclination.	Eccentricity.
76 years	Nov. 7, 1835	$304^d\ 31^m\ 43^s$	$55^d\ 30^m$	$17^d\ 44^m\ 24^s$	0.9675212
74 years	Ap. 26, 1815	149 02	83 29	44 30	0.9313
1201 days	Jan. 10, 1829	157 18 35	334 24 15"	13 22 34	0.8446862
6.7 years	Nov. 27, 1832	109 56 45	218 12 24	13 13 13	0.751748

CHAPTER VII.

MOTION OF A PARTICLE ON CURVES AND SURFACES. SIMPLE PENDULUM.

PROP. *A material particle moves on a curve in a ver-l plane, and acted upon by gravity: required to determine tion.*

393. Let A be the lowest point of the curve (fig. 94.) the axis of x drawn vertically upwards: P the position ne body on the curve AP at the time t: $AM=x$, $MP=y$: be the pressure of the curve against the body, this acts the normal line PG: M the mass of the body: then $\frac{R}{M}$ the accelerating force resulting from the action of R t. 225): g the force of gravity.

Now the forces acting vertically are g downwards and $\frac{R}{M}\cos PGM$ or $\frac{R}{M}\frac{dy}{ds}$ upwards, the only horizontal force is $\frac{R}{M}\frac{dx}{ds}$.

Hence, attending to the *directions* of the forces, we have the following equations of motion:

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -g + \frac{R}{M}\frac{dy}{ds} \ldots\ldots(1), \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -\frac{R}{M}\frac{dx}{ds} \ldots\ldots(2).$$

Multiply these respectively by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$, $2\frac{dy}{dt}$ and add, then

$$2\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + 2\frac{dy}{dt}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -2g\frac{dx}{dt} + \frac{2R}{M}\left(\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{dy}{ds} - \frac{dy}{dt}\frac{dx}{ds}\right)$$

$$= -2g\frac{dx}{dt};$$

$$\therefore \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} = \text{const.} - 2gx,$$

$$\text{or } \frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = \text{const.} - 2gx.$$

At the commencement of the motion let $x = h$;

$$\therefore 0 = \text{const.} - 2gh;$$

$$\therefore \frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = 2g(h - x).$$

This expression shews that the velocity at any time is independent of the form of the curve on which the body moves; and depends solely on the vertical space through which it passes.

Extracting the square root and inverting the two sides of the equation

$$-\frac{dt}{ds} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2g}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{h-x}}$$

the negative sign being taken because s diminishes as t increases (Note in page 208).

$$\therefore t = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{2g}} \int \frac{dx}{\sqrt{h-x}} \frac{ds}{dx}.$$

We must determine $\frac{ds}{dx}$ from the equation to the curve by the formula $\frac{ds}{dx} = \sqrt{1 + \frac{dy^2}{dx^2}}$, then by integration we shall know t in terms of x and therefore x in terms of t. In this manner, then, we shall know the velocity and position of the body at every assigned instant.

PROP. *To find the pressure upon the curve.*

394. The equations of motion being

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -g + \frac{R}{M}\frac{dy}{ds}, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -\frac{R}{M}\frac{dx}{ds}$$

we multiply them respectively by $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dx}{dt}$ and subtract;

$$\therefore \frac{dy}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} - \frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -g\frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{R}{M}\left(\frac{dy}{ds}\frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{dx}{ds}\frac{dx}{dt}\right)$$

$$= -g\frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{R}{M}\frac{ds}{dt}, \quad \because \frac{dy^2}{ds^2} + \frac{dx^2}{ds^2} = 1.$$

Now if ρ be the radius of curvature of the curve on which the body moves at the point (xy), then by the Differential Calculus

$$\frac{1}{\rho} = \frac{\frac{dy}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} - \frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}}{\frac{ds^3}{dt^3}}$$

t being a function of x and y, as is the case here:

$$\therefore \frac{R}{M} = g\frac{dy}{ds} + \frac{v^2}{\rho}; \quad v = \text{velocity}.$$

This expression shews that the pressure consists of two parts, one the part of the forces which act upon the body resolved along the normal, and the other the centrifugal force arising from the motion. (Art. 254.)

PROP. *A body moves on a cycloid, the axis of the cycloid being vertical: required to find the time of an oscillation and to shew that it is independent of the extent of the vibration.*

395. We have shewn that $\frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = 2g(h - x)$;

$$\therefore -\frac{dt}{ds} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2g}}\frac{1}{\sqrt{h-x}},$$

the negative sign being taken because the arc decreases as the time increases.

Now the equation to the cycloid is

$$y = \sqrt{2ax - x^2} + a \operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{x}{a},$$

the lowest point being the origin;

$$\therefore \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{a - x}{\sqrt{2ax - x^2}} + \frac{a}{\sqrt{2ax - x^2}} = \sqrt{\frac{2a - x}{x}};$$

$$\therefore \frac{ds}{dx} = \sqrt{1 + \frac{dy^2}{dx^2}} = \sqrt{\frac{2a}{x}}.$$

Hence $$\frac{dt}{dx} = \frac{dt}{ds}\frac{ds}{dx} = -\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}\frac{1}{\sqrt{hx - x^2}};$$

$$\therefore t = C - \sqrt{\frac{a}{g}} \operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{2x}{h}$$

when $t = 0$, $x = h$; $\therefore 0 = C - \sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}\pi$

$$t = \sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}\left\{\pi - \operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{2x}{h}\right\}$$

and, whenever the body stops, the velocity, or $\frac{ds}{dt} = 0$; and therefore $x = h$, and the values of $\operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{2x}{h}$ when $x = h$ are

$$\pm\pi, \pm 3\pi, \pm 5\pi, \ldots\ldots$$

and therefore the values of t are

$$2\pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}, \quad 4\pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}, \quad 6\pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}, \ldots\ldots$$

which shew that the body will oscillate backwards and forwards, the interval of time in which each oscillation is performed being $2\pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}$.

This expression is independent of h and therefore points out the remarkable fact that however large the arc of vibration be the time of oscillation is the same in all.

For this reason the cycloid is called a Tautochronous Curve. *

PROP. *A particle moves on a circular arc acted upon by gravity: required the time of oscillating through a given portion of the arc.*

396. As before $\frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = 2g(h-x)$ and the equation to the circle from the lowest point is $y^2 = 2ax - x^2$;

$$\therefore \frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{a-x}{\sqrt{2ax-x^2}}, \quad \frac{ds}{dx} = \sqrt{1+\frac{dy^2}{dx^2}} = \frac{a}{\sqrt{2ax-x^2}};$$

* It may be interesting to ascertain whether there are any other tautochronous curves when gravity is the force acting.

We have $\frac{dt}{dx} = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{2g}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{h-x}} \frac{ds}{dx}$

$$= -\frac{1}{\sqrt{2g}} \frac{ds}{dx} \left\{ \frac{1}{h^{\frac{1}{2}}} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{x}{h^{\frac{3}{2}}} + \frac{1.3}{2.4} \frac{x^2}{h^{\frac{5}{2}}} + \ldots\ldots + \frac{1.3\ldots(2n-1)}{2.4\ldots 2n} \frac{x^n}{h^{\frac{2n+1}{2}}} + \ldots\ldots \right\}.$$

Now $\frac{ds}{dx}$ is independent of h: and consequently the integral of the general term

$$-\frac{1}{\sqrt{2g}} \cdot \frac{1.3\ldots(2n-1)}{2.4\ldots 2n} \frac{x^n}{h^{\frac{2n+1}{2}}} \frac{ds}{dx}$$

must be of the form $c \cdot \left(\frac{x}{h}\right)^{\frac{2n+1}{2}}$, c being a constant, in order that when taken between the limits $x=0$ and $x=h$ the result may be independent of h: then

$$\int x^n \frac{ds}{dx} dx = \frac{A}{2n+1} x^{\frac{2n+1}{2}}, \ A \text{ a constant};$$

$$\therefore \frac{ds}{dx} = \frac{A}{2} x^{-\frac{1}{2}},$$

$$\therefore s = A x^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$s^2 = A^2 x,$$

and this is the equation to the cycloid and therefore this is the only tautochronous curve for gravity.

$$\therefore \frac{dt}{dx} = -\frac{a}{\sqrt{2g}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{(h-x)(2ax-x^2)}}.$$

We are not able to integrate this function of x: it is reducible to one of the class called Elliptic Transcendents, the properties of which Legendre has discussed in his *Traité des Fonctions Elliptiques:* tables are given of the approximate values of the integral for given values of x*.

By means of series, however, the integral can be obtained approximately.

$$\frac{dt}{dx} = -\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{hx-x^2}} \left(1-\frac{x}{2a}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$= -\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{hx-x^2}}$$

$$\times \left\{1 + \frac{1}{2}\frac{x}{2a} + \frac{1.3}{2.4}\left(\frac{x}{2a}\right)^2 + \ldots + \frac{1.3\ldots(2n-1)}{2.4\ldots 2n}\left(\frac{x}{2a}\right)^n + \ldots\right\}$$

Now $$\int \frac{x^n dx}{\sqrt{hx-x^2}} = \frac{2n-1}{2n} h \int \frac{x^{n-1}dx}{\sqrt{hx-x^2}} - \frac{x^{n-1}\sqrt{hx-x^2}}{n}$$

and between the limits $x = h$ and $x = 0$, we have

$$\int_h^0 \frac{x^n dx}{\sqrt{hx-x^2}} = \frac{2n-1}{2n} h \int_h^0 \frac{x^{n-1}dx}{\sqrt{hx-x^2}};$$

$$\therefore \int_h^0 \frac{x\,dx}{\sqrt{hx-x^2}} = \frac{h}{2}\operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{2x}{h} + \text{constant} = -\frac{\pi h}{2}.$$

* Let $x = h\sin^2\theta$: then $\theta = \frac{\pi}{2}$ when $x = h$ or $x = 0$:

$$\therefore \int \frac{dx}{\sqrt{(h-x)(2ax-x^2)}} = \int \frac{2\sin\theta\cos\theta d\theta}{\sqrt{\cos^2\theta(2a-h\sin^2\theta)\sin^2\theta}}$$

$$= \frac{2}{\sqrt{2a}} \int \frac{d\theta}{\sqrt{1-\frac{h}{2a}\sin^2\theta}}.$$

which is an elliptic function of the first order.

$$\int_h^0 \frac{x^2 dx}{\sqrt{hx - x^2}} = -\frac{1.3}{2.4}\pi h^2, \quad \int_h^0 \frac{x^3}{\sqrt{hx - x^2}} = -\frac{1.3.5}{2.4.6}\pi h^3$$

and so on;

$$\therefore T = \frac{\pi}{2}\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}$$

$$\times\left\{1 + \left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^2 \frac{h}{2a} + \left(\frac{1.3}{2.4}\right)^2 \left(\frac{h}{2a}\right)^2 + \ldots + \left(\frac{1.3\ldots(2n-1)}{2.4\ldots 2n}\right)^2 \left(\frac{h}{2a}\right)^n + \ldots\right\}.$$

When the arc of vibration is very small, then

$$T = \frac{\pi}{2}\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}$$

and the time of an oscillation $= \pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}$, which coincides with that in a cycloid, observing that the a in this case is four times the a in that.

The next approximation gives a correction of the time $= \frac{\pi}{2}\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}\frac{h}{8a}$; and the ratio this bears to the time of oscillation $= \frac{h}{8a} = (\frac{1}{4}$ chord of $\frac{1}{2}$ angle of oscillation$)^2$.

Thus if the body oscillate on each side of the vertical through an angle of which the chord is $\frac{1}{10}$, the time of oscillation will be greater by a $\frac{1}{1600}$th part than that calculated by the formula $\pi\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}$.

397. Instead of supposing the body to move on a curve, we may imagine it suspended by a string of invariable length, or a thin wire considered of no weight. In this case the instrument is called a *Pendulum*, and is of great importance in physical researches. For if l be the length of a pendulum oscillating in a second (or unit of time) then $\pi\sqrt{\frac{l}{g}} = 1$,

and $g = \pi^2 l$,

By this formula we may estimate the relative intensity of the Earth's attraction at different stations on the surface, above, or below it.

PROP. *A seconds pendulum is carried to the top of a mountain; required to find the height of the mountain by observing the change in the time of oscillation.*

398. Let r be the radius of the Earth, considered spherical; h the height of the mountain; l the length of the pendulum: the force of gravity on bodies outside of the Earth varies inversely as the square of the distance from the centre: hence $\frac{gr^2}{(r+h)^2}$ is gravity at the top of the mountain. Let n be the number of oscillations the pendulum makes in a day, or in $24 \times 60 \times 60$ seconds: then time of oscillation $= \frac{24 \times 60 \times 60}{n}$:

$$\therefore\ 1 = \pi \sqrt{\frac{l}{g}} \text{ and } \frac{24 \times 60 \times 60}{n} = \pi \sqrt{\frac{l(r+h)^2}{gr^2}} = \frac{\pi (r+h)}{r} \sqrt{\frac{l}{g}};$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{h}{r} = \frac{24 \times 60 \times 60}{n} - 1,$$

which gives the height of the mountain. For the sake of example suppose the pendulum loses $5''$ a day:

$$\text{then } n = 24 \times 60 \times 60 - 5,$$

$$\frac{h}{r} = \left(1 - \frac{1}{24 \times 12 \times 60}\right)^{-1} - 1 = \frac{1}{24 \times 12 \times 60} \text{ nearly};$$

$$\therefore\ h = \frac{4000}{24 \times 12 \times 60} = \tfrac{1}{4} \text{ mile nearly.}$$

PROP. *To find the depth of a mine by observing the change of oscillation in a seconds pendulum.*

399. The gravity in the interior of the Earth varies directly as the distance from the centre: if, then, h be the depth, $\frac{g(r-h)}{r}$ is gravity at the bottom of the mine:

$$\therefore 1 = \pi\sqrt{\frac{l}{g}},\quad \frac{24\times 60\times 60}{n} = \pi\sqrt{\frac{lr}{g(r-h)}};$$

$$\therefore 1 - \frac{h}{r} = \left(\frac{n}{24\times 60\times 60}\right)^2;$$

from which h can be found. If, as before, the pendulum lose $5''$ a day

$$\frac{h}{r} = 1 - \left(1 - \frac{1}{24\times 60\times 12}\right)^2 = \frac{1}{12\times 60\times 12} \text{ nearly};$$

$$\therefore h = \tfrac{1}{2} \text{ mile nearly.}$$

400. The results deduced by the pendulum, as far as we have at present explained its construction, would lead to erroneous conclusions; since we have supposed the rod supporting the *bob*, as the lower extremity is termed, to have no weight. We must leave the correction of this to a future part of the work, in which we shall shew that l must not be taken equal to the length of the pendulum; but some other expression which it is unnecessary to give here.

401. Owing to the remarkable property of the cycloid, that its evolute is an equal cycloid, we can easily make the bob of a flexible pendulum move in a cycloidal arc.

For let CA (fig. 95) be the pendulum when remaining at rest: PAP' the cycloid in which the bob is to move, the length of the axis being half that of the pendulum: CQ, CQ' the evolutes of PAP'. Now move the bob to the right, and let the upper portion of the pendulum bend round CQ and the other portion remain straight, touching CQ in Q. Then since CQ is the evolute of AP, the extremity of the pendulum will be in the curve AP: and by this contrivance the bob will be made to describe the cycloid PAP'.

This suggests the following means of correcting a common pendulum which makes small oscillations. Let a small portion of the upper extremity be flexible: (consisting of watch spring, &c.) and let it be suspended between two cycloidal cheeks, as in fig. 96. Then the small oscillations of the bob will be in

a cycloid, and in the expression for the time of oscillation the correction depending on $\frac{h}{2a}$ is avoided: see Art. 396.

402. The following Table contains the results of experiments with a seconds pendulum on various parts of the Earth. It is extracted from the *Mécanique Céleste*.

Places.	Latitudes.	Lengths of a Seconds Pendulum.
Peru	0°.00	0.99669
Porto Bello	10.61	0.99689
Pondicherry	13.25	0.99710
Jamaica	20.00	0.99745
Petit-Goave	20.50	0.99728
Cape of Good Hope	37.69	0.99877
Toulouse	48.44	0.99950
Vienna	53.57	0.99987
Paris	54.26	1.00000
Gotha	56.63	1.00006
London	57.22	1.00018
Petersburgh	64.72	1.00074
Arensgberg	66.60	1.00101
Ponoi	74.22	1.00137
Lapland	74.53	1.00148

403. Mr Airy, in a Paper which was read before the Philosophical Society of Cambridge in the year 1826, has reduced the usual theorems for the alteration in the time and extent of vibration produced by the difference between cycloidal and circular arcs, by the resistance of the air, by the friction at the point of suspension, and by other disturbing causes, to

a very general investigation which leads to results remarkable for their simplicity. Since the principle of the pendulum is of vast importance in physical researches we shall not scruple to introduce large extracts from this valuable communication.

PROP. *A pendulum is acted upon by a small disturbing force: required the alteration in the time and extent of its oscillations.*

404. We shall suppose that the undisturbed pendulum moves with its extremity in a cycloidal arc, since in this case the calculation is not approximate.

Let s be the distance of the pendulum at the time t from the lowest point of the cycloid, s being measured along the arc described, l the length of the pendulum. Then the resolved part of gravity along the tangent is $g\frac{dx}{ds}$, x being measured vertically upwards: and $s^2 = 2lx$ is the equation to the cycloid;

$$\therefore\ g\frac{dx}{ds} = \frac{g}{l}s.$$

Wherefore the equation of motion of the bob of the pendulum is

$$\frac{d^2s}{dt^2} = -\frac{g}{l}s, \quad \text{or if } n^2 = \frac{g}{l},$$

$$\frac{d^2s}{dt^2} + n^2 s = 0.$$

The solution of this equation is

$$s = a\sin(nt + b),$$

where a and b are arbitrary constant quantities depending on the length of the arc of vibration and the time of passing the lowest point.

The velocity at time $t = \frac{ds}{dt} = na\cos(nt + b)$.

We shall now suppose that f is a small disturbing accelerating force resolved along the tangent: the equation of motion then is

$$\frac{d^2s}{dt^2} + n^2 s = f.$$

The solution of this equation we shall assume to be

$$s = a \sin (nt + b)$$

(conformably to the principle of the variation of parameters) a and b being considered unknown functions of t, which it is our business now to determine.

Since there are two functions a and b we may assume any relation between them that we please, since we have but one quantity (s) to determine. Let this assumption be that the velocity is still expressed by $na \cos (nt + b)$: the convenience of this we shall soon discover.

Now $s = a \sin (nt + b)$;

$$\therefore \frac{ds}{dt} = na \cos (nt + b) + \frac{da}{dt} \sin (nt + b) + a \cos (nt + b) \frac{db}{dt},$$

$$\text{and } \therefore \frac{da}{dt} \sin (nt + b) + a \cos (nt + b) \frac{db}{dt} = 0,$$

this is the assumed relation between a and b.

$$\text{Again since } \frac{ds}{dt} = na \cos (nt + b);$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2s}{dt^2} = -n^2 a \sin (nt+b) + n \frac{da}{dt} \cos (nt+b) - na \sin (nt+b) \frac{db}{dt},$$

in this substitute for $\frac{d^2s}{dt^2}$ its value;

$$\therefore n \frac{da}{dt} \cos (nt + b) - na \sin (nt + b) \frac{db}{dt} = f,$$

this is the second equation between a and b.

Eliminating successively $\frac{db}{dt}$ and $\frac{da}{dt}$ from these, we have

$$\frac{da}{dt} = \frac{f}{n}\cos(nt+b), \quad \frac{db}{dt} = -\frac{f}{na}\sin(nt+b).$$

If we could solve these equations we should have the complete determination of the motion. In few cases is this practicable: in all to which we shall have to apply the investigation an approximation is sufficient.

We suppose f to be a very small force. Hence the variable parts of a and b are of the same order of magnitude as f and consequently may be neglected on the right-hand side of the above equations if we agree to neglect the square and higher powers of f.

In order to find the alteration in the extent of vibration which takes place in one oscillation we must integrate $\frac{f}{n}\cos(nt+b)$ through the limits of t corresponding to one oscillation: that is from a value of t which gives $nt+b=a$ to the value of t which gives $nt+b=\pi+a$. Here a may be any quantity: in different cases we shall find it convenient to integrate between different limits.

$$\therefore \textit{ increase of arc of semi-vibration} = \frac{1}{n}\int f\cos(nt+b)\,dt$$

between the above-mentioned limits.

To find the alteration in the time of oscillation, let T, T' be the values of t at two successive arrivals of the pendulum at the lowest point; B, B' the values of b at these times. Then

$$nT+B = m\,.\,\pi, \quad nT'+B' = (m+1)\,.\,\pi;$$

$$\therefore\ n(T'-T)+B'-B=\pi,$$

$$T'-T = \frac{\pi}{n} - \frac{1}{n}(B'-B).$$

$$\text{Now } B'-B = \int_T^{T'}\frac{db}{dt}\,dt = -\frac{1}{na}\int_T^{T'} f\sin(nt+b)\,dt$$

between the proper limits;

$\therefore$ the increase of time of oscillation $= \frac{1}{n^2 a} \int_T f \sin(nt + b)\, dt$,

and *the proportionate increase of time of oscillation*

$$= \frac{1}{\pi n a} \int_T f \sin(nt + b)\, dt.$$

If the circumstances are such that we must integrate through two vibrations, then

proportionate increase of time of osc. $= \frac{1}{2\pi n a} \int f \sin(nt + b)\, dt.$

These formulæ are convenient when f can be expressed in terms of t. If however f be expressed in terms of s, as is the case particularly in clock escapements, we must modify the formulæ

$$\frac{da}{ds} = \frac{da}{dt}\frac{dt}{ds} = \frac{1}{na\cos(nt + b)} \frac{da}{dt} = \frac{f}{n^2 a},$$

$$\text{and } \frac{db}{ds} = \frac{1}{na\cos(nt + b)} \frac{db}{dt}$$

$$= -\frac{f}{n^2 a^2} \tan(nt + b) = -\frac{f}{n^2 a^2} \frac{s}{\sqrt{a^2 - s^2}};$$

$\therefore$ *increase of arc of semi-vibration* $= \frac{1}{n^2 a} \int_0^s f ds$,

proportionate increase of the time of vib^n. $= \frac{1}{\pi n^2 a^2} \int_0^s \frac{f s ds}{\sqrt{a^2 - s^2}}$.

We shall subjoin a variety of examples.

Ex. 1. *Instead of vibrating in a cycloid let the pendulum vibrate in a circle.*

Here the force $= g \sin \frac{s}{l} = \frac{gs}{l} - \frac{gs^3}{6l}$ nearly;

$$\therefore f = \frac{g}{6l} s - \frac{ga}{6l} \sin(nt + b).$$

therefore proportionate increase in time of vibration

$$= \frac{ga^2}{6\pi n l^3} \int \sin^4 (nt + b)\, dt.$$

Now $\int \sin^4 (nt+b)\, dt = \frac{1}{8} \int \{3 - 4\cos 2(nt+b) + \cos 4(nt+b)\}\, dt$

$$= \frac{1}{8} \left\{3t - \frac{2}{n} \sin 2(nt+b) + \frac{1}{4n} \sin 4(nt+b)\right\} + C$$

$$= \frac{3}{8} \frac{\pi}{n}, \text{ from } nt + b = 0 \text{ to } \pi;$$

$\therefore$ proportionate increase of time $= \frac{ga^2}{16 n^2 l^2} = \frac{a^2}{16 l^2}$ since $n^2 = \frac{g}{l}$.

The increase of arc of vib. $= \frac{ga^3}{6nl^3} \int \cos (nt + b) \sin^3 (nt + b)\, dt$

$$= \frac{ga^3}{24 n^2 l^3} \sin^4 (nt + b) + C = 0 \text{ between the limits,}$$

as we might easily have foreseen.

Ex. 2. ***Suppose the friction at the point of suspension to be constant.***

Here $f = -c$, since the friction ***retards*** the motion; and the motion is considered ***from*** the lowest point. It will be convenient to take the integrals during that time in which the friction acts in the same direction: that is, from the beginning of a vibration to its end, or from $nt + b = -\frac{\pi}{2}$ to $nt + b = \frac{\pi}{2}$;

$\therefore$ increase of arc $= -\frac{c}{n} \int \cos (nt + b)\, dt$

$$= -\frac{c}{n^2} \sin (nt + b) + C = -\frac{2c}{n^2},$$

proportionate increase of time $= -\frac{c}{\pi n a} \int \sin (nt + b)\, dt$

between the limits $nt + b = -\frac{\pi}{2}$ and $\frac{\pi}{2}$.

Ex. 3. *Suppose the resistance of the air to produce a force varying as the* m^{th} *power of the velocity or* $= kv^m$, m *being any whole number.*

The velocity in moving from the lowest point

$$= \frac{ds}{dt} = na \cos(nt + b);$$

$$\therefore f = -kn^m a^m \cos^m(nt + b);$$

therefore increase of arc

$$= -kn^{m-1}a^m \int \cos^{m+1}(nt + b)\, dt \text{ from } nt + b = -\frac{\pi}{2} \text{ to } \frac{\pi}{2}$$

$$= -k\pi n^{m-2}a^m \frac{m(m-2) \ldots\ldots 1}{(m+1)(m-1) \ldots 2} \quad (m \text{ odd})$$

$$= -2kn^{m-2}a^m \frac{m(m-2) \ldots\ldots 2}{(m+1)(m-1) \ldots 3} \quad (m \text{ even}).$$

When $m = 2$ (the law usually taken) the decrease of the arc $= \frac{4ka^2}{3}$.

The proportionate increase of time of oscillation

$$= -\frac{k}{\pi} n^{m-1}a^{m-1} \int \cos^m(nt + b) \sin(nt + b)\, dt$$

$$= -\frac{kn^{m-2}a^{m-1}}{\pi(m+1)} \cos^{m+1}(nt + b) + C$$

$= 0$ between $nt + b = -\frac{\pi}{2}$ and $\frac{\pi}{2}$

whether m be a positive integer or fraction

Ex. 4. *Suppose the resistance of the air is expressed by any function of the velocity.*

Here $f = \phi(v)$ for the descent and $-\phi(v)$ for the ascent, and the increase of the arc of vibration

$$= \frac{1}{n^3 a} \int \phi(v) \frac{\cos(nt+b)}{\sin(nt+b)} dv = \frac{1}{n^3 a} \int \frac{v\phi(v)dv}{\sqrt{n^2a^2 - v^2}}$$

from $v = 0$ to $v = 0$ again. But it must be observed that from $v = 0$ to $v = na$ (that is, from $s = -a$ to $s = 0$) the radical must be taken with a negative sign, because $\sin(nt+b)$ is then negative. The increase of the arc is consequently

$$-\frac{1}{n^3 a} \int_0^{na} \frac{v\phi(v)\,dv}{\sqrt{n^2a^2 - v^2}} + \frac{1}{n^3 a} \int_{na}^{0} \frac{v\phi(v)\,dv}{\sqrt{n^2a^2 - v^2}},$$

$$\text{and therefore decrease} = \frac{2}{n^3 a} \int_0^{na} \frac{v\phi(v)\,dv}{\sqrt{n^2a^2 - v^2}}.$$

The proportionate increase of time of vibration

$$= -\frac{1}{\pi n a} \int \phi(v) \sin(nt+b)\,dt = \frac{1}{\pi n^3 a^2} \int \phi(v)\,dv$$

$$= \frac{1}{\pi n^3 a^2} \psi(v) = 0, \text{ from } v = 0 \text{ to } v = 0.$$

Hence a resistance which is constant, or which depends on the velocity, does not alter the time of vibration.

Ex. 5. *Let the resistance be that produced by a current of air moving in the plane of vibration with a velocity* V *greater than the greatest velocity of the pendulum: and varying as the square of their relative velocity.*

Here $\phi(v) = -k(V - v)^2$ when the pendulum moves in the direction of the current

$\phi(v) = k(V + v)^2$ when it moves in the opposite direction.

By the formula in the last Example, when the pendulum moves in the direction of the current, the arc is increased by

$k\left(\frac{}{n^2} - \frac{}{n} + \frac{}{3}\right)$ and when it returns the arc is diminished by $k\left(\frac{2V^2}{n^2} + \frac{Va\pi}{n} + \frac{4a^2}{3}\right)$.

The diminution in two vibrations $= \frac{2kVa\pi}{n}$. The time is unaffected.

Ex. 6. *Let a force* F *act through a very small space* x *at the distance* c *from the lowest point.*

The increase of the arc $= \frac{1}{n^2 a}\int_c^{c+x} F\,ds = \frac{Fx}{n^2 a}$ nearly.

The proportionate increase of the time of vibration

$$= \frac{1}{\pi n^2 a^2}\int_c^{c+x} \frac{F s\,ds}{\sqrt{a^2 - s^2}},$$

if the general value of the integral be $\phi(s)$, then the proportionate increase of time $= \phi(c+x) - \phi(c) = \phi'(c)x$

$$= \frac{Fx}{\pi n^2 a^2}\,\frac{c}{\sqrt{a^2 - c^2}}.$$

If, then, an impulse be given when the pendulum is at its lowest point, $c = 0$ and the time of vibration is unaffected.

405. Since the preceding theory is applicable to every case in which a pendulum is acted on by small forces, it can be applied to determine the effect produced on the motion of the pendulum of a clock, or the balance of a watch, by the machinery which serves to maintain that motion.

If a pendulum vibrate uninfluenced by any external forces except that of gravity, the resistance of the air and the friction of the point of suspension gradually reduce the extent of vibration. But this diminution goes on very slowly. A pendulum suspended on knife edges has been observed to vibrate more than seven hours before its arc was reduced from two degrees to $\frac{1}{5}$th of a degree. In order to maintain vibrations of the same or nearly the same length (which for clocks is indispensable) a force must act on the pendulum: this force is

generally given by the action of a tooth of the seconds wheel on the inclined surfaces of small arms or pallets carried by the pendulum: and the whole apparatus is called an *escapement*.

Now it appears from Examples 2, 3, 4 and 5 of the last Article, that the friction and the resistance of the air do not affect the time of vibration. The maintaining force, therefore, must be impressed in such a manner as not to alter the time of vibration. The escapements of clocks in general use may be divided into the three following classes: recoil escapements, dead-beat escapements, and the escapements in which the action of the wheels raises a small weight which by its descent accelerates the pendulum: this last is Cumming's escapement. A full discussion of these will be found in Mr Airy's communication. He comes to the conclusion that the dead-beat escapement is far superior to any other.

406. In this the wheel acts on the pallet for a small space near the middle of the vibration, and during the remainder of the vibration it has no effect except in producing a slight friction. The impact also at the beat does not tend to accelerate or retard the pendulum. Neglecting then the consideration of the friction, we have a constant force F, which begins to act when $x = -c$ and ceases when $x = c'$. Hence by Ex. 6. of last Article, proportionate increase of time

$$= \frac{F}{\pi n^2 a^2} \int_{-c}^{c'} \frac{s\,ds}{\sqrt{a^2 - s^2}} = \frac{F}{\pi n^2 a^2} \left\{ \sqrt{a^2 - c^2} - \sqrt{a^2 - c'^2} \right\}$$

$$= \frac{F}{\pi n^2 a^2} \frac{c'^2 - c^2}{\sqrt{a^2 - c^2} + \sqrt{a^2 - c'^2}} = \frac{F}{2\pi n^2 a^3} (c' + c)(c' - c) \text{ nearly};$$

an extremely small quantity, since c and c' are very small when compared with a, and $c' - c$ may be made almost as small as we please, though it cannot be made absolutely zero; for the wheel must be so adapted to the pallets, that when it is disengaged from one it may strike the other, not on the acting surface, but a little above it; that is, the instant of disengagement from a pallet must follow the instant at which the pendulum is in its middle position by a rather longer time than that by which the instant of beginning to act preceded it. Hence c' must be rather greater than c. But the difference

may be made so small that the effect on the clock's rate shall be almost insensible. This escapement, then, approaches very nearly to absolute perfection: and in this respect theory and practice are in exact agreement.

Mr Airy suggests a construction (*Trans. Cam. Phil. Soc.* Vol. III. p. 125.) for a clock escapement similar in its principles to the best detached escapements of chronometers.

PROP. *To prove that the velocity of a particle moving on a smooth surface is independent of the path described, but depends solely on the co-ordinates of position.*

407. Let R be the normal pressure between the surface and particle at the time t, M the mass of the particle; $\alpha\beta\gamma$ the angles which the direction of R makes with the axes: then, X, Y, Z being the other forces acting on the particle, the equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = X + \frac{R}{M}\cos\alpha, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = Y + \frac{R}{M}\cos\beta,$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = Z + \frac{R}{M}\cos\gamma.$$

Multiply these by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$, $2\frac{dy}{dt}$, $2\frac{dz}{dt}$ and add; then

$$\frac{d.v^2}{dt} = 2\left(X\frac{dx}{dt} + Y\frac{dy}{dt} + Z\frac{dz}{dt}\right)$$

$$+\frac{2R}{M}\left(\frac{dx}{dt}\cos\alpha + \frac{dy}{dt}\cos\beta + \frac{dz}{dt}\cos\gamma\right).$$

But $\frac{dx}{ds}$, $\frac{dy}{ds}$, $\frac{dz}{ds}$ are the cosines of the angles which the tangent line to the curve described makes with the axes; hence

$$\frac{dx}{ds}\cos\alpha + \frac{dy}{ds}\cos\beta + \frac{dz}{ds}\cos\gamma$$

equals the cosine of the angle which this tangent makes with the normal, and therefore equals zero;

$$\therefore\ v^2 = 2\int(X dx + Y dy + Z dz),$$

and X, Y, Z being functions of x, y, z this expression when integrated will be a function of x, y, z, the co-ordinates of position, and does not depend on the path described.

PROP. *A particle moves in a spherical bowl acted on by gravity: required to determine the motion.*

408. The equations of motion are (z being vertical)

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{R}{M}\cos\alpha,\quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -\frac{R}{M}\cos\beta,\quad \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = g - \frac{R}{M}\cos\gamma,$$

also $x^2+y^2+z^2=a^2$ is the equation to the surface: in this case,

$$\cos\alpha = \frac{x}{a},\quad \cos\beta = \frac{y}{a},\quad \cos\gamma = \frac{z}{a},$$

then (as in last Article)

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} = C + 2gz.$$

Let V and k be the initial values of the velocity and of z: then

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} = V^2 - 2g(k-z),$$

$$\text{also } x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} = \text{const.} = h,$$

$$\text{likewise } x\frac{dx}{dt} + y\frac{dy}{dt} + z\frac{dz}{dt} = 0,$$

By eliminating $\frac{dx}{dt}$ and $\frac{dy}{dt}$ from these, we have

$$t = \int \frac{a\,dz}{\sqrt{(a^2-z^2)\left\{V^2 - 2g(k-z)\right\} - h^2}}.$$

grated, then z (and consequently x and y) is known in terms of t, and the motion is determined.

409. We may obtain approximate results by supposing the oscillations to be very small.

In this case, let θ be the angle that the radius drawn to the particle makes with the vertical, ψ the angle which the vertical plane in which θ is measured makes with the vertical plane through the centre of the sphere and the point of projection; let the velocity of projection $(V) = \beta\sqrt{ga}$, β being a small numerical quantity, the direction of V horizontal, a the initial value of θ; then

$$k = a - \tfrac{1}{2}a\alpha^2, \quad z = a - \tfrac{1}{2}a\theta^2, \quad h^2 = a^3 g\alpha^2\beta^2,$$

$$y = x\tan\psi, \quad x^2 + y^2 + z^2 = a^2;$$

$$\therefore \frac{dt}{d\theta} = -a\theta\frac{dt}{dz} = -\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}\,\frac{\theta}{\sqrt{(\alpha^2-\theta^2)(\theta^2-\beta^2)}},$$

$$\frac{d\psi}{d\theta} = \frac{d\psi}{dt}\frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{1}{x^2+y^2}\left(x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt}\right)\frac{dt}{d\theta} = -\frac{\alpha\beta}{\theta\sqrt{(\alpha^2-\theta^2)(\theta^2-\beta^2)}}$$

The first of these equations gives

$$2t = -\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}\int \frac{2d.\theta^2}{\sqrt{(\alpha^2-\beta^2)^2 - \{2\theta^2 - (\alpha^2+\beta^2)\}^2}}$$

$$= \sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}\cos^{-1}\left\{\frac{2\theta^2 - (\alpha^2+\beta^2)}{\alpha^2-\beta^2}\right\}, \text{ const.} = 0;$$

$$\therefore \theta^2 = \tfrac{1}{2}(\alpha^2+\beta^2) + \tfrac{1}{2}(\alpha^2-\beta^2)\cos 2\sqrt{\frac{g}{a}}\,t:$$

this shews that the pendulum makes isochronous oscillations in the moveable vertical plane: the extreme angles being α and β, and the time of oscillation being $\frac{\pi}{2}\sqrt{\frac{a}{g}}$, or half the time of oscillation when the plane of motion is constant.

Hence also $\frac{d\psi}{dt} = \sqrt{\frac{g}{a}} \frac{\alpha\beta}{\alpha^2 \cos^2 \sqrt{\frac{g}{a}} t + \beta^2 \sin^2 \sqrt{\frac{g}{a}} t}$;

$$\therefore \alpha \tan \psi = \beta \tan \sqrt{\frac{g}{a}} t,$$

from which the azimuth of the plane of oscillation is known at any time.

By substitution we have

$$\frac{x^2}{\alpha^2} + \frac{y^2}{\beta^2} = (a^2 - z^2)\left(\frac{\cos^2\psi}{\alpha^2} + \frac{\sin^2\psi}{\beta^2}\right) = a^2\theta^2\left(\frac{\cos^2\psi}{\alpha^2} + \frac{\sin^2\psi}{\beta^2}\right),$$

and substituting for θ and ψ their values in terms of t,

$$\frac{x^2}{\alpha^2} + \frac{y^2}{\beta^2} = a^2,$$

which shews that the projection of the path on a horizontal plane is an ellipse with its centre in the vertical radius of the sphere.

Cor. If $\alpha = \beta$, then $\theta^2 = a^2$, $\psi = \sqrt{\frac{g}{a}} t$, $x^2 + y^2 = a^2 a^2$,

and the pendulum describes a conical surface with a uniform motion.

Prop. *A particle moves on a curve surface, required to find the pressure at any instant.*

410. The equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = X + \frac{R}{M}\cos\alpha, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = Y + \frac{R}{M}\cos\beta, \quad \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = Z + \frac{R}{M}\cos\gamma.$$

Multiply by $\cos\alpha$, $\cos\beta$, $\cos\gamma$ respectively, and add, then

$$\frac{R}{M} = \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\cos\alpha + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\cos\beta + \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\cos\gamma$$
$$- \{X\cos\alpha + Y\cos\beta + Z\cos\gamma\}.$$

To calculate the former part suppose that the co-ordinate planes are so chosen, that, at the instant under consideration,

the axis of z is the normal line at the point of contact of the particle: hence $\cos\alpha = 0$, $\cos\beta = 0$, $\cos\gamma = 1$, and this part becomes $\dfrac{d^2z}{dt^2}$.

Now z is a function of x and y: x and y are functions of t; hence

$$\frac{dz}{dt} = \frac{dz}{dx}\frac{dx}{dt} + \frac{dz}{dy}\frac{dy}{dt},$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = \frac{d^2z}{dx^2}\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + 2\frac{d^2z}{dxdy}\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{d^2z}{dy^2}\frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz}{dx}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{dz}{dy}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$$

But $\dfrac{dz}{dx} = 0$, $\dfrac{dz}{dy} = 0$ as the axes are chosen.

Hence $$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = \frac{ds^2}{dt^2}\left\{\frac{d^2z}{dx^2}\frac{dx^2}{ds^2} + 2\frac{d^2z}{dxdy}\frac{dx}{ds}\frac{dy}{ds} + \frac{d^2z}{dy^2}\frac{dy^2}{ds^2}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{(\text{velocity})^2}{\text{radius of curvature}} = \frac{v^2}{\rho},$$

and the magnitude of this cannot depend upon the manner of fixing the axis; therefore, in general,

$$\frac{R}{M} = \frac{v^2}{\rho} - (X\cos\alpha + Y\cos\beta + Z\cos\gamma)$$

= centrifugal force − resolved part of the forces along the normal

PROP. *A particle moves in a groove in the form of a curve of double curvature; required the pressure.*

411. The equations of motion are the same as in the last Article: $\alpha\beta\gamma$ being the angles which the direction of the pressure makes with the axes; this coincides with the radius of absolute curvature.

Let ρ be the radius, and $x_1y_1z_1$ the co-ordinates to the centre of curvature, then

$$x_1 = x + \rho^2\frac{d^2x}{ds^2}, \quad y_1 = y + \rho^2\frac{d^2y}{ds^2}, \quad z_1 = z + \rho^2\frac{d^2z}{ds^2};$$

$$\therefore \cos\alpha = \frac{x - x_1}{\rho} = \rho\frac{d^2x}{ds^2}, \quad \cos\beta = \rho\frac{d^2y}{ds^2}, \quad \cos\gamma = \rho\frac{d^2z}{ds^2};$$

$$\therefore \frac{R}{M} = \rho\left\{\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\frac{d^2x}{ds^2} + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\frac{d^2y}{ds^2} + \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\frac{d^2z}{ds^2}\right\} - \{X\cos\alpha + Y\cos\beta + Z\cos\gamma\},$$

the former part, by changing the independent variable to s (as in Art. 255), becomes

$$\frac{\left(\frac{d^2x}{ds^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2y}{ds^2}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{d^2z}{ds^2}\right)^2}{\frac{dt^2}{ds^2}} - \frac{\frac{d^2t}{ds^2}\frac{d}{ds}\left\{\frac{dx^2}{ds^2} + \frac{dy^2}{ds^2} + \frac{dz^2}{ds^2}\right\}}{\frac{dt^2}{ds^2}}$$

$$= \frac{1}{\rho^2}(\cos^2\alpha + \cos^2\beta + \cos^2\gamma)\frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = \frac{1}{\rho^2}\frac{ds^2}{dt^2};$$

$$\therefore \frac{R}{M} = \frac{v^2}{\rho} - (X\cos\alpha + Y\cos\beta + Z\cos\gamma)$$

= centrifugal force − resolved part of the forces along the radius of absolute curvature.

PROB. 1. A BODY is projected vertically upwards and the time between its leaving a given point and returning to it is given: find the velocity of projection, and the whole time of motion.

PROB. 2. Two bodies fall from two given points in space in the same vertical down two straight lines drawn to any point of a surface in the same time, find the form of the surface.

PROB. 3. A semi-cycloid is placed with its axis vertical and vertex downwards, and from different points in it a number of bodies are let fall at the same instant, each moving down the tangent at the point from which it sets out: prove that they will reach the involute (passing through the vertex) all at the same instant.

PROB. 4. From the top of a tower two bodies are projected with the same given velocity at different given angles of elevation, and they strike the horizon at the same place: find the height of the tower.

PROB. 5. A body acted upon by two central forces, each varying inversely as the square of a distance, is projected from a point between them towards one of the centres: required the velocity of projection that the body may just arrive at the neutral point of attraction and remain at rest there.

PROB. 6. A body, acted on by a force varying inversely as the fifth power of the distance, is projected in any direction with a velocity equal to that which would be acquired in falling from an infinite distance: find the orbit.

PROB. 7. A body, projected in a given direction with a given velocity and attracted towards a given centre of force,

has its velocity at every point: the velocity in a circle at the same distance :: 1 : $\sqrt{2}$; find the orbit described, the position of the apse, the magnitude of its axis, and the law of force.

PROB. 8. Two bodies are connected by a string passing through a hole in a horizontal plane; one of them is projected in any direction in the horizontal plane, and the other descends vertically by the action of gravity: find the motion of the bodies, and the curve described on the plane.

PROB. 9. A body is projected in any direction from one extremity of a right line, each particle of which attracts it by a force proportional to the distance; prove that the body will pass through the other extremity.

PROB. 10. A body projected from a given point in a plane is attracted by forces $\frac{m}{x^3}$ in the direction of x, and $\frac{m'}{y^3}$ in the direction of y: prove that if the velocity and direction of projection be rightly assumed, it will describe a circle round the origin as centre, and find how the velocity varies in different parts of the orbit.

PROB. 11. A body, urged towards a plane by a force varying as the perpendicular distance from it, is projected at right angles to the plane from a given point in it with a given velocity: find what force must act at the same time on the body parallel to the plane, that it may move in a given parabola having its axis in the plane; and determine the circumstances of the motion.

PROB. 12. A body acted on by a force varying partly as the inverse cube and partly as the inverse fifth power of the distance is projected with the velocity which would be acquired in falling from infinity, at an angle with the distance the tangent of which = $\sqrt{2}$, the forces being equal at the point of projection; determine the motion.

PROB. 13. A body is projected from a point near a centre of force which varies inversely as the square of the distance, in a direction perpendicular to the line joining the point of projection with the centre of force, and so as to describe an ellipse about that centre: shew that the point of projection

will coincide with the nearer or further apse according as the velocity of projection is greater or less than that with which a circle might be described at the same distance.

PROB. 14. If a force vary inversely as the 7^{th} power of the distance, and a body be projected from an apse with a velocity which is to the velocity in a circle at the same distance $:: 1 : \sqrt{3}$; find the polar equation to the curve described, and transform it to rectangular co-ordinates.

PROB. 15. If a body be projected about a centre of force varying inversely as the square of the distance with a velocity equal to n times the velocity in a circle at the same distance, and in a direction making an angle β with the distance; the angle α between the axis major and this distance may be determined from the equation

$$\tan(\alpha - \beta) = (1 \sim n^2) \tan \beta.$$

PROB. 16. If a be the mean distance of a planet from the Sun, and l the length of the line of nodes, then the time of the planet's passage (supposed undisturbed) from node to node through perihelion is

$$= \frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}} p}{\pi} \left\{ \tan^{-1} \sqrt{\frac{l}{2a - l}} - \frac{l}{2a} \sqrt{\frac{2a - l}{l}} \right\}$$

where p = the length of the year, and 1 = mean distance of the Earth from the Sun.

PROB. 17. If a body revolve in an ellipse round the focus prove, that a progressive motion of the apse will be the effect of any continual addition of force in the direction of the radius vector during the progress of the body from the further to the nearer apse, and point out the effect on the eccentricity.

PROB. 18. A body is acted on by two forces, one repulsive and varying as the distance from a given point, and the other constant and acting in parallel lines: determine the motion of the body.

PROB. 19. If a body can describe a given curve about one centre with one law of force, about another centre with another law of force and so for any number of centres, it is possible to project the body with such a velocity that it may describe the same curve under the action of all those forces.

PROB. 20. A body describes a parabola about a centre of force residing in a point in the circumference of a given ellipse, the foci of which are in the circumference of the parabola, the force varying inversely as the square of the distance: shew that the time of moving from one focus to the other is the same, at whatever point in the circumference of the ellipse the centre of force is placed.

PROB. 21. If P be a central force attracting a catenary, and p be the perpendicular on the tangent at any point from the centre of force; then, the force which would cause a body to revolve in the curve formed by the catenary varies as $P \div p$.

PROB. 22. A body P is projected with a given velocity $a\sqrt{\mu}$ in a direction perpendicular to its distance SA from a centre of force S, which itself moves uniformly with velocity V in the direction AS produced; the force varies as the distance: determine the equation to the orbit described, and shew that the motions of P and S are parallel when the co-ordinates of P measured from the original position of S are a and $(\frac{1}{2}\pi - 1)\, V$.

PROB. 23. If two equal bodies, which attract each other with forces varying inversely as the square of the distance, are constrained to move in two straight lines at right angles to each other; shew that they will arrive together at the point of intersection of the lines, from whatever points their motions commence: and having given their distance at the beginning of the motion, find the time to the point of intersection.

PROB. 24. The times of oscillation of a pendulum are observed at the Earth's surface, and at a given depth below the surface; find from these data the radius of the Earth, supposed spherical.

PROP. 25. If a pendulum oscillating in a small circular arc be acted upon, in addition to the force of gravity, by a small horizontal force (as the attraction of a mountain) in the plane in which it oscillates; having given the number of oscillations gained in a day, find the horizontal force.

PROB. 26. A body oscillates in a cycloid on an inclined plane, and the friction on the plane $= \mu$ times the pressure: shew that the friction will not affect the time of oscillation,

and that the body will stop after it has oscillated a number of times $= \frac{a}{2l\mu} \tan\alpha - \frac{1}{2}$, where a is the original distance from the lowest point and α the inclination of the plane.

Prob. 27. A body acted on by gravity moves on the convex surface of a cycloid, the vertex of which is its highest point; the velocity at the highest point being $\sqrt{2gh}$, determine the point where it will leave the curve, and the latus rectum of the parabola afterwards described.

Prob. 28. A body moving on the interior surface of a vertical cylinder was projected with a given velocity, and goes round precisely n times before it begins to descend: find the direction of projection.

Prob. 29. A body acted on by a repulsive central force varying as the distance, moves in a groove of the form of an epicycloid, the pole of which is in the centre of force: prove that the oscillations are isochronous.

Prob. 30. If a body move in an elliptic groove uniformly, round two centres of force situated in the foci; prove that the forces at any point of the ellipse are equal, and inversely proportional to the square of the corresponding diameter.

Prob. 31. A body moves in a groove under the action of two centres of force each varying inversely as the distance, and of equal intensity at the same distance; the body is projected from the mid-point between the centres: prove that if the velocity be uniform the form of the groove is a lemniscate.

Prob. 32. A body attracted to two centres of force varying inversely as the square of the distance moves in a hyperbolic groove, of which the foci are the centres of force: required to find the pressure on the groove; and to shew that if the particle begin to move from a point where it is equally attracted by the two centres, the pressure on the groove is zero during the whole motion.

CHAPTER IX.

PRELIMINARY ANALYSIS.

412. We now enter upon the calculation of the motion of a rigid body.

In the following Chapters we shall repeatedly meet with the expressions

$$\Sigma . mx, \quad \Sigma . my, \quad \Sigma . mz,$$

$$\Sigma . mxy, \quad \Sigma . mxz, \quad \Sigma . myz,$$

$$\Sigma . mx^2, \quad \Sigma . my^2, \quad \Sigma . mz^2;$$

xyz being the co-ordinates to a particle m of a material system, and Σ being a symbol which represents that the sum of the quantities symmetrical with that before which it is placed is to be taken throughout the system.

It becomes important, then, to enquire whether the axes of co-ordinates may not be so chosen, as to simplify these expressions.

PROP. *The first three may be simplified.*

413. Let $\bar{x}$, $\bar{y}$, $\bar{z}$ be the co-ordinates of the centre of gravity of the system: and let M be the mass of the system. Then by p. 67, we have

$$\Sigma . mx = M\bar{x}, \quad \Sigma . my = M\bar{y}, \quad \Sigma . mz = M\bar{z}.$$

If it be allowable in any case to choose for one of the co-ordinate planes a plane passing through the centre of gravity, then, supposing this the plane of xy, we have $\bar{z} = 0$ and therefore $\Sigma . mz = 0$.

If it be allowable to choose for the axis of x a line passing through the centre of gravity, then $\bar{y} = 0$, $\bar{z} = 0$, and these give $\Sigma . my = 0$, $\Sigma . mz = 0$.

θ = inclination of plane $x_1 y_1$ to plane xy.

ψ = the angular distance of the line of intersection of these planes from the axis of x; *i. e.* the angle NAx.

ϕ = the angular distance of axis of x_1 from this line of intersection; *i. e.* the angle NAx_1.

xyz, $x_1 y_1 z_1$ the co-ordinates to any point referred to the two systems of axes respectively.

r = the distance of this point from the origin.

Then the cosines of the angles which r makes with the axes of xyz, $x_1 y_1 z_1$ are respectively $\frac{x}{r}, \frac{y}{r}, \frac{z}{r}$; $\frac{x_1}{r}, \frac{y_1}{r}, \frac{z_1}{r}$. Hence

$$\frac{x}{r} = \frac{x_1}{r} \cos x x_1 + \frac{y_1}{r} \cos x y_1 + \frac{z_1}{r} \cos x z_1$$

$$\frac{y}{r} = \frac{x_1}{r} \cos y x_1 + \frac{y_1}{r} \cos y y_1 + \frac{z_1}{r} \cos y z_1$$

$$\frac{z}{r} = \frac{x_1}{r} \cos z x_1 + \frac{y_1}{r} \cos z y_1 + \frac{z_1}{r} \cos z z_1.$$

Let us now suppose all the points where the six axes meet a sphere of radius unity described about A to be joined by arcs of great circles; then we shall have by the formula for the cosine of the side of a spherical triangle in terms of the other sides and opposite angle

$$\cos xx_1 = \cos\phi\cos\psi + \sin\phi\sin\psi\cos\theta$$
$$\cos xy_1 = -\sin\phi\cos\psi + \cos\phi\sin\psi\cos\theta$$
$$\cos xz_1 = -\sin\psi\sin\theta$$
$$\cos yx_1 = -\cos\phi\sin\psi + \sin\phi\cos\psi\cos\theta$$
$$\cos yy_1 = \sin\phi\sin\psi + \cos\phi\cos\psi\cos\theta$$
$$\cos yz_1 = -\cos\psi\sin\theta$$
$$\cos zx_1 = \sin\phi\sin\theta$$
$$\cos zy_1 = \cos\phi\sin\theta$$
$$\cos zz_1 = \cos\theta.$$

Hence by substitution

$$x = x_1(\cos\phi\cos\psi + \sin\phi\sin\psi\cos\theta) - y_1(\sin\phi\cos\psi - \cos\phi\sin\psi\cos\theta) - z_1\sin\psi\sin\theta$$
$$y = -x_1(\cos\phi\sin\psi - \sin\phi\cos\psi\cos\theta) + y_1(\sin\phi\sin\psi + \cos\phi\cos\psi\cos\theta) - z_1\cos\psi\sin\theta$$
$$z = x_1\sin\phi\sin\theta + y_1\cos\phi\sin\theta + z_1\cos\theta.$$

416. In the same manner we should find

$$x_1 = x(\cos\phi\cos\psi + \sin\phi\sin\psi\cos\theta) - y(\cos\phi\sin\psi - \sin\phi\cos\psi\cos\theta) + z\sin\phi\sin\theta$$
$$y_1 = -x(\sin\phi\cos\psi - \cos\phi\sin\psi\cos\theta) + y(\sin\phi\sin\psi + \cos\phi\cos\psi\cos\theta) + z\cos\phi\sin\theta$$
$$z_1 = -x\sin\psi\sin\theta - y\cos\psi\sin\theta + z\cos\theta.$$

PROP. *To prove that in every body there is a system of rectangular axes, and in general only one system, which will satisfy the conditions* $\Sigma.mx_1y_1=0$, $\Sigma.mx_1z_1=0$, $\Sigma.my_1z_1=0$.

$$\Sigma . m(y^2+z^2) = D, \quad \Sigma . m(x^2+z^2) = E, \quad \Sigma . m(x^2+y^2) = F,$$

$$\Sigma . myz = G, \quad \Sigma . mxz = H, \quad \Sigma . mxy = K;$$

we have $L \sin 2\phi + M \cos 2\phi = 0$ ..... (1),

$$N \cos \phi - P \sin \phi = 0,$$

$$N \sin \phi + P \cos \phi = 0,$$

where L, M, N, P are certain functions of θ, ψ, D, E, F, G, H, and K; and are independent of ϕ.

The first of these equations gives ϕ when θ and ψ are known. By eliminating ϕ from the second and third we have $P = 0$, $N = 0$: or, if we replace P and N by their values, we have

$$\left.\begin{aligned} &\sin 2\theta \{D \sin^2\psi - 2K \sin\psi \cos\psi + E \cos^2\psi - F\} \\ &\quad + 2\cos 2\theta \{G \cos\psi + H \sin\psi\} = 0 \\ &\sin\theta \{(D-E) \sin\psi \cos\psi - K(\cos^2\psi - \sin^2\psi)\} \\ &\quad - \cos\theta \{G \sin\psi - H \cos\psi\} = 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots\ldots (2).$$

Let $\tan\psi = u$, and $\therefore \sin\psi = \dfrac{u}{\sqrt{1+u^2}}$, $\cos\psi = \dfrac{1}{\sqrt{1+u^2}}$:

also let θ be eliminated from the above equations by the formula $(1 - \tan^2\theta) \tan 2\theta = 2\tan\theta$; and we have, after all reductions,

$$\{(D-E)u - K(1-u^2)\}\{(GD-GF+HK)u - HE+HF+GK\} - (Gu-H)^2(Hu+G) = 0.$$

This equation, being a cubic, must give at least one real value of u, and therefore of ψ: and substituting this in one of the equations (2) we shall have the value of θ and then ϕ is known from equation (1).

We conclude, then, that we can always find a system of co-ordinate axes which will satisfy our conditions. But, not

only so, there is in general only one such system; for although we might fancy that there could be three since the equation in u is a cubic yet this will be found not to be the case when it is remarked that this equation, which is to obtain the angle between the axis of x and the intersection of the planes $x,y,$ and xy, ought likewise to give the angles which the axis of x makes with the intersections of the two other planes $x,z,$ and $y,z,$ with the plane xy. Hence all three roots of the cubic will be possible and serve to determine the three angles specified above.

Hence the Proposition is true.

Cor. 1. The equation in u becomes identical whenever, in any particular case, we have $G=0$, $H=0$, $K=0$. In this case *every* system of rectangular axes is a system of principal axes; as is proved by these three equations: and for this reason the equation in u gives no result.

Cor. 2. Again, the equation in u is identical when $G=0$, $H=0$. In this case also there is an infinite number of systems of principal axes; but they must all have a common axis, since F does not vanish.

It will be seen that in most cases the difficulty of calculating the position of the principal axes in a body is great. But whenever we know one of them the other two are easily determined, as we shall now shew.

Prop. *To find the principle axes of a body when one of them is known.*

418. Let $Ax,$ be the known principal axis, $Ax,$, $Ay,$ the others making an angle ψ with the arbitrary axes Ax, Ay drawn at right angles to $Ax,$ (fig. 98).

Let $x,y,z,$, xyz be the co-ordinates to a particle m referred to these two systems of axes: then

$$x, = x\cos\psi + y\sin\psi, \quad y, = y\cos\psi - x\sin\psi.$$

Hence $\Sigma . mx,y, = 0$ gives

$$(\cos^2\psi - \sin^2\psi)\,\Sigma . mxy - \cos\psi\sin\psi\,\Sigma . m(x^2 - y^2) = 0;$$

Ex. 1. *One principal axis of a rectangular parallelogram of uniform thickness is perpendicular to its plane through the centre: required the other two.*

Let $2a$, $2b$ be the sides of the parallelogram: M its mass: the sides parallel to the plane xy, and the centre of the origin: then the mass of an element $= M\frac{dxdy}{4ab}$: and therefore

$$\Sigma.mxy = \int_{-a}^{a}\int_{-b}^{b}\frac{M}{4ab}xydxdy = \frac{M}{4ab}\int_{-a}^{a}0.dx = 0,$$

$$\Sigma.m(x^2-y^2) = \frac{M}{4ab}\int_{-a}^{a}\int_{-b}^{b}(x^2-y^2)\,dx\,dy = \frac{M}{2ab}\int_{-a}^{a}(x^2b-\tfrac{1}{3}b^3$$

$$= \frac{M}{3ab}(a^3b-b^3a) = \frac{M}{3}(a^2-b^2);$$

$\therefore \tan 2\psi = 0$; and $\therefore 2\psi = 0$ and $180°$, or $\psi = 0$ and $90°$, and the other two axes are parallel to the sides of the parallelogram.

Cor. If the parallelogram be a square then $a = b$ and $\tan 2\psi = \frac{0}{0}$: which shews that in this case any pair of axes x and y are principal axes.

Ex. 2. *One principal axis of an elliptic board being perpendicular to its plane through its centre; the other two coincide with the axes of the ellipse.*

419. The last three of the expressions in Art. 412, viz $\Sigma.mx^2$, $\Sigma.my^2$, $\Sigma.mz^2$, do not admit of much simplification.

The sum of the products of the mass of each particle of the system and the square of its distance from any straight line is called the *Moment of Inertia* of the System about that

We proceed to prove certain Propositions connected with the Moment of Inertia.

PROP. *The moment of inertia of a system about any axis is equal to the moment of inertia about an axis through the centre of gravity and parallel to the former, together with the product of the mass of the system and the square of the distance between the two axes.*

420. Let the plane of the paper pass through the centre of gravity G of the system: and be perpendicular to the original axis and cut it in A (fig. 99): Ax, Ay the axes of x and y, and P the projection of any particle of the system m on the plane of the paper: x, y the co-ordinates of P from G; $\bar{x}\,\bar{y}$ the co-ordinates of G from A. Then the moment of inertia

$$= \Sigma . m AP^2 = \Sigma . m \{(\bar{x} + x)^2 + (\bar{y} + y)^2\}$$

$$= M(\bar{x}^2 + \bar{y}^2) + 2\bar{x}\Sigma . mx + 2\bar{y}\Sigma . my + \Sigma . m(x^2 + y^2)$$

$$= M(\bar{x}^2 + \bar{y}^2) + \Sigma . m(x^2 + y^2) : \text{ see Art. 413.}$$

$= M . GA^2 +$ moment of inertia about an axis of which the projection is G.

421. We shall now calculate the moment of inertia in some particular cases.

Let k be such a quantity that the moment of inertia $= Mk^2$. Then it will be seen that k is the distance of the point at which we may suppose the whole mass collected so as not to alter the moment of inertia. This quantity k is called the *Radius of Gyration*.

We shall always use the symbol k for this radius when the axis passes through the centre of gravity, and $k_,$ (with a subscript accent) when it does not.

Ex. 1. *A physical line about an axis through its centre and perpendicular to its length.*

$2a$ = length; r = distance of any particle from the centre;

sity about an axis through its centre and perpendicu its plane.

a = radius, $\angle BAP = \theta$, $AP = r$ (fig. 25);

therefore element of the mass at $P = M \dfrac{dr \cdot r d\theta}{\pi a^2}$;

$$\therefore\ Mk^2 = \int_0^a \int_0^{2\pi} M \frac{r^3}{\pi a^2} dr d\theta = \int_0^a 2M \frac{r^3}{a^2} dr = M \frac{a^2}{2}$$

$$\therefore\ k^2 = \tfrac{1}{2} a^2.$$

For an axis parallel to the above at a distance c,

$$k_1^2 = \tfrac{1}{2} a^2 + c^2 \text{ by Art. 420.}$$

Ex. 3. *The same body about an axis through its and in its plane.*

$$\text{Mass of element at } P = M \frac{dr\, r d\theta}{\pi a^2},$$

$$Mk^2 = \int_0^a \int_0^{2\pi} M \frac{r^3 \sin^2\theta}{\pi a^2} dr d\theta = \frac{M}{2\pi a^2} \int_0^a \int_0^{2\pi} r^3 (1 - \cos 2\theta$$

$$= \frac{M}{a^2} \int^a r^3 dr = M \frac{a^2}{4};$$

About an axis parallel to the above at a distance c,

$$k_1^2 = \tfrac{1}{4}a^2 + c^2.$$

Ex. 4. *A solid of revolution about any axis perpendicular to the axis of the solid.*

Let $DA'E$ be the given axis cutting the axis of the solid in A': let A' be the origin of co-ordinates (fig. 27): $PM = y$, $A'M = x$: $A'A = m$, $A'B = n$, V the volume of the solid;

$$\therefore \text{ mass of elementary section } PP' = M\frac{\pi y^2 dx}{V},$$

$$\text{mom. of iner. of this element about } PP' = \frac{M}{V}\pi y^2 dx \frac{y^2}{4} \text{ (Ex. 3.)},$$

$$\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots DA'E = \frac{M}{V}\pi y^2 dx \left(\frac{y^2}{4} + x^2\right)$$

(Art. 420);

$$\therefore Mk_1^2 = \int_m^n \frac{M}{V}\pi y^2 \left(\frac{y^2}{4} + x^2\right) dx: \text{ but } V = \int_m^n \pi y^2 dx:$$

$$\therefore k_1^2 = \int_m^n \left(\tfrac{1}{4}y^4 + x^2y^2\right) dx \div \int_m^n y^2 dx.$$

Ex. 5. *A sphere about a tangent.*

$$y^2 = 2ax - x^2;$$

$$\therefore k_1^2 = \int_0^{2a} \left(a^2x^2 + ax^3 - \tfrac{3}{4}x^4\right) dx \div \int_0^{2a} (2ax - x^2)\, dx$$

$$= \left(\tfrac{8}{3} + 4 - \tfrac{24}{5}\right) a^5 \div \left(4 - \tfrac{8}{3}\right) a^3 = \tfrac{28}{15}a^2 \div \tfrac{4}{3} = \tfrac{7}{5}a^2.$$

$$\text{Also } k^2 = k_1^2 - a^2 = \tfrac{2}{5}a^2.$$

PROP. *To find the moment of inertia of a system referred to any axis.*

422. Let AC be the axis (fig. 100): P any particle m of the system: PM perpendicular to AC: Ax, Ay, Az the co-ordinate axes: x, y, z co-ordinates to P; α, β, γ the angles AC makes with the axes;

$$\sin^2\alpha\,\Sigma.mx^2 + \sin^2\beta\,\Sigma.my^2 + \sin^2\gamma\,\Sigma.mz^2$$

$$-2\cos\alpha\cos\beta\,\Sigma.mxy - 2\cos\alpha\cos\gamma\,\Sigma.mxz - 2\cos\beta\cos\gamma\,\Sigma.myz.$$

If the axes of co-ordinates be principal axes, then, accenting the co-ordinates in accordance with the notation of Art. 417,

$$Mk_1^2 = \sin^2\alpha\,\Sigma.mx_1^2 + \sin^2\beta\,\Sigma.my_1^2 + \sin^2\gamma\,\Sigma.mz_1^2.$$

Let A, B, C be the moments of inertia of the system about the principal axes;

$$\therefore\ A = \Sigma.m(y_1^2 + z_1^2),\ B = \Sigma.m(x_1^2 + z_1^2),\ C = \Sigma.m(x_1^2 + y_1^2),$$

then $\Sigma.mx_1^2 = \frac{1}{2}(B + C - A)$, $\Sigma.my_1^2 = \frac{1}{2}(A + C - B)$,

$$\Sigma.mz_1^2 = \tfrac{1}{2}(A + B - C);$$

$$\therefore\ Mk_1^2 = \tfrac{1}{2}A(\sin^2\beta_1 + \sin^2\gamma_1 - \sin^2\alpha_1)$$

$$+ \tfrac{1}{2}B(\sin^2\alpha_1 + \sin^2\gamma_1 - \sin^2\beta_1) + \tfrac{1}{2}C(\sin^2\alpha_1 + \sin^2\beta_1 - \sin^2\gamma_1)$$

$$= A\cos^2\alpha_1 + B\cos^2\beta_1 + C\cos^2\gamma_1.$$

PROP. *If* A *and* C *be the greatest and least principal moments, then every other moment of inertia is intermediate to these.*

423. For $Mk_1^2 = A - (A - B)\cos^2\beta_1 - (A - C)\cos^2\gamma_1$

and also $= C + (A - C)\cos^2\alpha_1 + (B - C)\cos^2\beta_1$

since $\cos^2\alpha_1 + \cos^2\beta_1 + \cos^2\gamma_1 = 1$.

The first is evidently less than A, and the second greater than C.

Prop. *When two of the principal moments are equal to each other, the moments about all axes lying in any right cone described about the principal axis of unequal moment are the same.*

424. For let $B = C$: then

$$Mk_1^2 = A\cos^2\alpha_1 + B(\cos^2\beta_1 + \cos^2\gamma_1) = A\cos^2\alpha_1 + B\sin^2\alpha_1,$$

and this is constant when α_1 remains the same although β_1 and γ_1 may vary.

Prop. *If the three principal moments be equal to each other, every other moment is equal to these.*

425. For $Mk_1^2 = A(\cos^2\alpha_1 + \cos^2\beta_1 + \cos^2\gamma_1) = A$.

Prop. *To find the points in a system with respect to which the principal moments are equal to each other.*

426. Let the centre of gravity be the origin, and the principal axes the axes of co-ordinates:

x_1, y_1, z_1 co-ordinates to any particle m,

x_1', y_1', z_1' the point which gives the principal moments equal: then from this point the co-ordinates of m are

$$x_1 - x_1', \quad y_1 - y_1', \quad z_1 - z_1';$$

$\therefore$ by Art. 417. $\Sigma . m(x_1 - x_1')(y_1 - y_1') = 0$,

$\Sigma . m(x_1 - x_1')(z_1 - z_1') = 0$, and $\Sigma . m(y_1 - y_1')(z_1 - z_1') = 0$.

Observing the origin and axes we have chosen, we see that these conditions become,

$$Mx_1'y_1' = 0, \quad Mx_1'z_1' = 0, \quad My_1'z_1' = 0;$$

$\therefore$ two of $x_1'y_1'z_1'$ must $= 0$.

Suppose $y_1' = 0$, $z_1' = 0$ and then x_1' remains indeterminate.

Hence by Art. 120,

moment about axis parallel to x_1 through $(x_1' y_1' z_1') = A$

..... y_1 ..... $= B + M x_1'^2$

..... z_1 ..... $= C + M x_1'^2$,

and these by hypothesis are all the same;

$$\therefore B = C, \text{ and } x_1'^2 = \frac{A - B}{M}.$$

Hence we derive the following corollaries.

1. If all the moments about the principal axes through the centre of gravity be unequal, there is no point in the system with respect to which the moments are equal.

2. If two of them be equal and the moment of the unequal one be the greatest, there are two points equally distant from the centre of gravity and on the axis of the greatest moment corresponding to which the moments are all equal.

3. When the principal moments are all equal, $x_1' = 0$, and there is no point but the centre of gravity with respect to which the moments are all equal.

CHAPTER X.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ACTED ON BY FORCES OF FINITE INTENSITY.

427. In considering the equilibrium of a rigid body (Art. 27) we stated, that, in consequence of our ignorance of the nature and laws of the forces by which the molecules are held together, we are unable to deduce the conditions of equilibrium of a body from those of a single particle. By the aid, however, of the principle of the transmission of force through a body (Art. 28) we deduced certain relations which the impressed forces, that act upon the body when in equilibrium must satisfy independently of the molecular forces. It is evident that the system of molecular forces are themselves in equilibrium independently of the other forces which act upon the body.

In considering the motion of a rigid body we fall upon the same difficulty. We know nothing of the laws of the molecular forces, and consequently cannot calculate the motion of the body by calculating the motion of its molecules separately. But we may surmount this in the manner we overcame the difficulty just mentioned.

Let mX, mY, mZ be the *impressed* moving forces which act upon the particle m, not including the molecular forces which act upon this particle. Let xyz be the co-ordinates to m at the time t: then $m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}$, $m\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$, $m\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ are the *effective* moving forces of m (Art. 211).

Now by the first of the general principles enunciated in Art. 226, the forces

$$m\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right),\quad m\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right),\quad m\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)$$

acting on m parallel to the axes of x, y, z respectively, and similar forces acting on all the other particles ought, together with the molecular forces by which the particles of the body act upon each other, to satisfy the equations of equilibrium of forces acting on a rigid body.

But the molecular forces are of themselves in equilibrium, since the molecules retain their relative situations during the motion.

Hence the forces $m\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)$, $m\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)$, $m\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)$ acting on m and similar forces acting on the other particles of the body ought to satisfy the six equations of equilibrium of forces acting on a rigid body, given in Art. 65. Wherefore we have the six equations of motion

$$\Sigma . m\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)=0,\ \Sigma . m\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)=0,\ \Sigma . m\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)=0,$$

$$\Sigma . m\left\{y\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)-z\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)\right\}=0,$$

$$\Sigma . m\left\{z\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)-x\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)\right\}=0,$$

$$\Sigma . m\left\{x\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)-y\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)\right\}=0.$$

By these six equations we shall be able to calculate the motion of a rigid body acted on by any forces of finite intensity. They lead immediately to two Principles, one of which enables us to calculate the motion of *translation* of the body in space; and the other the motion of *rotation*.

Prop. *The motion of the centre of gravity of a body moving free in space and acted on by any forces is the same as if all the forces were applied at the centre of gravity parallel to their former directions.*

428. By the first three equations of Art. 427,

$$\Sigma . m\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)=0,\ \Sigma . m\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)=0,\ \Sigma . m\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)=0.$$

Let $\bar{x}\bar{y}\bar{z}$ be the co-ordinates to the centre of gravity,

$x'y'z'$ ..... m from the centre of gravity;

$$\therefore\ x = \bar{x} + x',\ y = \bar{y} + y',\ z = \bar{z} + z'.$$

Now $\Sigma . mx' = 0$, $\Sigma . my' = 0$, $\Sigma . mz' = 0$ (Art. 413).

Hence, substituting for xyz, the above equations give, M being the whole mass of the body,

$$\frac{d^2\bar{x}}{dt^2} = \frac{\Sigma . mX}{M},\ \frac{d^2\bar{y}}{dt^2} = \frac{\Sigma . mY}{M},\ \frac{d^2\bar{z}}{dt^2} = \frac{\Sigma . mZ}{M};$$

and these are the equations we should obtain for the motion of the centre of gravity supposing the forces all applied at that point. Hence the Proposition is proved.

Prop. *The motion of rotation of a body acted on by any forces and moving freely is the same as if the centre of gravity were fixed and the same forces acted.*

429. The last three of the equations of Art. 427 are

$$\Sigma . m\left\{y\left(Z - \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right) - z\left(Y - \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)\right\} = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m\left\{z\left(X - \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right) - x\left(Z - \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)\right\} = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m\left\{x\left(Y - \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right) - y\left(X - \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)\right\} = 0.$$

Now let $\bar{x}$, $\bar{y}$, $\bar{z}$ be the co-ordinates to the centre of gravity, and let (as before) $x = \bar{x} + x'$, $y = \bar{y} + y'$, $z = \bar{z} + z'$.

Let these be put in the above equations, observing that $\Sigma . mx' = 0$, $\Sigma . my' = 0$, $\Sigma . mz' = 0$ (Art. 413), and that therefore the differential coefficients of these with respect to t vanish; also bearing in mind the equations of last Article we have after all reductions,

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ y' \left(Z - \frac{d^2 z'}{dt^2} \right) - z' \left(Y - \frac{d^2 y'}{dt^2} \right) \right\} = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ z' \left(X - \frac{d^2 x'}{dt^2} \right) - x' \left(Z - \frac{d^2 z'}{dt^2} \right) \right\} = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ x' \left(Y - \frac{d^2 y'}{dt^2} \right) - y' \left(X - \frac{d^2 x'}{dt^2} \right) \right\} = 0.$$

But these are precisely the equations we should have obtained on the supposition that the centre of gravity were fixed, and that point taken as the origin of moments. Hence the Proposition is true.

430. From the first of the Principles demonstrated in the last two Articles we gather, that all the calculations we have made of the motion of a material particle will be true also of the centre of gravity of a rigid body. It remains then to ascertain the motion of the other parts of the body relative to the centre of gravity: and this the latter Principle enables us to accomplish, as we shall shew in the following Chapters. We shall consider the motion of rotation of a body first about any fixed axis, either passing through the centre of gravity or not, and lastly about a fixed point.

CHAPTER XI.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ABOUT A FIXED AXIS: FINITE FORCES.

PROP. *To calculate the angular accelerating force of a rigid body moving about a fixed axis, and acted on by any given forces.*

431. Let the fixed axis be taken as the axis of z, and let $x\,y$ be the co-ordinates to the projection of a particle m on the plane $x\,y$: also let r be the distance of m from the axis of rotation and θ the angle r makes with the plane $z\,x$: then $x = r\cos\theta$, $y = r\sin\theta$.

Now by Art. 68, we are to take only the last of the equations of Art 427;

$$\therefore \Sigma . m \left\{ x \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} - y \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} \right\} = \Sigma . m (xY - yX).$$

$$\text{But } \frac{dx}{dt} = -r\sin\theta \frac{d\theta}{dt}, \quad \frac{dy}{dt} = r\cos\theta \frac{d\theta}{dt};$$

$$\therefore x\frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} = \frac{d}{dt}\left\{ x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} \right\} = \frac{d}{dt}\left(r^2 \frac{d\theta}{dt} \right) = r^2 \frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2}.$$

$$\text{Hence } \Sigma . mr^2 \frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = \Sigma . m (xY - yX),$$

$$\text{or, since } \frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} \text{ is the same for every particle,}$$

$$\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = \frac{\Sigma . m (xY - yX)}{\Sigma . mr^2}$$

$$= \frac{\text{moment of the forces about the axis}}{\text{moment of inertia about the axis}}.$$

By integrating this equation we shall know the angle through which the body has revolved in a given time; and shall con-

sequently be able to determine the position of the body at any instant.

PROP. *A body moves about a fixed horizontal axis acted on by gravity only: required to determine the time of a small oscillation.*

432. Let ABC (fig. 101.) be a section of the body made by the plane of the paper passing through the centre of gravity G and cutting the axis of rotation perpendicularly in C; P the projection of any particle m on this plane; CX vertical; GH perpendicular to CX; $CG = h$; $CP = r$; $PCX = \theta'$; $GCX = \theta$.

Then by Art. 431, $\dfrac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = \dfrac{\text{moment of forces}}{\text{moment of inertia}}$

$$= -\frac{\Sigma . mgr \sin\theta'}{\Sigma . mr^2} = -\frac{Mgh \sin\theta}{M(k^2 + h^2)} = -\frac{gh}{k^2 + h^2}\sin\theta. \quad \text{Arts. 413, 420.}$$

If we put $\dfrac{k^2 + h^2}{h} = l$, multiply by $2\dfrac{d\theta}{dt}$ and integrate;

$\therefore \dfrac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = \dfrac{2g}{l}\cos\theta + \text{const.} = \dfrac{g}{l}(\alpha^2 - \theta^2)$, neglecting θ^3.... and supposing $\theta = \alpha$ at first;

$$\therefore \text{time of oscillation} = -\sqrt{\frac{l}{g}}\int_{-\alpha}^{\alpha}\frac{d\theta}{\sqrt{\alpha^2 - \theta^2}} = \pi\sqrt{\frac{l}{g}}.$$

Hence the body will move as if collected in a material point at a distance $\dfrac{k^2 + h^2}{h}$ from the axis. Take $CO = \dfrac{k^2 + h^2}{h}$ in the line CG produced: then O is called the *centre of oscillation*: and $\dfrac{k^2 + h^2}{h}$ is called the length of the *isochronous simple pendulum*, the body itself being denominated, in contradistinction, a *compound pendulum*. The point C is called the *centre of suspension*.

PROP. *The centres of oscillation and suspension are reciprocal: that is, if the body be suspended on an axis through* O *parallel to that through* C, *then* C *will be the centre of oscillation.*

433. For let l' be the length of the simple pendulum in this case; then

$$l' = \frac{k^2 + OG^2}{OG} = \frac{k^2}{l-h} + l - h$$

$$= \frac{lh - h^2}{l-h} + l - h \text{ (Art. 432.)} = l.$$

From which the truth of the Proposition is evident.

PROP. *To determine the length of the seconds pendulum experimentally.*

434. We have already shewn (Art. 396.) that if l be the length of a simple pendulum, that is, a pendulum consisting of a single particle suspended by a string without weight, t the duration of each oscillation and g the force of gravity, then

$$t = \pi \sqrt{\frac{l}{g}}.$$

But it is impossible to form a pendulum which may, with due regard to accuracy, be considered a simple pendulum. It becomes necessary, then, to measure the distance between the centres of suspension and oscillation (see Art. 432). The practical difficulties in the way of determining the latter point were considerable, and such as greatly to endanger the accuracy of the result, before Captain Kater removed the sources of difficulty by using the property of the compound pendulum proved in Art. 433, namely, that the centres of oscillation and suspension are reciprocal. We proceed to explain this.

Let AB be the pendulum (fig. 102); C the point of suspension; F a weight which may be shifted from one position to another on the pendulum: O the centre of oscillation of the pendulum including F.

The position of O is first found pretty accurately by making the pendulum oscillate about C and O till the times of oscillation are nearly the same. Knife edges are then fixed at C and O, and the weight F, which is placed near the middle point between C and O, is shifted till it is found that the

PROP. *To calculate the effect produced on the pendulum by shifting* F.

435. Let l' be the length of the simple pendulum when F is removed: $M(1+n)$ and M the masses of the pendulum with and without F, n being a small fraction: let l be the length of the simple pendulum when F is so situated that the times of oscillation about C and O are the same: and let L and L' be the lengths when the pendulum oscillates about C and O, the weight F being then at a distance x from C: and let $\frac{1}{2}l+\delta$ be the value of x when $L=l$. Then, by Art. 432,

$$l = \frac{\text{square of rad. of gyration about axis of suspension}}{\text{dist. of centre of gravity from same axis}}$$

$$= \frac{Ml'h + Mn(\frac{1}{2}l+\delta)^2}{Mh + Mn(\frac{1}{2}l+\delta)} = \frac{l'h + n(\frac{1}{2}l+\delta)^2}{h + n(\frac{1}{2}l+\delta)};$$

$$\therefore\ l' = l + \frac{n}{h}(\tfrac{1}{4}l^2 - \delta^2).$$

$$\text{Also } L = \frac{l'h + nx^2}{h + nx};$$

$$\therefore \frac{dL}{dx} = \frac{n^2x^2 + 2nhx - nl'h}{(h+nx)^2} = \frac{n^2(x-\alpha)(x+\beta)}{(h+nx)^2}.$$

$$\text{where } \alpha = \frac{1}{n}\{\sqrt{h^2 + nl'h} - h\}$$

$$= \frac{h}{n}\left\{\frac{nl'}{2h} - \frac{n^2l'^2}{8h^2}\right\} \text{ neg}^{\text{s}}.\ n^2\ldots = \frac{l'}{2} - \frac{nl'^2}{8h}$$

$$= \frac{l}{2} - \frac{n\delta^2}{2k}$$

β is a positive quantity.

Let $CD = DO = \frac{1}{2}l$: and take $CP = a$. Then if F be below P (that is, x greater than a), the time of oscillation about C will increase or decrease according as F is shifted from or towards C, since dL and dx have the same sign: the contrary will be the case when F is placed above P.

In like manner if the pendulum be suspended from O, we have a point Q, the distance of which from O equals $\frac{1}{2}l - \frac{n\delta^2}{2k'}$ (k' being the distance of the centre of gravity from O), such that when F is beyond Q from O the time of oscillation about O is increased or diminished according as F is moved further from O or nearer to it; and *vice versâ*.

Since $DP = \frac{n\delta^2}{2k}$, and $DQ = \frac{n\delta^2}{2k'}$, and these are both less than δ (δ being by hypothesis a very small quantity), it follows that F cannot be between P and Q when the times of oscillation about C and O are the same.

PROP. *To shew that if the axes of suspension be equal cylinders rolling on horizontal plates, instead of knife edges, the length of the simple pendulum still equals the distance of the axes.*

436. Let AB be the pendulum (fig. 103); G its centre of gravity, O its centre of oscillation, CDE the semi-cylindrical axis of suspension, C being the point of contact with the horizontal plane of support when the pendulum hangs in its position of rest: P the point of contact at the time t, when the pendulum oscillates; $CM = x$, $MG = y$, the co-ordinates to G, θ the angle CG makes with the vertical, R the pressure at P, F the friction on the plane of support, $CG = h$, M the mass of the pendulum, $CO = l$, k = rad. of gyration about G, a = rad. of the axis at C.

Now by Art. 428 the motion of the centre of gravity is the same as if all the forces were applied at that point;

$$\therefore \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{F}{M} \ldots (1), \qquad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = g - \frac{R}{M} \ldots (2).$$

Also by Art. 429 the motion of rotation is the sa if G were fixed; hence by Art. 431

$$\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = \frac{Fy - R(a+h)\sin\theta}{Mk^2} \ldots (3)$$

we have here three equations and five unknown quantit F, x, y, θ: we must seek, then, two relations conn x, y, θ: these are

$$x = PM - PC = (a+h)\sin\theta - a\theta \ldots (4)$$

$$y = (a+h)\cos\theta - a \ldots (5).$$

By equations (1) (2) (3) we have

$$k^2\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} + y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + (a+h)\sin\theta\left(g - \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right) = 0;$$

differentiating (4) and (5) we have

$$\frac{dx}{d\theta} = (a+h)\cos\theta - a = y, \quad \frac{dy}{d\theta} = -(a+h)\sin\theta.$$

Hence our last equation becomes

$$k^2\frac{d\theta}{dt}\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} + \frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} + \frac{dy}{dt}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} + (a+h)g\sin\theta\frac{d\theta}{dt} =$$

$$\therefore k^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} = C + 2(a+h)g\cos\theta$$

when $\theta = a$, velocity $= 0$;

$$\therefore k^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} = 2(a+h)g(\cos\theta - \cos a);$$

$$\therefore \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\left\{k^2 + (a+h)^2 + a^2 - 2a(a+h)\cos\theta\right\} = 2(a+h)g(\cos\theta$$

$$\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} = \frac{(a+h)g(a^2-\theta^2)}{k^2+h^2},$$

neglecting powers of a and θ higher than the square.

$$\therefore \frac{dt}{d\theta} = -\sqrt{\frac{k^2+h^2}{(a+h)g}} \cdot \frac{1}{\sqrt{a^2-\theta^2}},$$

$$t = \sqrt{\frac{k^2+h^2}{(a+h)g}} \cos^{-1}\frac{\theta}{a}, \quad \text{const.} = 0;$$

$$\therefore \text{ time of oscillation} = \pi\sqrt{\frac{k^2+h^2}{(a+h)g}}.$$

Also if b be the radius of the axis at O, and if $GO = m$, then

$$\text{time of oscillation about } O = \pi\sqrt{\frac{k^2+(m-h)^2}{(b+m-h)g}},$$

and these times being equal, we have

$$\frac{k^2+h^2}{a+h} = \frac{k^2+(m-h)^2}{b+m-h} = l;$$

$$\therefore l(a+h) - h^2 = (k^2 =)\, bl + (m-h)l - (m-h)^2;$$

$$\therefore l = \frac{(m-h)^2 - h^2}{m-2h+b-a} = \frac{m(m-2h)}{m-2h+b-a}.$$

If $b = a$, $l = m$; that is, the length of the simple pendulum equals the distance between the axes, when the cylinders are of equal radii.

437. Mr Lubbock has calculated, in a Paper read before the Royal Society in 1830, the errors in the length of the simple pendulum corresponding to given deviations of the knife edges. It is there shewn that a small deviation of one of the knife edges in azimuth is quite insensible: but that this is not the case for a small deviation in altitude: a deviation of one degree increases by 3 the vibrations of a seconds pendulum in 24 hours. A deviation from horizontality in the agate planes has a still greater influence: for a deviation in horizontality of 10′ increases by about 6 the vibrations in 24 hours.

PROP. *When a body moves about a fixed axis, required to find the pressure upon the axis at any instant.*

438. We shall suppose that the axis is fixed at two given points: let the axis of rotation be the axis of z, and let a and a' be the distances of the fixed points from the origin: let P, P' be the pressures at these points, $\alpha\beta\gamma$ and $\alpha'\beta'\gamma'$ the angles which their directions make with the axes of xyz respectively: X, Y, Z the impressed accelerating forces of the particle m, the co-ordinates of which are xyz at the time t; and therefore $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$, $\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ the effective accelerating forces of m: but since the *angular* accelerating force about the axis of rotation is calculated in Art. 432, we shall transform these effective forces as follows. Let f be the effective angular accelerating force, ω the angular velocity of the body at the time t, r the distance of m from the axis of rotation, θ the angle which r makes with the plane zx; then $x = r\cos\theta$, and $y = r\sin\theta$; differentiating twice with respect to t and observing that r does not vary with the time, and then replacing x and y, we have

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -yf - x\omega^2, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = xf - y\omega^2.$$

Then the moving forces $m(X+yf+x\omega^2)$, $m(Y-xf+y\omega^2)$, mZ acting parallel to the axes on the particle m, and similar forces acting on all the other particles, together with the pressures P, P' on the two fixed points of the axis ought to be in equilibrium at the time t, according to the first Principle of Art. 226. Hence by Art. 65,

$$P\cos\alpha + P'\cos\alpha' + \Sigma . m(X + yf + x\omega^2) = 0$$

$$P\cos\beta + P'\cos\beta' + \Sigma . m(Y - xf + y\omega^2) = 0$$

$$P\cos\gamma + P'\cos\gamma' + \Sigma . mZ = 0$$

$$-P\cos\beta . a - P'\cos\beta' . a' + \Sigma . m\{Zy - (Y - xf + y\omega^2)z\} = 0$$

$$P\cos\alpha . a + P'\cos\alpha' . a' + \Sigma . m\{(X + yf + x\omega^2)z - Zx\} = 0$$

$$\Sigma . m\{(Y - xf + y\omega^2)x - (X + yf + x\omega^2)y\} = 0.$$

These equations may generally be much simplified in applying them to any particular case, as we shall see in the

Chapter of Problems on this subject. The first, second, fourth, and fifth equations determine the four quantities $P\cos\alpha$, $P\cos\beta$, $P'\cos\alpha'$, $P'\cos\beta'$; from which the pressures perpendicular to the axis may be obtained. The third equation is the only equation which contains $P\cos\gamma$ and $P'\cos\gamma'$, and it shews that these quantities are indeterminate but that their sum must $= -\Sigma . mZ$. Lastly, the sixth equation is independent of the pressures, and, in short, determines the motion as calculated in Art. 432: this is easily seen, since the equation by reduction becomes

$$f . \Sigma . m(x^2 + y^2) = \Sigma . m(Yx - Xy).$$

The following Proposition is an application of these equations.

PROP. *The principal axes through the centre of gravity are* permanent axes, *when the body is not acted on by any forces.*

439. An axis is said to be *permanent* when the body permanently revolves about it when it is not fixed.

Let us suppose the body moves about a *fixed* principal axis. Since no forces act upon the body it follows that X, Y, Z each vanish, hence the equations of last Article become (since the sixth gives $f = 0$)

$$\begin{aligned}
P\cos\alpha + P'\cos\alpha' + \quad & \omega^2 \Sigma . mx = 0 \\
P\cos\beta + P'\cos\beta' + \quad & \omega^2 \Sigma . my = 0 \\
P\cos\gamma + P'\cos\gamma' \quad & = 0 \\
-Pa\cos\beta - P'a'\cos\beta' - & \omega^2 \Sigma . myz = 0 \\
Pa\cos\alpha + P'a'\cos\alpha' + & \omega^2 \Sigma . mxz = 0.
\end{aligned}$$

Since the axis of z passes through the centre of gravity, therefore $\Sigma . mx = 0$, $\Sigma . my = 0$ (Art. 413): also if the other two principal axes $x_1 y_1$ make each an angle ϕ with the axes of xy respectively at the time t, we have

$$x = x_1 \cos\phi + y_1 \sin\phi, \text{ and } y = y_1 \cos\phi - x_1 \sin\phi, \; z = z_1;$$

$$\therefore \Sigma . mxz = \cos\phi \Sigma . mx_1 z_1 + \sin\phi \Sigma . my_1 z_1 = 0;$$

$$P\cos\alpha+P'\cos\alpha'=0,\quad P\cos\beta+P'\cos\beta'=0,\quad P\cos\gamma+P'\cos\gamma'=0,$$

$$Pa\cos\beta+P'a'\cos\beta'=0,\quad Pa\cos\alpha+P'a'\cos\alpha'=0,$$

these give $P=0$ and $P'=0$. Hence there is no pressure on the fixed axis, and therefore it would not move if the body were to rotate about it when it is not fixed.

CHAPTER XII.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ABOUT A FIXED POINT: FINITE FORCES.

440. In calculating the motion of a rigid body about a fixed point it is found most convenient to transform the equations of motion so as to contain angular co-ordinates and angular velocities.

Let the axes of co-ordinates be drawn through the fixed point: and suppose that $\omega'\omega''\omega'''$ are three angular velocities such that if they were simultaneously impressed upon the body about the axes xyz respectively at the expiration of the time t, the motion of the body shall be what it actually is; then these are called the angular velocities of the body about the axes at that instant.

We shall always estimate those angular velocities positive which make the body revolve from the axis of x to the axis of y about z; from y to z about x; and from z to x about y: and those negative which act in the opposite directions.

When the axes of co-ordinates are principal axes we shall use $\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3$ for $\omega'\omega''\omega'''$.

PROP. *To find the linear velocities, parallel to the axes of co-ordinates, of any particle of the body in terms of the angular velocities about the axes.*

441. Let xyz be the co-ordinates to particle m at P (fig. 104): draw PM perpendicular to the axis of x: PN perpendicular to plane xy: then at the time t the velocity of m about the axis of $x = \omega' PM$: resolving this parallel to the axes of y and z and reckoning those linear velocities positive which tend *from* the origin, and *vice versâ*, we have

If m be at rest at the instant of expiration of the time t these expressions vanish; the third is a necessary consequence of the other two.

Hence $x = \frac{\omega'}{\omega'''} z$, $y = \frac{\omega''}{\omega'''} z$ are the equations to a straight line through the fixed point which is at rest at the instant under consideration.

This line is called the *Axis of Instantaneous Rotation.*

PROP. *To find the position of the instantaneous axis at any instant.*

442. Let $\alpha\beta\gamma$ be the angles which this line makes with the axes of xyz at the proposed instant: then by fig. 104,

$$\cos\alpha = \frac{AM}{AP} = \frac{x}{\sqrt{x^2+y^2+z^2}} = \frac{\omega'}{\sqrt{\omega'^2+\omega''^2+\omega'''^2}},$$

$$\cos\beta = \frac{MN}{AP} = \frac{y}{\sqrt{x^2+y^2+z^2}} = \frac{\omega''}{\sqrt{\omega'^2+\omega''^2+\omega'''^2}};$$

$$\cos\gamma = \frac{PN}{AP} = \frac{z}{\sqrt{x^2+y^2+z^2}} = \frac{\omega'''}{\sqrt{\omega'^2+\omega''^2+\omega'''^2}}.$$

By means of these we shall know the position at any instant when $\omega'\omega''\omega'''$ are known.

PROP. *To find the angular velocity of the body about the instantaneous axis.*

443. Let ω be the required angular velocity: r the distance of the particle m from the origin: then the distance of this particle from the instantaneous axis

$$= r \sin(\angle \text{ between } r \text{ and inst. axis}) = r\sqrt{1-\cos^2(\text{same } \angle)}$$

$$= \sqrt{x^2+y^2+z^2-(x\cos\alpha+y\cos\beta+z\cos\gamma)^2};$$

$\therefore$ the velocity of $m = \omega\sqrt{x^2+y^2+z^2-(x\cos\alpha+y\cos\beta+z\cos\gamma)^2}$.

But by Art. 441 the whole velocity

$$= \sqrt{(\omega''z-\omega'''y)^2+(\omega'''x-\omega'z)^2+(\omega'y-\omega''x)^2}.$$

Let us substitute for $\omega'\omega''\omega'''$ in terms of $\alpha\beta\gamma$ by Art. 442, then whole velocity =

$$\sqrt{\omega'^2+\omega''^2+\omega'''^2}\sqrt{(z\cos\beta-y\cos\gamma)^2+(x\cos\gamma-z\cos\alpha)^2+(y\cos\alpha-x\cos\beta)^2}$$

$$= \sqrt{\omega'^2+\omega''^2+\omega'''^2}\sqrt{x^2+y^2+z^2-(x\cos\alpha+y\cos\beta+z\cos\gamma)^2}.$$

Hence by equating these expressions,

$$\omega = \sqrt{\omega'^2+\omega''^2+\omega'''^2},$$

this is the angular velocity required.

444. COR. If a body revolve about an axis with an angular velocity ω, then the resolved part of this about another axis inclined to the former at an angle α

$$= (\omega' = \sqrt{\omega'^2+\omega''^2+\omega'''^2}\cos\alpha =)\ \omega\cos\alpha.$$

PROP. *To find the inclinations of the instantaneous axis to the principal axes.*

445. Let $\alpha,\beta,\gamma,$ be the angles the instantaneous axis makes with the principal axes, and $\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3$ the angular velocities about the principal axes.

$= \frac{\omega}{\omega} \cos x_1 x + \frac{\omega'}{\omega} \cos x_1 y + \frac{\omega}{\omega} \cos x_1 z$, (Arts. 443, 444

$= \frac{\omega_1}{\omega}$, since by resolving the angular velo

$\omega'' \omega'''$ about the axis of x_1 we have by Art. 444,

$$\omega_1 = \omega' \cos x_1 x + \omega'' \cos x_1 y + \omega''' \cos x_1 z.$$

$$\text{Similarly } \cos \beta_1 = \frac{\omega_2}{\omega}, \quad \cos \gamma_1 = \frac{\omega_3}{\omega}.$$

COR. Also $\omega'^2 + \omega''^2 + \omega'''^2 = \omega^2 = \omega_1^2 + \omega_2^2 + \omega_3^2$.

PROP. *To obtain equations for calculating the ang locities about the principal axes at any instant.*

446. Let Ax, Ay, Az be the axes of co-ordinates space; A being the fixed point of the body;

Ax_1, Ay_1, Az_1 the principal axes in the body.

Then the three equations of rotatory motion are by Art.

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ y \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} - z \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} \right\} = \Sigma . m \{ yZ - zY \} = L \text{ suppose}$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ z \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} - x \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} \right\} = \Sigma . m \{ zX - xZ \} = M \ldots\ldots$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ x \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} - y \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} \right\} = \Sigma . m \{ xY - yX \} = N \ldots\ldots$$

Now by Art. 441.

$$\frac{dx}{dt} = \omega'' z - \omega''' y, \quad \frac{dy}{dt} = \omega''' x - \omega' z, \quad \frac{dz}{dt} = \omega' y - \omega'' x.$$

By differentiating these with respect to t

$$\frac{d^2 x}{dt} = \omega'' \frac{dz}{dt} - \omega''' \frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{d\omega''}{dt} z - \frac{d\omega'''}{dt} y$$

$$= -(\omega''^2 + \omega'''^2)\,x + \omega'\omega''\,y + \omega'\omega'''\,z + \frac{d\omega''}{dt}\,z - \frac{d\omega'''}{dt}\,y,$$

$$\text{so } \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -(\omega'^2 + \omega'''^2)\,y + \omega''\omega'\,x + \omega''\omega'''\,z + \frac{d\omega'''}{dt}\,x - \frac{d\omega'}{dt}\,z;$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = -(\omega'^2 + \omega''^2)\,z + \omega'''\omega'\,x + \omega'''\omega''\,y + \frac{d\omega'}{dt}\,y - \frac{d\omega''}{dt}\,x.$$

$$\text{Hence } \Sigma.m\left\{y\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} - z\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right\} = (\omega'''^2 - \omega''^2)\,\Sigma.myz$$

$$+ \left(\omega'''\omega' - \frac{d\omega''}{dt}\right)\Sigma.mxy - \left(\omega''\omega' + \frac{d\omega'''}{dt}\right)\Sigma.mxz$$

$$+ \omega'''\omega''\,\Sigma.my^2 - \omega''\omega'''\,\Sigma.mz^2 + \frac{d\omega'}{dt}\,\Sigma.m(y^2+z^2) = L \ldots (1).$$

Now suppose the fixed axes Ax, Ay, Az were so chosen that at the instant of expiration of the time t the principal axes should coincide with them. Then *at this instant*

$\Sigma.mxy=0$, $\Sigma.mxz=0$, $\Sigma.myz=0$: also $\omega'=\omega_1$, $\omega''=\omega_2$, $\omega'''=\omega_3$;

and likewise $\frac{d\omega'}{dt} = \frac{d\omega_1}{dt}$, for the changes in the two angular velocities ω' and ω_1 during a given small time after the axis of $x_,$ coincides with the axis of x will differ only by a quantity which depends upon the angle passed through by the axis of $x_,$ during that given small time: the difference between ω' and ω_1 will therefore be an infinitessimal of the second order and therefore their differential coefficients will be equal. Hence equation (1) becomes *at this instant*

$$\omega_2\omega_3\,\Sigma.m(y_,^2 - z_,^2) + \frac{d\omega_1}{dt}\,\Sigma.m(y_,^2 + z_,^2) = L,$$

the letters with subscript accents having reference to the principal axes.

Now this equation is independent of the epoch from which the time is measured: it is also independent of the angles which

the principal axes make with the fixed axes in space. It follows, then, that this equation will hold for *every instant* of the time t; and is therefore generally true.

Now $\Sigma . m (y_1^2 + z_1^2) = A$; and $\Sigma . m (y_1^2 - z_1^2) = C - B$;

$$\therefore A \frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + (C - B)\omega_2\omega_3 = L_1$$

$$\text{similarly } B \frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + (A - C)\omega_1\omega_3 = M_1 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

$$C \frac{d\omega_3}{dt} + (B - A)\omega_1\omega_2 = N_1$$

By means of these three equations the three quantities $\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3$ must be determined.

PROP. *To determine the position of the body in space when the angular velocities about the principal axes are known.*

447. We consider, as before, those angular velocities positive which tend to turn the body from the axis of x_1 to the axis y_1 about z_1, from y_1 to z_1 about x_1, and from z_1 to x_1 about y_1.

Also by Art. 444 an angular velocity is resolved about any new axis by multiplying it by the cosine of the angle between the axes.

Now the position of the principal axes of the body at the time t, is determined by the values of θ, ϕ, ψ, these angles being measured as explained in Art. 415: it follows, then, that

$\omega_1\ \omega_2\ \omega_3$ must be functions of θ, ϕ, ψ, and $\frac{d\theta}{dt}$, $\frac{d\phi}{dt}$, $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$.

The resolved parts of $\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ about the axes of x_1, y_1, z_1 are

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt}\cos\phi, \quad -\frac{d\theta}{dt}\sin\phi, \quad 0.$$

the resolved parts of $\frac{d\phi}{dt}$ about these axes are

$$0, \qquad 0, \qquad \frac{d\phi}{dt},$$

and the resolved parts of $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$ about these axes are

$$-\frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos xx', \quad -\frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos xy', \quad -\frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos xz',$$

or $-\frac{d\psi}{dt}\sin\phi\sin\theta, \quad -\frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\phi\sin\theta, \quad -\frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\theta$ (see Art. 415).

Hence, adding those about the same axes,

$$\omega_1 = \frac{d\theta}{dt}\cos\phi - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\sin\phi\sin\theta,$$

$$\omega_2 = -\frac{d\theta}{dt}\sin\phi - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\phi\sin\theta,$$

$$\omega_3 = \frac{d\phi}{dt} - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\theta.$$

In these we must substitute the values of $\omega_1\ \omega_2\ \omega_3$ obtained by integrating the equations in Art. 446, and we shall find θ, ϕ, ψ, and so determine the position of the principal axes, and consequently of the body, at any proposed instant.

448. Cor. 1. By the above equations we obtain

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \omega_1\cos\phi - \omega_2\sin\phi$$

$$\sin\theta\frac{d\psi}{dt} = -\omega_1\sin\phi - \omega_2\cos\phi$$

$$\frac{d\phi}{dt} = \omega_3 - \frac{\cos\theta}{\sin\theta}(\omega_1\sin\phi + \omega_2\cos\phi).$$

449. Cor. 2. When θ is very small these become

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \omega_1\cos\phi - \omega_2\sin\phi$$

ed on by no forces but such as pass through that point: uired to integrate the equations of motion.

450. The equations (2) of Art. 446 become in this case

$$A\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + (C - B)\,\omega_2\omega_3 = 0,$$

$$B\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + (A - C)\,\omega_1\omega_3 = 0,$$

$$C\frac{d\omega_3}{dt} + (B - A)\,\omega_1\omega_2 = 0,$$

e principal axes being drawn through the centre of gravity.

Multiply these equations by ω_1 ω_2 ω_3 respectively and d; then

$$A\omega_1\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + B\omega_2\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + C\omega_3\frac{d\omega_3}{dt} = 0$$

$$A\omega_1^2 + B\omega_2^2 + C\omega_3^2 = \text{constant} = h^2.$$

Again multiply the equations by $A\omega_1$, $B\omega_2$, $C\omega_3$, and ld;

$$\therefore\ A^2\omega_1\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + B^2\omega_2\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + C^2\omega_3\frac{d\omega_3}{dt} = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ A^2\omega_1^2 + B^2\omega_2^2 + C^2\omega_3^2 = \text{constant} = k^2.$$

Eliminating ω_3^2 from these two equations, we have

$$A(A - C)\,\omega_1^2 + B(B - C)\,\omega_2^2 = k^2 - Ch^2;$$

$$\therefore\ \omega_2^2 = \frac{1}{B(B - C)}\left\{k^2 - Ch^2 - A(A - C)\,\omega_1^2\right\},$$

$$\text{and } \omega_3^2 = \frac{1}{C(C - B)}\left\{k^2 - Bh^2 - A(A - B)\,\omega_1^2\right\}.$$

Hence the first of the equations of motion gives

$$\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + \sqrt{\frac{(A-C)(A-B)}{BC}\left\{\omega_1^2 - \frac{h^2 - Ck^2}{A(A-C)}\right\}\left\{\frac{h^2 - Bk^2}{A(A-B)} - \omega_1^2\right\}} = 0$$

the integral of this equation, which in the general case cannot be found, will give ω_1 in terms of t and then ω_2 and ω_3 will be known.

Knowing $\omega_1 \omega_2 \omega_3$ the position of the body at any time is determined by integrating the equations of Art. 447.

PROP. *When the body is acted on by no forces except such as pass through the origin, there exists a plane to which it may be referred, which plane is invariable in position.*

451. Let

$a b c$ be the cosines of the angles which x makes with x, y, z,

$a' b' c'$ ..... y .....

$a'' b'' c''$ ..... z .....

We shall now seek the values of the differential coefficients of these with respect to t.

Let the planes yz, $y,z,$ cut in the line AK (fig. 105): then this line is perpendicular to the plane $xAx,$: let AI be the instantaneous axis: describe a sphere about A of radius unity and cutting the axes of co-ordinates, AK, and AI in the points marked in the figure.

Then $\frac{d \cdot xAx,}{dt}$ = the angular velocity about AK

$$= \omega \cos IAK, \quad \text{(Art. 444.)}$$

$$= \omega (\cos \alpha, \cos Kx, + \cos \beta, \cos Ky, + \cos \gamma, \cos Kz,)$$

$$= \omega (\cos \beta, \sin Kz, + \cos \gamma, \cos Kz,), \quad \because Kx, = 90^0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{da}{dt} = \frac{d \cos xx,}{dt} = -\omega_2 \sin xx, \sin Kz, - \omega_3 \sin xx, \cos Kz,$$

$$= -\omega_2 \sin xx, \sin Kx, z, - \omega_3 \sin xx, \cos Kx, z,$$

$$= -\omega_2 \sin xx, \cos z, x, x + \omega_3 \sin xx, \cos y, x, x$$

$$= -\omega_2 \cos xz, + \omega_3 \cos xy, = -\omega_2 c + \omega_3 b.$$

Similarly, $Aa'\omega_1 + Bb'\omega_2 + Cc'\omega_3 = l'$,

$$Aa''\omega_1 + Bb''\omega_2 + Cc''\omega_3 = l''.$$

Add the squares of these together; observing that since the angle between any two axes of the same system of co-ordinates equals a right angle, therefore

$$ab + a'b' + a''b'' = 0, \quad ac + a'c' + a''c'' = 0, \quad bc + b'c' + b''c'' = 0;$$

and we have

$$A^2\omega_1^2 + B^2\omega_2^2 + C^2\omega_3^2 = l^2 + l'^2 + l''^2 = k^2 \text{ by Art. 450.}$$

Hence if we draw a line AI' making angles with the fixed axes of which the cosines are

$$\frac{Aa\omega_1 + Bb\omega_2 + Cc\omega_3}{\sqrt{A^2\omega_1^2 + B^2\omega_2^2 + C^2\omega_3^2}}, \quad \frac{Aa'\omega_1 + Bb'\omega_2 + Cc'\omega_3}{\sqrt{A^2\omega_1^2 + B^2\omega_2^2 + C^2\omega_3^2}},$$

$$\frac{Aa''\omega_1 + Bb''\omega_2 + Cc''\omega_3}{\sqrt{A^2\omega_1^2 + B^2\omega_2^2 + C^2\omega_3^2}},$$

this line, and therefore the plane perpendicular to it, will remain invariable during the whole motion. For this reason

it is called the *Invariable Plane.* In a future Chapter we shall speak more of this plane.

452. Cor. 1.

$$\cos. I'Ax_{,} = a \cos I'Ax + a' \cos I'Ay + a'' \cos I'Az$$

$$= \frac{A\omega_1}{k},$$

$$\text{also } \cos I'Ay_{,} = \frac{B\omega_2}{k}, \quad \cos I'Az_{,} = \frac{C\omega_3}{k}.$$

453. Cor. 2. If the invariable plane be taken for the plane of xy then

$$\frac{A\omega_1}{k} = \cos zx_{,} = \sin \phi \sin \theta : \text{ Art. 415.}$$

$$\frac{B\omega_2}{k} = \cos zy_{,} = \cos \phi \sin \theta,$$

$$\frac{C\omega_3}{k} = \cos zz_{,} = \cos \theta.$$

The equation in Art. 450 for finding ω_1 can be integrated when the principal moments are equal: and also when two only of them are equal. We shall investigate these cases.

Prop. *To find the motion of a rigid body about a fixed point when its principal moments are equal to each other: the forces all passing through the centre of gravity fixed.*

454. In this case $B = C = A$: and the equations of Art. 450 give

$$\omega_1 = \text{constant}, \quad \omega_2 = \text{constant}, \quad \omega_3 = \text{constant};$$

and therefore the instantaneous axis remains fixed in the body: see Art 445.

Since every axis is a principal axis (Art. 425); let the axis of $z_{,}$ coincide with the instantaneous axis.

$$\therefore \quad \omega_1 = 0, \quad \omega_2 = 0, \quad \omega_3 = \text{constant} = n \text{ suppose.}$$

Hence the equations of Art. 447 become

$$0 = \frac{d\theta}{dt}\cos\phi - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\sin\phi\sin\theta,$$

$$0 = -\frac{d\theta}{dt}\sin\phi - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\phi\sin\theta,$$

$$n = \frac{d\phi}{dt} - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\theta.$$

By the first and second equations, we have

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = 0, \quad \frac{d\psi}{dt} = 0; \quad \therefore \theta \text{ and } \psi \text{ are constant.}$$

Also by the third equation $\frac{d\phi}{dt} = n$; $\therefore \phi = nt + \text{const.}$: this shews that the body revolves about a fixed axis: hence the instantaneous axis is not only fixed in the body, but also in space. The position of this axis and the magnitude of the angular velocity depend upon the circumstances of projection.

PROP. *When* A = B *required to determine the motion.*

455. The equations (2) of Art. 446 become

$$A\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + (C - A)\,\omega_2\omega_3 = 0,$$

$$A\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + (A - C)\,\omega_1\omega_3 = 0,$$

$$C\frac{d\omega_3}{dt} = 0;$$

$\therefore \omega_3 = \text{const.} = n$ suppose. Also by differentiating the first equations we have

$$A\frac{d^2\omega_1}{dt^2} + n(C - A)\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} = 0,$$

and therefore by this and the second equation

$$\frac{d^2\omega_1}{dt^2} + \left(\frac{C - A}{A}\right)^2 n^2\omega_1 = 0.$$

$$\therefore\ \omega_1 = e\cos\left\{\frac{C-A}{A}nt+f\right\};$$

$$\therefore\ \omega_2 = -\frac{A}{C-A}\frac{1}{n}\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} = e\sin\left\{\frac{C-A}{A}nt+f\right\},$$

where e and f are constants to be determined by the circumstances of the motion at some given time.

The angular velocity (ω) about the instantaneous axis

$= \sqrt{\omega_1^2+\omega_2^2+\omega_3^2}$ (Art. 443.) $= \sqrt{n^2+e^2}$, and is constant.

We shall now substitute the values of $\omega_1\,\omega_2\,\omega_3$ in the equations of Art. 447: and put $\dfrac{C-A}{A}n = m$;

$$\therefore\ \frac{d\theta}{dt}\cos\phi - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\sin\phi\sin\theta = e\cos(mt+f)$$

$$-\frac{d\theta}{dt}\sin\phi - \frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\phi\sin\theta = e\sin(mt+f)$$

$$\frac{d\phi}{dt} \qquad -\frac{d\psi}{dt}\cos\theta \qquad = n.$$

Let us take the Invariable Plane for the plane of xy: then by Art. 453.

$$\sin\phi\sin\theta = \frac{A}{k}\omega_1 = \frac{Ae}{k}\cos(mt+f),$$

$$\cos\phi\sin\theta = \frac{A}{k}\omega_2 = \frac{Ae}{k}\sin(mt+f),$$

$$\cos\theta \qquad = \frac{C}{k}\omega_3 = \frac{Cn}{k};$$

$$\therefore\ \tan\phi = \cot(mt+f),$$

$$\therefore\ \phi = \frac{\pi}{2} - mt - f;\ \text{ and } \frac{d\phi}{dt} = -m.$$

Also, since $\cos\theta = \dfrac{Cn}{k}$, θ is constant.

$$\text{And } \frac{d\psi}{dt} = \frac{1}{\cos\theta}\left(\frac{d\phi}{dt} - n\right) = -\frac{m+n}{n}\frac{k}{C} = -\frac{k}{A}.$$

Hence the body revolves uniformly about the principal axis Az_1; while the line of nodes (that is, the line of intersection of the planes xy and x_1y_1) revolves uniformly on the plane xy.

Also $\cos IAN$

$= \cos\alpha_1 \cos\phi + \cos\beta_1 \cos\left(\frac{1}{2}\pi + \phi\right) + \cos\gamma_1 \cos\frac{1}{2}\pi$, see fig. 105,

$$= \frac{\omega_1}{\omega}\cos\phi - \frac{\omega_2}{\omega}\sin\phi = 0;$$

and therefore the instantaneous axis of rotation is always perpendicular to the line of nodes.

Again $\cos IAz_1 = \frac{\omega_3}{\omega} = \frac{n}{\sqrt{n^2+e^2}}$; and therefore the instantaneous axis always makes the same angle with the axis of z_1.

We shall now obtain the arbitrary constants from the circumstances when $t = 0$.

Since any axis in the plane x_1y_1 is a principal axis (Art. 424), let the axis of x_1 be so chosen, that when $t = 0$ it coincides with the line of intersection of the planes IAz_1 and x_1y_1.

Let ω_0 be the angular velocity about the instantaneous axis when $t = 0$, and let $\angle IAz_1 = \delta$; therefore when $t = 0$,

$$\omega_1 = \omega_0 \cos Ix_1 = \omega_0 \sin\delta,$$

$$\omega_2 = \omega_0 \cos Iy_1 = 0,$$

$$\omega_3 = \omega_0 \cos Iz_1 = \omega_0 \cos\delta.$$

and consequently by the general values of $\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3$ we have

$$e\cos f = \omega_0 \sin\delta, \quad e\sin f = 0, \quad n = \omega_0\cos\delta;$$

$$\therefore f = 0, \quad e = \omega_0 \sin\delta, \quad n = \omega_0\cos\delta,$$

$$k = \sqrt{A^2(\omega_1^2+\omega_2^2) + C\omega_3^2} \text{ (Art. 150.)} = \omega_0\sqrt{A^2\sin^2\delta + C^2\cos^2\delta}$$

Hence $\phi = \frac{\pi}{2} - \frac{C-A}{A}\omega_0 \cos\delta \,.\, t$,

$$\frac{d\psi}{dt} = -\frac{\omega_0}{A}\sqrt{A^2\sin^2\delta + C^2\cos^2\delta},$$

$$\cos\theta = \frac{C\cos\delta}{\sqrt{A^2\sin^2\delta + C^2\cos^2\delta}}; \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{\tan\theta}{\tan\delta} = \frac{A}{C}.$$

456. These formulæ lead to the following geometrical construction, fig. 106. Let the axes of co-ordinates x, z and the instantaneous axis cut a sphere of radius unity described about A in the points x, zI respectively.

Then $\frac{d\psi}{dt} \div \frac{d\phi}{dt} = \frac{\sqrt{A^2\sin^2\delta + C^2\cos^2\delta}}{(C-A)\cos\delta} = \frac{C}{(C-A)\cos\theta} = \frac{\sin\delta}{\sin(\delta-\theta)}$

$= \frac{\sin Ix}{\sin Iz}$, since AI is perpendicular to AN and makes a constant angle with Ax, and is consequently always in the plane xAz.

About x and z describe two small circles on the sphere of which the radii measured on the sphere are δ and $\delta - \theta$: then these circles touch in the point I, where the instantaneous axis meets the sphere.

Suppose I' and I'' are the points in these circles which were in contact when $t = 0$.

Then, since the angular velocities about Ax and Az are uniform and equal to $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$ and $\frac{d\phi}{dt}$, we have

$$\text{arc } I'I = \text{angle } I'xI \sin Ix = t\frac{d\psi}{dt}\sin Ix$$

$$= t\frac{d\phi}{dt}\sin Iz = \text{angle } I''zI \sin Iz = \text{arc } I''I,$$

wherefore the motion of the body may be described by making the circle zI *roll* with its internal surface on the fixed circle xI.

Cor. If C be less than A, then I will be between x and z, and the external circumference of the circle zI would roll on the circle Ix.

coinciding with one of its principal axes at any given time: required to find the motion, all external forces being neglected.

458. Let the axis of z be that near which the instantaneous axis lies at the given time t. Now the sine of the angle which these two axes make with each other $= \sqrt{\frac{\omega_1^2 + \omega_2^2}{\omega_1^2 + \omega_2^2 + \omega_3^2}}$ (Art. 445), and this is small by hypothesis: hence $\omega_1^2 + \omega_2^2$ is small, and ω_1 and ω_2 are small: and the equations (2) of Art. 446 give

$$A\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + (C - B)\,\omega_2\omega_3 = 0,$$

$$B\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + (A - C)\,\omega_1\omega_3 = 0,$$

$$C\frac{d\omega_3}{dt} + (B - A)\,\omega_1\omega_2 = 0,$$

$$B\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + (A - C)\,\omega_1 n = 0,$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2\omega_1}{dt^2} + \frac{(A - C)\,(B - C)}{AB}\,n^2\omega_1 = 0;$$

$$\therefore \omega_1 = e \sin\left\{\sqrt{\frac{(A - C)\,(B - C)}{AB}}\,nt + f\right\},$$

e and f being constants which depend upon the circumstances at any given time;

$$\therefore \omega_2 = \frac{A}{(B - C)\,n}\,\frac{d\omega_1}{dt}$$

$$= e\sqrt{\frac{A}{B}\,\frac{A - C}{B - C}}\cos\left\{\sqrt{\frac{(A - C)\,(B - C)}{AB}}\,nt + f\right\},$$

and since $\omega_1^2 + \omega_2^2$ is small at the given time, e is small: and since e is constant it shews that ω_1 and ω_2 are *always* small so long as $(A - C)\,(B - C)$ is positive.

If however $(A - C)\,(B - C)$ be negative, then the trigonometrical expressions for $\omega_1\omega_2$ must be replaced by exponentials, and consequently they will not remain small.

From this we gather that if a body revolve at any time about an axis coinciding nearly with the principal axis of greatest or least moment, the axis of rotation will always nearly coincide with that principal axis. But if the axis be that of mean moment the instantaneous axis of rotation will deviate more and more from that principal axis till it approaches the principal axis of either greatest or least moment.

Cor. If the instantaneous axis actually coincide with a principal axis at first, then $e = 0$, and ω_1 and ω_2 each vanish. Hence any principal axis is a permanent axis (see Art. 439).

If, however, the slightest cause tend to make the instantaneous axis of rotation deviate from the principal axis, the rotatory motion may be said to be *stable* or *unstable* according as the principal axis in question is not or is the *mean* principal axis.

This points out an admirable adaptation in the laws of nature: that the motion of rotation which causes the heavenly

bodies to *bulge* at their equators, in so doing, gives them such a figure as to insure the stability of their rotation.

We shall now consider the action of the Sun and Moon on the rotatory motion of the Earth.

PROP. *To obtain equations for calculating the rotatory motion of the Earth when acted on by the Sun and Moon.*

459. The equations of motion referred to the principal axes are by Art. 446,

$$A\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + (C-B)\,\omega_2\,\omega_3 = L,$$

$$B\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + (A-C)\,\omega_1\,\omega_3 = M,$$

$$C\frac{d\omega_3}{dt} + (B-A)\,\omega_1\,\omega_2 = N,.$$

To calculate $L,M,N,$ let S be the mass of one of the disturbing bodies: $x,y,z,$ the co-ordinates of the centre of S; $x_,'y_,'z_,'$ the co-ordinates to any particle m of the Earth's mass referred to the principal axes: $r^2 = x_,^2 + y_,^2 + z_,^2$.

Then the difference of the attractions of S on the particle (m), and the centre of the Earth (which we here suppose fixed, see Art. 429.) resolved parallel to the axes $y,$ and $z,$ and estimated positive in directions *from* the origin, are

$$\frac{S(y,-y_,')}{\{(x,-x_,')^2+(y,-y_,')^2+(z,-z_,')^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{Sy,}{r^3}, \quad = Y, \text{ suppose}$$

$$\frac{S(z,-z_,')}{\{(x,-x_,')^2+(y,-y_,')^2+(z,-z_,')^2\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{Sz,}{r^3}, \quad = Z, \text{ suppose.}$$

Hence $L, = \Sigma.m\,(y_,'Z, - z_,'Y,)$, see Art. 446.

$$= S\Sigma.m\left\{\frac{z,y_,'-y,z_,'}{\{r^2-2(x,x_,'+y,y_,'+z,z_,')+(x_,'^2+y_,'^2+z_,'^2)\}^{\frac{3}{2}}} - \frac{z,y_,'-y,z_,'}{r^3}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{S}{r^3}\Sigma.m(z,y_,'-y,z_,')\left\{\left(1-\frac{2(x,x_,'+y,y_,'+z,z_,')-(x_,'^2+y_,'^2+z_,'^2)}{r^2}\right)^{-\frac{3}{2}} - 1\right\}$$

$$= \frac{3S}{r^5} \Sigma . m (x_i y_i' - y_i x_i')(x_i x_i' + y_i y_i' + z_i z_i'),$$

neglecting the cubes of very small quantities,

$$= \frac{3S}{r^5} \Sigma . m \{ (y_i'^2 - x_i'^2) x_i y_i - (y_i^2 - x_i^2) x_i' y_i' + x_i x_i' y_i' x_i' - y_i x_i x_i' x_i' \}$$

$$= \frac{3S}{r^5} x_i y_i \Sigma . m (y_i'^2 - x_i'^2) \text{ by the property of principal axes,}$$

$$\therefore \; L_i = \frac{3S}{r^5} x_i y_i (C - B).$$

In the same manner we should find

$$M_i = \frac{3S}{r^5} x_i z_i (A - C),$$

$$N_i = \frac{3S}{r^5} x_i y_i (B - A).$$

Hence the equations of motion become

$$A \frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + (C - B) \omega_2 \omega_3 = \frac{3S}{r^5} y_i z_i (C - B),$$

$$B \frac{d\omega_2}{dt} + (A - C) \omega_1 \omega_3 = \frac{3S}{r^5} x_i z_i (A - C),$$

$$C \frac{d\omega_3}{dt} + (B - A) \omega_1 \omega_2 = \frac{3S}{r^5} x_i y_i (B - A).$$

In these equations the disturbing body is supposed to be at a very great distance, as is the case with the Sun and Moon; but it is remarkable that they are very nearly correct even when the attracting body is very near the Earth, supposing the Earth's figure to be spheroidal. For a demonstration of this we refer the reader to the *Mécanique Céleste*. Liv. V. Chap. I. §. 3.

It will be observed that we have taken account of only one disturbing body S in these equations: but since the perturbations are small and the equations in $\omega_1 \omega_2 \omega_3$ linear, we

may calculate the effects of the disturbing bodies singly and add them together, Art. 288.

PROP. *To prove that the velocity of rotation of the Earth, and consequently the length of the mean day, is not altered by the action of the Sun and Moon, very small quantities being neglected.*

460. If we neglect the disturbing forces and suppose the figure of the Earth to be one of revolution and not differing much from a sphere, that is, $B=A$, and each of these nearly $=C$, the difference being of the order of the ellipticity of the terrestrial spheroid; then in this case the equations of the last Article give, for a first approximation, $\omega_3 = \text{const.} = n$, ω_1 and ω_2 very small quantities. These values may be put in the small terms of our equations in order to obtain a nearer approximation.

If we multiply the three equations of last Article by $\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3$ and divide them by A, B, C respectively and add them together, we have

$$\frac{d(\omega_1^2+\omega_2^2+\omega_3^2)}{dt} + 2\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3\left\{\frac{C-B}{A}+\frac{A-C}{B}+\frac{B-A}{C}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{6S}{r^3}\left\{\frac{y_1 z_1}{r^2}\,\frac{C-B}{A}\,\omega_1 + \frac{x_1 z_1}{r^2}\,\frac{A-C}{B}\,\omega_2 + \frac{x_1 y_1}{r^2}\,\frac{B-A}{C}\,\omega_3\right\}.$$

Now $\omega_1\omega_2$ are each extremely small; $\frac{C-B}{A}$, $\frac{A-C}{B}$ are of the order of the ellipticity of the Earth; and $\frac{B-A}{C}$ is extremely small, since if we suppose the Earth a figure of revolution this expression vanishes; also $\frac{S}{r^3}$ is very small, because S varies as the cube of the radius of the body S.

Hence if we neglect extremely small quantities

$$\sqrt{\omega_1^2+\omega_2^2+\omega_3^2} = \text{const.} = n,$$

since the *mean* values of $\omega_1\omega_2\omega_3$ are 0, 0, n.

Hence the angular velocity of the Earth is constant, and the length of the mean day is not affected by the action of the Sun and Moon, when we neglect inappreciable quantities.

A full discussion of this important question will be found in the *Méc. Céleste*, Liv. V. Chap. I. §. 8, 9: and also in the *Mémoires de l'Académie Royale des Sciences de l'Institut de France*: Vol. VII. p. 199.

Astronomical observations shew in a remarkable degree that the length of the mean day has been invariable for a long period of time. We proceed to explain how this result is obtained from observations.

PROP. *To shew from observations made on eclipses that the length of the mean day has been invariable for a great length of time.*

461. Let us take for the unit of time the length of any day at the present epoch: and suppose the day has been decreasing by a parts. Let n be the mean angular motion of the Moon on the day which is taken for the unit of time; then n is the number of degrees through which the Moon moves on that day: and $n(1+a)$, $n(1+2a)$, ... are the angles described by the Moon during the days preceding that day in order: and the angle described during t days $= nt + \frac{1}{2}na(t-1)t$, and if t be very large this angle $= nt + \frac{1}{2}nat^2$. Let n' be the mean motion of the Sun on the day of which the length is the unit of time, then the angle described by the Sun in the t days now elapsed $= n't + \frac{1}{2}n'at^2$, and the difference of longitude in the Sun and Moon being λ now, was $= \lambda + (n'-n)t + \frac{1}{2}(n'-n)at^2$ at the distance of t days from the present time.

Let δ be the error made in calculating the difference of longitudes of the Sun and Moon at a distance of t days on the supposition of the invariability of the length of the day: then $\frac{1}{2}(n'-n)at^2 = \delta$.

Now the values of δ have been calculated in the *Connaissance des Tems* of 1800, from 27 eclipses observed by the Chaldees, the Greeks, and the Arabs. The greatest value of δ corresponds to an eclipse observed in the year B.C. 382:

for this $\delta = -27'.41''$. For the most ancient eclipse $\delta = 2''$; this eclipse being observed by the Chaldees in the year B.C. 720.

Let i be the number of centuries in t days: then $t = 36525\, i$. By the mean of modern observations on the Sun and Moon it is found that $(n' - n)\, 36525 = 445268^0$: for the most ancient eclipse $i = 25.56$;

$$\therefore\ \delta = \tfrac{1}{2}(36525).(25.56)^2\, \alpha \times 445268^0.$$

Now if the day be shorter by a ten-millionth part than at the epoch of the most ancient eclipse on record, then

$$(36525)\,(25.56)\,\alpha = 0.0000001\,;$$

$$\therefore\ \delta = \tfrac{1}{2}(25.56).(0.0000001).(445268)^0$$

$$= 34',$$

a value which renders an eclipse impossible, since the sum of the greatest semi-diameters of the Sun and Moon does not exceed half a degree.

From this we learn that the length of the day has not changed even by a hundred and fifteenth part of a second of time during the last 2556 years. M. Poisson's *Traité de Mécanique*, Seconde Edition, Tom. II. p. 196—200.

462. By comparing the observed north-polar distances of stars made at epochs distant from each other Bradley shewed that the point in the heavens to which the Earth's axis of rotation is directed is not stationary, although for periods of time not very long this deviation, as we remarked in Art. 457, is not perceptible. It becomes an interesting question, then, to ascertain the cause of this perturbation. Since we neglected the action of the Sun and Moon in the calculation of Art. 458, we may readily conjecture that the action of these bodies is the cause required. This we proceed to demonstrate.

PROP. *To determine the position of the axis of rotation of the Earth at any given time, the action of the Sun being considered; and the figure of the Earth being taken to be one of revolution.*

463. We shall refer the disturbing body S to the ecliptic. Let the plane of the ecliptic be the plane of XY: the axis of X being drawn through the first point of Aries, which is *moveable*; the centre of the Earth the origin of co-ordinates; x_1, y_1, z_1 parallel to the principal axes,

θ = the angle between the equator and ecliptic,
or the angle between the axes of z_1 and Z.

ϕ = the right ascension of the axis of x_1,
or the angle between the axes of x_1 and X.

l = longitude of the Sun,

r = distance of Sun from the Earth's centre;

then by Spherical Trigonometry,

$$\frac{x_1}{r} = \cos\phi\cos l + \sin\phi\sin l\cos\theta,$$

$$\frac{y_1}{r} = -\sin\phi\cos l + \cos\phi\sin l\cos\theta,$$

$$\frac{z_1}{r} = -\sin l\sin\theta;$$

$$\therefore \frac{y_1 z_1}{r^2} = \tfrac{1}{2}\sin 2l\sin\theta\sin\phi - \tfrac{1}{2}\sin^2 l\sin 2\theta\cos\phi,$$

$$\frac{x_1 z_1}{r^2} = -\tfrac{1}{2}\sin 2l\sin\theta\cos\phi - \tfrac{1}{2}\sin^2 l\sin 2\theta\sin\phi,$$

substituting these in the equations of motion of Art. 459, and putting

$$P = \frac{3S}{2r^3}\sin 2l\sin\theta, \quad \text{and} \quad P' = \frac{3S}{2r^3}\sin^2 l\sin 2\theta,$$

we obtain, since $B = A$,

$$\left.\begin{aligned} \frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + \frac{C-A}{A}\omega_2\omega_3 &= \frac{C-A}{A}(P\sin\phi - P'\cos\phi) \\ \frac{d\omega_2}{dt} - \frac{C-A}{A}\omega_1\omega_3 &= \frac{C-A}{A}(P\cos\phi + P'\sin\phi) \\ \frac{d\omega_3}{dt} &= 0. \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \ldots (1).$$

The third equation gives $\omega_3 = \text{constant} = n$; and therefore $\phi = nt + \text{small terms}$ (see Art. 447).

Let the time be measured from the epoch when the Sun was in Aries: then $l = n't$. Since $B = A$ any axis in the plane x_1y_1 is a principal axis: let the axis of x_1 be so chosen, that when $t = 0$ it passed through Aries: then $\phi = nt$ neglecting small terms;

$$\therefore\ P = \frac{3S}{2r^3}\sin\theta\sin 2n't;\quad P' = \frac{3S}{4r^3}\sin 2\theta\,(1-\cos 2n't).$$

We shall neglect the variations of the inclination (θ) of the equator and ecliptic in calculating small terms.

Since the equations (1) are linear we may take one term only of P and P' in the calculation: let $k\sin it$ and $k'\cos it$ be corresponding terms: then i admits of two values 0 and $2n'$. Considering these terms we have

$$\frac{d\omega_1}{dt} + \frac{C-A}{A}n\omega_2 = \frac{C-A}{2A}\left\{(k-k')\cos(n-i)t - (k+k')\cos(n+i)t\right\}$$

$$\frac{d\omega_2}{dt} - \frac{C-A}{A}n\omega_1 = \frac{C-A}{2A}\left\{-(k-k')\sin(n-i)t + (k+k')\sin(n+i)t\right\}$$

To solve these differentiate the first with respect to t and eliminate $\frac{d\omega_2}{dt}$ by the second:

$$\therefore \frac{d^2\omega_1}{dt^2} + \left(\frac{C-A}{A}\right)^2 n^2\omega_1 = \frac{C-A}{2A}\left\{(k-k')\left(\frac{C-A}{A}n - n + i\right)\sin(n-i)\right.$$

$$\left. - (k+k')\left(\frac{C-A}{A}n - n - i\right)\sin(n+i)t\right\}.$$

The integral of this is of the form

$$\omega_1 = C_1 \cos\left(\frac{C-A}{A} nt + C_2\right) + M \sin(n-i)t + N \sin(n+i)t,$$

where C_1 and C_2 are constants independent of the disturbing forces; and M and N are to be found by putting this value for ω_1 in the differential equation, we find that

$$2M = \frac{(k-k')(C-A)\{Cn-(2n-i)A\}}{(C-A)^2 n^2 - A^2(n-i)^2},$$

$$2N = -\frac{(k+k')(C-A)\{Cn-(2n+i)A\}}{(C-A)^2 n^2 - A^2(n+i)^2}.$$

Now the only values of $\frac{i}{n}$ are 0 and $\frac{2n'}{n}$ $\left(=\frac{2}{365}\right.$, since there are 365 days in a year): hence by neglecting $\frac{i}{n}$ in the small terms, we have

$$M = \frac{k-k'}{2n}\frac{C-A}{C}, \quad N = -\frac{k+k'}{2n}\frac{C-A}{C}.$$

Now when there are no disturbing forces $\omega_1 = 0$, and consequently $C_1 = 0$;

$$\therefore\ \omega_1 = M \sin(n-i)t + N \sin(n+i)t,$$

$$\omega_2 = M \cos(n-i)t + N \cos(n+i)t.$$

Returning to the axes fixed in space and choosing the plane of the ecliptic for the plane of xy we must put the values of ω_1 and ω_2 in the equations (Art. 448.)

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \omega_1 \cos\phi - \omega_2 \sin\phi,$$

$$\sin\theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} = -\omega_1 \sin\phi - \omega_2 \cos\phi,$$

$$\frac{d\phi}{dt} = n - \cot\theta\,(\omega_1 \sin\phi + \omega_2 \cos\phi),$$

in which θ is the obliquity of the ecliptic; ϕ the right ascension of a fixed terrestrial meridian; ψ the longitude of Aries measured in a retrograde direction: fig. 97.

Since $\frac{d\psi}{dt}$ vanishes when there are no disturbing forces;

$$\therefore \phi = nt \text{ for a first approximation;}$$

$$\therefore \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \omega_1 \cos nt - \omega_2 \sin nt$$

$$= (N - M) \sin it = -\frac{C - A}{nC} . k \sin it,$$

$$\sin\theta \frac{d\psi}{dt} = -\omega_1 \sin nt - \omega_2 \cos nt,$$

$$= -(M + N) \cos it = \frac{C - A}{nC} . k' \cos it,$$

and by replacing $k \sin it$ and $k' \cos it$ by P and P', of which they have been the representatives,

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = -\frac{C - A}{nC} P = -\frac{3S}{2r^3} \frac{C - A}{nC} \sin\theta \sin 2n't,$$

$$\frac{d\psi}{dt} = \frac{C - A}{nC \sin\theta} P' = \frac{3S}{2r^3} \frac{C - A}{nC} \cos\theta (1 - \cos 2n't),$$

integrating these equations and putting $\sqrt{\frac{S}{r^3}} = n'$, the mean motion of the Sun,

$$\theta = I + \frac{3n'}{4n} \frac{C - A}{C} \sin I \cos 2n't,$$

$$\psi = \frac{3n'^2}{2n} \frac{C - A}{C} \cos I . t - \frac{3n'}{4n} \frac{C - A}{C} \cos I \sin 2n't,$$

I being the mean value of θ: and the axis of x being so chosen that $t = 0$ when Aries was in that axis.

We should obtain analogous expressions for the perturbation of the Earth's axis by the Moon.

464. The first of these expressions shews that the obliquity of the ecliptic fluctuates; but preserves its mean value equal to the value it would have if there were no disturbing forces.

The second shews that the first point of Aries, or the vernal equinox, has on the whole a retrograde motion on the ecliptic, though at the same time it is subject to a small oscillatory motion.

The steady retrograde motion is called *the Precession of the Equinoxes;* the solar precession (i. e. the precession caused by the Sun) equals $\frac{3n'^2}{2n}\frac{C-A}{C}\cos I$ in a unit of time. This precessional motion causes the pole of the Earth to describe a small circle about the pole of the ecliptic.

The oscillating motion of the pole, arising partly from the change of the obliquity and partly from the periodical term in ψ, is called the *Nutation of the Earth's Axis.*

465. It will be seen that the Precession and Nutation of the Earth's axis arise from the attraction of the Sun and Moon upon the protuberant parts of the Earth, i. e. upon the portion by which it exceeds a sphere touching it internally. For if the form of the Earth were spherical, then $C = A$ and the variable terms in θ and ψ would vanish.

We proceed to calculate the effect of the Moon upon the position of the Earth's axis.

PROP. *To find the motion of the Earth's axis with respect to the plane of the Moon's orbit caused by the action of the Moon.*

466. Let θ' and ψ' be the same quantities as θ and ψ in Art. 463. with this difference that the plane of the Moon's orbit is used instead of the ecliptic; i the inclination of the Moon's orbit to the ecliptic; this does never much exceed 5^0, and is therefore so small that we may neglect its square: we shall also consider i constant, since its variations are very small, as is shewn by observation: I' the inclination of the equator

to the Moon's orbit: M the mass of the Moon: a the radius of the Moon's orbit.

$$\text{Now for } \frac{S}{r^3} \text{ in Art. 463. we must put } \frac{M}{a^3}.$$

Let n'' be the mean motion of the Moon about the Earth:

$$\text{then } n'' = \sqrt{\frac{M+E}{a^3}}, \quad \therefore \frac{M}{a^3} = \frac{Mn''^2}{M+E} = \frac{n''^2}{1+\nu},$$

where E is the mass of the Earth, and ν the ratio of this mass to that of the Moon.

$$\text{Hence } \frac{S}{r^3} \text{ in Art. 463. must be replaced by } \frac{n''^2}{1+\nu};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d\theta'}{dt} = -\frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} \sin I' \sin 2n''t$$

$$\frac{d\psi'}{dt} = \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} \cos I' (1 - \cos 2n''t).$$

The periodical quantities $\sin 2n''t$ and $\cos 2n''t$ go through their changes in half a month; in consequence of the shortness of their period and the smallness of their coefficients they never accumulate so much as to produce a sensible effect: and are therefore omitted. Hence the inclination of the Earth's axis to the Moon's orbit suffers no sensible change from the Moon's attraction; but the line of intersection of the equator and the plane of the Moon's orbit does change its position, which is determined by the equation

$$\psi' = \frac{3n''}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} \cos I' \cdot (n''t + \text{const.})$$

In order to calculate the Lunar Precession and Nutation, we must refer the angle ψ' to the ecliptic. Since the oscillations of the plane of the Moon's orbit are insensible no Lunar Nutation can arise from them; but the Moon's line of Nodes continually regresses (Art. 342.) performing a revolution in 18 years and 7 months: and this is the cause of Lunar Nutation. We proceed to calculate this and Lunar Precession

PROP. *To calculate Lunar Precession.*

467. Let K, K', P be respectively the poles of the ecliptic, Moon's orbit, and the Earth's equator (fig. 107).

Now P revolves about K' with an angular velocity $\frac{d\psi'}{dt}$:

hence the linear vel. of P about $K' = \frac{d\psi'}{dt}\sin\theta'$, rad. of sphere = 1

the resolved part of this about $K = \frac{d\psi'}{dt}\sin\theta'\cos KPK'$: and

therefore

P revolves about K with an angular velocity $= \frac{d\psi'}{dt}\frac{\sin\theta'}{\sin\theta}\cos KPK'$

and ..... Υ ..... $= \frac{d\psi'}{dt}\sin\theta'\cos\Upsilon PK'$;

$$\therefore \frac{d\psi}{dt} = \frac{d\psi'}{dt}\frac{\sin\theta'}{\sin\theta}\cos KPK' = \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)}\frac{C-A}{nC}\frac{\cos\theta'\sin\theta'}{\sin\theta}\cos KPK'$$

$$= \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)}\frac{C-A}{nC}\frac{\cos\theta'}{\sin\theta}\frac{\cos i - \cos\theta\cos\theta'}{\sin\theta}$$

$$= \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)}\frac{C-A}{nC}\frac{1}{\sin^2\theta}(\cos\theta\cos i + \sin\theta\sin i\cos\Omega)$$

$$\times(\cos i - \cos^2\theta\cos i - \cos\theta\sin\theta\sin i\cos\Omega)$$

where Ω is the longitude of the Moon's node measured in a retrograde direction

$$= \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)}\frac{C-A}{nC}(\cos\theta\cos i + \sin\theta\sin i\cos\Omega)(\cos i - \cot\theta\sin i\cos\Omega)$$

$$= \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)}\frac{C-A}{nC}(\cos\theta\cos^2 i - \frac{\cos 2\theta}{2\sin\theta}\sin 2i\cos\Omega - \cos\theta\sin^2 i\cos^2\Omega)$$

$$= \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)}\frac{C-A}{nC}\left\{\cos I(\cos^2 i - \tfrac{1}{2}\sin^2 i)\right.$$

$$\left. - \frac{\cos 2I\sin 2i}{2\sin I}\cos\left(\frac{2\pi t}{\tau} + \Omega_0\right) - \tfrac{1}{2}\cos I\sin^2 i\cos\left(\frac{4\pi t}{\tau} + 2\Omega_0\right)\right\},$$

$$\therefore \psi = \frac{\quad}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{\quad}{nC} \left\{ \cos I \left(\cos^2 i - \tfrac{1}{2}\sin^2 i\right) t \right.$$

$$- \frac{\tau}{4\pi} \frac{\cos 2I \sin 2i}{\sin I} \sin\left(\frac{2\pi t}{\tau} + \Omega_0\right)$$

$$\left. - \frac{\tau}{8\pi} \cos I \sin^2 i \sin\left(\frac{4\pi t}{\tau} + 2\Omega_0\right) \right\} + \text{const.}$$

Hence the Lunar Precession

$$= \frac{3n''}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} \cos I \left(\cos^2 i - \tfrac{1}{2}\sin^2 i\right) n'' t.$$

The second term of ψ is periodical as well as the thir but the third is so small, in consequence of its coeffici $\sin^2 i$, that it may be neglected. They are both parts Lunar Nutation.

PROP. *To find the effect of the Moon on the obliqu of the ecliptic.*

468. We have from the last Proposition

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{d\psi'}{dt} \sin\theta' \cos \Upsilon PK' = \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} \cos\theta' \sin\theta' \cos \Upsilon P$$

$$= \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} (\cos\theta \cos i + \sin\theta \sin i \cos\Omega) \sin i \sin\Omega,$$

$$= \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} \left\{ \tfrac{1}{2} \cos I \sin 2i \sin\left(\frac{2\pi t}{\tau} + \Omega_0\right) \right.$$

$$\left. + \tfrac{1}{2} \sin I \sin^2 i \sin\left(\frac{4\pi t}{\tau} + 2\Omega\right) \right.$$

$$\therefore \theta = I - \frac{3n''^2}{2(1+\nu)} \frac{C-A}{nC} \left\{ \frac{\tau}{4\pi} \cos I \sin 2i \cos\left(\frac{2\pi t}{\tau} + \Omega_0\right) \right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{\tau}{8\pi} \sin I \sin^2 i \cos\left(\frac{4\pi t}{\tau} + 2\Omega_0\right) \right.$$

the variable terms in this are periodical, and the last is so small as to be insensible. These terms and the periodical terms in the value of ψ make up the whole of Lunar Nutation.

469. Let x and y be the parts of Lunar Nutation which have been determined in Arts. 467, 468;

$$\therefore x^2\left\{\frac{8\pi n(1+\nu)C}{3\tau n''^2(C-A)\cos 2I\sin 2i}\right\}^2+y^2\left\{\frac{8\pi n(1+\nu)C}{3\tau n''^2(C-A)\cos I\sin 2i}\right\}^2=1.$$

This is the equation to an ellipse of which the axes are in the ratio $\cos 2I : \cos I$. This explains the construction mentioned in works on Plane Astronomy. Woodhouse's *Plane Astronomy*, p. 857. Maddy's *Plane Astronomy*, 2nd Edition.

The whole Precession, both Solar and Lunar, equals

$$\frac{3}{2n}\frac{C-A}{C}\cos I\left\{n'^2+\frac{n''^2}{1+\nu}(\cos^2 i-\tfrac{1}{2}\sin^2 i)\right\}t,$$

(see *Mécanique Céleste*, Liv. v. Chap. I. §. 14.) and the Nutation is given by the equations of Arts. 467, 468.

470. **Annual Precession**

$$=\frac{C-A}{C}\frac{3n'}{n}\cos I\left\{1+\frac{n''^2}{n'^2}\frac{1-\frac{3}{2}\sin^2 i}{1+\nu}\right\}180^0$$

$$I=23^0\,28'\,18'',\quad i=5^0\,8'\,50'',\quad \frac{n}{n'}=365.26,\quad \frac{n''}{n'}=\frac{36526}{2732}.$$

$$\log_{10}\sin i=\bar{2}.9528656$$

$$\log_{10}(\tfrac{3}{2}\sin^2 i)=\bar{2}.0818225=\log_{10}.0120732;$$

$$\therefore\ \log_{10}(1-\tfrac{3}{2}\sin^2 i)=\log_{10}.9879268=\bar{1}.9947248$$

$$\log_{10}\frac{n''^2}{n'^2}\qquad\qquad =2.2522428$$

$$\therefore\ \log_{10}\left\{\frac{n''^2}{n'^2}(1-\tfrac{3}{2}\sin^2 i)\right\}=2.2469676=\log_{10}176.5906;$$

$$\frac{n''^2}{n'^2}\left(1 - \tfrac{3}{2}\sin^2 i\right) = 176.5906$$

$$\log_{10}\left\{\frac{3n'}{n} \times 180 \times 60 \times 60 \times \cos I\right\} = 2.3856065$$

$$3.9030900$$

$$\bar{1}.9625076 - 2.5626021$$

$$6.2512041$$

$$2.5626021$$

$$3.6886020 = \log_{10} 4882.05\,;$$

$$\therefore \text{ Annual Precession} = \frac{C - A}{C}\left(1 + \frac{176.5906}{1 + \nu}\right) 4882''.05.$$

471. We have supposed in these calculations that the Earth is wholly solid. Laplace shews, however, that the variation of the motion of the terrestrial nucleus, covered by a fluid, are the same as if the sea formed a solid mass with it: *Mécanique Céleste*, Liv. v. §. 10—12.

CHAPTER XIII.

MOTION OF A RIGID BODY ACTED ON BY IMPULSIVE FORCES.

472. In the preceding Chapters we have obtained differential equations for calculating the motion of a body acted on by any forces of finite intensity. Since these differential equations are of the second order their first integrals will be of the first order, and will therefore be functions of the velocities and co-ordinates of position of the various parts of the body. The values of the arbitrary constants introduced by the process of integration are determined by knowing the velocity and position of the parts of the body at any given instant of the motion: the instant generally chosen is the epoch from which the time is measured. In calculating the motion of a heavenly body the values of the arbitrary constants are found by observations made on the position and velocity of the body at any given time; since we are altogether unacquainted with the initial circumstances of the motion. But we may wish to calculate the motion of a rigid body when the original circumstances of projection are known. Now instantaneous velocities are generated by forces of the nature we have termed impulsive (Art. 201). It becomes necessary, then, to calculate the motion of a body which results from the action of impulsive forces.

By *finite forces* we mean such as require a finite time to produce motion, or a change of motion, in a body: such as the moving force produced by the attraction of the Earth. They are measured, when uniform, by the momentum gene-

rated in a unit of time; when variable, by the momentum that would be generated if they were to remain uniform after the epoch at which they are to be estimated. But by *Impulsive Forces* we mean such as act only for an indefinitely short time, and yet produce a finite velocity in a body; such as the force of explosion of a cannon; the force of impact of one body against another. These forces are measured by the momentum generated in the body on which they act.

In Art. 226. we have enunciated a Principle by means of which we can make the calculation of the motion depend upon the conditions of equilibrium of forces acting on a rigid body.

PROP. *To obtain the equations of motion of a rigid body acted on by impulsive forces.*

473. Let V be the velocity impressed on a particle m of the system, the co-ordinates of the particle being xyz: then are $\frac{dx}{dt}$, $\frac{dy}{dt}$, $\frac{dz}{dt}$ the effective velocities parallel to the axes of co-ordinates, that is, the actual velocities which the particle acquires in consequence of the action of the impulsive forces: a, b, c the angles which the direction of the velocity V makes with the axes.

Then according to the Principle explained in Art 226. the impulsive forces

$$m\left(V\cos a-\frac{dx}{dt}\right),\quad m\left(V\cos b-\frac{dy}{dt}\right),\quad m\left(V\cos c-\frac{dz}{dt}\right)$$

acting on m parallel to the axes of co-ordinates, together with similar forces acting on the other particles of the system ought to be in equilibrium.

Hence we have from Art. 65. the equations

$$\Sigma.m\left(V\cos a-\frac{dx}{dt}\right)=0,\quad \Sigma.m\left(V\cos b-\frac{dy}{dt}\right)=0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ y \left(V \cos c - \frac{dz}{dt} \right) - z \left(V \cos b - \frac{dy}{dt} \right) \right\} = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ z \left(V \cos a - \frac{dx}{dt} \right) - x \left(V \cos c - \frac{dz}{dt} \right) \right\} = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ x \left(V \cos b - \frac{dy}{dt} \right) - y \left(V \cos a - \frac{dx}{dt} \right) \right\} = 0.$$

By means of these six equations we shall be able to calculate the motion of a rigid body acted on by any impulsive forces.

They lead immediately to two fundamental principles, analogous to those of Arts. 428, 429. for finite forces.

PROP. *The centre of gravity of the body will move in the same manner as if the forces which act upon the various particles of the body were all transferred to that point, their directions being parallel to their former directions.*

474. For the first three of the equations of last Article give

$$\Sigma . m \frac{dx}{dt} = \Sigma . m V \cos a, \quad \Sigma . m \frac{dy}{dt} = \Sigma . m V \cos b,$$

$$\Sigma . m \frac{dz}{dt} = \Sigma . m V \cos c.$$

Now let $\bar{x}\bar{y}\bar{z}$ be the co-ordinates of the centre of gravity at the instant the impulsive forces act: then

$$\bar{x} \ \Sigma . m = \Sigma . mx, \quad \bar{y} \ \Sigma . m = \Sigma . my, \quad \bar{z} \ \Sigma . m = \Sigma . mz.$$

Differentiate these with *respect to* t, and we have by the equations of motion above

$$\frac{d\bar{x}}{dt} \ \Sigma . m = \Sigma . m V \cos a, \quad \frac{d\bar{y}}{dt} \ \Sigma . m = \Sigma . m V \cos b,$$

$$\frac{d\bar{z}}{dt} \ \Sigma . m = \Sigma . m V \cos c.$$

But these are the equations we should have obtained by supposing the forces transferred to the centre of gravity, their directions being preserved.

Hence the Proposition, as enunciated, is true.

PROP. *The motion of rotation of the body will be the same as if the centre of gravity were fixed.*

475. Let x_1, y_1, z_1 be the co-ordinates of m measured from the centre of gravity parallel to the original axes: then

$$x = \bar{x} + x_1, \quad y = \bar{y} - y_1, \quad z = \bar{z} - z_1;$$

and by substituting these in the last three equations of motion in Art. 473, the first of these becomes

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ (\bar{y} + y_1) \left(\frac{d\bar{z}}{dt} - \frac{dz_1}{dt} \right) - (\bar{z} - z_1) \left(\frac{d\bar{y}}{dt} - \frac{dy_1}{dt} \right) \right\},$$

$$= \Sigma . m \left\{ (\bar{y} + y_1) V \cos c - (\bar{z} + z_1) V \cos b \right\}.$$

But $\Sigma . m x_1 = 0$, $\Sigma . m y_1 = 0$, $\Sigma . m z_1 = 0$, by Art. 413;

$$\therefore \Sigma . m \left(y_1 \frac{dz_1}{dt} - z_1 \frac{dy_1}{dt} \right) = \Sigma . m (y_1 V \cos c - z_1 V \cos b),$$

and the other equations by a similar process become

$$\Sigma . m \left(z_1 \frac{dx_1}{dt} - x_1 \frac{dz_1}{dt} \right) = \Sigma . m (z_1 V \cos a - x_1 V \cos c),$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(x_1 \frac{dy_1}{dt} - y_1 \frac{dx_1}{dt} \right) = \Sigma . m (x_1 V \cos b - y_1 V \cos a).$$

But these are exactly the equations we should arrive at by supposing the centre of gravity fixed.

Hence the Proposition, as enunciated, is true.

476. The Principles proved in the last two Propositions reduce the calculation of the motion of a rigid body moving freely and acted on by impulsive forces to the calculation of the motion of a single particle, and of a rigid body moving about a fixed point. We shall now determine more con

venient equations for calculating the rotatory motion of a body about its centre of gravity when acted on by impulsive forces.

PROP. *To calculate the rotatory motion of a body moving about a fixed axis and acted on by impulsive forces.*

477. The equation for determining the rotatory motion is (Art. 473.)

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ x \left(V \cos b - \frac{dy}{dt} \right) - y \left(V \cos a - \frac{dx}{dt} \right) \right\} = 0,$$

the axis of z being the axis of revolution; let r be the distance of any particle m from this axis: θ the angle which r makes with the plane zx;

$$\therefore x = r \cos \theta, \quad y = r \sin \theta;$$

$$\therefore \frac{dx}{dt} = -r \sin \theta \frac{d\theta}{dt} = -y \frac{d\theta}{dt}, \quad \frac{dy}{dt} = r \cos \theta \frac{d\theta}{dt} = x \frac{d\theta}{dt};$$

$$\therefore \Sigma . m \left(x \frac{dy}{dt} - y \frac{dx}{dt} \right) = \Sigma . m (x^2 + y^2) \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{d\theta}{dt} \Sigma . m r^2;$$

$$\therefore \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{\Sigma . m V (x \cos b - y \cos a)}{\Sigma . m r^2},$$

$$= \frac{\text{moment of the impressed forces about the axis}}{\text{moment of inertia about the axis}}.$$

PROP. *A body in which one point is fixed is acted on by impulsive forces: required to determine the motion.*

478. Let the fixed point be the origin: and let $r_1 r_2 r_3$ be the distances of the particle m from the axes of x, y, z: and let $\theta_1 \theta_2 \theta_3$ be the angles which $r_1 r_2 r_3$ make respectively with the planes xy, zy, zx,

$$y = r_1 \cos \theta_1, \quad z = r_2 \cos \theta_2, \quad x = r_3 \cos \theta_3,$$

$$z = r_1 \sin \theta_1, \quad x = r_2 \sin \theta_2, \quad y = r_3 \sin \theta_3;$$

$$\therefore\ y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt} = r_1^2\frac{d\theta_1}{dt}, \quad z\frac{dx}{dt} - x\frac{dz}{dt} = r_2^2\frac{d\theta_2}{dt},$$

$$x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} = r_3^2\frac{d\theta_3}{dt}.$$

Hence the last three equations of Art. 473. become

$$\frac{d\theta_1}{dt}\ \Sigma.mr_1^2 = \Sigma.mV(y\cos c - z\cos b),$$

$$\frac{d\theta_2}{dt}\ \Sigma.mr_2^2 = \Sigma.mV(z\cos a - x\cos c),$$

$$\frac{d\theta_3}{dt}\ \Sigma.mr_3^2 = \Sigma.mV(x\cos b - y\cos a),$$

or

$$\frac{d\theta_1}{dt} = \frac{\text{sum of moments of the impressed forces about axis of } x}{\text{moment of inertia about axis of } x},$$

$$\frac{d\theta_2}{dt} = \frac{\text{sum of moments of the impressed forces about axis of } y}{\text{moment of inertia about axis of } y},$$

$$\frac{d\theta_3}{dt} = \frac{\text{sum of moments of the impressed forces about axis of } z}{\text{moment of inertia about axis of } z}.$$

When these are integrated we shall know the position of the body at the time t with respect to the fixed point.

We shall apply the principles proved in the last Articles to the solution of a few questions.

When a body at rest is acted on by any forces there is a line about which it *begins* to revolve. This line is called the *Axis of Spontaneous Rotation.*

PROP. *To find the position of the axis of spontaneous rotation of a body when it is acted on by an impulsive force.*

479. Let P be the momentum which measures the impulsive force: M the mass of the body

Then by Art. 474. the centre of gravity moves with the velocity $\frac{P}{M}$ in a direction parallel to that of the impulse.

Let the line of the impulse be taken for the axis of x: and the plane through this and the centre of gravity for the plane of xy: h and r the distances of the centre of gravity from the line of impulse and from the projection on the plane xy of any particle m: θ the angle which r makes with the axis of x. Hence by Arts. 475. and 477.

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{\text{moment of } P}{\text{moment of inertia}} = \frac{Ph}{Mk^2},$$

k being the radius of gyration about the centre of gravity.

Let xy be the co-ordinates of the projection of m: then by compounding the velocities of translation and rotation, we have (fig. 108).

$$\text{vel. of } m \text{ parallel to } x = \frac{P}{M} - \frac{d\theta}{dt} r \sin\theta = \frac{P}{M} - \frac{Phr\sin\theta}{Mk^2},$$

$$\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots y = \frac{d\theta}{dt} r\cos\theta = \frac{Phr\cos\theta}{Mk^2}.$$

To find the point in the plane xy which is at rest at the begining of the motion we must equate these two velocities to zero;

$$\therefore\ k^2 - hr\sin\theta = 0, \quad r\cos\theta = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ \theta = 90^0, \quad \text{and } r = \frac{k^2}{h} = GO \text{ in the figure,}$$

and therefore the axis of spontaneous rotation is at right angles to the direction of the impulse; and also cuts at right angles the perpendicular from the centre of gravity upon the direction of the impulse at a distance $\frac{k^2}{h}$, the centre of gravity lying *between* the axis of spontaneous rotation and the impulse.

The point O coincides with the centre of oscillation, if H be the projection of the axis of suspension: see Art. 432.

PROP. *A body revolves about a fixed axis and impinges upon a fixed point, so that the direction of the impulse is perpendicular to the plane passing through the axis and the centre of gravity: required to find the position of the fixed point so that the pressure on the fixed axis at the instant of impact may be wholly in the plane perpendicular to the direction of the impulse. The fixed point so found is called the* Centre of Percussion.

480. Let the fixed axis be the axis of z: and the plane passing through the centre of gravity at the instant of the impulse the plane yz. P the momentum which measures the impulse on the fixed point: $y_1 z_1$ the co-ordinates to the point in which the direction of the impulse cuts the plane yz: r the distance of any particle m from the axis of rotation: θ the angle r makes with the plane xz at the instant of impact: then $x = r\cos\theta$, $y = r\sin\theta$: and the velocities of (m) parallel to x and y at the instant of impact are $\left(\frac{dx}{dt} = \right) -y\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ and $\left(\frac{dy}{dt} = \right) x\frac{d\theta}{dt}$: and therefore the momenta parallel to the axes are at that instant $-my\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ and $mx\frac{d\theta}{dt}$.

We shall suppose the axis to be fixed at two points (since if fixed at more they can always be reduced to two) of which the distances from the origin are a and a'; let $R\cos\alpha$, $R\cos\beta$, $R\cos\gamma$, $R'\cos\alpha'$, $R'\cos\beta'$, $R'\cos\gamma'$ be the momenta which measure the impulsive pressures parallel to the axes of x and y on these points at the instant of impact: h the distance of the centre of gravity from the axis of z.

The forces, then, which act upon the body at the instant of impact are

$R\cos\alpha$, $R'\cos\alpha'$, $-my\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ on each particle m, and P parallel to x,

$R\cos\beta$, $R'\cos\beta'$, $mx\frac{d\theta}{dt}$ on each particle m, ... y,

$R\cos\gamma$, $R'\cos\gamma'$, ... z.

But the body is reduced to rest, by hypothesis; and consequently by the six equations of Art. 65. we have

$$R\cos\alpha + R'\cos\alpha' - \frac{d\theta}{dt}\,\Sigma.my + P = 0,$$

$$R\cos\beta + R'\cos\beta' + \frac{d\theta}{dt}\,\Sigma.mx = 0, \quad R\cos\gamma + R'\cos\gamma' = 0,$$

$$-.R\cos\beta.a - R'\cos\beta'.a' - \frac{d\theta}{dt}\,\Sigma.mxz = 0,$$

$$R\cos\alpha.a + R'\cos\alpha'.a' - \frac{d\theta}{dt}\,\Sigma.myz + Pz_{,} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt}\,\Sigma.m(x^2+y^2) - Py_{,} = 0,$$

in these $\Sigma.mx = 0$, and $\Sigma.my = Mh$, as the axes have been chosen. From these equations the pressures may be found.

Now for the centre of Percussion we must have $R\cos\alpha = 0$ and $R'\cos\alpha' = 0$: hence

$$-Mh\frac{d\theta}{dt} + P = 0, \quad -\frac{d\theta}{dt}\,\Sigma.myz + Pz_{,} = 0,$$

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt}\,\Sigma.m(x^2+y^2) - Py_{,} = 0;$$

therefore $P = Mh\dfrac{d\theta}{dt}$ is known, since the motion previous to the impact, and consequently $\dfrac{d\theta}{dt}$, may be calculated by the principles of Chapter XI: and the co-ordinates to the centre of percussion are

$$y_{,} = \frac{\Sigma.m(x^2+y^2)}{Mh} = \frac{k^2+h^2}{h}; \quad z_{,} = \frac{\Sigma.myz}{Mh}.$$

If the body be symmetrical about a plane through the centre of gravity and perpendicular to the axis of x, then, if $\bar{x}$ be

the distance of the centre of gravity from the plane xy, and if $z = \bar{z} + z'$ we have

$$\Sigma . myz = \bar{z}\Sigma . my + \Sigma . myz' = \bar{z}\Sigma . my = M\bar{z}h.$$

In this case $y_{,} = \dfrac{k^2 + h^2}{h}$, $z_{,} = \bar{z}$: and the centre of percussion will then coincide with the centre of oscillation: see Art. 432.

In the Chapter of Problems we shall give some examples of the impact of bodies.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE MOTION OF A FLEXIBLE BODY.

481. In the present Chapter we shall calculate and explain some of the simpler cases of the motion of vibrating strings: for more information on this subject and on the motion of elastic springs we refer the reader to M. Poisson's *Traité de Mécanique*, Tom. II. Seconde Edition; to the *Journal de l'Ecole Polytechnique*, Cahier XVIII, p. 442; and lastly to M. Poisson's Memoir on the equilibrium and motion of elastic bodies in the *Mémoires de l'Académie des Sciences*, Tom. VIII.

PROP. *To determine equations for calculating the motion of a perfectly flexible cord, very slightly extensible, of the same thickness and density throughout, fixed at its two extremities, and very little disturbed from its position of rest.*

482. Let A and B be the fixed extremities of the cord (fig. 109), we shall suppose that the cord is straight when in equilibrium: Let P be the position of a particle of the cord in motion at the time t which is at Q when the cord is at rest: $AQ = x$, $AM = x + u$, $MN = y$, $NP = z$, $AB = l$: M the mass of the cord, T the tension at the point P: the resolved parts of T parallel to the axes are

$$T\frac{d(x+u)}{ds}, \quad T\frac{dy}{ds}, \quad T\frac{dz}{ds}; \text{ where } ds = PP';$$

the excesses of the corresponding tensions at P' over those at P are therefore, by Taylor's Theorem,

$$\frac{d}{dx}\left(T\frac{dx}{ds}\right)dx,\quad \frac{d}{dx}\left(T\frac{dy}{ds}\right)dx,\quad \frac{d}{dx}\left(T\frac{dz}{ds}\right)dx:$$

these are the *impressed* forces acting on PP': the mass of $PP' = M\frac{ds}{l}$, hence the *effective* forces acting on PP' are

$$M\frac{ds}{l}\frac{d^2u}{dt^2},\quad M\frac{ds}{l}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2},\quad M\frac{ds}{l}\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}:$$

hence by the first Principle of Art. 226 we have

$$\frac{d}{dx}\left\{T\frac{d(x+u)}{ds}\right\} = \frac{M}{l}\frac{d^2u}{dt^2},\quad \frac{d}{dx}\left(T\frac{dy}{ds}\right) = \frac{M}{l}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2},$$

$$\frac{d}{dx}\left(T\frac{dz}{ds}\right) = \frac{M}{l}\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}.$$

Let W be the tension of the cord when at rest; then it is found by experiment that the change in extension (as $ds - dx$,) of a piece of cord dx varies as the change in tension $T - W$: suppose that $T - W = Q\frac{ds - dx}{dx}$.

$$\text{Now } \frac{ds^2}{dx^2} = \left(1 + \frac{du}{dx}\right)^2 + \frac{dy^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} = \left(1 + \frac{du}{dx}\right)^2,$$

neglecting small quantities of the second order. Hence $T - W = Q\frac{du}{dx}$ and our equations of motion become

$$\frac{d^2u}{dt^2} = b^2\frac{d^2u}{dx^2},\quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = a^2\frac{d^2y}{dx^2},\quad \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = a^2\frac{d^2z}{dx^2},$$

if we neglect small quantities of the second order, and put $Ql = Mb^2$, and $Wl = Ma^2$: hence a^2 and b^2 are in the ratio $W : Q$.

The variables u, y, z are separated in these equations: from which we conclude that the vibrations of the cord parallel to the axes of x, y, z are independent of each other, and

co-exist without any interference. The transversal vibrations are the same in the directions of y and z. We shall calculate the motion parallel to y.

PROP. *To integrate the equations of motion, and to interpret the integrals.*

483. For the transversal vibrations,

$$\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = a^2 \frac{d^2y}{dx^2}.$$

To integrate this add to each side $a\dfrac{d^2y}{dxdt}$;

$$\therefore \frac{d}{dt}\left\{\frac{dy}{dt} + a\frac{dy}{dx}\right\} = a\frac{d}{dx}\left\{\frac{dy}{dt} + a\frac{dy}{dx}\right\},$$

$$\text{or } \frac{dv}{dt} = a\frac{dv}{dx}, \text{ if we put } \frac{dy}{dt} + a\frac{dy}{dx} = v:$$

$$\therefore dv = \frac{dv}{dt}dt + \frac{dv}{dx}dx = \frac{dv}{dx}d(x + at),$$

$$\therefore v, \text{ or } \frac{dy}{dt} + a\frac{dy}{dx}, = \phi'(x + at);$$

ϕ' representing any arbitrary function of $x + at$.

In like manner by subtracting $a\dfrac{d^2y}{dxdt}$ from each side we have

$$\frac{dy}{dt} - a\frac{dy}{dx} = \psi'(x - at)$$

ψ' representing another arbitrary function.

Hence $\dfrac{dy}{dt} = \frac{1}{2}\phi'(x + at) + \frac{1}{2}\psi'(x - at)$,

$$\frac{dy}{dx} = \frac{1}{2a}\phi'(x + at) - \frac{1}{2a}\psi'(x - at);$$

F and f being arbitrary functions depending on ϕ' and ψ'; but we shall cease to use ϕ' and ψ'.

We proceed to explain how to determine the values of these functions. We are supposed to know the initial circumstances of the motion, namely the values of y and $\frac{dy}{dt}$ for all values of x between $x = 0$ and $x = l$ when $t = 0$: hence $F(x) + f(x)$ is known for all values of x between 0 and l: and also $\frac{dF(x)}{dx} - \frac{df(x)}{dx}$ is known and consequently $F(x)$ and $f(x)$ are known between these limits; but the values of these quantities for values of x greater than l and less than 0 are not given, nor are they necessarily known since the functions $F(x)$ and $f(x)$ may be discontinuous; that is, the original form of the curve need not be such as can be expressed in analysis, but may be a series of pieces of curve so long as they have the same tangent at their points of junction.

The condition that the extremities of the cord are always stationary enables us to determine the values of $F(x + at)$ and $f(x - at)$ for all values of x and t. For by this condition $y = 0$ and $\frac{dy}{dt} = 0$ when $x = 0$ and l whatever t be: hence by putting $at = v$ we have

$$F(v) + f(-v) = 0 \ldots (1), \quad F(l + v) + f(l - v) = 0 \ldots (2)$$

for all positive values of v.

Put $l + v$ for v in (2), then by (2) and (1)

$$F(2l + v) = F(v) \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (3).$$

The initial circumstances make known $F(v)$ and $f(v)$ from $v = 0$ to $v = l$: then (2) gives $F(v)$ from $v = l$ to $v = 2l$.

and then (3) gives $F(v)$ from $v = 2l$ to $4l$, then to $6l$ and so on to ∞: hence $F(x + at)$ is known for all positive values of t. Again, by (1) $f(-v)$ is known from $v = 0$ to $v = \infty$: but also $f(v)$ is known from $v = 0$ to $v = l$ by the initial circumstances, hence $f(x - at)$ is known for every point of the cord during the whole motion. Hence the value of y, and therefore the form of the string, is known at every instant. There is nothing to make known $F(v)$ for negative values of v or $f(v)$ for values of v between l and ∞.

In (1) put $v + 2l$ for v, then

$$f(-2l - v) = -F(2l + v) = -F(v) \text{ by (3)}$$
$$= f(-v) \text{ by (1)} \ldots\ldots\ldots (4).$$

Hence $y = F(x + at) + f(x - at)$

$$= F(x + at + 2l) + f(x - at - 2l)$$
$$= \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$
$$= F(x + at + 2nl) + f(x - at - 2nl) \text{ by (3) (4)}$$

n a positive integer: hence the cord repeatedly assumes the same form relatively to the plane xz, performing a vibration in the time $\frac{2l}{a}$; substituting for a its value,

$$\text{time of vibration} = 2\sqrt{\frac{Ml}{W}}:$$

the same is true of the motion parallel to z: and also parallel to x the oscillations take place in the time $2\sqrt{\frac{Ml}{Q}}$.

PROP. *A portion only of the cord is set in motion at first, as a piano-forte wire by the sudden blow of the hammer of a key: required to determine the motion.*

484. To simplify the calculation we shall at first suppose that one end of the string is at an indefinitely great distance. Let the original displacement extend over a small space $2a$; and let the origin of x be at the mid-point of this space: h the

to $x = h$;

$$\therefore F(v) = 0 \text{ and } f(v) = 0 \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1),$$

from $v = -\infty$ to $v = -a$, and from $v = a$ to $v = h$.

Because of the fixed extremity

$$F(h + v) + f(h - v) = 0,$$

for positive values of v. Hence when v is greater than h,

$$F(v) = -f(2h - v) \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (2).$$

Since $x - at$ is always negative for negative values of x, it follows by (1) that beyond the limits of disturbance, that is when x is $< -a$, we have $f(x - at) = 0$: also for negative values of x we have $F(x + at) = 0$ unless t lie between $\frac{-a - x}{a}$ and $\frac{a - x}{a}$. Hence the initial disturbance is propagated to the left and each particle of the cord begins to move after a time $\frac{-a - x}{a}$, vibrates for a time $\frac{2a}{a}$ and then returns to rest.

In the same way the motion is propagated to the right: but in consequence of the fixed extremity this will require a little further examination.

Let us consider the motion of a particle at a distance x;

$y = F(x + at) + f(x - at)$ is its general displacement.

When $t = 0$ this particle is at rest, for $y = 0$ by (1): and it remains so till $t = \frac{x - a}{a}$, for, then $y = f(a)$, and the particle moves till $t = \frac{x + a}{a}$, and after this is at rest again for a time. Ever after this $x - at$ is negative and $< -a$, and therefore $f(x - at) = 0$ by (1). But when t becomes

$$\frac{x-a}{a}+\frac{2h-2x}{a} \text{ or } \frac{2h-x-a}{a};$$

$$y = F(2h-a) = -f(a) \text{ by (2)},$$

and as t increases and becomes $\frac{x+a}{a}+\frac{2h-2x}{a}=\frac{2h-x+a}{a}$;

$$y = F(2h+a) = -f(-a) \text{ by (2)}.$$

Hence at a time $\frac{2h-2x}{a}$ after the particle began to move, it again begins to move: and ceases to move at the same time after it ceased before. Likewise the displacements of the particle are exactly the same that they were before, but on the *opposite side* of the line of rest.

When t is $> \frac{2h-x+a}{a}$, $x+at$ is $> 2h+a$;

$$\therefore F(x+at) = -f\{2h-(x+at)\} = 0 \text{ always.}$$

Hence the particle oscillates for a period $\frac{2a}{a}$ commencing at the time $\frac{x-a}{a}$: it then rests: and after a time $\frac{2(h-x)}{a}$, it oscillates for the same period in a manner precisely similar to the former; except on the opposite side of the line of rest: after this the particle remains permanently at rest. This is true whatever x be: and it is to be remarked that $\frac{2(h-x)}{a}$ = the time the bent portion of the cord, or the *pulse*, would take to move from the particle to the fixed point and *back again*. Hence, since this second motion arises solely in consequence of the fixity of one extremity of the string, it follows that when the right hand pulse reaches the fixed point *it is reflected*, but to the opposite side of the string.

Hence the original disturbance divides itself into two pulses, one moving continually to the left; the other to the right till it reaches the fixed point, after which it moves back, towards the left, on the other side of the line and with the same velocity as before.

Let the string be of definite length. Then the pulse after reflexion will be reflected again at the other extremity and move on the upper part of the string to the right.

Let C, D (fig. 110) be the fixed extremities of the string and A the origin of disturbance. The initial disturbance divides into two a and b: b is reflected at D and moves along to b' at the same time that a moves to a' having been reflected at C: a' and b' meet at B and confirm each other forming a disturbance exactly similar to the original disturbance.

Evidently B is such a point that

$$AD + DB = AC + CB, \quad \text{or } AD = CB.$$

Now the interval between two maximum disturbances at A = time of describing $AC + CD + DA = \frac{2l}{a}$. Hence the velocity of the pulses = a.

CHAPTER XV.

GENERAL DYNAMICAL PRINCIPLES.

485. In the present Chapter we shall prove some general principles of the motion of a material system, which are consequences of the laws of motion.

Prop. *When a material system is in motion under the action of forces, whether finite in intensity or impulsive, but none of them being extraneous to the system, then the centre of gravity moves uniformly in a straight line or remains at rest.*

486. The internal forces which act upon the particles of the system may be of the nature we have denominated impulsive, or they may be of finite intensity, or they may be some impulsive and some finite. But impulsive forces are such as act only for an indefinitely short time; and consequently during the period of their action the finite forces can produce no effect. We may therefore consider the action of these two systems of forces on the system separately.

I. *Suppose the forces are of finite intensity.*

Let XYZ be the internal accelerating forces acting on a particle m of the system parallel to the axes, not including the molecular action: xyz the co-ordinates to m. Then the first three equations of Art. 427, give

$$\Sigma . m \left(X - \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} \right) = 0, \quad \Sigma . m \left(Y - \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} \right) = 0, \quad \Sigma . m \left(Z - \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} \right) = 0.$$

Now since, by hypothesis, the forces acting on the system are all internal, or, in other words, arise from the mutual action

of the particles of the system, it follows that if $m'X'$, $m'Y'$, $m'Z'$ be forces acting on the particle m' there must be in the system forces equal to $-m'X'$, $-m'Y'$, $-m'Z'$ acting on some other particle: hence these forces will disappear in the expressions $\Sigma . mX$, $\Sigma . mY$, $\Sigma . mZ$; and this will be the case with all the forces;

$$\therefore \Sigma . mX = 0, \quad \Sigma . mY = 0, \quad \Sigma . mZ = 0,$$

and consequently we obtain

$$\Sigma . m\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0, \quad \Sigma . m\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = 0, \quad \Sigma . m\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = 0.$$

Let $\bar{x}\,\bar{y}\,\bar{z}$ be the co-ordinates to the centre of gravity of the system at the time t; $x_,, y_,, z_,$ co-ordinates to m measured from the centre of gravity: then $x = \bar{x} + x_,$, $y = \bar{y} + y_,$, $z = \bar{z} + z_,$; and since $\Sigma . mx_, = 0$, $\Sigma . my_, = 0$ and $\Sigma . mz_, = 0$, the last three equations give

$$\frac{d^2\bar{x}}{dt^2} = 0, \quad \frac{d^2\bar{y}}{dt^2} = 0, \quad \frac{d^2\bar{z}}{dt^2} = 0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{d\bar{x}}{dt} = V_0 \cos\alpha, \quad \frac{d\bar{y}}{dt} = V_0 \cos\beta, \quad \frac{d\bar{z}}{dt} = V_0 \cos\gamma,$$

V_0 being the velocity of the centre of gravity when $t = 0$ and $\alpha\beta\gamma$ the angles its direction makes with the axes;

$$\therefore \text{vel. of centre of gravity at time } t = \sqrt{\frac{d\bar{x}^2}{dt^2} + \frac{d\bar{y}^2}{dt^2} + \frac{d\bar{z}^2}{dt^2}} = V_0,$$

and consequently is constant.

If $V_0 = 0$ then the centre of gravity remains at rest.

Again, by integration we have

$$\bar{x} = V_0 t \cos\alpha, \quad \bar{y} = V_0 t \cos\beta, \quad \bar{z} = V_0 t \cos\gamma,$$

the origin of co-ordinates being chosen at the point where the centre of gravity lies when $t = 0$;

$$\therefore \frac{x}{\cos\alpha} = \frac{y}{\cos\beta} = \frac{z}{\cos\gamma},$$

These equations shew that the centre of gravity, if it be not at rest, moves in a straight line.

II. *Suppose the forces are impulsive.*

Let V be the velocity that any particle m has when the impulsive forces begin to act; a, b, c the angles its direction makes with the axes: V' the velocity which measures the internal impulsive force acting on m: $a'b'c'$ the angles of its direction.

Then the first three equations of Art. 473, give

$$\Sigma . m \left(V \cos a + V' \cos a' - \frac{dx}{dt} \right) = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(V \cos b + V' \cos b' - \frac{dy}{dt} \right) = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(V \cos c + V' \cos c' - \frac{dz}{dt} \right) = 0.$$

Now since the impulsive forces are all internal we shall have, as may be shewn in the same manner as before, that

$$\Sigma . m V' \cos a' = 0, \quad \Sigma . m V' \cos b' = 0, \quad \Sigma . m V' \cos c' = 0.$$

Hence the equations become

$$\Sigma . m \left(V \cos a - \frac{dx}{dt} \right) = 0, \quad \Sigma . m \left(V \cos b - \frac{dy}{dt} \right) = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(V \cos c - \frac{dz}{dt} \right) = 0.$$

Let V_0 be the velocity of the centre of gravity at the commencement of the action of the impulsive forces: $\alpha\beta\gamma$ the angles its direction makes with the axes: then (Art. 413.)

$$\Sigma . mV \cos a = V_0 \cos \alpha \Sigma . m, \quad \Sigma . mV \cos b = V_0 \cos \beta \Sigma . m,$$

$$\Sigma . mV \cos c = V_0 \cos \gamma \Sigma . m.$$

For $\bar{x} = \frac{\cos \alpha}{\cos \gamma} \bar{z}$, $\bar{y} = \frac{\cos \beta}{\cos \gamma} \bar{z}$; the origin of co-ordinates being taken at the point where the centre of gravity is situated when the forces begin to act.

Wherefore the Proposition, as enunciated, is true. This Principle is called *The Principle of the Conservation of the Motion of the Centre of Gravity.*

PROP. *When a material system is in motion under the action of forces, whether of finite intensity or impulsive, but none of which are extraneous to the system; then the sum of the products of each particle multiplied by the projection on any plane of the area swept out by the radius vector of this particle measured from any fixed point varies as the time of motion. This is called the* Principle of the Conservation of Areas.

487. I. *Suppose the forces are of finite intensity.*

Using the same notation as in the last Proposition the last three equations of Art. 427 are

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ y \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} - z \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} \right\} = \Sigma . m (yZ - zY).$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ z \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} - x \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} \right\} = \Sigma . m (zX - xZ),$$

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ x \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} - y \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} \right\} = \Sigma . m (xY - yX).$$

We shall now shew that the second sides of these equations vanish when all the forces are internal.

Let $m'X'$, $m'Y'$, $m'Z'$ and $m''X''$, $m''Y''$, $m''Z''$ be the resolved parts parallel to the axes of the mutual actions P' and P'' of two particles m' and m''; then $P' = -P''$ and also

$$m'X' = -m''X'', \quad m'Y' = -m''Y'', \quad m'Z' = -m''Z''.$$

If the particles be in contact let $x'y'z'$ be their co-ordinates; then these mutual actions will enter the expression $\Sigma . m (yZ - zY)$ in the form

$$m' (y'Z' - z'Y') + m'' (y'Z'' - z'Y'')$$

but this vanishes: and in the same manner it may be shewn that the mutual actions of particles in contact will disappear from all three of the equations of motion.

Again; suppose the particles are not in contact, their co-ordinates being $x'y'z'$ and $x''y''z''$: let r be their distance; then $\frac{x' - x''}{r}$, $\frac{y' - y''}{r}$, $\frac{z' - z''}{r}$ are the cosines of the angles which r makes with the axes; and we have

$$m'X' = P' \frac{x' - x''}{r}, \quad m'Y' = P' \frac{y' - y''}{r}, \quad m'Z' = P' \frac{z' - z''}{r},$$

and consequently the mutual actions of m' and m'' enter the expression $\Sigma . m (yZ - zY)$ under the form

$$\frac{P'}{r} \{y' (x' - z'') - z' (y' - y'')\} + \frac{P''}{r} \{y'' (x' - z'') - z'' (y' - y'')\}$$

and this vanishes since $P' = -P''$: and consequently the mutual actions in this case also disappear from the equations of motion.

Since then all the forces are supposed to be internal the equations of motion become

$$\Sigma . m \left(y \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} - z \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} \right) = 0, \quad \Sigma . m \left(z \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} - x \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} \right) = 0,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(x \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} - y \frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} \right) = 0.$$

and therefore by integration

$$\Sigma . m \left(y \frac{dz}{dt} - z \frac{dy}{dt} \right) = h, \quad \Sigma . m \left(z \frac{dx}{dt} - x \frac{dz}{dt} \right) = h',$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(x \frac{dy}{dt} - y \frac{dx}{dt} \right) = h'',$$

h, h', h'' being constants.

Let $A_1 A_2 A_3$ be the areas swept out by the projections of the radius vector of the particle m on the three coordinate planes respectively perpendicular to the axes of x, y, z during the time t: then by the last three equations

$$\Sigma . m \frac{dA_3}{dt} = h, \quad \Sigma . m \frac{dA_2}{dt} = h', \quad \Sigma . m \frac{dA_1}{dt} = h'',$$

$$\therefore \Sigma . m A_3 = ht, \quad \Sigma . m A_2 = h't, \quad \Sigma . m A_1 = h''t,$$

since the areas are measured from the epoch when $t = 0$.

Wherefore the Principle of Areas is established in that for the three coordinate planes the sum of the areas described by the projections of the radius vector of each particle of the system multiplied by the mass of the particle is proportional to the time, and consequently true for any plane.

II. *Suppose the forces to be impulsive.*

Using the same notation as in I. the last three equations of motion become

$$\Sigma . m \left(y \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} - z \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} \right) = \Sigma . m \left(y \frac{dz}{dt} - z \frac{dy}{dt} \right)$$

$$= \Sigma . m \left(y_0 \frac{dz_0}{dt} - z_0 \frac{dy_0}{dt} \right) + \Sigma . m \left(y \frac{dz}{dt} - z \frac{dy}{dt} \right)$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(z \frac{dx}{dt} - x \frac{dz}{dt} \right)$$

$$= \Sigma . m \left\{ V (z \cos a - x \cos c) + V' (z \cos a' - x \cos c') \right\},$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(x \frac{dy}{dt} - y \frac{dx}{dt} \right)$$

$$= \Sigma . m \left\{ V (x \cos b - y \cos a) + V' (x \cos b' - y \cos a') \right\}.$$

As in the previous part of this Proposition, we might prove that the mutual forces will disappear from these equations. Hence

$$\Sigma . m \left(y \frac{dz}{dt} - z \frac{dy}{dt} \right) = \Sigma . m V (y \cos c - z \cos b) = h,$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(z \frac{dx}{dt} - x \frac{dz}{dt} \right) = \Sigma . m V (z \cos a - x \cos c) = h',$$

$$\Sigma . m \left(x \frac{dy}{dt} - y \frac{dx}{dt} \right) = \Sigma . m V (x \cos b - y \cos a) = h'',$$

and therefore the principle of the Conservation of Areas is true whatever the internal forces be.

488. Cor. This Principle is also true when extraneous forces act on the system, provided their directions all pass through the same point and the areas are estimated about that point.

For, this point being the origin of co-ordinates, suppose that P' is one of the extraneous forces acting at the point $(x' y' z')$ at the distance r' from the origin: then $\frac{x'}{r'} P'$, $\frac{y'}{r'} P'$, and $\frac{z'}{r'} P'$ are the resolved parts of P': and this force consequently vanishes from the expressions $\Sigma . m (yZ - zY)$ and $\Sigma . m V' (y \cos c' - z \cos b')$ and from all the analogous expressions.

Prop. *To prove that when a material system is acted on by forces, whether of finite intensity or impulsive, but*

none of which are extraneous to the system, there is a plane invariable in position during the motion, with respect to which the motion may be estimated: and to find its position.

489. We have seen in Art. 487. that

$$\Sigma . m A_x = ht, \ \Sigma . m A_y = h't, \ \Sigma . m A_z = h''t,$$

$hh'h''$ being constant quantities which depend upon the configuration of the system: and which may be found by observing the motions of the bodies of the system and then calculating $\Sigma . m A_x$, $\Sigma . m A_y$, $\Sigma . m A_z$.

Hence a plane drawn at the time t perpendicular to the straight line which makes with the axes the angles of which the cosines are

$$\frac{\Sigma . m A_x}{\sqrt{(\Sigma . m A_x)^2+(\Sigma . m A_y)^2+(\Sigma . m A_z)^2}}, \ \frac{\Sigma . m A_y}{\sqrt{(\Sigma . m A_x)^2+(\Sigma . m A_y)^2+(\Sigma . m A_z)^2}};$$

and $$\frac{\Sigma . m A_z}{\sqrt{(\Sigma . m A_x)^2+(\Sigma . m A_y)^2+(\Sigma . m A_z)^2}}$$

remains invariable in position during the motion.

For this reason it is termed the *Invariable Plane.*

PROP. *To prove that the Invariable Plane is that with respect to which the sum of the moments of the momenta of the different particles of the system is a maximum.*

490. Let $\lambda \mu \nu$ be the angles which the Invariable Plane makes with the co-ordinate planes respectively perpendicular to the axes of xyz.

The momentum of the particle m parallel to the plane yz is $m\sqrt{\frac{dy^2}{dt^2}+\frac{dz^2}{dt^2}}$: the perpendicular from the origin upon the tangent to the projection of the curve in which m is moving on the plane $yz = \frac{y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt}}{\sqrt{\frac{dy^2}{dt^2}+\frac{dz^2}{dt^2}}}$. Hence the moment of the

momentum of m about the axis of $x = m\left(y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt}\right)$ and the sum of the moments $= \Sigma . m\left(y\frac{dz}{dt} - z\frac{dy}{dt}\right) = h$ and the sums of the moments about the axes of y and z are h' and h''. Hence the sum of the moments about the line perpendicular to the plane which makes the angles $\lambda\mu\nu$ with the co-ordinate planes equals

$$h\cos\lambda + h'\cos\mu + h''\cos\nu;$$

and when this is a maximum

$$h\sin\lambda + h''\sin\nu\frac{d\nu}{d\lambda} = 0 \text{ and } h'\sin\mu + h''\sin\nu\frac{d\nu}{d\mu} = 0,$$

$$\text{but } \cos^2\lambda + \cos^2\mu + \cos^2\nu = 1;$$

$$\therefore \frac{h}{h''} = -\frac{\sin\nu}{\sin\lambda}\frac{d\nu}{d\lambda} = \frac{\cos\lambda}{\cos\nu} \text{ and } \frac{h'}{h''} = -\frac{\sin\nu}{\sin\mu}\frac{d\nu}{d\mu} = \frac{\cos\mu}{\cos\nu};$$

$$\therefore \frac{h^2 + h'^2 + h''^2}{h''^2} = \frac{1}{\cos^2\nu}, \quad \therefore \cos\nu = \frac{h''}{\sqrt{h^2 + h'^2 + h''^2}},$$

and in like manner

$$\cos\mu = \frac{h'}{\sqrt{h^2 + h'^2 + h''^2}} \text{ and } \cos\lambda = \frac{h}{\sqrt{h^2 + h'^2 + h''^2}}.$$

But these determine also the position of the Invariable Plane: (see Art. 489.) Hence the Invariable Plane possesses the property that the sum of the moments is greater on that than on any other plane. Also the maximum sum of moments is always the same, since it equals

$$h\cos\lambda + h'\cos\mu + h''\cos\nu = \sqrt{h^2 + h'^2 + h''^2}.$$

491. If the position of this plane be calculated upon the supposition that the heavenly bodies are intense particles without rotatory motion it is found that h, h', h'' are constant even in carrying the approximation to the squares and products of the masses, whatever changes the secular variations may induce in the course of ages: hence it follows that the invariable plane retains its position notwithstanding the secular variations in the

If the position of the ecliptic in the beginning of 1750 be taken as the fixed plane of xy and the longitudes measured from the line of the equinoxes, it is found that at the epoch 1750 the longitude of the ascending node of the invariable plane was $102^{\circ}57'30''$, and its inclination on the ecliptic was $1^{\circ}35'31''$: and if these be calculated for 1950 they are $102^{\circ}57'15''$ and $1^{\circ}35'31''$; these differ but very little from the former, and therefore shew that the motion of the ecliptic in space is exceedingly slow.

492. It is important to remark that the terms in the equations of motion of Art. 487. which depend upon the mutual action of the parts of the system would disappear even when the intensity of the forces varies with the time, independently of the distance: i. e. when the expression for the force is an explicit function of the time. For in this case the invariability of the principal moment and of the direction of its axis is preserved.

493. This shews that the loss of heat sustained by the particles of the system by radiation though it diminishes the intensity of their mutual action, yet has no effect on the position of the invariable plane or on the principal moment. So that if we leave out of consideration the action of the Sun Moon and planets on the Earth, and suppose that our planet were at one time in a gaseous state, and become solid by refrigeration without losing any position of its ponderable matter, we may feel assured that the principal moment of the system has not altered in magnitude nor has its axis changed its position during the change of condition of the globe.

If M be the whole mass: k the radius of gyration about the axis of principal moments through the centre of gravity at the time t, ω the angular velocity about this axis; then

$$Mk^2\omega = \text{principal moment} = \text{constant}.$$

This shews that if the Earth radiate its heat into space so as to diminish its radius by contracting its dimensions, then, since k varies as the radius, w will be increasing and the length of the day shortening.

Now it has been proved in Art. 461, by calculations of eclipses, that within the last 2556 years the length of the day is not become shorter by even a ten millionth part: and therefore, since ω varies inversely as k^2, or the length of the day varies as the square of the mean radius, the mass remaining the same, the mean radius of the Earth has not changed within the last five and twenty centuries by even a twenty-millionth part.

494. The appearance of fossil remains of tropical plants and animals in these higher latitudes has induced geologists to adopt the hypothesis that the temperature of the Earth was in ages gone by far higher than at present. The results of the last Article shew that no objection can be urged against this theory, at least upon mechanical principles. If this hypothesis be true we learn that the radiation goes on now very slowly, whatever its rapidity may have been at more ancient epochs.

495. The Principle of the Conservation of Areas, or rather the Principle of the Conservation of the Principal Moments which springs from it, proves that earthquakes, volcanic explosions, the action of winds upon the surface of the Earth, the friction and pressure of the Ocean upon the solid nucleus of the terrestrial spheroid, produce no variation in the principal moment on the direction of its axis: since these forces all arise from the mutual action of the parts of the system. And since the displacements produced by these causes in any portions composing the Earth's mass are too inconsiderable sensibly to alter the value of k, it follows that their effect on the angular velocity (ω) and upon the length of the day will be inappreciable.

PROP. *When a material system is in motion under the action of forces not impulsive, and none of which are extraneous to the system; then the change of the Vis Viva of the system during a given time depends only on the co-ordinates of the particles of the system at the beginning and end of the given time, and not at all on the curves which the particles describe.*

496. This is called the *Principle of Vis Viva.*

Let XYZ be the impressed accelerating forces which act upon the particle m resolved parallel to the axes of co-ordinates: xyz the co-ordinates to m at the time t: then the forces

$$m\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right),\quad m\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right),\quad m\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right),$$

acting on m, and similar forces acting on the other particles of the system will satisfy the conditions of equilibrium: (Art. 226.) Wherefore by the Principle of Virtual Velocities (Art. 72.) we have

$$\Sigma\,.\,m\left\{\left(X-\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)\delta x+\left(Y-\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)\delta y+\left(Z-\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)\delta z\right\}=0,$$

δx, δy, δz, being any small spaces geometrically described by m parallel to the axes, in a manner consistent with the connexion of the parts of the system one with another at the time t.

Now the spaces actually described by the particle m during the instant after the time t parallel to the axes are consistent with the connexion of the parts of the system one with another: hence we may take

$$\delta x=\frac{dx}{dt}\delta t,\quad \delta y=\frac{dy}{dt}\delta t,\quad \delta z=\frac{dz}{dt}\delta t,$$

and the above equation becomes

$$\Sigma\,.\,m\left\{\frac{dx}{dt}\frac{d^2x}{dt^2}+\frac{dy}{dt}\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}+\frac{dz}{dt}\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right\}=\Sigma\,.\,m\left(X\frac{dx}{dt}+Y\frac{dy}{dt}+Z\frac{dz}{dt}\right)$$

$$\therefore \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} \right\}$$

$$= 2\Sigma . m \int \left(X \frac{dx}{dt} + Y \frac{dy}{dt} + Z \frac{dz}{dt} \right) dt + C.$$

But by the Differential Calculus

$$\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} = \frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = (\text{velocity})^2 = v^2,$$

$$\therefore \Sigma . mv^2 = 2\Sigma . m \int \left(X \frac{dx}{dt} + Y \frac{dy}{dt} + Z \frac{dz}{dt} \right) dt + C.$$

Now let P be the mutual pressure of two particles m and m' in contact at the point xyz : $\alpha\beta\gamma$ the angles its direction makes with the axes.

Then the expression $m \int \left(X \frac{dx}{dt} + Y \frac{dy}{dt} + Z \frac{dz}{dt} \right) dt,$

for the particle m becomes

$$\int P \left(\cos \alpha \frac{dx}{dt} + \cos \beta \frac{dy}{dt} + \cos \gamma \frac{dz}{dt} \right) dt,$$

and for the particle m' it becomes

$$- \int P \left(\cos \alpha \frac{dx}{dt} + \cos \beta \frac{dy}{dt} + \cos \gamma \frac{dz}{dt} \right) dt,$$

and the sum of these = 0, and therefore P will not appear in our final equation.

Again, let xyz, $x'y'z'$ be the co-ordinates of two particles m and m' not in contact; r their distance; P their mutual action, supposed to be a function of r: then the cosines of the angles which the direction of P makes with the axes are $\frac{x-x'}{r}$, $\frac{y-y'}{r}$, $\frac{z-z'}{r}$: and the expression

$m \int \left(X \frac{dx}{dt} + Y \frac{dy}{dt} + Z \frac{dz}{dt} \right) dt$ becomes, for the particle m

$$\int P\left\{\frac{x-x'}{r}\frac{dx}{dt}+\frac{y-y'}{r}\frac{dy}{dt}+\frac{z-z'}{r}\frac{dz}{dt}\right\}dt$$

and for the particle m'

$$-\int P\left\{\frac{x-x'}{r}\frac{dx'}{dt}+\frac{y-y'}{r}\frac{dy'}{dt}+\frac{z-z'}{r}\frac{dz'}{dt}\right\}dt,$$

Hence P will appear in $2\Sigma.m\int\left(X\frac{dx}{dt}+Y\frac{dy}{dt}+Z\frac{dz}{dt}\right)dt$ under the form

$$2\int\frac{P}{r}\left\{(x-x')\frac{d(x-x')}{dt}+(y-y')\frac{d(y-y')}{dt}+(z-z')\frac{d(z-z')}{dt}\right\}dt,$$

or $2\int P\,dr$; since $r^2=(x-x')^2+(y-y')^2+(z-z')^2$.

Wherefore we have finally

$$\Sigma.mv^2=2\Sigma.\int P\,dr+C,$$

and since P is a function of r the second side of this equation, when taken between limits, will be a function solely of the initial and final co-ordinates of the particles of the system.

Hence the Principle is true.

497. Cor. 1. The expression for the vis viva of a system acted on by any forces (not impulsive) is given by the equation

$$\Sigma.mv^2=2\Sigma.m\int\left(X\frac{dx}{dt}+Y\frac{dy}{dt}+Z\frac{dz}{dt}\right)dt.$$

498. Cor. 2. Any force which acts upon a fixed point of the system will not appear in the equation of vis viva, since the velocities of the point are nothing. In this way the mutual pressures of any parts of the system against immoveable obstacles will not appear. Neither will the force of friction which acts upon a body rolling (*not* partly rolling and partly sliding) upon a fixed obstacle appear in the vis viva; since the point of contact is for an instant at rest.

499. Cor. 3. If forces act upon none of the particles of the system except such as remain invariably connected during the motion, then the vis viva remains the same throughout the motion. For in this case $\frac{dr}{dt} = 0$; and therefore $\Sigma . mv^2 = C$.

This is called the *Principle of the Conservation of Vis Viva.*

Prop. *The vis viva of a material system in motion is equal to the vis viva arising from the motion of translation of the centre of gravity in space added to the vis viva arising from the motion about the centre of gravity.*

500. Let xyz be co-ordinates to m at time t,

$\bar{x}\bar{y}\bar{z}$ be co-ordinates to centre of gravity of the system,

and let $x = \bar{x} + x_{,}$, $y = \bar{y} + y_{,}$, $z = \bar{z} + z_{,}$;

$$\therefore v^2 = (\text{vel. of } m)^2 = \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} = \frac{d\bar{x}^2}{dt^2} + \frac{d\bar{y}^2}{dt^2} + \frac{d\bar{z}^2}{dt^2}$$

$$+ 2\left\{\frac{d\bar{x}}{dt}\frac{dx_{,}}{dt} + \frac{d\bar{y}}{dt}\frac{dy_{,}}{dt} + \frac{d\bar{z}}{dt}\frac{dz_{,}}{dt}\right\} + \frac{dx_{,}^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy_{,}^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz_{,}^2}{dt^2},$$

and observing that $\Sigma . m\frac{dx_{,}}{dt} = 0$, $\Sigma . m\frac{dy_{,}}{dt} = 0$, $\Sigma . m\frac{dz_{,}}{dt} = 0$

we have

$$\Sigma . mv^2 = \bar{V}^2 \Sigma . m + \Sigma . mv_{,}^2,$$

$\bar{V}$ being the velocity of the centre of gravity of the system and $v_{,}$ the velocity of m relative to the centre of gravity.

501. By Art. 496. we have

$$2\,\Sigma . mPdr = \frac{d(\Sigma . mv^2)}{dt}\,dt$$

therefore whenever during the motion the particles of the system assume such a relative position that the vis viva is a maximum or minimum $\Sigma . mPdr = 0$, and therefore (Art. 81.) the system is at that instant in a position in which the forces are in equilibrium.

When the vis viva is a *maximum* the position which the system assumes would be a position of *stable* equilibrium, if all velocity be destroyed: and when the vis viva is a *minimum* the position would be one of *unstable* equilibrium. This readily follows from considerations analogous to those mentioned in Art. 79. Also since a function passes through its maximum and minimum values *alternately* as the variable increases continuously, the system when in motion will pass through the positions of stable and unstable equilibrium alternately.

PROP. *When a material system in motion is acted on by impulsive forces, none of which are supposed external to the system, vis viva is lost or gained according as the impulse is of the nature of collision or explosion. When the system is perfectly elastic the vis viva is the same before and after the impulse.*

502. Let $V\cos a$, $V\cos b$, $V\cos c$ be the velocities of any particle of the system m parallel to the axes at the commencement of the impulse: P the resultant of the internal forces acting on m, and $\alpha\beta\gamma$ the angles its direction makes with the axes. Then the forces

$$m\,V\cos a + P\cos\alpha - m\frac{dx}{dt}, \quad m\,V\cos b + P\cos\beta - m\frac{dy}{dt},$$

$$m\,V\cos c + P\cos\gamma - m\frac{dz}{dt}$$

acting on m parallel to the axes and similar forces acting on all the other particles of the system will satisfy the conditions of equilibrium (Art. 226).

Hence by the Principle of Virtual Velocities (Art. 72.)

$$\Sigma.m\left\{\left(V\cos a + \frac{P}{m}\cos\alpha - \frac{dx}{dt}\right)\delta x\right.$$

$$\left. + \left(V\cos b + \frac{P}{m}\cos\beta - \frac{dy}{dt}\right)\delta y + \left(V\cos c + \frac{P}{m}\cos\gamma - \frac{dz}{dt}\right)\delta z\right\} = 0,$$

δx, δy, δz being any small spaces geometrically described by m parallel to the axes in a manner consistent with the connexion of the parts of the system one with another at the time t.

We shall first observe, that P will disappear from the equation above. For if P be the action between two bodies of the system which touch each other in the point xyz, then δx, δy, δz will be the virtual velocities of the point of contact with respect to P acting on one, and $-\delta x$, $-\delta y$, $-\delta z$ those with respect to the other body; and consequently in the above expression when a term of the form $P\cos a\delta x$ occurs we find also $-P\cos a\delta x$; and therefore P disappears, and the equation becomes

$$\Sigma . m\left\{\left(V\cos a-\frac{dx}{dt}\right)\delta x+\left(V\cos b-\frac{dy}{dt}\right)\delta y + \left(V\cos c-\frac{dz}{dt}\right)\delta z\right\}=0\ldots(1).$$

In applying this equation to calculate the motion of a system suddenly acted on by impulsive forces we must make a few important remarks. When a body yields or expands the centres of its particles approach or recede from each other; but, during the action of the impulsive forces, the spaces through which they yield or recede are so extremely small, that we wholly neglect them; but this is not the case with their velocities, for although the change of distance of the centres of the particles during the impulse is indefinitely small, yet this change divided by the time elapsed during the impulse will give a difference of velocities which is not necessary insensible. In consequence of this, when two bodies come into collision the particles in contact do not move with the same velocity at the first instant of the contact, but after all compression ceases and the restitution of figure has not begun to take place, at this instant and at this instant alone, do the particles in contact move with the same velocity. Again, when two bodies are acted upon by impulsive forces of the nature of internal explosion, the particles in contact move with the same velocity at the first instant of the action of the forces,

If, then, the impulsive forces be of the nature of *collision* and xyz be co-ordinates of the point of contact, the initial velocities of the particles in contact will not be the same, but after the collision ceases they will have the same effective velocities $\frac{dx}{dt}, \frac{dy}{dt}, \frac{dz}{dt}$. Hence, in this case we may put

$$\delta x = \frac{dx}{dt}\delta t, \quad \delta y = \frac{dy}{dt}\delta t, \quad \delta z = \frac{dz}{dt}\delta t,$$

since these virtual velocities are consistent with the connexion of the parts of the system one with another, and they imply that the particles in contact remain in contact when the principle of virtual velocities is applied to the system in its imaginary state of equilibrium.

If the impulsive forces be of the nature of internal *explosion*, then it will easily be seen, after what has been said, that we may put

$$\delta x = V\cos a\,\delta t, \quad \delta y = V\cos b\,\delta t, \quad \delta z = V\cos c\,\delta t,$$

but we must not put the other values for δx, δy, δz.

I. Suppose the impulse is of the nature of collision, the bodies being inelastic.

Then substituting for δx, δy, δz in equation (1), and putting v for the resulting velocity of m

$$\Sigma . m v^2 = \Sigma . m V \left\{\frac{dx}{dt}\cos a + \frac{dy}{dt}\cos b + \frac{dz}{dt}\cos c\right\};$$

$$\therefore\ \Sigma . mv^2 = \Sigma . mV^2$$

$$- \Sigma . m \left\{ \left(V \cos a - \frac{dx}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(V \cos b - \frac{dy}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(V \cos c - \frac{dz}{dt} \right)^2 \right\},$$

and, since the last term of this is essentially negative, we see that vis viva is lost during the collision.

II. Suppose the impulse is of the nature of internal explosion.

By substituting in (1) the values of δx, δy, δz above specified we have

$$\Sigma . mV^2 = \Sigma . mV \left\{ \frac{dx}{dt} \cos a + \frac{dy}{dt} \cos b + \frac{dz}{dt} \cos c \right\};$$

$$\therefore\ \Sigma . mv^2 = \Sigma . mV^2$$

$$+ \Sigma . \dot{m} \left\{ \left(V \cos a - \frac{dx}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(V \cos b - \frac{dy}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(V \cos c - \frac{dz}{dt} \right)^2 \right\}$$

and consequently vis viva is gained during the separation.

III. Suppose that the impulse is in part of the nature of collision, and in part of the nature of explosion.

In this case we must combine the cases already mentioned. When, for instance, the bodies are perfectly elastic the impulsive forces which act during the collision are the same exactly as those which act during the separation of the bodies; it follows, by examining the above expressions, that the vis viva lost during the collision is exactly regained during the separation, and that the state of the system is consequently unaffected by the whole impulse.

503. The degradation of rocks and the consequent action of collision which is incessantly taking place in large portions of matter on the surface of the Earth, the unceasing action of waves on the sea shore and the collision of the waters of the ocean upon the solid nucleus of the Earth, and other like causes are continually causing a loss of vis viva in the Earth's mass, and if allowed to act without any compensating pheno-

the Earth's centre and would in the course of time produce a sensible increase in the length of the day, since we have seen (Art. 499.) that the vis viva of the Earth is constant, if we neglect the attraction of the Sun, Moon, and planets and consider only the action of finite forces. But the ascent of vapour by evaporation, and the effect of earthquakes and volcanoes in removing masses of matter to a greater distance from the centre have an opposite effect. On the whole all these causes balance each other, since observations have shewn that the length of the day has been invariable for many ages, Art. 461.

PROP. *To prove that the variation of* $\Sigma . \mathrm{m} \int \mathrm{v} \mathrm{d} \mathrm{s}$ *taken between given limits equals zero, where* v *is the velocity and* ds *is the element of the space described in the short time* dt *by the particle* m *of a material system in free motion: if any particle move on a surface it is supposed to continue on the surface in taking the variation.*

504. This is called the *Principle of Least Action*; because, in general, $\Sigma . m \int v ds$ is a minimum.

Let δ be the symbol of variation in the Calculus of Variations: then

$$\delta (\Sigma . m \int v ds) = \Sigma . m \int \delta (v ds) = \Sigma . m \int (v \delta . ds + ds \delta v)$$

$$= \Sigma . m \int (v \delta . ds + \tfrac{1}{2} dt \delta . v^2).$$

Suppose the particle m rests on a curve surface, and that R is the normal pressure, $\alpha \beta \gamma$ the angles of its direction; X, Y, Z the accelerating forces acting on m, then (as in Art. 407)

$$\frac{d^2 x}{dt^2} = X + \frac{R}{m} \cos \alpha, \quad \frac{d^2 y}{dt^2} = Y + \frac{R}{m} \cos \beta, \quad \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} = Z + \frac{R}{m} \cos \gamma.$$

Let $L = 0$ be the equation to the surface; then

$$\cos\alpha = V\frac{dL}{dx}, \quad \cos\beta = V\frac{dL}{dy}, \quad \cos\gamma = V\frac{dL}{dz};$$

$$\text{where } \frac{1}{V^2} = \frac{dL^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dL^2}{dy^2} + \frac{dL^2}{dz^2}.$$

Hence $v^2 = 2\int(Xdx + Ydy + Zdz) = \phi(x, y, z) + \text{const.}$

$$\therefore \tfrac{1}{2}\delta.v^2 = X\delta x + Y\delta y + Z\delta z$$

$$= \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\delta x + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\delta y + \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\delta z - \frac{R}{m}V\delta L = \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\delta x + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\delta y + \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\delta z,$$

for if the particle do not rest on a surface $R = 0$, and if it do still $\delta L = 0$, because we suppose the motion to be such that particles on curve surfaces remain on the surfaces.

Again, $ds^2 = dx^2 + dy^2 + dz^2$,

$$\therefore ds\delta.ds = dx\delta.dx + dy\delta.dy + dz\delta.dz;$$

$$\therefore v\delta.ds = \frac{dx}{dt}\delta.dx + \frac{dy}{dt}\delta.dy + \frac{dz}{dt}\delta.dz.$$

$$\text{Hence } \int(v\delta.ds + \tfrac{1}{2}dt\delta.v^2) = \frac{dx}{dt}\delta x + \frac{dy}{dt}\delta y + \frac{dz}{dt}\delta z + \text{const.}$$

and at the limits $\delta x = 0$, $\delta y = 0$, $\delta z = 0$ because the first and last positions are given,

$$\therefore \int(v\delta.ds + \tfrac{1}{2}dt\delta.v^2) = 0,$$

$$\therefore \delta(\Sigma.m\int vds) = 0,$$

and $\Sigma.m\int vds$ is a maximum or minimum. It is evidently a minimum, because a path of an indefinite length can always be found for any particle of the system.

Cor. 1. Since $ds = vdt$ we learn that $\Sigma.m\int v^2dt$ is a minimum, or the quantity of vis viva generated or expended during any given time is a minimum.

Cor. 2. If the system consist of only one particle moving on a surface and no forces but the normal pressure act, then $\int v ds$ is a minimum: but v is a constant (Art. 407), therefore $\int ds$ is a minimum, or the particle will describe the shortest curve line that can be drawn on the surface between its positions at the beginning and end of the time t.

505. If we compare the principle of least action with the principles of the conservation of the motion of the centre of gravity, of the conservation of areas, and of vis viva we see that this principle only serves to determine the equations of motion, and is therefore comparatively useless since these are found by much simpler means; but the other principles, which develop important properties, have the advantage of furnishing three general integrals of the equations of motion, which are in most problems the only integrals that can be found.

Prop. *To shew that the calculation of the motion of a material system may be made to depend upon the integration of a single function.*

506. We shall shew this by proving a new dynamical principle discovered by Professor Hamilton and published in the *Philosophical Transactions*, 1834.

We have seen, Art. 497, that the Principle of Virtual Velocities leads us to the dynamical equation

$$\Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} \right\} = 2 \Sigma . m \int \left\{ X \frac{dx}{dt} + Y \frac{dy}{dt} + Z \frac{dz}{dt} \right\} dt.$$

Now it is easily shewn that

$$\Sigma . m \left(X \frac{dx}{dt} + Y \frac{dy}{dt} + Z \frac{dz}{dt} \right)$$

is a perfect differential coefficient with respect to t for all the forces which exist in nature; viz. forces tending to the centres of the particles of the material universe, whether fixed or moveable. Let therefore the second side $= 2(U + H)$, H being independent of t: and let $2T$ be the vis viva of the system at the time t; T_0, H_0 the values of T and H when $t = 0$;

$$\therefore \ T = U + H, \text{ and } T_0 = U_0 + H.$$

Now if the initial circumstances of the motion be varied, then H will vary, and so also will T and U: let δ be the symbol of these variations;

$$\therefore\ \delta T = \delta U + \delta H$$

$$\text{or } \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx}{dt} \delta \frac{dx}{dt} + \frac{dy}{dt} \delta \frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{dz}{dt} \delta \frac{dz}{dt} \right\}$$

$$= \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} \delta x + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} \delta y + \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} \delta z \right\} + \delta H;$$

$$\text{and therefore } 2\Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx}{dt} \delta \frac{dx}{dt} + \frac{dy}{dt} \delta \frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{dz}{dt} \delta \frac{dz}{dt} \right\}$$

$$= \Sigma . m \frac{d}{dt} \left\{ \frac{dx}{dt} \delta x + \frac{dy}{dt} \delta y + \frac{dz}{dt} \delta z \right\} + \delta H.$$

Now let the accumulation of the vis viva from the commencement to the termination of the time t be V;

$$\therefore\ \mathrm{V} = \int_0^t \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} \right\} dt.$$

Then V is a function of the initial and final co-ordinates of the material particles, and

$$\delta \mathrm{V} = \Sigma . \left\{ \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta x} \delta x + \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta y} \delta y + \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta z} \delta z + \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta a} \delta a + \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta b} \delta b + \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta c} \delta c \right\}$$

$$= 2 \int_0^t \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx}{dt} \delta \frac{dx}{dt} + \frac{dy}{dt} \delta \frac{dy}{dt} + \frac{dz}{dt} \delta \frac{dz}{dt} \right\} dt$$

$$+ \Sigma . \left\{ \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta a} \delta a + \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta b} \delta b + \frac{\delta \mathrm{V}}{\delta c} \delta c \right\}$$

$$= \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx}{dt} \delta x + \frac{dy}{dt} \delta y + \frac{dz}{dt} \delta z \right\} + t \delta H + H_1,$$

H_1 being a function of the initial co-ordinates a, b, c.

But when $t = 0$, $\delta V = 0$, hence

$$\delta V = \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{dx}{dt} \delta x + \frac{dy}{dt} \delta y + \frac{dz}{dt} \delta z \right\}$$

$$- \Sigma . m \left\{ \frac{da}{dt} \delta a + \frac{db}{dt} \delta b + \frac{dc}{dt} \delta c \right\} + t \delta H.$$

From this equation we obtain the following groups of equations; $x_1 y_1 z_1$ being co-ordinates to m_1.....

$$\left.\begin{array}{llll} \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta x_1} = m_1 \dfrac{dx_1}{dt}; & \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta x_2} = m_2 \dfrac{dx_2}{dt}; & \ldots\ldots & \\ \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta y_1} = m_1 \dfrac{dy_1}{dt}; & \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta y_2} = m_2 \dfrac{dy_2}{dt}; & \ldots\ldots & \\ \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta z_1} = m_1 \dfrac{dz_1}{dt}; & \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta z_2} = m_2 \dfrac{dz_2}{dt}; & \ldots\ldots & \end{array}\right\} \ldots\ldots\ldots (A).$$

Second group,

$$\left.\begin{array}{llll} \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta a_1} = - m_1 \dfrac{da_1}{dt}; & \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta a_2} = - m_2 \dfrac{da_2}{dt}; & \ldots & \\ \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta b_1} = - m_1 \dfrac{db_1}{dt}; & \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta b_2} = - m_2 \dfrac{db_2}{dt}; & \ldots & \\ \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta c_1} = - m_1 \dfrac{dc_1}{dt}; & \dfrac{\delta V}{\delta c_2} = - m_2 \dfrac{dc_2}{dt}; & \ldots & \end{array}\right\} \ldots\ldots\ldots (B).$$

Lastly,

$$\frac{\delta V}{\delta H} = t \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (C).$$

The problem is therefore reduced to finding the function V, which Professor Hamilton denominates the *characteristic function* of the motion of a system. When V is calculated, then, by eliminating H from the equations (A) (C), we shall have the $3n$ integrals of the first order of the equations of motion by simply differentiating V. And by eliminating H from the equations (B) (C) we have the $3n$ final integrals by simple differentiation.

It may be observed that V must satisfy the two following partial differential equations

$$\tfrac{1}{2}\Sigma.\frac{1}{m}\left\{\frac{\delta V^2}{\delta x^2}+\frac{\delta V^2}{\delta y^2}+\frac{\delta V^2}{\delta z^2}\right\}=U+H,$$

$$\text{and } \tfrac{1}{2}\Sigma.\frac{1}{m}\left\{\frac{\delta V^2}{\delta a^2}+\frac{\delta V^2}{\delta b^2}+\frac{\delta V^2}{\delta c^2}\right\}=U_0+H.$$

These equations furnish the principal means of discovering the form of the function V and are of essential importance in Professor Hamilton's Theory.

The equation

$$\delta V=\Sigma.m\left\{\frac{dx}{dt}\delta x+\frac{dy}{dt}\delta y+\frac{dz}{dt}\delta z\right\}$$

$$-\Sigma.m\left\{\frac{da}{dt}\delta a+\frac{db}{dt}\delta b+\frac{dc}{dt}\delta c\right\}+t.\delta H$$

is denominated the *law of varying action*.

507. "It has been shewn by Lagrange and others, in treating of the motion of a system, that the variation δV vanishes when the extreme co-ordinates and constant H are given (Art. 504): and they appear to have deduced from this result only the principle which is called the law of *least action*: namely, that if the particles of a system be imagined to move from a given set of initial to a given set of final positions, not as they do, nor even as they could move consistently with the general dynamical laws, or differential equations of motion, but so as not to violate any supposed geometrical connexions, nor that one dynamical relation between velocities and configuration which constitutes the law of vis viva: and if, moreover, this geometrically imaginable, but dynamically impossible motion, be made to differ infinitely little from the actual manner of motion of the system, between the given extreme positions, then the varied value of the definite integral called *action*, or the accumulated vis viva of the system in the motion thus imagined, will differ infinitely less from the actual value of that integral.

But when this principle of least action, or," as Professor Hamilton proposes to call it, "of *stationary action*, is applied to the determination of the actual motion of a system, it serves only to form, by the rules of the Calculus of Variations, the differential equations of motion of the second order, which can always be otherwise found."

In this, then, appears the excellence of this new principle called the *law of varying action*, that we pass from an actual motion to another motion dynamically possible, by varying the extreme positions of the system and (in general) the quantity H: but more especially that it serves to express, by means of a single function, not the mere differential equations of motion, but their intermediate and their final integrals.

We hope that the slight sketch we have given of this new principle will tempt our readers to consult the original Memoirs in the Transactions of the Royal Society of London for the years 1834, 1835, from which this notice has been gathered.

PROP. *To prove the general laws of the very small oscillations of a vibrating system of particles.*

508. If the oscillations of the particles be extremely small we may always reduce the equations of motion to linear equations and obtain approximately the co-ordinates in terms of the time. Very many and various phenomena depend upon the principles of small oscillations.

Let i be the number of particles, and m the number of equations $L = 0$, $L' = 0$, ... connecting their co-ordinates: let $3i - m = n$, then these equations determine m of the variable co-ordinates in terms of the other n, or, more generally, all the co-ordinates may be determined by means of these equations in functions of n independent variables. Let α, β .... be the initial values of these variables, and $\alpha + u$, $\beta + v$ .... their values at the time t; in which we suppose that u, v .... are very small during the whole motion: hence the co-ordinates x, y, z, x', ... can be expanded in very converging series of u, v ....

Let $x = p + a\,u + b\,v + \frac{1}{2}c\,u^2 + \frac{1}{2}e\,v^2 + f\,uv + \ldots\ldots$

$y = p_1 + a_1 u + b_1 v + \frac{1}{2}c_1 u^2 + \frac{1}{2}e_1 v^2 + f_1 uv + \ldots\ldots$

$$x = p_2 + a_2u + b_2v + \tfrac{1}{2}c_2u^2 + \tfrac{1}{2}e_2v^2 + f_2uv + \ldots\ldots$$

$$x' = p' + a'u + b'v + \tfrac{1}{2}c'u^2 + \tfrac{1}{2}e'v^2 + f'uv + \ldots\ldots$$

.....

Also since the forces X, Y, Z, X', ... are supposed to be functions of the co-ordinates, these may be expanded in converging series: let

$$X = P + Au + Bv + \ldots., \quad Y = P_1 + A_1u + B_1v + \ldots.,$$

$$Z = P_2 + A_2u + B_2v + \ldots., \text{ \&c.}$$

P, A, B ... being functions of p, a, b, c ...

Now by Art. 496, we have

$$\Sigma . m\left\{\left(\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} - X\right)\delta x + \left(\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - Y\right)\delta y + \left(\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} - Z\right)\delta z\right\} = 0,$$

and $\delta x = (a + cu + fv + \ldots.)\,\delta u + (b + ev + fu + \ldots.)\,\delta v + \ldots.$

.....

If we substitute these and put the coefficients of the n arbitrary quantities δu, δv ..... equal to zero, we have

$$\Sigma . m\left\{\left(\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} - X\right)(a + cu + fv + \ldots) + \left(\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - Y\right)(a_1 + c_1u + f_1v + \ldots)\right.$$

$$\left. + \left(\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} - Z\right)(a_2 + c_2u + f_2v + \ldots)\right\} = 0.$$

.....

It remains to substitute for X, Y, Z ... x, y, z ..., this substitution being made we shall neglect the squares and products of u, v ... and of their second differential coefficients with respect to t: we shall thus have n linear equations of the form

$$\left.\begin{array}{l} D\dfrac{d^2u}{dt^2} + E\dfrac{d^2v}{dt^2} + \ldots\ldots + Fu + Gv + \ldots\ldots = Q \\ \ldots\ldots \end{array}\right\} \ldots (1),$$

where D, E, F, G, Q ... are given functions of the constants which enter the formulæ for x, y, z ... X, Y, Z ... We may suppose $Q = 0$, since we can always add to u, v ... such constant values as to strike Q out: this amounts to supposing that α, β, γ ... are the values of the n independent variables which correspond to a state of equilibrium of the system; since when $u = 0$, $v = 0$ ... the accelerating forces vanish.

We may satisfy the equations (1), putting $Q = 0$, by $u = RN \sin(t\sqrt{\rho} - r)$, $v = RN' \sin(t\sqrt{\rho} - r)$ ..... R and r being arbitrary constants of which the second may be considered positive and less than π, and ρ, N, N', ... are constants to be determined. By putting these values in (1), we have n equations,

$$\left.\begin{aligned} (DN + EN' + \ldots.)\,\rho &= FN + GN' + \ldots.\\ \ldots\ldots\ldots\

$R, R_1 \ldots r, r_1 \ldots$ being the $2n$ arbitrary constants in these complete integrals. The constants must be determined in terms of the initial values of u, v ..., and their differential coefficients: they are small because the original displacements are small. If the values $\rho\, \rho_1 \rho_2 \ldots$ be all real, then the motions of the particles will be periodical and will always be very small. If, however, one or more of $\rho\, \rho_1 \rho_2 \ldots$ be imaginary, we must replace the circular functions by exponentials, and therefore as the time increases $u, v \ldots$ will increase indefinitely and the above formulæ will cease to be true. In the first case the state of equilibrium of the system is stable: in the second unstable.

509. Suppose, for example, that all of $R, R_1 \ldots$ except the first vanish: then

$$\left.\begin{aligned} x &= p + (a N + b N' + \ldots) R \sin (t\sqrt{\rho} - r), \\ y &= p_1 + (a_1 N + b_1 N' + \ldots) R \sin (t\sqrt{\rho} - r), \\ z &= p_2 + (a_2 N + b_2 N' + \ldots) R \sin (t\sqrt{\rho} - r), \\ x' &= p' + (a' N + b' N' + \ldots) R \sin (t\sqrt{\rho} - r), \\ &\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \end{aligned}\right\} \ldots\ldots (4).$$

Hence the particles all perform their oscillations in the same period, *viz.* $\frac{2\pi}{\sqrt{\rho}}$: and all the particles return to their places of equilibrium at the same instant.

510. A system of material particles, in which the relations connecting the co-ordinates are of such a number as to leave n of them independent variables, will, when slightly disturbed from the position of rest, assume a number (n) of oscillatory motions, each analogous to that described in the last Article, corresponding to the n values $\rho\, \rho_1 \rho_2 \ldots$. And in virtue of equations (3) and the corresponding values of $x, y, z \ldots$ all the oscillations, or only some of them may exist at the same time in the system: and conversely, whatever be the initial derangement we may always resolve the motion of each particle parallel to each co-ordinate axis into n or less than n simple

oscillations analogous to that represented by equations (4), the periods being $\frac{2\pi}{\sqrt{\rho}}$, $\frac{2\pi}{\sqrt{\rho_1}}$ ....: when these are commensurable the whole system will return to the same state in a period equal to the least common multiple of these periods: this is the case in vibrating cords, and vibrating surfaces. The principle proved in this Article is called the *Principle of the Co-existence of Small Vibrations.*

511. Suppose that U, V .... are values of u, v .... when the system is in vibration under the action of one set of forces, the initial values of u, v .... $\frac{du}{dt}, \frac{dv}{dt}$ .... being u_0, v_0 .... u_1, v_1 ..... Again suppose that U', V' .... are the values of u, v .... when the system is under the action of a second set of forces and u_0', v_0' .... u_1', v_1' .... the initial values of u, v .... $\frac{du}{dt}, \frac{dv}{dt}$ .... and so on: then, if the initial values of u, v .... $\frac{du}{dt}, \frac{dv}{dt}$ ..... be $u_0 + u_0' + \ldots..$, $v_0 + v_0' + \ldots..$, ... $u_1 + u_1' + \ldots..$, $v_1 + v_1' + \ldots..$ the general values of u, v .... are

$$u = U + U' + \ldots., \quad v = V + V' + \ldots.$$

This principle, the truth of which arises from equations (1) being linear, is called the *Principle of the Superposition of Small Motions:* see Art. 288.

CHAPTER XVI.

PROBLEMS ON THE MOTION OF RIGID BODIES, AND ANY MATERIAL SYSTEM.

---

512. **We shall commence this Chapter with some observations upon the best methods of solving dynamical problems, and the application of the general principles proved in the last Chapter in facilitating their solution.**

To determine the motion of a rigid body in space we have six differential equations of the second order: these contain the three co-ordinates to the centre of gravity and the three angles of position of the principal axes of the body; see Arts. 428, 446 and 447. These are the only relations that can exist among the *mechanical quantities* (Art. 144).

If all the forces and other quantities involved in these equations be known, then we have sufficient equations for solving the problem, and determining the position of the body at every instant.

If, however, the equations involve unknown forces, or unknown geometrical quantities (as angular and linear measures), or both, then there must exist as many more equations as there are of these unknown quantities; and, moreover, these relations must be among the geometrical quantities, since the six equations of motion, as we have mentioned, are the only mechanical relations that can exist.

Suppose that from the nature of the problem we have, involved in the six mechanical equations, one unknown force, and n unknown geometrical quantities besides those necessarily contained in the six equations: then we must have $n + 1$ additional equations among the $n + 6$ geometrical quantities:

when we have obtained these we have enough equations for the solution of the problem. To determine then, these $n + 6$ geometrical quantities, and therefore to determine the position of the body, we have already $n + 1$ equations free from unknown mechanical quantities, and must therefore obtain five more such equations; these are found by eliminating the unknown force from the six equations of motion. In the same way we should proceed if there were two, three, or more unknown forces. The equations which we obtain among the unknown geometrical quantities must be integrated, that we may have these quantities in terms of the time.

The same remarks will apply when the system is acted on by impulsive forces.

Now the principles of the conservation of motion of the centre of gravity, and the conservation of areas, and the principle of vis viva demonstrated in the last Chapter are the first integrals of the equations of motion under peculiar suppositions as to the nature of the forces which act upon the system. If, then, in any proposed problem one or more of these principles apply we may write them down as the integrals of our equations, and so diminish the labour of elimination and integration. If the integrals involved in these principles cannot be obtained in consequence of their involving unknown forces, the principles, though they may be true in these cases, will nevertheless not answer our purpose.

To find the unknown forces we must obtain their values from the equations of motion in terms of the geometrical quantities and their differential coefficients; and since these are supposed to be found the forces will be known also; see Problem 16.

If we find, after all the equations are written down, that there are more unknown quantities than equations, then the general solution of the problem is indeterminate; though it does not necessarily follow that all the unknown quantities are indeterminate (as in Art. 438). If we find more equations than unknown quantities it follows, that the general solution of the problem is impossible unless certain relations among the known quantities are fulfilled, the number of these relations being equal to the number by which the equations exceed

the unknown quantities. Nevertheless, as in the last, some of the unknown quantities may be independent of these conditions.

We shall illustrate the remarks which we have made upon the solution of problems by referring to Art. 436. Here we have a case of motion in parallel planes, and therefore only three equations of motion: but these contain the unknown forces F and R beside the three necessary geometrical measures of position x, y, θ: hence two more equations must exist, and these among x, y, θ; these are equations (4) (5) in that Article; and we require only one more relation connecting x, y, θ; this we have by elimination from the equations of motion. But since the point of application of the forces F and R has no velocity, (for the body at each instant is revolving about that point as an instantaneous centre of rotation), F and R will not appear in the equation of vis viva of Art. 497. Hence this equation gives the integral we require; and we have (by Art. 500),

$$M\left\{\frac{dx^2}{dt^2}+\frac{dy^2}{dt^2}\right\}+Mk^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}=2\Sigma.m\int g\,dy',$$

y' being the vertical ordinate of m,

$$=2g\Sigma.m\,(y'+\text{constant})=2Mg\,(y+\text{constant}),\ \text{(Art. 413)}.$$

This is the equation obtained in Art 436, by elimination.

We shall now give some Problems; we shall solve a few, or give hints to guide to their solution.

Prob. 1. A sphere rolls down an inclined plane; required to determine the motion: (fig. 111.)

Since the motion of the centre of gravity is evidently parallel to the fixed inclined plane we shall measure its distance (z) from the point C which it occupies at the commencement of the motion, E the point which was then in contact at B with the plane, $\angle EOD=\theta$, P the pressure of the plane, F the friction acting upwards, a the radius of the sphere. Then for the motion of the centre of gravity (Art. 428.) and the motion of rotation about the centre of gravity (Art. 429, 431),

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}=g-\frac{F}{M}\ \ldots\ldots\ (1),\qquad \frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2}=\frac{Fa}{Mk^2}\ \ldots\ldots\ (2);$$

$$z = a\theta \ldots\ldots (3).$$

Since the object is to determine the position of the body at a given time we must obtain an equation between z and θ in addition to (3); this is obtained by eliminating F from (1) and (2): we thus have

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = g - \frac{k^2}{a}\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = g - \frac{k^2}{a^2}\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} \text{ by (3)};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = \frac{a^2g}{a^2+k^2}, \quad \frac{dz}{dt} = \frac{a^2gt}{a^2+k^2}, \text{ constant} = 0,$$

$$z = \frac{a^2g}{a^2+k^2}\frac{t^2}{2}, \quad \theta = \frac{ag}{a^2+k^2}\frac{t^2}{2}.$$

We might have used the principle of vis viva to obtain the second equation between z and θ, since F does not occur in the equation of vis viva, because the velocity of its point of application equals zero: but the elimination was so simple that we preferred that method.

Cor. If the body partly roll and partly slide, then F is constant, and must be determined by experiment. Hence equation (3) does not hold, and, in short, (1) (2) are sufficient for determining the motion in this case.

Prob. 2. Suppose the inclined plane, or wedge, on which the cylinder rests is capable of moving on a smooth horizontal plane: to determine the motion of the sphere and wedge: (fig. 111.)

The quantities as before, except that x and y are the horizontal and vertical co-ordinates of O measured from A in the horizontal plane: x' the horizontal co-ordinate to the point K of the wedge, M and M' the masses of the sphere and wedge. Then for the sphere we have the three equations (Art. 428, 429, 431.)

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = \frac{F\cos\alpha - P\sin\alpha}{M} \ldots (1), \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = \frac{F\sin\alpha + P\cos\alpha}{M} \ldots (2),$$

$$\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = \frac{Fa}{Mk^2} \ldots\ldots (3).$$

For the wedge $\frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} = \frac{P\sin\alpha - F\cos\alpha}{M'}$ ..... (4).

Here are six unknown quantities, there must therefore be two relations connecting x, y, θ, x': these are

$x' - x - a\sin\alpha = a\theta\cos\alpha$ ..... (5), $\quad y = h - a\theta\sin\alpha$ ..... (6),

h the initial value of y.

We must obtain two relations connecting x, y, θ, x' from (1) (2) (3) (4). But since there are no forces acting externally to the system of the sphere and wedge parallel to the horizon, there is a conservation of the horizontal motion of the centre of gravity (Art. 486): hence

$$M\frac{dx}{dt} + M'\frac{dx'}{dt} = \text{constant} = 0,$$

in our case, since there is supposed to be no initial velocity;

$$\therefore\ Mx + M'x' = \text{constant} = 0 \text{ ..... (7)},$$

if we properly choose the origin A.

Again, the principle of vis viva gives us an integral; for although the point of application of P and F does move in this case, yet the velocity of this point will have exactly opposite signs relatively to P and F acting on the sphere, and P and F acting on the wedge, and therefore P and F will not occur in the equation of vis viva: in short, they are *internal* forces;

$$\therefore\ M\left\{\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2} + k^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\right\} + M'\frac{dx'^2}{dt^2} = 2\Sigma.m\int -g\,dy'$$

$$= 2gM(h - y) \text{ ..... (8)}.$$

The equations (5) (6) (7) (8) will determine the position.

By (5) (7) (6) $\frac{dx'}{dt} = \frac{Ma\cos\alpha}{M + M'}\frac{d\theta}{dt}$, $\frac{M}{M'}\frac{dx}{dt} = -\frac{dy}{dt} = -a\sin\alpha\frac{d\theta}{dt}$;

$$\therefore \text{ by (8) } \frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2}\left\{a^2 + k^2 - \frac{M}{M + M'}a^2\cos^2\alpha\right\} = 2ag\,\theta\sin\alpha;$$

$$\therefore\ \theta = \left\{a^2 + k^2 - \frac{M}{M + M'}a^2\cos^2\alpha\right\}^{-1}.\tfrac{1}{2}agt^2,$$

this coincides with the result of Prob. 1. if we put $M' = \infty$.

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{R}{m}\frac{dx}{ds} \quad \ldots\ldots (1), \qquad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -g + \frac{R}{m}\frac{dy}{ds} \quad \ldots\ldots (2),$$

$$\frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} = \frac{R}{M}\frac{dy}{ds} \quad \ldots\ldots (3),$$

$$x - x' = a \operatorname{vers}^{-1}\frac{y}{a} + \sqrt{2ay - y^2} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (4).$$

The principle of conservation of the horizontal motion of the centre of gravity and the principle of vis viva both apply: they give

$$Mx' + mx = 0 \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (5),$$

by choosing the origin under the initial position of the centre of gravity, and also

$$M\frac{dx'^2}{dt^2} + m\left\{\frac{dx^2}{dt^2} + \frac{dy^2}{dt^2}\right\} = 2mg(h - y) \quad \ldots\ldots (6),$$

h the initial value of y.

By (4) (6) the equation to the path of the ball in space is

$$\frac{M+m}{M}x = a\,\text{vers}^{-1}\frac{y}{a} + \sqrt{2ay-y^2} \quad \ldots\ldots\ldots (7).$$

By (7) (5) $\dfrac{dx}{dt} = \dfrac{M}{M+m}\sqrt{\dfrac{2a-y}{y}}\dfrac{dy}{dt} = -\dfrac{M}{m}\dfrac{dx'}{dt}$;

$\therefore$ by (6) $m\dfrac{dy^2}{dt^2}\left\{\dfrac{M}{M+m}\dfrac{2a-y}{y}+1\right\} = 2mg(h-y)$,

from which the motion must be calculated.

Prob. 4. Two equal balls are fixed to the end of a rod without weight; the rod is connected at its middle point with a fixed vertical axis, so as to allow the rod to move in a vertical plane passing through the axis, and to revolve with the axis in a horizontal direction: required the motion of the balls.

Let M be the mass of each ball, $2a$ the length of the rod, θ the angle the rod makes with the vertical axis at the time t, ϕ the angle the plane in which θ is measured makes with the initial position of that plane. We shall not write down the equations of motion in this case, but resort immediately to the principles of the conservation of areas (which applies since the resultant of the weights of the balls always passes through the fixed point,) and the conservation of vis viva. The principle of areas gives for a horizontal plane

$$2Ma^2\frac{d\phi}{dt} = \text{const.} \quad \therefore \frac{d\phi}{dt} = \alpha.$$

The conservation of vis viva gives

$$2M\left\{a^2\frac{d\theta^2}{dt^2} + a^2\frac{d\phi^2}{dt^2}\right\} = \text{const.} \quad \therefore \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \beta.$$

α and β being the initial angular velocities: then $\phi = \alpha t$, $\theta = \theta_0 + \beta t$: and if xyz be co-ordinates to one of the balls from the centre of the rod, the vertical axis being the axis of z, we have

$x = a\sin(\theta_0+\beta t)\cos\alpha t, y = a\sin(\theta_0+\beta t)\sin\alpha t, z = a\cos(\theta_0+\beta t)$.

PROB. 5. A rod acts by one extremity with a uniform force in the direction of its length on the fly-wheel-crank of a steam engine, the other extremity moving in a straight line passing through the centre of the fly-wheel, and a uniform resistance is to be overcome by the fly-wheel. Find the velocity of the wheel at any time: and find the relation between the forces when they are so adjusted that after half a revolution the velocity may be unaltered.

PROB. 6. A uniform lever ACB, of which the arms AC and BC are at right angles to each other, rests in equilibrium when AC is inclined at α^0 to the vertical: shew that if AC be raised to a horizontal position (C being fixed) it will fall through an angle θ, such that $\cos\theta = \cot(45^\circ + \alpha)$.

PROB. 7. Given the radii and masses of the wheels in Atwood's Machine (Art. 216.) and the constant friction on the fixed axles of the wheels A and B (fig. 75); shew that the accelerating force of P and Q when in motion is much less effected by the friction at A and B, than if the wheel C turned about a fixed axle.

PROB. 8. A horizontal wheel moves freely about a vertical axis through its centre; a string of definite length is wrapt round its circumference, and passing through a ring has fixed to it a weight which falls by gravity; determine the whole motion.

PROB. 9. A hemisphere rests on a horizontal plane with a string fastened to its edge, which, passing over a pully, supports a weight: when the string is cut find the motion of the hemisphere.

PROB. 10. A beam is drawn from a horizontal to a vertical position about one extremity, which is fixed, by means of a string which is attached to the other extremity of the beam and after passing over a pully placed above the fixed extremity at a height equal to the length of the beam is attached to a falling body; determine the motion.

PROB. 11. A beam is projected perpendicular upwards, and has a rotatory motion round its centre of gravity in a vertical plane; it is observed at a given altitude to be in one of its horizontal positions, and to be then ascending

of revolutions and strikes the ground at a given angle: find the angular velocity.

PROB. 12. An inflexible straight rod is set in motion round a vertical axis passing through one extremity, about which it is capable of revolving freely in an horizontal plane: determine the motion of a ring sliding freely along it: and prove that the whole vis viva of the system is constant.

PROB. 13. A body is placed on a smooth wedge which rests upon a smooth horizontal plane, and the wedge is acted on by a horizontal and constant force f in a vertical plane perpendicular to the inclined plane of the wedge: determine the motion: and find f when the body is at rest on the plane.

PROB. 14. A semi-cylinder rests with its plane surface on the ground, on which it is capable of moving freely; shew that a body sliding down its curved surface will describe an ellipse; and determine the time of descent.

PROB. 15. Determine the motion of two heavy particles connected by an inflexible rod without weight, one of which moves on a surface of revolution and the other is constrained to move in the axis of the surface, this axis being vertical. Find the velocity of the particle on the surface when the other continues stationary.

PROB. 16. A cylinder rolls down a fixed quadrant; find where the cylinder will leave the quadrant.

The pressure must be calculated; the body leaves at the instant that this is zero.

PROB. 17. A sphere revolves round an axis touching its surface, find the length of the simple isochronous pendulum.

PROB. 18. A sector of a circle revolves round an axis perpendicular to its plane, and passing through the centre of the circle; find the angle of the sector when the length of the isochronous simple pendulum equals one half the length of the arc.

PROB. 19. For what axes of suspension is the time of a small oscillation of a solid body an absolute minimum? Take the case of an ellipsoid.

PROB. 20. A rough vertical cylinder, capable of revolving about a concentric but smooth and smaller cylinder as an axis,

I. So long as the sliding motion co
then,

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \omega - \frac{Fat}{Mk^2}, \quad \frac{dx}{dt} = \frac{Ft}{M},$$

$$\theta = \omega t - \frac{Fat^2}{2Mk^2}, \quad x = \frac{Ft^2}{2M}.$$

The sliding motion ceases when the motion of translation and the motion of rotation give exactly equal and opposite motions to the point of contact, or when

$$\frac{dx}{dt} = a\frac{d\theta}{dt}, \quad \text{and} \quad \therefore\ t = \frac{M}{F}\frac{k^2 a\omega}{a^2+k^2}, \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{k^2\omega}{a^2+k^2}.$$

II. After the sliding motion ceases, the equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = -\frac{F'a}{Mk^2} \ldots (1), \quad \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = \frac{F'}{M} \ldots (2), \quad x = a\theta \ldots (3).$$

$$\text{By (1) (2)}\ \frac{k^2}{a}\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} + \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = 0, \quad \therefore \text{ by (3)}\ \frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = 0;$$

$$\therefore\ F' = 0 \text{ and } \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \text{constant} = \frac{k^2\omega}{a^2+k^2}.$$

From this we learn that the friction has gradually reduced the angular motion of the body till the velocity of the point of contact is zero, and after that the body proceeds to move uniformly and to rotate uniformly and no friction is called into play.

PROB. 22. A rough body lies upon a rough board, and this lies upon a smooth horizontal plane, the friction between the body and board is of finite intensity (as in the last Problem): the board is projected with a given velocity, determine the motion of the body and board.

PROB. 23. A sphere is fastened by an inflexible rod to a horizontal axis fixed at two points: when the sphere revolves about the axis required the pressure on the two fixed points.

If we use the notation of Art. 438, and put $\gamma = 90^0$, $\gamma' = 90^0$ and therefore $\beta = 90^0 - a$, then, the axis of rotation being the axis of z and the plane in which the centre of the sphere moves the plane of xy and the axis of x drawn vertically downwards, the moving forces $m(g + yf + x\omega^2)$, $m(y\omega^2 - xf)$, 0 acting on m parallel to the axes of x, y, z and similar forces acting on all the other particles of the system, together with

the pressures of the fixed points ought to be in equilibrium at the time t. Hence

$$P\cos\alpha + P'\cos\alpha' + \Sigma.m(g + yf + x\omega^2) = 0,$$

$$P\sin\alpha + P'\sin\alpha' + \Sigma.m(y\omega^2 - xf) = 0,$$

$$-P\sin\alpha.a - P'\sin\alpha'.a' - \Sigma.m(gz + yzf + xz\omega^2) = 0;$$

$$P\cos\alpha.a + P'\cos\alpha'.a' + \Sigma.m(yz\omega^2 - xzf) = 0,$$

$$\Sigma.m(xy\omega^2 - x^2f - gy - y^2f - xy\omega^2) = 0.$$

Let $\bar{x}\,\bar{y}\,0$ be the co-ordinates to the centre of gravity; then, since every axis through the centre of a sphere is a principal axis, we have

$$\Sigma.m(y-\bar{y})z = 0,\quad \Sigma.m(x-\bar{x})z = 0,\quad \Sigma.m(y-\bar{y})(x-\bar{x}) = 0:$$

$$\therefore\ \Sigma.myz = \bar{y}\Sigma.mz = 0,\quad \Sigma.mxz = 0,\quad \Sigma.myx = M\bar{x}\bar{y}.$$

Hence the equations become

$$P\cos\alpha + P'\cos\alpha' + M(g + f\bar{y} + \omega^2\bar{x}) = 0,$$

$$P\sin\alpha + P'\sin\alpha' + M(\omega^2\bar{y} - f\bar{x}) = 0;$$

$$Pa\sin\alpha + P'a'\sin\alpha' = 0,\quad Pa\cos\alpha + P'a'\cos\alpha' = 0,\quad Mfk_1^2 + Mg\bar{y} = 0.$$

From which P, P', α, α' may be found.

Prob. 24. If a body revolve round an axis by the action of a constant force in a direction always perpendicular to the plane passing through the axis and the centre of gravity of the body, determine how the point of application of this force must vary with the *time*, so that there may be no pressure on the axis, except in the plane to which the direction of the force is perpendicular.

Prob. 25. A hemisphere oscillates about a horizontal axis, which coincides with a diameter of the base; shew that if the base be at first vertical, the ratio of the greatest pressure on the axis to the weight of the hemisphere = 109 ÷ 64.

PROB. 26. A sphere, when acted on separately by three forces, revolves round three diameters inclined at the same angle to each other and with the same angular velocity, determine the angular velocity and the new axis of rotation when the three forces are applied at the same instant.

PROB. 27. A sphere attracted to a given centre of force varying as the distance is projected with a given velocity along a plane passing through that centre, friction being such as to destroy all sliding: prove that the path will be an ellipse, and find the velocity that the ellipse may be a circle.

PROB. 28. A cone of given form, and supported at G its centre of gravity, has a motion communicated to it round an axis through G perpendicular to the line joining G with a point in the circumference of the base, and in a plane passing through this point and the axis of the cone: determine the position of the *invariable plane*; and explain the motion of the cone's vertex.

PROB. 29. Explain how the rotation of a hoop preserves it from falling.

PROB. 30. A solid of revolution moveable about its centre of gravity G, which is fixed and is the origin, and having its axis inclined to the axis of z at an angle ϕ, has an angular motion impressed upon it about a line between these two axes, and inclined to the former at an angle θ, such that $k^2 \tan\phi = k'^2 \tan\theta$, where k and k' are the radii of gyration about its axis and a line perpendicular to the axis through G: prove that the axis of the solid will constantly preserve the same inclination to the axis of z, and will revolve uniformly about it; and the solid will at the same time revolve uniformly about its own axis, which is in motion.

PROB. 31. If the Moon moved in the ecliptic, shew that the force of the Earth to produce rotation about her axis perpendicular to that plane would nearly $= \frac{3\mu \sin 2\theta}{2r^3} \frac{A-B}{C}$; μ, r being the Earth's mass and distance from the Moon, A, B, C the principal moments of inertia of the lunar spheroid, and θ the angular distance, at the Moon's centre, of the Earth from one of the principal axes which are in the ecliptic.

We shall now give some problems in which the action of impulsive forces is considered.

PROB. 32. Two inelastic balls impinge upon each other, their motions being in the same straight line: required their velocity after impact.

Let M, M' be the masses of the balls: V, V' their velocities at the instant the contact commences; v, v' their velocities after the impulse ceases: P the momentum which measures their mutual collision. Then by Art. 474. for the mot gravity of M

$$MV - P - \quad \ldots(1),$$

for the ball M'

$$M'V' + P - \quad \ldots(2).$$

Here we have two ee unknown quantities P, v, v'. The the condition that the particles in contact ie velocity the instant the compression ce

Hence $v - v' = 0$.....(3).

Eliminating P from (1) (2)

$$Mv + M'v' = MV + M'V';$$

$$\therefore \text{ by (3), } v = v' = \frac{MV + M'V'}{M + M'},$$

and the balls will therefore each move with a velocity $\frac{MV + M'V'}{M + M'}$ and remain in contact.

$$\text{Also } P = M(V - v) = \frac{MM'}{M + M'}(V - V') \text{ by (1).}$$

PROB. 33. Suppose the two balls are imperfectly elastic.

In this case the Problem divides itself into two parts: first the motion during compression, and secondly the motion during the restitution of the figure of the bodies. Now bodies differ in their elasticity owing to their physical constitution; but the law to which we are led by experiment is this, that for

the same material the momentum gained by the restitution bears a constant ratio to the momentum lost by the collision: this ratio we write e, and is called the *elasticity* of the material of which the bodies are made (Art. 220).

By the previous Problem the bodies are moving with a velocity $\frac{MV + M'V'}{M + M'}$ at the instant the restitution of figure commences: and the momentum which measures their mutual action $= P = \frac{MM'}{M + M'}(V - V')$: therefore the mutual pressure during restitution $= Pe = \frac{MM'e}{M + M'}(V - V')$:

Let u, u' be the velocities after the restitution ceases: then

$$M\frac{MV + M'V'}{M + M'} - P' - Mu = 0, \quad M'\frac{MV + M'V'}{M + M'} + P' - M'u' = 0;$$

$$\therefore u = \frac{MV + M'V'}{M + M'} - e\frac{M'(V - V')}{M + M'},$$

$$u' = \frac{MV + M'V'}{M + M'} + e\frac{M(V - V')}{M + M'}.$$

Cor. If the bodies are considered perfectly elastic, then $e = 1$.

$$u = V - \frac{2M'}{M + M'}(V - V'), \quad u' = V' + \frac{2M}{M + M'}(V - V').$$

Prob. 34. A smooth but imperfectly elastic ball moves in a horizontal plane and impinges on a hard vertical plane obliquely, its direction making an angle α with the normal to the plane: find the velocity and direction of the motion after impact.

Let V be the velocity before impact; v the velocity and θ the direction of motion at the instant compression ceases; u the velocity and ϕ the direction of motion after impact: P the mutual pressure during compression, Pe the pressure during restitution, M the mass of the ball: then when compression ceases

when restitution of figure ceases,

$$M v \cos\theta - M u \cos\phi = \dots (4), \quad Pe - M u \sin\phi = 0 \dots (5).$$

By (1) (3) (4) $u\cos\phi = V\cos\alpha$, by (2) (3) (5), $u\sin\phi = eV\sin\alpha$;

$\therefore \tan\phi = e\tan\alpha$, and $u = V\sqrt{\cos^2\alpha + e^2\sin^2\alpha}$, $= V\cos\alpha \div \cos\phi$,

which determine the direction and the velocity after impact.

PROB. 35. Two imperfectly elastic and smooth balls impinge upon each other, the motion of their centre taking place in the same plane: required their velocities after impact.

Since the balls are perfectly smooth there will be no rotatory motion produced by the impulse. We must first consider the motion till the compression ceases. Let P be the mutual pressure acting in the common normal at the points in contact; V, V' the velocities at the commencement of the contact: $\alpha\alpha'$ the angles their directions make with the line passing through their centres when the contact takes place; v, v' the velocities of the balls at the instant the compression ceases: θ, θ' the angles their directions make with the axes.

Therefore

$$M V \cos\alpha - P - M v \cos\theta = 0 \dots (1), \quad M V \sin\alpha - M v \sin\theta = 0 \dots (2),$$

$$M'V'\cos\alpha + P - M'v'\cos\theta' = 0 \dots (3), \quad M'V'\sin\alpha' - M'v'\sin\theta' = 0 \dots (4);$$

and since the points in contact move with the same velocities in the direction of the normal at the instant the compression ceases, then

$$v\cos\theta - v'\cos\theta' = 0 \dots\dots\dots\dots (5).$$

Again, during the restitution of figure the mutual pressure $= Pe$: and if u and u' be the velocities after the restitution of figure is complete, and ϕ and ϕ' the angles of the directions of motion, the equations of motion are

$$M v \cos\theta - Pe - M u \cos\phi = 0 \ldots (6), \quad M v \sin\theta - M u \sin\phi = 0 \ldots (7)$$

$$M'v' \cos\theta' + Pe - M'u' \cos\phi' = 0 \ldots (8), \quad M'v' \sin\theta' - M'u' \sin\phi' = 0 \ldots (9)$$

In these nine equations are involved nine unknown quantities $P, v, v', \theta, \theta', u, u', \phi, \phi'$: we have to determine u, u', ϕ, ϕ'.

By (1) (2) (5) $(M + M') v \cos\theta = MV \cos\alpha + M'V' \cos\alpha'$;

eliminating e by (1) (6) $(M + M') u \cos\phi$

$= (M + M')(1 + e) v \cos\theta - (M + M') V \cos\alpha$

$= M'V' \cos\alpha' - M'V \cos\alpha + e (MV \cos\alpha + M'V' \cos\alpha')$,

by (2) (7) $u \sin\phi = V \sin\alpha$;

from which u and ϕ may easily be determined: in the same way u' and ϕ' may be determined.

Prob. 36. A rough ball A is placed on a rough horizontal table, and another rough ball B lying on the table is struck in a direction not passing through the centre of gravity, but so as to cause B to strike A: find the motion after impact, the bodies being inelastic.

Prob. 37. Supposing, in the last Problem, that the friction of the Table is so slight as not altogether to prevent sliding, find the conditions that B may move through its original place of rest.

The four following Problems are intended to illustrate the action of springs in removing the shock arising from the sudden collision of bodies.

Prob. 38. A ball A moves along a smooth horizontal plane with a velocity V, and sets in motion another ball B, equal to A and originally at rest, by impinging upon a spring CD (fig. 112), which is fastened to B at the point D: the inertia of the spring is neglected, and we suppose the force of the spring to vary as the space through which it is compressed: required to determine the motion of the balls.

time of first contact with the spring: $OA=x$, $CD=z$ ($=b$ when the spring is not compressed), $OB=x'$: then the force exerted by the spring on the balls at the time t varies as $b-z$; let it $=c^2(b-z)$. The equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -c^2(b-x) \ldots\ldots (1), \quad \frac{d^2x'}{dt^2} = c^2(b-z) \ldots\ldots (2);$$

also $x'-x = 2a+z \ldots\ldots (3)$, a the radius of the balls, three equations and three unknown quantities x, x', z.

Differentiating (3) and subtracting (1) (2) we have

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = 2c^2(b-z);$$

$$\therefore \frac{dz^2}{dt^2} = \text{constant} - 2c^2(b-z)^2 = V^2 - 2c^2(b-z)^2,$$

since the point C of the spring (having no inertia) instantly acquires the velocity (V) of the body A at the first contact;

$$\therefore z = b - \frac{V}{c\sqrt{2}} \sin(c\sqrt{2}\,t + C') = b - \frac{V}{c\sqrt{2}} \sin c\sqrt{2}\,t \ldots (4).$$

This shews that the greatest compression of the spring is equal to $\frac{V}{c\sqrt{2}}$, and that the time of compression $= \frac{\pi}{2c\sqrt{2}}$; after an equal duration of time the spring is restored to its original form, since z equals b when $c\sqrt{2}\,t = \pi$.

By (1) (4) $\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{Vc}{\sqrt{2}} \sin c\sqrt{2}\,t$;

$$\therefore \frac{dx}{dt} = \text{const.} + \frac{V}{2} \cos c\sqrt{2}\,t = \frac{V}{2}(1 + \cos c\sqrt{2}\,t);$$

$$x = \frac{V}{2}\left(t + \frac{1}{c\sqrt{2}} \sin c\sqrt{2}\,t\right);$$

$$V$$

$$\therefore \text{ by (3) } x' = 2a + b + \frac{V}{2}\left(t - \frac{1}{c\sqrt{2}}\sin c\sqrt{2}t\right);$$

$$\therefore \frac{dx'}{dt} = \frac{V}{2}(1 - \cos c\sqrt{2}t).$$

From these equations we readily gather the following results. The ball A stops when $\frac{dx}{dt} = 0$, or $t = \frac{\pi}{c\sqrt{2}}$; but at this instant (as we have shewn) the spring has returned to its natural form, consequently the contact between A and the spring at this instant ceases, and A remains permanently at rest: the space through which A has moved during the action of the spring $= \frac{\pi V}{2c\sqrt{2}}$. The velocity of B is zero when the spring begins to act and is V when its action ceases, and with this velocity B henceforth moves uniformly along the plane. Hence A *gradually* imparts all its velocity to B: and the duration of time which this communication of velocity occupies is $\frac{\pi}{c\sqrt{2}}$.

If the elastic force of the spring be of very great intensity, as is the case with the forces put into play by the impact of hard balls of ivory, c is very great, and the duration of collision is exceedingly short.

PROB. 39. Suppose that A and B (in the last Problem) are of the same size, but of different masses M and M', and that they move with the velocities V and V' before they come in contact: required to determine the motion.

PROB. 40. Suppose, in the last Problem, that the force exerted by the spring during the restitution of its figure is less than the force exerted during the compression in the ratio e : 1, but that a complete restitution of figure takes place: required to determine the motion.

PROB. 41. A heavy carriage (represented in fig. 113.) rests upon a spring B, and is also held in its place by two springs pressing at C and C': the carriage moves uniformly along a horizontal plane with a velocity V, and its four wheels (two only of which are seen in the figure) which are all of the

same size suddenly impinge at the same instant on four very small and equal pointed obstacles, and move over them; the force exerted by each spring is supposed to vary as the extent of displacement of its point of contact with the carriage, and the springs are supposed to be bent into such a form that for all small displacements of the body of the carriage the resultant of their pressures always passes through the centre of gravity of the body and so prevent rotatory motion: required the motion of the centre of gravity.

We shall merely give the results with a few of the steps of the calculation.

Let the dotted lines in the figure represent the state of things at the instant of the impact: and the dark lines the state of things at a time t after the impact: a the radius of each wheel. In consequence of the elasticity of the springs (which is supposed perfect) the body of the carriage is not rigidly connected with the wheels and axle-tree, and therefore the body can produce no instantaneous effect upon the velocity when the impulse takes place. By the impact of the wheels on the obstacles the parts of the springs which are connected with the axes of the wheels and the axle-tree have their motion suddenly changed, this causes the springs to assume new forms and in that way the forces are brought into action which gradually change the motion of the body.

Let $x'y'$ be the horizontal and vertical spaces described by the point B of the axle-tree in the time t; x and y the spaces described by the centre of gravity of the body: let c^2 and e^2 be constants which depend upon the elasticity of the springs at C and C' and that at B; we neglect the downward effect of the spring B on the axle-tree but consider only the dead weight to act at B: let θ be the angle which the spoke of each wheel, which passes through the obstacle, makes with the vertical at the time t; $\theta = \alpha$ when $t = 0$: M' = mass of each wheel: ω the angular velocity of each wheel after impact.

The equations of motion are, for each wheel,

$$\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = \frac{(M' + \frac{1}{4}M)\,g\alpha \sin\theta}{M'k^2} = \frac{\sin\theta}{\alpha^2}, \text{ suppose } \ldots\ldots (1),$$

for the motion of G

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -c^2(x - x') \ldots\ldots (2), \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -g + c^2(y' - y) \ldots\ldots (3),$$

and x', y', θ are connected by the equations

$$x' = a(\sin\alpha - \sin\theta) \ldots\ldots (4), \quad y' = a(\cos\theta - \cos\alpha) \ldots\ldots (5).$$

These equations are sufficient to solve the problem: but they cannot be integrated unless α and θ (and therefore the obstacles) be supposed small: we shall neglect powers higher than the second. After reducing the equations their integrals will be found to be of the forms

$$x = A\sin(ct + B) + a\alpha + h\varepsilon^{-\frac{t}{n}} + k\varepsilon^{\frac{t}{n}},$$

$$y = C\sin(et + D) - l - m\varepsilon^{-\frac{2t}{n}} - p\varepsilon^{\frac{2t}{n}},$$

A, B, C, D being arbitrary constants to be determined by the initial circumstances, and h, k, l, m, p being written for known quantities. After determining these it will be found that when $t = 0$, $\frac{dy}{dx} = 0$ and therefore the original rectilinear path of G is a tangent at the first point to the curve described by G; also the values of the constants will shew that the velocity is V at first, and gradually decreases: hence there is no *jerk* in the body of the carriage.

We might in the same way obtain the circumstances after the wheels again come to the horizontal plane.

PROB. 42. A rectangular parallelopiped slides down a smooth inclined plane and meets a fixed obstacle: determine the impulse and the subsequent motion.

PROB. 43. A beam is projected in any manner along a smooth horizontal plane and impinges upon a fixed obstacle: determine the impulse.

PROB. 44. A beam is fixed at one extremity, what vertical force applied instantaneously at the other will throw it exactly vertical?

PROB. 45. A rectangular parallelopiped revolves about one of its edges, which rests in a horizontal groove, and

sliding being prevented by friction.

PROB. 46. A beam is placed with one end against a smooth vertical wall and the other on a smooth horizontal plane so as to move in a vertical plane when left to the action of gravity; the horizontal plane does not extend to the wall, but is terminated by a straight edge parallel to the wall: find the distance of this edge from the wall that the beam may just be prevented from revolving about the edge and finally falling beneath the horizontal plane.

PROB. 47. At what point must a given uniform circular body be struck by a force perpendicular to its plane, that in the first instant of the body's motion one extremity of a given diameter may remain at rest?

PROB. 48. A beam falls from a vertical position by revolving about one extremity which rests on a rough horizontal plane, and impinges on a vertical post: determine the magnitude and direction of the impulse on the post and on the horizontal plane at the immoveable extremity of the beam.

PROB. 49. In the last Problem determine the initial circumstances that the beam may just fall over the post.

PROB. 50. If a rough ball be projected against a rough beam on a smooth horizontal plane determine the centre of spontaneous rotation.

PROB. 51. An elastic beam falls upon a horizontal fixed line: determine the motion.

PROB. 52. A beam, moveable about a fixed horizontal axis at a given altitude above a horizontal plane, falls through a given angle: determine the point at which a given sphere should be opposed to its impact, that it may be projected to the greatest possible distance on the horizontal plane, the beam being in its vertical position at the instant of impact.

PROB. 53. A hoop rolling down an inclined plane suddenly comes in contact with a horizontal plane; find the change in angular velocity.

PROB. 54. In lowering a bale of goods from the higher story of a warehouse by means of a given crane, the whole weight of the bale is allowed to wind off the rope freely from the axle, and when the bale is half way down, the handle of the crane suddenly flies off; determine the motion.

PROB. 55. Explain the use of fly-wheels in machinery, and if a fly-wheel of given dimensions and weight move with a given angular velocity what force applied perpendicularly at a given point of one of the spokes of the wheel will instantaneously destroy the motion.

PROB. 56. A perfectly flexible chain has one end fixed to a peg, which is at the extremity and highest point of a quadrant of a circle of which the plane is vertical, and all the chain is collected at that point; it will just cover the quadrant, and being suffered to descend freely, it is required to find the stress upon the peg at the end of the motion.

PROB. 57. A groove is cut in a horizontal table in the form of a regular hexagon and an inelastic ball is projected with a given velocity along one of its sides, find the velocity with which it will successively describe each of the other sides of the figure.

PROB. 58. A perfectly elastic solid of revolution, turning about its axis at a given rate, impinges on a hard smooth plane: if before impact the centre of gravity move perpendicular to the plane with a velocity V, determine the motion of rotation after impact, and prove that the centre of gravity will move in the same direction with a velocity $\frac{p^2 - k^2}{p^2 + k^2} V$, where p is the perpendicular from the centre of gravity on the normal at the point of impact, and k is the radius of gyration round an axis through the centre of gravity perpendicular to the axis of the solid.

PROB. 59. A solid sphere is placed in a hollow sphere, which rests on a smooth horizontal plane; determine the small oscillations, when they are slightly disturbed from the state of rest.

PROB. 60. Prove, by means of the principle of least action, that the orbit a body describes about a centre of force varying inversely as the square of the distance is a conic section.

PROB. 61. Prove the laws of reflexion and refraction of light by the principle of least action, on the supposition that light consists of luminous particles moving uniformly in the same homogeneous medium, but with different velocities in different media.

PROB. 62. A bullet is fired into a thick board hanging from a fixed horizontal axis about which it is capable of revolving; the board has a sheet of iron on its back to prevent the bullet from passing through: a ribbon is fastened to the bottom of the board and runs through a ring touching the bottom of the board in its position of rest: shew how to compare the velocities of bullets by observing the lengths of ribbon drawn out by the motion of the board.

This is Robins' Ballistic Pendulum.

PROB. 63. The weights suspended from a wheel and axle are in motion, the wheel and axle move about a fixed axis very nearly fitting into the cylindrical aperture concentric with the axle, so as to suffer only one point to be in contact: determine the position of this point when friction is considered and when it is neglected.

HYDROSTATICS.

CHAPTER. I.

DIFINITIONS AND PRINCIPLES.

513. HYDROSTATICS is the science which treats of the equilibrium of fluid bodies.

By a fluid body we mean an assemblage of material molecules which yield without resistance to the slightest effort which we can make to separate them. No fluids with which we meet in nature are exactly of this character; but they approach more or less to perfect fluidity, as it is termed. The adherence that exists among the molecules of most fluids, known by the term *viscosity*, prevents the separation of its parts by the slightest forces; but, in this work we shall suppose the fluids to be perfect, for, if we except certain fluids the viscosity of which is considerable and of which we do not treat, the laws of equilibrium which we deduce are true, without sensible error.

514. Fluids are divided into *liquids* and *aeriform fluids*: they are also said to be *incomprehensible* and *elastic*. In truth, all fluids are more or less elastic: but some, as water, are compressible, and that but slightly, only when subjected to enormous pressure. Aeriform fluids may be divided into *vapours*, and *permanent fluids*, such as air and gasses. A given space will not contain above a determinate quantity of vapour under a given temperature: so that

if the vapour attain the limit of temperature, and we diminish ever so little the space or the temperature, a portion of the vapour becomes liquified. Experiment proves that the maximum quantity of vapour is the same, when the temperature is the same, in a space void of air, and in a space filled with air more or less dilated or compressed. On the other hand, air and the gasses do not under any circumstances become liquids; though it is the opinion of some that this would be the case if sufficient force of compression could be exerted, or if the temperature could be reduced to a sufficient degree of cold.

515. In order that a fluid mass may be in equilibrium the forces acting upon each molecule must satisfy the equations of equilibrium of a particle deduced in Art. 65. But we are ignorant of the forms of the particles of fluids and of the forces by which they influence each other: and consequently we fall upon the same difficulty as in the Article cited, and must therefore seek for some principle to serve us the office which that of the transmission of force did when we considered the equilibrium of a rigid body.

The following Principle is proved by experiment: that any pressure communicated to a fluid mass in equilibrium is equally transmitted through the whole fluid.

This is perfectly independent of the form of the molecules: we may therefore suppose the fluid to consist of an indefinite number of small parallelopipeds formed by planes drawn very near to each other and parallel to the co-ordinate planes.

The following experiment will illustrate the principle of the uniform distribution of pressure: we take the case of an incompressible fluid. Let fig. 114. represent a closed box full of water; A, B two vertical pistons of equal transverse section neatly fitted into the upper face of the box, and made to move as freely as possible. It is found by experiment that if a weight be placed on A an equal weight must be placed on B to preserve the equilibrium, shewing that the pressure of the weight A is propagated through the fluid to the under surface of B, and equably too, since it requires an equal weight on B to balance this pressure.

Again if a piston equal to A or B be fitted at C, it is found that to preserve equilibrium, a pressure must be exerted at C: and when the equilibrium exists if additional pressure act at C, or a weight be placed on A or B, an equal force must act on the other two pistons to preserve equilibrium: which shews that the pressure upon any portion of the fluid is transmitted through the fluid, and acts equally upon every equal area upon which it presses.

516. When a fluid is placed in a vessel and is acted on only by gravity and the pressure of the sides of the vessel, it transmits this pressure throughout its mass in the same way as if it were deprived of its weight: but it exerts on the sides of the vessel a pressure due to its weight and variable from one point to another. The same is the case when other forces, beside gravity, act upon the fluid. Since the only direction in which any small portion of the surface of the vessel can sustain pressure is that of the normal to the surface, it follows, that the pressure of a fluid on any small element of a surface, containing the fluid or immersed in it, is perpendicular to the surface. The magnitude of the pressure at any point in the fluid is, as yet, an unknown quantity: it depends upon the position of the point and upon the forces which act upon the fluid; and therefore, in the general case, varies as the position of the point varies, the forces being given. We measure the pressure at any point in terms of the force exerted on a plane of a unit of area and acted on at every point by a pressure equal to the pressure to be measured. Thus let p be the pressure upon a unit of area acted on uniformly by a pressure equal to that at the point (xyz), then $p\omega$ is the pressure sustained by an indefinitely small portion (ω) of this surface. The coefficient p is a function of the three co-ordinates (xyz) and is termed *the pressure referred to a unit of surface.*

517. The pressure of the same elastic fluid against the sides of a containing vessel is proportional to the density of the fluid, when the temperature is constant: $p = k\rho$, where ρ is the density at the point (xyz) and k a constant when the temperature is constant: when this is not the case k is a function of the temperature.

PROP. *To find the pressure at any point in the interior of a fluid mass in equilibrium.*

518. Let the fluid be referred to three rectangular co-ordinate planes and let xyz be the co-ordinates to the angular point nearest the origin of a small parallelopiped of which the sides are δx, δy, δz drawn parallel to the co-ordinates. Let ρ be the density of the fluid at the point (xyz), X, Y, Z the accelerating forces acting upon the fluid, and p the pressure at the same point estimated as explained in Art. 516. Now the parallelopiped is held in equilibrium by the forces acting on its particles and the pressure of the surrounding fluid on its sides. Let us suppose that X, Y, Z and ρ are the same for each particle of the parallelopiped. Now the pressure at a point $(x, y, z + \delta z)$ is $p + \frac{dp}{dz}\delta z$, and therefore if we suppose the pressure to act uniformly over the faces of the parallelopiped parallel to the plane of xy, then the forces acting parallel to the axis of z are a pressure $\frac{dp}{dz}\delta z\,\delta x\,\delta y$ acting from the origin and $\rho Z\,\delta x\,\delta y\,\delta z$ acting towards the origin: and since the parallelopiped is in equilibrium the sum of the forces parallel to each axis must vanish. Hence

$$\frac{dp}{dz}\delta z = \rho Z\delta z, \text{ also } \frac{dp}{dy}\delta y = \rho Y\delta y, \text{ and } \frac{dp}{dx}\delta x = \rho X\delta x;$$

$$\therefore \delta p, \text{ or } \frac{dp}{dx}\delta x + \frac{dp}{dy}\delta y + \frac{dp}{dz}\delta z, \; = \rho(X\delta x + Y\delta y + Z\delta z.)$$

Now let us diminish the parallelopiped indefinitely, in which case the supposition we have made respecting the uniformity of the density of the parallelopiped and of the action of the forces will be true; and

$$dp = \rho(Xdx + Ydy + Zdz).$$

From this equation we shall obtain the conditions of equilibrium of a fluid mass.

PROP. *To find the conditions of equilibrium of a mass of fluid acted on by any forces.*

519. The first member of the equation of last Article is a perfect differential, and therefore when the equilibrium is possible the second member must be so too: hence the forces must satisfy the condition that $\rho(Xdx + Ydy + Zdz)$ shall be a perfect differential.

If this condition be fulfilled then equilibrium will subsist in the interior of the fluid provided the surface be of a proper form: for since at the surface $p = 0$ it is easily seen that XYZ must satisfy the additional condition that for all points at the surface $Xdx + Ydy + Zdz = 0$; or, in other words, this must be the differential equation to the surface.

This latter condition amounts to the same as saying that the resultant of the forces acting on any particle of fluid at the surface must be in the direction of the normal. For the cosines of the angles which the normal at a point (xyz) of a surface makes with the axes are

$$-V\frac{dz}{dx}, \quad -V\frac{dz}{dy}, \quad V; \text{ where } \frac{1}{V} = \sqrt{1 + \frac{dz^2}{dx^2} + \frac{dz^2}{dy^2}};$$

or in this case,

$$\frac{X}{\sqrt{X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2}}, \quad \frac{Y}{\sqrt{X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2}}, \quad \frac{Z}{\sqrt{X^2 + Y^2 + Z^2}}.$$

But these are the cosines of the angles which the direction of the resultant of X, Y, Z makes with the axes. Hence our remark is correct.

520. When $\rho(Xdx + Ydy + Zdz)$ is a perfect differential, then

$$\frac{d.\rho X}{dy} = \frac{d.\rho Y}{dx}, \quad \frac{d.\rho Z}{dx} = \frac{d.\rho X}{dz}, \quad \frac{d.\rho Y}{dz} = \frac{d.\rho Z}{dy}.$$

Performing the differentiations we have

$$\rho\left\{\frac{dX}{dy} - \frac{dY}{dx}\right\} = Y\frac{d\rho}{dx} - X\frac{d\rho}{dy},$$

$$\rho\left\{\frac{dZ}{dx} - \frac{dX}{dz}\right\} = X\frac{d\rho}{dz} - Z\frac{d\rho}{dx},$$

$$\rho\left\{\frac{dY}{dz}-\frac{dZ}{dy}\right\}=Z\frac{d\rho}{dy}-Y\frac{d\rho}{dz}.$$

Multiply these respectively by Z, Y, X and add, then

$$Z\left(\frac{dX}{dy}-\frac{dY}{dx}\right)+Y\left(\frac{dZ}{dx}-\frac{dX}{dz}\right)+X\left(\frac{dY}{dz}-\frac{dZ}{dy}\right)=0.$$

This is independent of the density and furnishes a partial criterion before we make use of the others.

PROP. *To prove that for central forces tending to fixed centres* $\mathrm{X\,dx+Y\,dy+Z\,dz}$ *is a perfect differential.*

521. Let a, b, c be the co-ordinates to any one of the centres of force, P the corresponding force: then the resolved parts of its action on the particle (xyz) are

$$P\frac{x-a}{r},\quad P\frac{y-b}{r},\quad P\frac{z-c}{r},$$

where $r^2=(x-a)^2+(y-b)^2+(z-c)^2$.

Hence, by resolving all the forces in this manner and adding together those parallel to the same axes,

$$X=\Sigma.P\frac{x-a}{r},\quad Y=\Sigma.P\frac{y-b}{r},\quad Z=\Sigma.P\frac{z-c}{r},$$

$$\therefore\ Xdx+Ydy+Zdz=$$

$$\Sigma.\frac{P}{r}\{(x-a)\,dx+(y-b)\,dy+(z-c)\,dz\}=\Sigma.Pdr.$$

But P is a function of r, and therefore Pdr and the similar expressions for the other forces are perfect differentials. Hence $Xdx+Ydy+Zdz$ is a perfect differential.

All the forces in nature are central forces. It follows then that equilibrium will always be possible provided the surface of the fluid be of the proper form.

PROP. *To prove that the particles of a mass of fluid when in equilibrium are so arranged, that the same surfaces are surfaces of equal pressure, of equal density, and of equal temperature.*

522. By Art. 518. we have

$$dp = \rho\,(X\,dx + Y\,dy + Z\,dz),\ = \rho\,d\phi \text{ suppose}$$

where ϕ is a certain function of xyz, (Art. 521.)

But dp is a perfect differential, therefore $\rho\,d\phi$ is so also: hence ρ is a function of ϕ, and then p is a function of ϕ and therefore of ρ; consequently any two of p, ρ, ϕ can be expressed in terms of the third: hence all values of xyz which make one of them constant make all the others constant also.

If the fluid be elastic the density varies directly as the pressure, as was first shewn by the experiments of Mariotte. Let $p = k\rho$; then it is found that if the temperature vary, k is a function of the temperature.

$$\text{Now } dp = \rho\,d\phi, \quad \therefore \frac{dp}{p} = \frac{d\phi}{k}, \text{ and } p = \Pi\,\epsilon^{\int \frac{d\phi}{k}},$$

where Π is an arbitary constant: this expression shews, that if there be equilibrium, k must be a function of ϕ, and therefore p and ρ and the temperature must be functions of ϕ: and consequently any three of these quantities can be expressed in terms of the fourth, and therefore when one is constant the others are also. Hence the truth of the Proposition is manifest.

Cor. It is evident, then, that the atmosphere can never be in equilibrium; for the sun heats unequally masses of air which are equally pressed by the superincumbent air; consequently the layers of equal pressure, density, and temperature do not coincide; a condition necessary when there is equilibrium.

523. If, then, we integrate the equation $X\,dx + Y\,dy + Z\,dz = 0$ and give to the arbitrary constant introduced by the integration as many particular values as we please, the determinate equations which we thus obtain belong to surfaces each of which has the equation $X\,dx + Y\,dy + Z\,dz = 0$ for its differential equation, and, in consequence, possesses the property that it is equally pressed on every part, and cuts at right angles in every point the direction of the resultant of the forces X, Y, Z. These internal surfaces

are called *surfaces de niveau.* If we make the constant vary by indefinitely small degrees we divide the mass of the fluid into an indefinitely great number of thin shells; these are called *couches de niveau.*

The value of the constant which corresponds to the external surface is determined from knowing the volume of the fluid.

CHAPTER II.

FIGURE OF THE EARTH.

524. We have already remarked that the heavenly bodies are nearly spherical in their figure. It is found, however, by measuring degrees of latitude in places near the poles and equator, that the figure of the Earth approaches more nearly to a spheroid than a sphere. Also experiments made with pendulums lead to the same conclusion. The polar radius is found to be about 14 miles shorter than the equatorial radius. Now the altitude of the highest mountains is not greater than five miles above the level of the ocean. It follows from this that the form of the sea cannot be spherical, but must partake more or less of the spheroidal form of the land. It becomes, then, a matter of especial interest to ascertain whether the ocean covering the solid nucleus of the Earth and the nucleus itself would according to the theory of gravitation assume a spheroidal form. The calculation is one of great difficulty, and indeed would be impracticable did we not know that the figure does not differ greatly from a sphere. As a first approximation we shall enquire whether a homogeneous fluid mass revolving about a fixed axis with a uniform angular velocity will assume a spheroidal figure. It is nevertheless *à priori* highly improbable that the density of the Earth should be homogeneous since the weight of the superincumbent mass must be sufficient of itself to produce a great condensation of the matter in the interior of the Earth.

Prop. ***A homogeneous mass of fluid in the form of a spheroid is revolving with a uniform angular velocity about its axis: required to determine whether the equilibrium of the fluid is possible.***

525. Let a and c be the axes of the spheroid, c being that about which it revolves: also let $c^2 = a^2(1 - e^2)$. Now the forces which act upon the particle (xyz) are the centrifugal force and the attractions of the spheroid parallel to the axes, and these latter are given in Art. 158. as follows:

$$\frac{2\pi\rho}{e^3}\left\{\sqrt{1-e^2}\sin^{-1}e - e(1-e^2)\right\}x,$$

$$\frac{2\pi\rho}{e^3}\left\{\sqrt{1-e^2}\sin^{-1}e - e(1-e^2)\right\}y,$$

$$\frac{4\pi\rho}{e^3}\left\{e - \sqrt{1-e^2}\sin^{-1}e\right\}z.$$

Let these be represented by Ax, Ay, Cz. Let w be the angular velocity of rotation, then $w^2\sqrt{x^2+y^2}$ is the centrifugal force of the particle (xyz), and the resolved parts of it parallel to the axes are w^2x, w^2y, 0.

Hence $X = (A - w^2)x$, $Y = (A - w^2)y$, $Z = Cz$.

Now these satisfy the criterions given in Art. 520; hence, so far, the equilibrium is possible. Then

$$\frac{1}{\rho}dp = Xdx + Ydy + Zdz$$

$$= (A - w^2)(xdx + ydy) + Czdz;$$

$$\therefore \frac{2p}{\rho} + \text{const.} = (A - w^2)(x^2 + y^2) + Cz^2,$$

and at the surface $p = 0$;

$$\text{and } \therefore \frac{A - w^2}{C}(x^2 + y^2) + z^2 = \text{const.}$$

hence the surface is a spheroid and therefore the equilibrium is possible and the eccentricity is given by the equation

$$\frac{A - w^2}{C} = \frac{c^2}{a^2} = 1 - e^2.$$

$$\text{or } \frac{w^2}{2\pi\rho} = \frac{\sqrt{1-e^2}}{e^3}\sin^{-1}e - 3\frac{1-e^2}{e^2} + \frac{2}{e^3}(1-e^2)^{\frac{3}{2}}\sin^{-1}e,$$

$$\text{or } \frac{w^2}{2\pi\rho} + \frac{3(1-e^2)}{e^2} - \frac{(3-2e^2)\sqrt{1-e^2}}{e^3}\sin^{-1}e = 0.$$

$$\text{Now } \frac{\text{centrifugal force at equator}}{\text{gravity at equator}} = \frac{w^2 a}{\frac{4}{3}\pi\rho a - w^2 a},$$

and observation proves that this equals $\frac{1}{289}$;

$$\therefore \frac{4\pi\rho}{3w^2} = 290; \quad \therefore \frac{w^2}{2\pi\rho} = \frac{1}{435}.$$

Then by expanding in powers of e and neglecting powers higher than the second (since we know that the figure of the Earth is not far from spherical) we have

$$\sin^{-1}e = \int_0^e \frac{de}{\sqrt{1-e^2}} = \int_0^e \left\{1 + \tfrac{1}{2}e^2 + \frac{1.3}{2.4}e^4 + \ldots\right\} de$$

$$= e + \tfrac{1}{2}\frac{e^3}{3} + \frac{1.3}{2.4}\frac{e^5}{5} + \ldots\ldots$$

$$\sqrt{1-e^2} = 1 - \tfrac{1}{2}e^2 - \frac{1.1}{2.4}e^4 + \ldots\ldots;$$

$$\therefore \tfrac{1}{435} = \left(\frac{3}{e^2} - 2\right)\left(1 - \tfrac{1}{2}e^2 - \frac{1.1}{2.4}e^4\right)\left(1 + \tfrac{1}{2}\frac{e^2}{3} + \frac{1.3}{2.4}\frac{e^4}{5}\right) - \frac{3}{e^2} + 3$$

$$= \left(\frac{3}{e^2} - 2\right)\left(1 - \tfrac{1}{3}e^2 - \tfrac{2}{15}e^4\right) - \frac{3}{e^2} + 3 = \tfrac{4}{15}e^2;$$

$$\therefore e^2 = \tfrac{1}{116}.$$

If ϵ be the ellipticity, then

$$\epsilon = \frac{a-c}{a} = 1 - \sqrt{1-e^2} = \frac{e^2}{2} = \tfrac{1}{232}.$$

This result is so much greater than that obtained by measuring the arcs of a meridian, which gives $\epsilon = \frac{1}{306}$, and which agrees very nearly with results arrived at by other and

independent processes, that we are led to the conclusion that the mass of the Earth is not homogeneous.

526. Another value of e, nearly $= 1$, also satisfies the equation: but this evidently does not give the figure of any of the heavenly bodies, for none of them are very elliptical.

There are no other possible values of e (except -1 which of course we reject): this may be shewn by putting the first side of the equation for calculating e equal to y, and tracing the curve considering e the variable abscissa: then those values of e which make the curve cut the axis of abscissas are the values we are seeking. It is found that the curve cuts the axis in only two points on the positive side of the origin.

Prof. *To shew that there is a limiting angular velocity beyond which the equilibrium is impossible.*

527. The equation of Art. 525. shews that as we alter the value of w the value of e will also vary. To find the greatest value of w we must put $\frac{dw}{de} = 0$: this gives after some long numerical calculations.

$$\text{time of rotation} = 0.10090 \text{ day, and } e = \tfrac{17197}{27197}.$$

528. Since there are two forms of equilibrium it might perhaps be imagined, that the form of the equilibrium of a homogeneous fluid mass is unstable; and that when a fluid mass is set in rotation it will be indifferent which form it will ultimately assume. Supposing that there is a cohesive force among the particles, which is the case with all known fluids, the mass would after revolving for a greater or less time attain a rotatory motion comprised within the limits of equilibrium and maintain itself in that state, which of the two states being apparently doubtful. But Laplace has shewn (*Méc. Céles.* Liv. III. §. 21), that for a given primitive impulse there is but one form of equilibrium. In fact, it will easily be seen, that for a given value of the angular velocity w the vis viva of two masses so different in their form as to have e small and $e = 1$ nearly must be very different.

529. Since the ellipticity of the Earth deduced on the supposition of its being a homogeneous mass is greater than

that given by geodetic measurements and experiments made with pendulums, we are constrained to reject the hypothesis of the Earth's homogeneity, and shall proceed to calculate its ellipticity on the supposition of its being heterogeneous. But before proceeding to this we shall investigate the following Proposition, since we shall find it of use hereafter.

PROP. *To calculate the ellipticity of a mass of fluid revolving about a fixed axis and attracted by a force wholly residing in the centre of the fluid and varying inversely as the square of the distance.*

530. Let M be the mass of the fluid, the other quantities as before;

$$\therefore X = -\frac{Mx}{r^3} + w^2 x, \quad Y = -\frac{My}{r^3} + w^2 y, \quad Z = -\frac{Mz}{r^3}.$$

Then the equation $Xdx + Ydy + Zdz = 0$ becomes

$$\frac{M}{r^3}(x\,dx + y\,dy + z\,dz) - w^2(x\,dx + y\,dy) = 0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{M}{r^2}dr - \frac{w^2}{2}d(x^2 + y^2) = 0,$$

$$\therefore \frac{M}{r} + \frac{w^2}{2}(x^2 + y^2) = \text{constant} = C;$$

let the ratio of the centrifugal force at the equator to the gravity at the equator be represented by am, where a is a very small numerical quantity, and $am = \frac{1}{289}$, then

$$am = \frac{w^2 a}{\frac{M}{a^2} - w^2 a}, \quad \therefore w^2 = \frac{M}{a^3}\frac{am}{1 + am};$$

$$\therefore \frac{1}{r} \text{ or } \frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + y^2 + z^2}} = \frac{C}{M} - \frac{1}{2a^3}\frac{am}{1 + am}(x^2 + y^2),$$

when $x = 0$ and $y = 0$ then $z = c$: when $z = 0$ then $x^2 + y^2 = a^2$,

$$\therefore \frac{1}{c} = \frac{C}{M}; \quad \frac{1}{a}\left(1 + \frac{am}{2 + 2am}\right) = \frac{C}{M};$$

$$\therefore \frac{c}{a} = \frac{2 + 2am}{2 + 3am}, \quad \epsilon = 1 - \frac{c}{a} = \frac{am}{2 + 3am}.$$

$$\text{Now } am = \tfrac{1}{289}, \quad \therefore \epsilon = \tfrac{1}{581}.$$

We shall find this result of use in a following part of this Chapter. The value of ϵ is far too small on this hypothesis, as the value of ϵ was too large on the hypothesis of every particle attracting. We shall, therefore, pass on to consider the form of a heterogeneous mass.

PROP. *To find the equation of equilibrium of a heterogeneous mass of fluid consisting of strata each nearly spherical, and revolving about a fixed axis passing through the centre of gravity with a uniform angular velocity.*

531. The general equation of equilibrium of fluids deduced in Art. 519, gives

$$\int \frac{dp}{\rho'} = \int (X dx + Y dy + Z dz),$$

ρ' being the density of the mass at the point (xyz); p the pressure at that point; and X, Y, Z the sums of the resolved parts parallel to the axes of the forces acting on the particle at (xyz). These forces are the attraction of the mass itself, and the centrifugal force.

Let V = the sum of the quotients formed by dividing each particle of the body by its distance from the attracted point: then $-\frac{dV}{dx}$, $-\frac{dV}{dy}$, $-\frac{dV}{dz}$ are the attractions parallel to the axes of the body on the particle at (xyz).

Let w be the angular velocity of the mass, r the distance of (xyz) from the origin of co-ordinates, μ the sine of the latitude of this particle. Then the resolved parts parallel to the axes of x and y of the centrifugal force of this particle are w^2x, w^2y: the axis of revolution being the axis of z.

It is usual to express the angular velocity in terms of the ratio of the centrifugal force at the equator to the equatorial gravity, a fraction which observation shews to be $\frac{1}{289}$: we shall call it am, a being used throughout the calculation as a very small numerical quantity, of which the square may be neglected.

Then $am = \dfrac{w^2 a^3}{Mass}$, a being the equatorial radius: to calculate the mass in this fraction we suppose its strata spherical, because of the smallness of the numerator. Hence mass $= 4\pi \int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da'$, a' being the radius of any stratum. Let $3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da' = \phi(a)$;

$$\therefore\ am = \frac{3w^2 a^3}{4\pi\phi(a)}, \quad \therefore\ w^2 = \frac{4\pi}{3} am \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}.$$

Hence, then, $$X = \frac{dV}{dx} + \frac{4\pi}{3} am \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3} x,$$

$$Y = \frac{dV}{dy} + \frac{4\pi}{3} am \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3} y,$$

$$Z = \frac{dV}{dz};$$

$$\therefore \int \frac{dp}{\rho'} = V + \frac{2\pi}{3} am \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}(1 - \mu^2) r^2.$$

If we suppose the mass partly solid this equation determines the figure of the strata of the fluid part. We shall, however, consider the whole fluid, or else suppose that the solid and fluid parts follow the same law of density in passing from the circumference to the centre.

Now p is a function of ρ': and $\int \frac{dp}{\rho'}$ is a function of ρ' and is therefore constant for the outer surface and for every *level* surface, (or *surface de niveau*, Art. 523) or stratum.

Hence the general equation to the strata is

$$\text{constant} = V + \frac{2\pi}{3} am \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3} (1 - \mu^2) r^2$$

$$= V + \frac{4\pi}{9} am \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3} r^2 + \frac{2\pi}{3} am \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3} (\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2) r^2$$

this arrangement being made because each of the last terms, as they now stand, satisfies the partial differential equation of Laplace's coefficients; they are of the orders 0 and 2 respectively. (See Art. 170).

Now by Art. 186, we have

$$V = \frac{4\pi}{r} \int_0^a \rho' \left\{ a'^2 + a \frac{d}{da'} \left(\frac{a'^4}{3r} Y_1' + \ldots + \frac{a'^{i+3}}{(2i+1) r^i} Y_i' + \ldots \right) \right\} da'$$

$$+ 4\pi \int_a^a \rho' \left\{ a' + a \frac{d}{da'} \left(\frac{a' r}{3} Y_1' + \ldots + \frac{r^i}{(2i+1) a'^{i-2}} Y_i' + \ldots \right) da'.$$

In this put $r = a(1 + \alpha Y_0 + \alpha Y_1 + \ldots + \alpha Y_i + \ldots)$ and $\int_0^a 3\rho' a'^2 da' = \phi(a)$ as before. Then substitute this value of V in the equation to the strata, and equate* terms of the order i.

The constant parts when equated give

$$\int \frac{dp}{\rho'} = \frac{4\pi}{3} \frac{\phi(a)}{a} + 4\pi \int_a^a \rho' a' da' + \frac{4\pi}{9} am a^2 \frac{\phi(a)}{a^3},$$

* It is proper to equate separately the terms of the order i on each side of the equation because, as we have shewn, in Art. 181, the functions Y_1, $Y_2 \ldots Y_i \ldots$ are all determinate, consequently we have upon substituting for V in the equation of the text, performing the integrations, and transposing all terms to one side, a series of Laplace's coefficients equal to zero; suppose $Q_0 + Q_1 + Q_2 + \ldots + Q_i + \ldots$ is the series. If then we multiply by any arbitrary coefficient of Laplace of the i^{th} order, *viz:* Z_i, and integrate between proper limits we have whatever Z_i be.

$$\int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} (Q_0 + Q_1 + \ldots + Q_i + \ldots) Z_i \, d\mu d\omega = 0;$$

$$\therefore \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} Q_i Z_i \, d\mu d\omega = 0 \text{ by Art. 180.}$$

Hence, since Z_i is arbitrary, $Q_i = 0$.

and the terms of the order i give, after dividing by $-4\pi a$,

$$\frac{\phi(a)}{3a} Y_i - \frac{1}{(2i+1)a^{i+1}} \int_0^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'} (a'^{i+3} Y_i') \, da'$$

$$- \frac{a^i}{2i+1} \int_a^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'} \left(\frac{Y_i'}{a'^{i-2}} \right) da' = 0,$$

except when $i = 2$, in which case the second side is

$$\frac{m}{6} \frac{a^2 \phi(a)}{a^3} (\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2).$$

By this equation Y_i is to be calculated, and then the form of the stratum of which the mean radius is a is known by the equation $r = a (1 + a Y_1 + \ldots + a Y_i + \ldots)$.

532. Cor. At the surface $a = a$ and the above equation gives

$$\int_0^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'} (a'^{i+3} Y_i') \, da' = \frac{2i+1}{3} a^i \phi(a) Y_i, \text{ when } i \text{ is not} = 2,$$

$$= \tfrac{5}{3} a^3 \phi(a) Y_2 - \tfrac{5}{6} m a^3 \phi(a) (\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2), \text{ when } i = 2.$$

This equation we shall hereafter find of great use.

Prop. *To simplify the equation for the calculation of* Y_i.

533. Since Y_i is a function of a, suppose it expanded in a series of the form

$$Y_i = a^s W_i + a^{s'} W_i' + \ldots = W_i \left\{ a^s + a^{s'} \frac{W_i'}{W_i} + \ldots \right\} = W_i h_i \text{ suppose,}$$

then h_i is a function of a and equals $a^s + \dfrac{W_i'}{W_i} a^{s'} + \ldots$ and W_i, W_i', ... are independent of a. Hence, since Y_i' is the same

Let these values of Y_i and Y_i' be put in the equation deduced in the last Proposition;

$$\therefore\ W_i\left\{\frac{\phi(a)}{3a}h_i - \frac{1}{(2i+1)a^{i+1}}\int_0^a \rho'\frac{d}{da'}(a'^{i+3}h_i')da'\right.$$

$$\left. - \frac{a^i}{2i+1}\int_a^a \rho'\frac{d}{da'}\left(\frac{h_i'}{a'^{i-2}}\right)da'\right\} = 0, \text{ when } i \text{ does not } = 2$$

$$= \frac{m}{6}\frac{a^2\phi(a)}{a^3}\left(\tfrac{1}{3}-\mu^2\right), \text{ when } i = 2.$$

Divide both sides by a^i and differentiate with respect to a, observing the remark in the note*; then

$$W_i\left\{\frac{dh_i}{da}\frac{\phi(a)}{3a^{i+1}} - \frac{i+1}{3}\frac{h_i\phi(a)}{a^{i+2}} + \frac{1}{a^{2i+2}}\int_0^a \rho'\frac{d}{da'}(a'^{i+3}h_i')da'\right\} = 0.$$

Multiply this by a^{2i+2}, differentiate with respect to a, and divide by the coefficient of $\frac{d^2h_i}{da^2}$; then

$$W_i\left\{\frac{d^2h_i}{da^2} + \frac{6\rho a^2}{\phi(a)}\frac{dh_i}{da} - \left(i(i+1) - \frac{6\rho a^3}{\phi(a)}\right)\frac{h_i}{a^2}\right\} = 0,$$

this is true for all values of i in the series 1, 2, 3, ...

By assuming any law of the density we can calculate $\phi(a)$, or $3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da'$. We must then solve the above equation,

* In order to explain how to differentiate a definite integral with respect to a quantity involved in the limit, suppose that

$$\int f(x)dx = F(x) + C;$$

$$\therefore\ \int_t^{t'} f(x)dx = F(t') - F(t);$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{d}{dt}\int_t^{t'} f(x)dx = -\frac{dF(t)}{dt} = f(t).$$

and knowing h_i we shall know the law of variation of Y_i in terms of a, and therefore the law of variation of the different strata of the fluid mass. Before this is attempted we can shew that the expression for the radius, *viz.* $a\{1 + \alpha Y_1 + \alpha Y_2 + \ldots\}$ admits of great simplification.

PROP. *To prove that* $Y_i = 0$ *excepting the case of* $i = 2$.

534. The equation in the last Article shews that $W_i = 0$ (and $\therefore Y_i = 0$) unless the part multiplying W_i vanish.

We assume that the density of the mass decreases from the centre to the surface. For it is evident that if a stratum were placed over one less dense, the particles of the upper would penetrate into the lower in the same manner that a body sinks in a fluid of less specific gravity than its own. Hence $\frac{d\rho'}{da'}$ is negative. Let $\rho' = \beta - \beta' a'^n \ldots\ldots \beta, \beta' \ldots\ldots$ being constants: and $n \ldots$ positive indices;

$$\therefore \phi(a) = 3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da' = \beta a^3 - \frac{3\beta'}{n+3} a^{n+3} \ldots\ldots$$

$$\therefore \frac{\rho a^3}{\phi(a)} = 1 - \frac{n}{n+3}\frac{\beta'}{\beta} a^n + \ldots\ldots$$

Also $h_i = a^i + \ldots\ldots$ (see Art. 533);

$$\frac{dh_i}{da} = s a^{i-1} + \ldots\ldots, \quad \frac{d^2 h_i}{da^2} = s(s-1) a^{i-2} + \ldots\ldots$$

Substitute these expressions in the equation of Art. 533, and neglect higher powers of a; then

$$0 = W_i \{s(s-1) a^{i-2} + 6s a^{i-2} - [i(i+1) - 6] a^{i-2}\}$$

near the centre.

Hence, unless $W_i = 0$, we must have

$$s(s-1) + 6s = i(i+1) - 6, \quad \therefore s^2 + 5s + \tfrac{25}{4} = i^2 + i + \tfrac{1}{4},$$

$$s = -\tfrac{5}{2} \pm (i + \tfrac{1}{2}) = i - 2 \text{ or } -i - 3,$$

the last value is inadmissible, because it would make h_i, and consequently Y_i (since we suppose W_i not to vanish), infinite at the centre; i. e. the radius of the central strata indefinitely great, which is contrary to the original hypothesis of the strata being nearly spherical.

When $i = 1$, $i - 2 = -1$, and therefore the same objection applies to the value $s = i - 2$ when $i = 1$. Hence W_1 must equal 0: and therefore $Y_1 = W_1 h_1 = 0$.

For other values of i, $s = i - 2$:

$$\therefore\ h_i = a^{i-2} + \ldots\ldots, \text{ and } \frac{dh_i}{da} = (i-2)\,a^{i-3} + \ldots\ldots$$

therefore when i is greater than 2, $\frac{dh_i}{da}$ is positive near the centre, and therefore h_i increases from the centre to the surface for strata near the centre.

If h_i in increasing attain a maximum value for a value of a less than a, then $\frac{dh_i}{da} = 0$, and the equation of Art. 533 gives $\frac{d^2 h_i}{da^2} = \left\{ i\,(i+1) - \frac{6\rho a^3}{\phi\,(a)} \right\} \frac{h_i}{a^2}$ a *positive* quantity when i is greater than 2. For

$$\phi\,(a) = 3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da' = \rho a^3 - \int_0^a a'^3 \frac{d\rho'}{da'} da':$$

and since $\frac{d\rho'}{da'}$ is negative, $\therefore \frac{6\rho a^3}{\phi(a)}$ is always less than 6 but $i\,(i+1)$ is greater than 6 when i is greater than 2 and consequently the above expression is *positive* when i is greater than 2. Since this would indicate a minimum, and not a maximum, it follows that h_i can obtain neither a maximum nor a minimum value, and that it therefore increases continually as we pass from the central strata towards the surface.

Let h_i be the value of h_i at the surface: then $\frac{h_i}{\mathrm{h}_i}$ is less than unity.

Now by Art. 533, putting $a = \mathrm{a}$ we have, when i is greater than 2,

$$W_i \left\{ \int_0^{\mathrm{a}} \rho' \frac{d}{da'} \left(a'^{i+3} \frac{h_i'}{\mathrm{h}_i} \right) da' - (2i+1)\, \mathrm{a}^i \int_0^{\mathrm{a}} \rho' a'^2 da' \right\} = 0,$$

or, if we integrate by parts and multiply by 3,

$$W_i \left\{ -\rho(2i-2)\mathrm{a}^{i+3} + (2i+1)\mathrm{a}^i \int_0^{\mathrm{a}} a'^3 \frac{d\rho'}{da'} da' - 3 \int_0^{\mathrm{a}} a'^{i+3} \frac{h_i'}{\mathrm{h}_i} \frac{d\rho'}{da'} da' \right\} = 0.$$

Now $\dfrac{d\rho'}{da'}$ is negative, and $\dfrac{h_i'}{\mathrm{h}_i}$ is less than unity; hence the multiplier of W_i is negative and not zero when i is greater than 2: and consequently $W_i = 0$, i greater than 2;

$\therefore\ Y_3 = 0,\ Y_4 = 0, \ldots\ldots$ and we have shewn that $Y_1 = 0$.

Hence $r = a \{1 + a\, Y_2\}$ is the equation to the stratum of which the mean radius is a.

PROP. *To prove that the strata are all spheroidal: and to find the law of their ellipticity.*

535. We have seen that $r = a \{1 + a\, Y_2\}$.

Now $a\, Y_2 = a\, W_2 h_2$. To calculate W_2 we have from the equation for the stratum at the surface (Art. 532.) by putting $\mathrm{Y}_2 = W_2 \mathrm{h}_2$ and $Y_2' = W_2 h_2'$

$$W_2 \left\{ \frac{5\mathrm{a}^2}{3} \phi(\mathrm{a})\, \mathrm{h}_2 - \int_0^{\mathrm{a}} \rho' \frac{d}{da'} (a'^5 h_2') \, da' \right\} = \frac{5m}{6} \mathrm{a}^2 \phi(\mathrm{a}) \left(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2 \right).$$

Dividing by the coefficient of W_2 we have

$$a\, Y_2 = a\, W_2 h_2 = \epsilon \left(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2 \right),$$

ϵ being a small quantity given by the equation

$$\epsilon = \frac{\dfrac{am}{2} \dfrac{h_2}{\mathrm{h}_2}}{1 - \dfrac{3}{5\mathrm{a}^2 \phi(\mathrm{a})\, \mathrm{h}_2} \displaystyle\int_0^{\mathrm{a}} \rho' \frac{d}{da'} (a'^5 h_2') \, da'}.$$

Hence $r = a\left\{1 + \varepsilon\left(\frac{1}{3} - \mu^2\right)\right\}$, $\mu = \sin(\text{latitude}) = \sin l$,

$$= a\left(1 - \tfrac{2}{3}\varepsilon\right)\left\{1 + \varepsilon\cos^2 l\right\}.$$

This is the equation to a spheroid from the centre, of which ε is the ellipticity: and the axis minor coincides with the axis of revolution of the whole mass. But ε varies as h_2; and we have proved that h_2 increases from the centre to the surface.

Hence we arrive at the following result.

If we assume that the density increases from the surface to the centre, then the strata are concentric spheroids the axes of which coincide with that of the revolution and the ellipticities increase from the centre to the surface.

PROP. *To obtain equations for calculating the value of the ellipticity when the law of density is known.*

536. Let ϵ be the ellipticity of the external stratum;

$$\therefore\ \varepsilon = \frac{h_2}{\mathrm{h}_2}\epsilon \text{ by the value of } \varepsilon \text{ in the last Article:}$$

and if we put $\psi(\mathrm{a})$ for $\displaystyle\int_0^{\mathrm{a}} \rho' \frac{d}{da'}(a'^5\varepsilon')\,da'$ we have by the value of ε given in the last Article

$$\epsilon - \frac{3}{5\mathrm{a}^2}\frac{\psi(\mathrm{a})}{\phi(\mathrm{a})} = \frac{am}{2},$$

$$\therefore\ \epsilon - \frac{am}{2} = \frac{3}{5\mathrm{a}^2}\frac{\psi(\mathrm{a})}{\phi(\mathrm{a})}.$$

Also by putting $h_2 = \dfrac{\mathrm{h}_2}{\epsilon}\varepsilon$ in the differential equation of Art. 533, we have the following equation for calculating ε;

$$\frac{d^2\varepsilon}{da^2} + \frac{6\rho a^2}{\phi(a)}\frac{d\varepsilon}{da} - \left\{1 - \frac{\rho a^3}{\phi(a)}\right\}\frac{6\varepsilon}{a^2} = 0.$$

This may be simplified thus: multiply by $\phi(a)$,

$$\therefore\ \frac{d}{da}\left\{\phi(a)\frac{d\varepsilon}{da}\right\} + \frac{d}{da}\left\{3\rho a^2\varepsilon\right\} = \frac{6\phi(a)\varepsilon}{a^2} + 3a^2\varepsilon\frac{d\rho}{da};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2}{da^2}\{\phi(a)\epsilon\} = \frac{6}{a^2}\phi(a)\epsilon + 3a^2\epsilon\frac{d\rho}{da},$$

from this equation ϵ is to be calculated when the law of density is known.

PROP. *To calculate the ellipticity of the surface in the two extreme cases of the mass being homogeneous, and of the density at the centre being infinitely greater than at any other point.*

537. This Proposition will verify the results of Arts. 525, 530.

Now by Art. 536, $\epsilon - \frac{1}{2}am = \frac{3}{5a^2}\frac{\psi(a)}{\phi(a)}$.

I. When ρ is constant: $\phi(a) = 3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da' = Da^3$: D the density at the surface;

$$\text{also } \psi(a) = \int_0^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'}(a'^5\epsilon') = Da^5\epsilon;$$

$$\therefore \epsilon - \tfrac{1}{3}am = \tfrac{3}{5}\epsilon, \quad \therefore \epsilon = \tfrac{5}{4}am.$$

II. When the density at the centre is infinitely greater than that at any other point

$$\phi(a) = 3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da' = \text{element at centre} = 3\rho' a'^2 da',$$

a' being indefinitely small.

$$\text{Also } \psi(a) = \rho' \frac{d}{da'}(a'^5\epsilon')\, da' = 5\rho' a'^4\epsilon' da' + \rho' a'^5 d\epsilon';$$

$$\therefore \epsilon - \tfrac{1}{2}am = \frac{a'^2}{a^2}\left(\epsilon' + \tfrac{1}{5}a'\frac{d\epsilon'}{da'}\right) = 0;$$

$$\therefore \epsilon = \tfrac{1}{2}am.$$

In the case of the Earth observations shew that $am = \frac{1}{289}$: and therefore the ellipticity of the Earth in these two hypotheses is $\frac{1}{231}$ and $\frac{1}{578}$. The ellipticity of the Earth deduced from the measurements of degrees of the meridian is intermediate to

these: and therefore we may conclude that the Earth is not homogeneous, and also that every particle of the Earth's mass attracts and not the central parts only (see Art. 260).

We shall presently seek for a law of density which is likely to be an approximation to the truth. Before this, however, we shall calculate the value of gravity and the length of a seconds pendulum at the equator, and the length of a degree of latitude, in order to compare the results of theory and observation.

PROP. *To calculate the value of gravity at any place on the Earth's surface, and the length of the seconds pendulum: and to shew that their changes as we pass from one place to another vary as the change in the square of the sine of the latitude.* Clairaut's Theorem.

538. Let g be the action of gravity at a place of which the latitude is l, or $\sin^{-1}\mu$.

By Art. 531 we have

$$\int(Xdx+Ydy+Zdz)=V+\frac{4\pi}{9}am\frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}r^2+\frac{2\pi}{3}am\frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}(\tfrac{1}{3}-\mu^2)r^2.$$

Now this expression is the sum of all the forces which act upon any particle multiplied by the elements of their respective directions. Hence the resolved part of the resultant attraction in the direction of r is obtained by differentiating this with respect to r and changing the sign; let the result be g: the resolved part perpendicular to this will be of the order a, let it be ag';

therefore gravity $=\sqrt{g^2+a^2g'^2}=g$, neglecting a^2 .....

$$\text{Now } g=-\frac{dV}{dr}-\frac{8\pi}{9}am\frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}r-\frac{4\pi}{3}am\frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}(\tfrac{1}{3}-\mu^2)r$$

$$=\frac{4\pi}{r^2}\int_0^a\rho'\left\{a'^2+\frac{3a}{5r^2}\frac{d}{da'}(a'^5Y_2')\right\}da'$$

$$-\frac{8\pi}{9}am\frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}r-\frac{4\pi}{3}am\frac{\phi(a)}{a^3}(\tfrac{1}{3}-\mu^2)r.$$

But $r = a\{1 + \alpha Y_2\}$ at the surface. Also by Art. 532, we have

$$\int_0^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'}(a'^5 Y_2')\, da' = \left\{\tfrac{5}{3} a^3 Y_2 - \tfrac{5}{6} m a^2 (\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2)\right\} \phi(a);$$

$$\therefore g = \frac{4\pi}{3}\frac{\phi(a)}{a^2}\left\{1 - \tfrac{2}{3}\alpha m + \alpha Y_2 - \frac{5\alpha m}{2}(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2)\right\}$$

$$= \frac{4\pi}{3}\frac{\phi(a)}{a^2}\left\{1 - \tfrac{2}{3}\alpha m + (\epsilon - \tfrac{5}{4}\alpha m)(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2)\right\} \text{ by Art. 535.}$$

$$= \frac{4\pi}{3}\frac{\phi(a)}{a^2}(1 + \tfrac{1}{3}\epsilon - \tfrac{3}{4}\alpha m)\left\{1 + (\tfrac{5}{2}\alpha m - \epsilon)\sin^2 l\right\}$$

$$= G\left\{1 + (\tfrac{5}{2}\alpha m - \epsilon)\sin^2 l\right\},$$

G being the equatorial gravity.

Hence, the ratio of the excess of polar over equatorial gravity to equatorial gravity (that is $\frac{5}{2}\alpha m - \epsilon$, by the formula just proved) *added to the ellipticity equals* $\frac{5}{4}\times$ *the ratio of the centrifugal force at the equator to the equatorial gravity, whatever be the law of the density.* This is called CLAIRAUT'S THEOREM after its discoverer.

539. Let l and L be the lengths of the seconds pendulum at the places at which g and G are the values of gravity;

$$\therefore l = L\frac{g}{G} = L\left\{1 + (\tfrac{5}{2}\alpha m - \epsilon)\sin^2 l\right\}.$$

PROP. *To calculate the length of a degree of latitude at any place on the Earth's surface, in terms of the length of a degree at the equator.*

540. Let C and c be the lengths of a degree corresponding to the values of gravity G and g.

$$\text{Now rad. of curv.} = \frac{\left\{r^2 + \frac{dr^2}{dl^2}\right\}^{\frac{3}{2}}}{r^2 + 2\frac{dr^2}{dl^2} - r\frac{d^2r}{dl^2}}, \quad \sin l = \mu, \; r = a(1 + \alpha Y_2),$$

$$\frac{dr}{dl} = \frac{dr}{d\mu}\frac{d\mu}{dl} = a\alpha \frac{dY_2}{d\mu}\sqrt{1-\mu^2},$$

$$\frac{d^2r}{dl^2} = \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\frac{d}{d\mu}\left(\frac{dr}{dl}\right) = -a\alpha\mu\frac{dY_2}{d\mu} + a\alpha(1-\mu^2)\frac{d^2Y_2}{d\mu^2}$$

$$= a\alpha\frac{d}{d\mu}\left\{(1-\mu^2)\frac{dY_2}{d\mu}\right\} + a\alpha\mu\frac{dY_2}{d\mu};$$

$$\therefore \text{ rad. of curv.} = a\left\{1 + \alpha Y_2 + \alpha\frac{d}{d\mu}\left((1-\mu^2)\frac{dY_2}{d\mu}\right) + \alpha\mu\frac{dY_2}{d\mu}\right\}$$

$$= a\left\{1 - 5\alpha Y_2 + \alpha\mu\frac{dY_2}{d\mu} - \frac{\alpha}{1-\mu^2}\frac{d^2Y_2}{d\omega^2}\right\},$$

by the equation of Laplace's coefficients (Art. 170.)

$$= a\left\{1 - 5\alpha Y_2 + \alpha\mu\frac{dY_2}{d\mu}\right\},$$

because Y_2 is independent of ω (see Art. 535.) Now the length of the degree varies as the length of the radius of curvature;

$$\therefore c = c'\left\{1 - 5\alpha Y_2 + \alpha\mu\frac{dY_2}{d\mu}\right\}, \quad c' \text{ being a constant.}$$

But $\alpha Y_2 = \epsilon\left(\frac{1}{3} - \mu^2\right)$;

$$\therefore c = c'\left\{1 - 3\epsilon\left(\tfrac{2}{9} - \mu^2\right)\right\}$$

$$= c'\left(1 - \tfrac{2}{3}\epsilon\right)\left(1 + 3\epsilon\sin^2 l\right);$$

$$\therefore c = C\left(1 + 3\epsilon\sin^2 l\right).$$

These formulæ for the length of the seconds pendulum and the length of a degree of latitude enable us to test the truth of our calculations by comparing observed results with those given by these formulæ.

541. It will be observed that throughout this calculation we have neglected α^2 .... It is very desirable, then, to apply some independent test of the truth of our results. The two conclusions to which we are come are, that the figure of the Earth is an oblate spheroid, and that the law of variation in

gravity in passing from one place to another on the surface of the Earth is represented by Clairaut's Theorem. Mr Airy has estimated the probable magnitude of the errors committed in these calculations, by considering the two following extreme laws of density: 1st, the case of homogeneity: 2nd, the case in which the matter at the centre only attracts; or, which amounts to the same, the density of the matter at the centre is infinitely greater than that of the rest of the mass. The deviations from a spheroidal figure, in these cases, are found to be insensible. The same is found to be the case with Clairaut's Theorem. It follows, then, that the error in omitting small quantities in our calculations is inappreciable. (*Ency. Met. Figure of the Earth*, Arts. 69—72.) As far, then, as these two tests are concerned in determining the law of density in the Earth's mass we should be at a loss in attempting to decide what the actual law of nature is. But the magnitudes of the ellipticity being $\frac{1}{231}$ and $\frac{1}{577}$ in these extreme laws of density, we learn, that since the first is greater and the second less than that given by geodetic and other measures, we must suppose that the density increases towards the centre; but that it does not become infinitely great.

542. We are now able to calculate the principal moments of inertia of the Earth, which were required in Art. 470, in calculating the Precession of the Equinoxes and the Nutation of the Earth's Axis.

PROP. *To calculate the principal moments of inertia of the Earth, supposing it to consist of layers nearly spherical and of different densities.*

543. Let A, B, C be the principal moments of inertia about the axes of x, y, z, respectively: x_1, y_1, z_1 the co-ordinates to an element of the mass. Then the mass of this element $= -\rho' r^2 dr\, d\mu\, d\omega$ (Art. 183.); also

$$y_1^2 + z_1^2 = r^2\{1 - (1-\mu^2)\cos^2\omega\} = r^2\{\tfrac{2}{3} + [\tfrac{1}{3} - (1-\mu^2)\cos^2\omega]\},$$

$$x_1^2 + z_1^2 = r^2\{\tfrac{2}{3} + [\tfrac{1}{3} - (1-\mu^2)\sin^2\omega]\},\ x_1^2 + y_1^2 = r^2\{\tfrac{2}{3} + (\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2)\},$$

we have arranged these in this manner because they are then each *of the form* $U_0 + U_2$. Hence

$$A = \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \int_0^{r} \rho' r^3 \left\{ \tfrac{2}{3} + \tfrac{1}{3} - (1-\mu^2)\cos^2\omega \right\} d\mu\, d\omega\, dr.$$

But $$\int_0^r \rho' r^4 dr = \tfrac{1}{5} \int_0^a \rho' \frac{d.r^5}{da'} da'$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{5} \int_0^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'} \left\{ a'^5 + 5a'^5 a \left(Y_0' + Y_1' + Y_2' + \ldots \right) \right\} da'$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{5} \int_0^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'} \left\{ a'^5 + 5a'^5 a\, Y_2' \right\} da' \text{ by Art. 534,}$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{5} \sigma(a) + \tfrac{5}{3} a a^2 \phi ([illegible] a) \left(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2 \right)$$

putting $$\int_0^a \rho' \frac{d.a'^5}{da'} da' =$$

Also $a Y_2 = \epsilon \left(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2 \right)$

$$\therefore \int_0^r \rho' r^4 dr = \tfrac{1}{5} \sigma ([illegible] am) \left(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2 \right)$$

$$= \tfrac{1}{5} \sigma ([illegible] \text{ by Art. 536;}$$

$$\therefore A = \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2} [illegible] \tfrac{1}{15} \sigma (a)$$

$$+ \psi(a) \left(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2 \right) \left[\tfrac{1}{3} - (1-\mu^2)\cos^2\omega \right] \Big\} d\mu\, d\omega \text{ by Art. 180.}$$

$$= \frac{8\pi}{15} \sigma(a) - \frac{8\pi}{45} \psi(a).$$

In the same manner

$$B = \frac{8\pi}{15} \sigma(a) - \frac{8\pi}{45} \psi(a).$$

Also we obtain $C = \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \int_0^{r} \rho' r^4 \left\{ \tfrac{2}{3} + \left(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2 \right) \right\}$

$$= \frac{8\pi}{15} \sigma(a) + \frac{16\pi}{45} \psi(a).$$

Hence $$\frac{C-A}{C} = \frac{\psi(a)}{\sigma(a)}.$$

544. We proceed to obtain an approximate law of the density of the strata, and then to prepare the formulæ deduced in the foregoing Articles for numerical calculation.

PROP. *To obtain an approximate law of the density of the strata.*

545. By Art. 531, we have for calculating the pressure on the stratum of which the mean radius is a, neglecting a,

$$\int_a^a \frac{1}{\rho'} \frac{dp}{da'} da' = \frac{4\pi}{3} \frac{\phi(a)}{a} + 4\pi \int_a^a \rho' a' da'.$$

Laplace has integrated this equation upon the supposition that the change in pressure in descending through the strata varies as the change in the square of the density (*Mémoires de l'Institut*, Tom. III. p. 496). This law of compression differs from that of fluids, in which the change in pressure varies as the change in density. The law used by Laplace is *à priori* more probably true than the law of the compression of fluids, since tenacious and semi-fluid bodies must require a greater compressing force to produce a given compression and density under given circumstances than a fluid body does, in consequence of the greater cohesive force of the particles of the semi-fluid body. See also some remarks by Professor Challis on this subject in the *Phil. Mag.* Vol. XXXVIII. The approximate truth, however, of this law is shewn by the accuracy of the results to which it leads us. Putting, then, $dp = \frac{1}{3} k d.\rho'^2$, k being a constant, we have

$$\therefore \int_a^a \frac{1}{\rho'} \frac{dp}{da'} da' = k \int_a^a \frac{d\rho'}{da'} da' = k(\rho - D),$$

D being the density at the surface;

$$\therefore ka(\rho - D) = 4\pi \int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da' + 4\pi a \int_a^a \rho' a' da',$$

because $\phi(a) = 3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2 da'$.

$$\therefore\ k\frac{d\cdot\rho a}{da} - kD = 4\pi\rho a^2 + 4\pi\int_a^a \rho' a'\,da' - 4\pi\rho a^2 = 4\pi\int_a^a \rho' a'\,da';$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{d^2\cdot\rho a}{da^2} = -q^2\rho a,\ \text{putting}\ \frac{4\pi}{k} = q^2;$$

$$\therefore\ \rho a = A\sin(qa + B),\ \ \therefore\ \rho = \frac{A}{a}\sin(qa + B).$$

When $a = 0$, $\rho = \dfrac{A\sin B}{0}$; $\therefore\ B = 0$, otherwise ρ would be infinite at the centre, which cannot be;

$$\therefore\ \rho = \frac{A}{a}\sin qa,$$

A and q being unknown constants.

The formula $\rho = \dfrac{A}{a}\sin qa$ appears *a priori* to be well adapted to represent the law of the density since it gives a density increasing from the surface to the centre.

Prop. *To calculate the ellipticity of the strata on the approximate law of density deduced in the last Article.*

546. We must put $\rho = \dfrac{A}{a}\sin qa$ in the equation

$$\frac{d^2}{da^2}\{\phi(a)\xi\} = \frac{6}{a^2}\phi(a)\xi + 3a^2\xi\frac{d\rho}{da}\ \text{(see Art. 536)}.$$

Now $\phi(a) = 3\int_0^a \rho' a'^2\,da' = 3A\int_0^a a'\sin qa'\,da$

$$= 3A\left\{-\frac{a}{q}\cos qa + \frac{1}{q^2}\sin qa\right\},$$

$$\text{also}\ \frac{d\rho}{da} = A\left\{\frac{q}{a}\cos qa - \frac{1}{a^2}\sin qa\right\} = -\frac{q^2}{3a^2}\phi(a),$$

and our equation becomes

$$\frac{d^2\{\phi(a)\xi\}}{da^2} + q^2\phi(a)\xi = \frac{6}{a^2}\phi(a)\xi.$$

The integral of this equation is

$$\phi(a)\epsilon = C\left\{\left(1-\frac{3}{q^2a^2}\right)\sin(qa+C') + \frac{3}{qa}\cos(qa+C')\right\}$$

C and C' being arbitrary constants. In our case $C'=0$, otherwise the ellipticity at the centre would be infinite, as is easily shewn by expanding ϵ in powers of a.

Hence, if we substitute for $\phi(a)$, we have

$$\epsilon = \frac{Cq^2}{3A}\frac{\left(1-\frac{3}{q^2a^2}\right)\tan qa + \frac{3}{qa}}{\tan qa - qa};$$

$$\text{and } \therefore \frac{\epsilon}{e} = \frac{\tan qa - qa}{\tan qa - qa}\frac{\left(1-\frac{3}{q^2a^2}\right)\tan qa + \frac{3}{qa}}{\left(1-\frac{3}{q^2a^2}\right)\tan qa + \frac{3}{qa}} \quad \ldots\ldots (1).$$

This gives the law of decrease of the ellipticity in the strata in passing from the surface to the centre.

To determine ϵ and e we must combine with the above the following equation

$$e - \frac{1}{2}am = \frac{3}{5a^3}\frac{\psi(a)}{\phi(a)} \text{ (see Art. 536).}$$

$$\text{Now } \psi(a) = \int_0^a \rho' \frac{d}{da'}(a'^5\epsilon')\,da' = A\int_0^a \frac{\sin qa'}{a'}\frac{d}{da'}(a'^5\epsilon')\,da'$$

$$= A\left\{a^4\epsilon\sin qa + \int_0^a a'^3\epsilon'(\sin qa' - qa'\cos qa')\,da'\right\}, \text{ by parts.}$$

The integral contained in this

$$= \epsilon\frac{\tan qa - qa}{\left(1-\frac{3}{q^2a^2}\right)\tan qa + \frac{3}{qa}}\int_0^a\left\{\left(a'^3 - \frac{3a'}{q^2}\right)\sin qa' + \frac{3a'^2}{q}\cos qa'\right\}da'$$

$$= \epsilon\frac{\tan qa - qa}{\left(1-\frac{3}{q^2a^2}\right)\tan qa + \frac{3}{qa}}\frac{1}{q^4}\left\{3(2a^2q^2-5)\sin qa - (q^3a^3-15qa)\cos qa\right\}.$$

Also $\phi(\mathrm{a}) = \frac{3A}{q^2}\{\sin q\mathrm{a} - q\mathrm{a}\cos q\mathrm{a}\}$.

Hence the equation $\epsilon - \frac{1}{2}\alpha m = \frac{3}{5\mathrm{a}^2}\frac{\psi(\mathrm{a})}{\phi(\mathrm{a})}$ becomes

$$\frac{1}{2}\alpha m = \epsilon\left\{1 - \frac{(q^4\mathrm{a}^4 - 3q^2\mathrm{a}^2)\tan^2 q\mathrm{a} + 3q^3\mathrm{a}^3\tan q\mathrm{a} + (\tan q\mathrm{a} - q\mathrm{a})\{(6q^2\mathrm{a}^2 - 15)\tan q\mathrm{a} - (q^3\mathrm{a}^3 - 15q\mathrm{a})\}}{5q^2\mathrm{a}^2(\tan q\mathrm{a} - q\mathrm{a})\left\{\left(1 - \frac{3}{q^2\mathrm{a}^2}\right)\tan q\mathrm{a} + \frac{3}{q\mathrm{a}}\right\}}\right\}$$

$$\frac{5\alpha m}{2} = \epsilon\frac{(2 - q^2\mathrm{a}^2)\tan^2 q\mathrm{a} - q\mathrm{a}\tan q\mathrm{a} - q^2\mathrm{a}^2}{(\tan q\mathrm{a} - q\mathrm{a})\left\{\left(1 - \frac{3}{q^2\mathrm{a}^2}\right)\tan q\mathrm{a} + \frac{3}{q\mathrm{a}}\right\}}.$$

This equation determines ϵ: and consequently ε is also known by equation (1).

547. To facilitate the calculation of ϵ let $\frac{q\mathrm{a}}{\tan q\mathrm{a}} = 1 - \varkappa$;

$$\therefore\ \epsilon = \frac{5\alpha m}{2}\frac{1 - \frac{3\varkappa}{q^2\mathrm{a}^2}}{3 - \varkappa - \frac{q^2\mathrm{a}^2}{\varkappa}}.$$

Before we reduce this to numbers we shall calculate the principal moments of inertia deduced in Art. 543, in terms of the approximate law of density.

PROP. *To calculate* $\sigma(\mathrm{a})$ *and* $\psi(\mathrm{a})$ *and* $\frac{\mathrm{C} - \mathrm{A}}{\mathrm{C}}$ *with the approximate law of density.*

548. Now $\sigma(\mathrm{a}) = \int_0^{\mathrm{a}} \rho' \frac{d}{da'}(a'^5)\, da' = 5A\int_0^{\mathrm{a}} a'^3 \sin qa'\, da'$

$$= 5A\left\{-\frac{\mathrm{a}^3}{q}\cos q\mathrm{a} + \frac{3\mathrm{a}^2}{q^2}\sin q\mathrm{a} + \frac{6\mathrm{a}}{q^3}\cos q\mathrm{a} - \frac{6}{q^4}\sin q\mathrm{a}\right\}$$

$$= \frac{5A}{q^4}\{(3q^2\mathrm{a}^2 - 6)\sin q\mathrm{a} - (q^3\mathrm{a}^3 - 6q\mathrm{a})\cos q\mathrm{a}\}.$$

$$\text{Al} = \frac{5\,a^2}{3}\phi(a)\,(\epsilon - \tfrac{1}{2}am)$$

$$= \frac{5A\,a^2}{q^2}(\epsilon - \tfrac{1}{2}am)\,(\sin qa - qa\cos qa);$$

$$\therefore \frac{\psi(a)}{\sigma(a)}, \text{ or } \frac{C-A}{C}, = (\epsilon - \tfrac{1}{2}am)\frac{1 - \dfrac{qa}{\tan qa}}{3 - \dfrac{6}{q^2a^2} - \left(1 - \dfrac{6}{q^2a^2}\right)\dfrac{qa}{\tan qa}}$$

$$= \frac{(\epsilon - \tfrac{1}{2}am)\,x}{2 + \left(1 - \dfrac{6}{q^2a^2}\right)x}, \quad x = 1 - \frac{qa}{\tan qa}.$$

We now proceed to reduce these quantities to numbers.

PROP. *The law of density being represented by* $\rho = \frac{A}{a}\sin qa$; *it is required to find the value of* q *in the case of the Earth.*

549. The experiments of Cavendish and the observations of Maskelyne shew that the mean density of the Earth is about five and a half times that of water. Now since the superficial stratum of the Earth consists partly of the Ocean we must not include this among the strata of the Earth when we speak of their law of variation, because the density of water is far less than that of rock or earth. We shall consequently suppose the superficial stratum to be of the density of granite or thereabouts; *i. e.* nearly in the ratio of 5 to 2 to that of water. We shall therefore suppose the mean density is to that of the superficial stratum as 11 to 5.

Let δ be the mean density: D the density of the outer stratum: then

$$\delta \int_0^a 4\pi a'^2 da' = \int_0^a 4\pi \rho' a'^2 da'$$

$$\frac{1}{3}a^3\delta = A\int_0^a a' \sin qa' \,.\, da' = A\left\{-\frac{a}{q}\cos qa + \frac{1}{q^2}\sin qa\right\};$$

$$\therefore \frac{\delta}{D} = \frac{3}{q^2 a^2}\left(1 - \frac{qa}{\tan qa}\right) = \frac{11}{5} \text{ by hypothesis;}$$

$$\therefore \tan qa = \frac{15qa}{15 - 11q^2a^2}.$$

A very small value of q will satisfy this equation; but a small value would give a very slow change of density in the strata of the Earth. After repeated trials we find that $qa = \frac{5\pi}{6} = 2.618$ nearly satisfies this equation: for then

$$\log_{10}\frac{15qa}{11q^2a^2 - 15} = \bar{1}.8130736 = \log_{10}\tan 33^\circ 2' = \log_{10}\tan\frac{\pi}{6} \text{ nearly}$$

$$\therefore qa = \frac{5\pi}{6} = 2.618 \text{ very nearly satisfies the equation.}$$

If we had taken $\delta = 2.4225\,D$, then $qa = 2.618$ would have satisfied the equation as far as four decimal places.

We shall take, then, $qa = \frac{5}{6}\pi = 2.618$.

The remarkable agreement found to subsist between the calculations made with this value of qa and by other means is the most satisfactory proof of its correctness.

PROP. *To calculate numerically the ellipticity of the Earth with the value of* qa *equal to* 2.618.

550. By Art. 547, $\epsilon = \frac{5am}{2}\,\frac{1 - \frac{3x}{q^2a^2}}{3 - x - \frac{q^2a^2}{x}}$,

where $x = 1 - \frac{qa}{\tan qa}$;

hence $x = 5.5345$: also $am = \frac{1}{289}$ by observation;

$$\therefore \epsilon = .00325401 = \frac{1}{307.313},$$

this value of ϵ accords remarkably with the result of geodetic measures, which give $\epsilon = \frac{1}{300}$.

PROP. *To calculate numerically the value of* $\frac{C-A}{C}$ *and the Annual Precession of the Equinoxes with the approximate law of density.*

551. By Art. 548, $$\frac{C-A}{C} = \frac{\psi(a)}{\sigma(a)} = \frac{(\epsilon - \frac{1}{2}am)\varpi}{2 + \left(1 - \frac{6}{q^2 a^2}\right)\varpi}$$

$$= .00313593.$$

Also the Annual Precession of the Equinoxes

$$= \frac{C-A}{C}\left(1 + \frac{176.5906}{1+\nu}\right) 4882''.05 \quad \text{(Art. 470.)}$$

$$= (.00313593)\,(3.3545)\,(4882''.05); \quad \nu = 74$$

$$= \log_{10}^{-1}\begin{Bmatrix} 3.4963664 \\ .5256278 \\ 3.6886020 \end{Bmatrix}'' = \log^{-1}(1.7105962)'' = 51''.3566,$$

the observed precession is $50''.1$. The exceedingly remarkable agreement of the calculated values of the precession and ellipticity of the Earth with their observed values afford a convincing proof of the correctness of the principles involved in the calculation.

552. Before we quit this subject we shall give a few important Propositions which tend to throw additional light upon the determination of the figure of the Earth.

The permanent state of equilibrium of the heavenly bodies makes known to us some of the properties of their radii. If the planets did not revolve about one of their three principal axes, or very near to one of them, there would be produced in the position of the axes of rotation, some variations which would become sensible, particularly in the Earth (see Art. 458). Now by the most accurate observations, no such variations are perceived. Therefore we must infer, that a long period of time has elapsed since all parts of the heavenly bodies, and particularly the fluid particles on their surfaces, have been arranged in such a manner as to render their state of equilibrium permanent, consequently also their axes of rotation:

for it is very natural to suppose, that after a great number of oscillations, the bodies must assume the forms corresponding to the state of equilibrium, on account of the resistances suffered by the particles of the fluid. We shall now examine into the conditions, arising from this supposition, in the expression of the radii of the heavenly bodies.

PROP. *To prove that in consequence of the permanence of the rotatory motion of the Earth* $Y_2 = K(\frac{1}{3} - \mu^2) + K'(1 - \mu^2)\cos 2\omega$, *K and K' being constants which depend upon the internal structure of the Earth.*

553. Let the Earth be referred to its principal axes: and let r be the radiu[illegible] θ the angle which r makes with the axis [illegible] between the planes of x, z, and $r z$, : also l[illegible]

$$\therefore x_{,} = r \sin [illegible] \cos\omega,$$

$$y_{,} = r \sin [illegible] \sin\omega,$$

$$z_{,} = r \cos [illegible]$$

Let ρ be the density [illegible] which the radius is r : then the element [illegible] $= \rho \delta r\, r \delta\theta\, r \sin\theta\, \delta\omega = -\rho r^2\, \delta r\, \delta\mu\, \delta\omega$, and by the properties of the principal axes, *viz.* $\Sigma . m z_{,} y_{,} = 0$, $\Sigma . m x_{,} z_{,} = 0$, $\Sigma . m x_{,} y_{,} = 0$, we have

$$\left.\begin{aligned} \int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^4 \mu \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\, \sin\omega\, dr\, d\mu\, d\omega &= 0 \\ \int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^4 \mu \sqrt{1-\mu^2}\, \cos\omega\, dr\, d\mu\, d\omega &= 0 \\ \int_0^r \int_{-1}^1 \int_0^{2\pi} \rho r^4 (1-\mu^2) \cos\omega \sin\omega\, dr\, d\mu\, d\omega &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \ldots (1),$$

Now $r = a\{1 + \alpha Y_1 + \alpha Y_2 + \ldots + \alpha Y_i + \ldots\}$

and $\therefore \int_0^r \rho r^4 dr = \int_0^a \rho r^4 \frac{dr}{da} da = \frac{1}{5}\int_0^a \rho \frac{d \cdot r^5}{da} da$,

$$= \int_0^a \rho \frac{d}{da}\left\{\frac{a^5}{5} + \alpha a^5 (Y_1 + Y_2 + \ldots + Y_i + \ldots)\right\} da$$

$$= U_0 + \alpha U_1 + \alpha U_2 + \ldots + \alpha U_i + \ldots \text{ suppose.}$$

Then by substituting this series in equations (1), bearing in mind the property of Laplace's Coefficients proved in Art. 180, we have

$$\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} U_2 \mu \sqrt{1-\mu^2} \sin\omega \, d\mu \, d\omega = 0,$$

$$\int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} U_2 \mu \sqrt{1-\mu^2} \cos\omega \, d\mu \, d\omega = 0,$$

$$\text{and } \int_{-1}^{1}\int_{0}^{2\pi} U_2 (1-\mu^2) \sin\omega \cos\omega \, d\mu \, d\omega = 0.$$

Now since U_2 is a function of μ, $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega$, and $\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega$ of the second order, and satisfies the Equation of Laplace's Coefficients, it is of the form $H(\frac{1}{3}-\mu^2) + H'\mu\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\sin\omega + H''\mu\sqrt{1-\mu^2}\cos\omega + H'''(1-\mu^2)\sin 2\omega + H^{iv}(1-\mu^2)\cos 2\omega$. Then by putting this for U_2 in the last three equations we find

$$H' = 0, \quad H'' = 0, \quad H''' = 0,$$

$$\therefore \; U_2 = H(\tfrac{1}{3}-\mu^2) + H^{iv}(1-\mu^2)\cos 2\omega.$$

But U_2 was written for $\int_0^a \rho \frac{d}{da}(a^5 Y_2)\, da$, and by Art. 532 this

$$= \tfrac{5}{3} a^2 \phi(a) \left\{ Y_2 - \tfrac{1}{2} m (\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2) \right\},$$

$$\therefore \; Y_2 = K(\tfrac{1}{3}-\mu^2) + K'(1-\mu^2)\cos 2\omega,$$

K and K' being constants which depend upon the internal structure of the Earth.

Thus far, then, the condition that the Earth rotates about a principal axis, determines the form of the function Y_2 in the radius of the surface, $r = a(1 + \alpha Y_1 + \alpha Y_2 + \ldots + \alpha Y_i + \ldots)$; shewing that three of the terms in the most general form of Y_2 vanish.

554. Laplace has obtained some remarkable formulæ for the value of gravity, the length of a seconds pendulum, and the length of a degree of latitude which are independent of any supposition of the internal structure of the Earth, except that it consists of nearly spherical strata. They are deduced as in Arts. 538, 539, 540; but $a\{1 + \alpha Y_1 + \alpha Y_2 + \alpha Y_3 + \ldots\ldots\}$ is put for r instead of $a\{1 + \alpha Y_2\}$. The results are

$$g = G\left\{1 + a\,Y_2 + 2a\,Y_3 + \ldots\ldots + (i-1)\,a\,Y_i + \ldots\ldots\right\}$$

$$- \tfrac{10}{3}\,\pi\,a\,m\,\frac{\phi\,(a)}{a^2}\,(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2),$$

$$l = L\left\{1 + a\,Y_2 + 2a\,Y_3 + \ldots\ldots + (i-1)\,a\,Y_i + \ldots\ldots\right.$$

$$\left. - \tfrac{5}{2}\,a\,m\,(\tfrac{1}{3} - \mu^2)\right\},$$

$$c = C\left\{1 - 5a\,Y_2 - 11a\,Y_3 \ldots\ldots - (i^2 + i - 1)\,Y_i - \ldots\right.$$

$$+ a\mu\left(\frac{dY_2}{d\mu} + \frac{dY_3}{d\mu} + \ldots\ldots + \frac{dY_i}{d\mu} + \ldots\right)$$

$$\left. - \frac{a}{1-\mu^2}\left(\frac{d^2Y_2}{d\omega^2} + \frac{d^2Y_3}{d\omega^2} + \ldots\ldots + \frac{d^2Y_i}{d\omega^2} + \ldots\right)\right\}.$$

555. If we compare the expressions for the radius of the Earth with that for the length of the pendulum and the length of a degree of the meridian we shall perceive that the term $a\,Y_i$ in the expression for the radius is multiplied by $i-1$ in the length of the pendulum, and by i^2+i-1 in the degree of the meridian. It follows, then, that however small $i-1$ may be this term will be more sensible in the lengths of the pendulum than in the horizontal parallax of the Moon, which is proportional to the radius of the Earth: and it will be still more sensible in the measures of the degrees than in the lengths of the pendulum.

These three expressions are very important, inasmuch as they are independent of the internal structure of the Earth; that is, they are independent of the figure and density of the strata, since the functions $Y_1 Y_2 \ldots$ all refer to the surface. It follows, then, that if we can determine the functions $Y_1 Y_2 \ldots$ by the measures of degrees and parallaxes, we shall obtain directly the length of the pendulum. We may by this means ascertain whether the law of universal gravitation agrees with the figure of the Earth and with the observed variations of gravity at its surface. These remarkable relations connecting the degrees of the meridian and the length of the pendulum also serve to verify any hypothesis, assumed to represent the measures of the degrees of the meridian. Laplace (*Méc. Céles.*

Liv. III. §. 33.) makes an application of these formulæ to an hypothesis of Bouguer with respect to the lengths of degrees: and his calculation shews that it must be rejected. The hypothesis is that the variation of a degree of the meridian is proportional to the fourth power of the sine of the latitude.

556. Laplace shews that the greatest minimum probable error in calculating the length of a degree from observations made at seven places is 97.2 toises, the mean length of the degrees being about 51307.4 toises (Liv. III. §. 41). The ratio the error bears to this = 0.00189.

It is also shewn (Liv. III. §. 42.) that the greatest probable error in the calculation of the length of a seconds pendulum is 0.00018, the mean of the lengths of the pendulum at the fifteen places at which the observations were made being 0.99922: the ratio the error bears to this = 0.00018. Now this is more than ten times less than the error of the measures of the degrees, and remarkably confirms the theory in Art. 555; *viz.* that the terms of the expression of the terrestrial radius, which cause the Earth to vary from an elliptical figure, are much less sensible in the lengths of the pendulum than in the lengths of the degrees of the meridian. Later observations, as Mr Bowditch observes in his Commentary on this part of the *Mécanique Céleste*, do not confirm this result. The discrepancies among the observations of the length of the pendulum are greater than in those of the best observations of the measured arcs of the meridian. Various causes have been assigned for these differences in the observations of the pendulum: as the local attractions of neighbouring bodies; the peculiar action of the substance of the stratum of the Earth over which the pendulum is placed; and finally magnetic action. With respect to the first Bouguer has found by observation that the attraction of the mountain Chimboraço produced a deviation of 7″.5 in the plumb line: and Dr Maskelyne observed the attraction of the mountain Schehallien to be 5″.8.

CHAPTER III.

FORM OF EQUILIBRIUM OF THE OCEAN UNDER THE MOON'S ATTRACTION AND THE FORM OF THE ATMOSPHERE.

THE following Proposition we shall find of use when we come to the Chapter on the Tides.

PROP. *Supposing that the Earth is a sphere surrounded by a sea of small depth: required to determine whether the form of the sea attracted by the Moon will be spheroidal, the Earth and Moon being both supposed held at rest.*

557. If the spheroid be the form of equilibrium it must evidently be prolate, the axis of the spheroid passing through the Moon. Let c' be the distance between the Earth and Moon, a the mean radius of the Earth, a' the radius of the solid nucleus of the Earth, r and r' the distances of any particle (xyz) from the Earth's centre and the Moon, E and M the masses of the Earth and Moon, ρ and ρ' the mean density of the Earth and the density of the sea, ϵ the ellipticity of the spheroidal figure of the ocean caused by the Moon.

Then the excess of attraction of the nucleus above what it would be supposing it of the density of the sea, gives the following resolved forces on a particle (xyz) parallel to the axes

$$-\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3}\frac{x}{r^3},\quad -\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3}\frac{y}{r^3},\quad -\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3}\frac{z}{r^3}.$$

The attraction of a whole fluid spheroid gives

$$-\frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1+\frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right)x,\quad -\frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1+\frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right)y,\quad -\frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1-\frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right)z.$$

The difference of the attraction of the Moon on the particle and centre of the Earth gives

$$-\frac{Mx}{r'^3}, \quad -\frac{My}{r'^3}, \quad -\frac{M(z-c')}{r'^3}-\frac{M}{c'^2}.$$

Adding the respective forces together and substituting in the equation

$$Xdx+Ydy+Zdz=0 \text{ (Art 519)},$$

we have

$$\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3}\frac{xdx+ydy+zdz}{r^3}$$

$$+\frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1+\frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right)(xdx+y\text{[illegible]})+\frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1-\frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right)zdz$$

$$+\frac{M}{r'^3}\{xdx+\text{[illegible]}+(z-c')\,dz\}+\frac{Mdz}{c'^2}=0.$$

But $r^2=x^2+$[illegible] $r'^2=x^2+y^2+(z-c')^2$.

Hence substituting and integrating,

$$\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3}\frac{1}{r}+\frac{2\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1+\frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right)(x^2+y^2)$$

$$+\frac{2\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1-\frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right)z^2-\frac{M}{r'}+\frac{Mz}{c'^2}=\text{constant}.$$

Now if b be the semi-axis minor of the spheroid, then $b^3(1+\epsilon)=a^3$, and $b=a(1-\frac{1}{3}\epsilon)$, and the equation to the spheroid is

$$x^2+y^2+(1-2\epsilon)z^2=b^2=a^2(1-\tfrac{2}{3}\epsilon);$$

$$\therefore \frac{1}{r}=(x^2+y^2+z^2)^{-\frac{1}{2}}=\frac{1}{a}\left(1-\frac{2\epsilon}{3}+2\epsilon\frac{z^2}{a^2}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}=\frac{1}{a}\left(1+\frac{\epsilon}{3}-\frac{\epsilon z^2}{a^2}\right)$$

$$\frac{1}{r'}=(x^2+y^2+z^2-2zc'+c'^2)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$=\frac{1}{c'}\left(1-\frac{2z}{c'}+\frac{x^2+y^2+z^2}{c'^2}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}=\frac{1}{c'}\left(1+\frac{z}{c'}-\frac{x^2+y^2-2z^2}{2c'^2}\right).$$

Substituting these in the above equation to the surface of the ocean, we have

$$(x^2+y^2)\left\{\frac{2\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1+\frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right)+\frac{M}{2c'^3}\right\}$$
$$+z^2\left\{\frac{2\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1-\frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right)+\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3\epsilon}{3a^3}-\frac{M}{c'^3}\right\}=\text{constant.}$$

Then in order that this may coincide with the equation $x^2+y^2+(1-2\epsilon)z^2=$ constant, we must have

$$(1-2\epsilon)\left\{\frac{2\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1+\frac{2\epsilon}{5}\right)+\frac{M}{2c'^3}\right\}$$
$$=\frac{2\pi\rho'}{3}\left(1-\frac{4\epsilon}{5}\right)+\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3\epsilon}{3a^3}-\frac{M}{c'^3};$$

$$\therefore\ \epsilon=\frac{\frac{3M}{2c'^3}}{\frac{8\pi\rho'}{15}+\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3a^3}+\frac{M}{c'^3}}$$

$$=\frac{\frac{3M}{2c'^3}}{\frac{8\pi\rho'}{15}+\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3a^3}},\ \text{(neglecting } \epsilon^2 \text{ as before).}$$

Now $E=$ mass of the Earth

$$=\frac{4\pi\rho a'^3}{3}+\frac{4\pi\rho'}{3}(a^3-a'^3)=\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3}+\frac{4\pi\rho'a^3}{3};$$

$$\frac{8\pi\rho'}{15}+\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{3a^3}=\frac{2E}{5a^3}+\frac{4\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{5a^3}$$
$$=\frac{2E}{5a^3}\left\{1+\frac{2\pi(\rho-\rho')a'^3}{E}\right\};$$

$$\therefore\ \epsilon=\frac{\frac{15}{4}\frac{M}{E}\left(\frac{a}{c'}\right)^3}{1+\frac{2\pi a'^3}{E}(\rho-\rho')},$$

$$\frac{a}{c'} = \text{the parallax of the Moon} = \frac{1}{60} \text{ nearly},$$

$$\frac{M}{E} = \frac{1}{74} \text{ nearly}, \quad E = \frac{4\pi}{3}\rho a^3 \text{ nearly};$$

$$\therefore \frac{2\pi a'^3}{E}(\rho - \rho') = \frac{3}{2}\left(1 - \frac{\rho'}{\rho}\right) \text{ nearly, since } a = a' \text{ nearly,}$$

$$\rho = 5\rho' \text{ nearly.}$$

These values shew that ϵ will be very small: and that the spheroidal figure may be taken as the form of equilibrium. We must remark that the spheroidal figure of the nucleus has been neglected in this calculation; also the centrifugal force of the particles arising not only from the rotation of the Earth about the centre of gravity of the Earth and Moon; but also that arising from the rotation about its own axis, which is far more important.

558. It is deserving of observation, however, that the greater the mean depth of the ocean is (i. e. the less a' is) the greater is ϵ. This shews that the *depth* of the sea affects the Tides. Also ϵ is greater the greater the density of the sea is in comparison with the mean density of the Earth.

If $\rho' = \rho$ the value of ϵ is more than double what it is when $\rho' = \frac{1}{5}\rho$ (the value in nature). If ρ' be greater than ρ, but a little less than $\frac{5}{3}\rho$ we find $\epsilon = 1$, when the above numerical values are substituted. In this case our solution is not even an approximation: but it shews that if the density of the sea were somewhat greater than the mean density of the Earth the figure of the Ocean would be very prolate and consequently the Tides much greater than they are in nature.

PROP. *To determine the form of equilibrium of the atmosphere of the heavenly bodies.*

559. Let θ be the co-latitude of any particle of the atmosphere, r its distance from the centre of gravity of the spheroid. Then if w be the angular velocity the centrifugal force of the particle is $w^2 r \sin\theta$: and therefore

$$\frac{dp}{\rho} = dV + w^2(x\,dx + y\,dy),$$

$$\int \frac{dp}{\rho} = V + \frac{w^2}{2} r^2 \sin^2\theta,$$

p being a function of ρ.

Then, if we neglect the ellipticity of the spheroid,

$$\text{const.} = \frac{E}{r} + \frac{w^2}{2} r^2 \sin^2\theta, \quad E = \text{mass of the Earth.}$$

Let R, R' be the polar and equatorial radii of the atmosphere: hence

$$\text{const.} = \frac{E}{R}, \quad \text{const.} = \frac{E}{R'} + \frac{w^2}{2} R'^2;$$

$$\therefore \frac{E}{R} = \frac{E}{r} + \tfrac{1}{2} w^2 r^2 \sin^2\theta;$$

$$\text{and } \frac{w^2}{2E} R'^3 = \frac{R' - R}{R}.$$

The greatest possible value of R' is that which extends to the point where the centrifugal force equals gravity: that is, where $w^2 R' = \frac{E}{R'^2}$, or $w^2 R'^3 = E$, $\therefore R' = \frac{3}{2} R$.

This is the greatest possible ratio of R' to R: for let $w^2 R'^3 = (1 - z) E$, in which z cannot be negative, then

$$\frac{R'}{R} = \frac{3 - z}{2}.$$

It appears also that the equatorial is the greatest radius of the atmosphere: for by differentiating the equation between r and θ

$$\frac{dr}{d\theta} = \frac{w^2 r^4 \sin\theta\cos\theta}{E - w^2 r^3 \sin^2\theta};$$

but the centrifugal force resolved in the direction of the radius is $w^2 r \sin^2\theta$, and this must not be greater than $\frac{E}{r^2}$, and there-

fore $\frac{dr}{d\theta}$ is always positive, or r increases from the pole to the equator.

560. There is but one form of equilibrium. For the equation to the surface of the atmosphere may be written thus:

$$r^3 - \frac{2E}{Rw^2\sin^2\theta}r + \frac{2E}{w^2\sin^2\theta} = 0,$$

and, since the last term is positive, one value of r must be negative, and therefore does not serve our purpose: let r_1 and r_2 be the other roots, then since the second term does not appear the third root is $-(r_1 + r_2)$. Now r_1 and r_2 cannot both be less than $\sqrt[3]{\frac{E}{w^2\sin^2\theta}}$, for then the third root would (disregarding its sign) be less than $2\sqrt[3]{\frac{E}{w^2\sin^2\theta}}$ and their product would be less than $\frac{2E}{w^2\sin^2\theta}$: but this is the product of the roots. Hence only one positive value of r is less than $\sqrt[3]{\frac{E}{w^2\sin^2\theta}}$, or there is only one form of equilibrium.

Laplace draws the following conclusions with respect to the Zodiacal Light from these results (Liv. III. §. 47). The Sun's atmosphere can extend no farther than to the orbit of a planet, of which the periodic revolution is performed in the same time as the Sun's rotatory motion about its axis; or in twenty-five days and a half. Therefore it does not extend so far as the orbits of Mercury and Venus: and we know that the Zodiacal Light extends much beyond them. The ratio of the polar to the equatorial diameter of the solar atmosphere cannot be less than $\frac{2}{3}$: and the Zodiacal Light appears under the form of a very flat lens, the apex of which is in the plane of the solar equator. Therefore the fluid which reflects to us the Zodiacal Light is not the atmosphere of the Sun: and since it surrounds the Sun, it must revolve about it according to the same laws as the planets: perhaps this is the reason why its resistance to their motions is so *insensible*.

561. THE equations of the equilibrium of fluids which we have found in Art. 519, are deduced from the characteristic property of fluids, both incompressible and elastic, *viz.* the equable transmission in every direction of pressures applied at their surface. This property arises from the fact, that the molecules of the fluid when compressed or dilated rapidly assume the same relative positions that they previously had. The time that the particles occupy in passing into this state has no influence on the laws of equilibrium, since these are observed only after the fluid has attained its state of rest. But this time, small as it may be, must influence the laws of motion of fluids, so that the principle of the equality of pressure in every direction is true in Hydrostatics, but is not always applicable in Hydrodynamics; this is Poisson's view of the subject, *Traité de Mécanique.*

Laplace remarked an analogous difference in the state of rest and motion of fluids relative to Mariotte's law. This law, which teaches that the density of an elastic fluid varies as the pressure, requires that the temperature of the fluid should become the same after the change in volume that it was before. It is ascertained that heat is given out or absorbed when a volume of air is suddenly compressed or dilated; and in this way the elasticity of the air is greatly modified by the nature of the motion. This circumstance introduces into the equa-

tions of motion terms which cannot be deduced from the equations of equilibrium. In the present work we shall suppose, as is ordinarily made the supposition, that the equality of pressure holds equally in the state of rest and motion of fluids: when we adopt this hypothesis the equations of equilibrium conduct immediately to those of the motion of fluids.

PROP. *To determine the equations of motion of a mass of fluid, the molecules of which are acted on by given forces.*

562. Let xyz be the co-ordinates to any molecule at the time t, and X, Y, Z the sums of the resolved parts of the accelerating forces which act upon this molecule parallel to the axes of co-ordinates respectively. Now in accordance with the Principle enunciated in Art. 226, the acceleration of the molecules would cease if that at the point (xyz) were acted on by the accelerating forces

$$X - \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \quad Y - \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \quad Z - \frac{d^2z}{dt^2},$$

and all the other molecules acted on simultaneously by similar forces.

Hence if p be the pressure at the point (xyz) at the time t referred to a unit of surface and ρ be the density, we have by the equation of equilibrium of a fluid mass

$$\frac{\delta p}{\rho} = \left(X - \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\right)\delta x + \left(Y - \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\right)\delta y + \left(Z - \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\right)\delta z,$$

where the differentials δx, δy, δz do not refer to the motion, but are arbitrary; and may therefore be taken equal to the differentials of the spaces described by the molecule parallel to the axes. Hence

$$\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{dp}{dx} = X - \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}, \quad \frac{1}{\rho}\frac{dp}{dy} = Y - \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}, \quad \frac{1}{\rho}\frac{dp}{dz} = Z - \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}.$$

Now let u, v, w be the velocities of the molecule (xyz) parallel to x, y, z respectively at the time t. Then each of these will be a function of the time and the position of the molecule;

$$\therefore \frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = \frac{du}{dt} = \left(\frac{du}{dt}\right) + \frac{du}{dx}u + \frac{du}{dy}v + \frac{du}{dz}w,$$

$$\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = \frac{dv}{dt} = \left(\frac{dv}{dt}\right) + \frac{dv}{dx}u + \frac{dv}{dy}v + \frac{dv}{dz}w,$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = \frac{dw}{dt} = \left(\frac{dw}{dt}\right) + \frac{dw}{dx}u + \frac{dw}{dy}v + \frac{dw}{dz}w.$$

Hence the three equations involving p become

$$\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{dp}{dx} = X - \left(\frac{du}{dt}\right) - \frac{du}{dx}u - \frac{du}{dy}v - \frac{du}{dz}w,$$

$$\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{dp}{dy} = Y - \left(\frac{dv}{dt}\right) - \frac{dv}{dx}u - \frac{dv}{dy}v - \frac{dv}{dz}w,$$

$$\frac{1}{\rho}\frac{dp}{dz} = Z - \left(\frac{dw}{dt}\right) - \frac{dw}{dx}u - \frac{dw}{dy}v - \frac{dw}{dz}w.$$

These are three equations connecting the five unknown quantities u, v, w, p, ρ which we wish to determine in terms of x, y, z, and t.

563. Two more equations will be furnished by the following consideration. Suppose we consider the motion of the molecules which at the instant t form an indefinitely small parallelopiped with its sides parallel to the co-ordinate planes. The various molecules will change their situation, and we can determine the volume of the figure which they form after a short time: but since the number of molecules remains the same the volume which these molecules occupy when multiplied by the density of the fluid must remain the same during the motion.

Let δx, δy, δz be the sides of the parallelopiped at the time t: m the molecule nearest the origin; n the molecule immediately over this. Then at time $t + \delta t$ the co-ordinates of m are

$$x + u\delta t, \quad y + v\delta t, \quad z + w\delta t,$$

and the co-ordinates of n change from $x, y, z + \delta z$ to

$$x + u'\delta t, \quad y + v'\delta t, \quad x + \delta z + w'\delta t,$$

u', v', w' being the values of u, v, w at n;

$$\therefore\ u' = u + \frac{du}{dz}\delta z, \quad v' = v + \frac{dv}{dz}\delta z, \quad w' = w + \frac{dw}{dz}\delta z.$$

Hence the co-ordinates of n at the time $t + \delta t$ are

$$x + u\delta t + \frac{du}{dz}\delta z\delta t, \quad y + v\delta t + \frac{dv}{dz}\delta z\delta t, \text{ and}$$

$$z + \delta z + w\delta t + \frac{dw}{dz}\delta z\delta t;$$

and the distance between m and n at that time is

$$\sqrt{\frac{du^2}{dz^2}\delta z^2\delta t^2 + \frac{dv^2}{dz^2}\delta z^2\delta t^2 + (\delta z + \frac{dw}{dz}\delta z\delta t)^2} = \delta z + \frac{dw}{dz}\delta z\delta t,$$

neglecting small quantities of the third order.

Now let us consider the two angular points of the parallelopiped which lie in the same diagonal plane with m and n: we shall call them m' and n': we shall obtain their distance at the time $t + \delta t$ from that of m and n by putting $x + \delta x$, $y + \delta y$ for x and y: then the distance between m' and n' is

$$\delta z + \left\{\frac{dw}{dz} + \frac{d^2w}{dzdx}\delta x + \frac{d^2w}{dzdy}\delta y\right\}\delta z\delta t = \delta z + \frac{dw}{dz}\delta z\delta t.$$

Hence the distance between m' and n' is the same as that between m and n, when we neglect small quantities of the third order. In the same manner it may be shewn that all the edges of the parallelopiped which are parallel at time t are equal to each other at time $t + \delta t$ and therefore still form a parallelopiped, the sides being

$$\delta z + \frac{dw}{dz}\delta z\delta t, \quad \delta y + \frac{dv}{dy}\delta y\delta t, \quad \delta x + \frac{du}{dx}\delta x\delta t.$$

Also the density at the time $t + \delta t$ is

$$\rho + \left\{\frac{d\rho}{dt} + \frac{d\rho}{dx}u + \frac{d\rho}{dy}v + \frac{d\rho}{dz}w\right\}\delta t,$$

and therefore the mass of the parallelopiped, which at time t is $\rho\delta x\delta y\delta z$, becomes at time $t+\delta t$,

$$(\rho + \frac{d\rho}{dt}\delta t + \frac{d\rho}{dx}u\delta t + \frac{d\rho}{dy}v\delta t + \frac{d\rho}{dz}w\delta t)$$

$$\times (1 + \frac{du}{dx}\delta t)\ (1 + \frac{dv}{dy}\delta t)\ (1 + \frac{du}{dz}\delta t)\ \delta x\delta y\delta z.$$

Equating these expressions, dividing by $\delta x\delta y\delta z\delta t$, and then taking the limit, we have

$$0 = \rho\left\{\frac{du}{dx} + \frac{dv}{dy} + \frac{dw}{dz}\right\} + \frac{d\rho}{dt} + \frac{d\rho}{dx}u + \frac{d\rho}{dy}v + \frac{d\rho}{dz}w.$$

This equation is called the *Equation of the continuity of the fluid*; since it expresses analytically the relation between the velocity of the molecules and the density of the fluid, which are necessarily dependent on each other, if the fluid be supposed to be continuous in its constitution.

564. If the fluid be incompressible then the variation of ρ equals zero, and the above equation gives two

$$\frac{du}{dx} + \frac{dv}{dy} + \frac{dw}{dz} = 0,$$

$$\text{and } \frac{d\rho}{dt} + \frac{d\rho}{dx}u + \frac{d\rho}{dy}v + \frac{d\rho}{dz}w = 0;$$

these complete the five equations for computing u, v, w, p, ρ in terms of x, y, z, t when the fluid is incompressible.

When the fluid is homogeneous and incompressible then ρ is constant throughout the fluid and given in value: and therefore the last equation becomes identical.

565. If the fluid be compressible the fourth and fifth equations are

$$0 = \rho\left\{\frac{du}{dx} + \frac{dv}{dy} + \frac{dw}{dz}\right\} + \frac{d\rho}{dt} + \frac{d\rho}{dx}u + \frac{d\rho}{dy}v + \frac{d\rho}{dz}w;$$

$$\text{and } 0 = F(\rho, p),$$

the function F depending upon the nature of the fluid.

The equations admit of great simplification in the case of an incompressible homogeneous fluid mass, when $u\,dx + v\,dy + w\,dz$ is a perfect differential.

PROP. *To find the pressure at any point of a homogeneous and incompressible fluid mass in motion.*

566. Assuming $u\,dx + v\,dy + w\,dz = d\phi$ a perfect differential, we have

$$u = \frac{d\phi}{dx}, \quad v = \frac{d\phi}{dy}, \quad w = \frac{d\phi}{dz}.$$

Hence the equation of the continuity of the fluid becomes

$$\frac{d^2\phi}{dx^2} + \frac{d^2\phi}{dy^2} + \frac{d^2\phi}{dz^2} = 0.$$

By the integration of this equation ϕ is to be found. We shall proceed to eliminate u, v, w from the equations involving p.

$$\frac{du}{dt}dx + \frac{dv}{dt}dy + \frac{dw}{dt}dz = \frac{d^2\phi}{dt\,dx}dx + \frac{d^2\phi}{dt\,dy}dy + \frac{d^2\phi}{dt\,dz}dz$$

$$= d\frac{d\phi}{dt} = \frac{d\frac{d\phi}{dt}}{dx}dx + \frac{d\frac{d\phi}{dt}}{dy}dy + \frac{d\frac{d\phi}{dt}}{dz}dz = d\frac{d\phi}{dt},$$

$$\frac{du}{dx}dx + \frac{dv}{dx}dy + \frac{dw}{dx}dz = d\frac{d\phi}{dx} \text{ in the same way}$$

$$\frac{du}{dy}dx + \frac{dv}{dy}dy + \frac{dw}{dy}dz = d\frac{d\phi}{dy}$$

$$\frac{du}{dz}dx + \frac{dv}{dz}dy + \frac{dw}{dz}dz = d\frac{d\phi}{dz}.$$

Now let the three equations in p be multiplied respectively by dx, dy, dz and added together;

$$\therefore \frac{dp}{\rho} = X\,dx + Y\,dy + Z\,dz$$

$$- d\frac{'}{dt} - \frac{'}{dx} d\frac{'}{dx} - \frac{'}{dy} d\frac{'}{dy} - \frac{'}{dz} d\frac{'}{dz}$$

$$= X dx + Y dy + Z dz - d\frac{d\phi}{dt} - \tfrac{1}{2} d\left\{\frac{d\phi^2}{dx^2} + \frac{d\phi^2}{dy^2} + \frac{d\phi^2}{dz^2}\right\}.$$

567. Cor. When the excursions of the molecules are small we may neglect the squares of the velocities and the equation becomes

$$\frac{dp}{\rho} = X dx + Y dy + Z dz - d\frac{d\phi}{dt}.$$

Prop. *To prove that if* udx + vdy + wdz *be a perfect differential at any instant it is so during the whole time of the motion.*

568. For at the time $t + \delta t$ the value of $u dx + v dy + w dz$ becomes

$$u dx + v dy + w dz + \left\{\frac{du}{dt} dx + \frac{dv}{dt} dy + \frac{dw}{dt} dz\right\} \delta t$$

$$= d\phi + d\frac{d\phi}{dt} \delta t = d\phi + (X dx + Y dy + Z dz)\, \delta t - \frac{dp}{\rho} \delta t$$

$$- \frac{\delta t}{2} d\left\{\frac{d\phi^2}{dx^2} + \frac{d\phi^2}{dy^2} + \frac{d\phi^2}{dz^2}\right\};$$

wherefore if $u dx + v dy + w dz$ be a perfect differential $d\phi$ at the time t it will be so also at the time $t + \delta t$ and will consequently be so throughout the motion.

Prop. *To determine equations for calculating the motion of an elastic fluid, the excursions of the molecules being supposed small, no extraneous forces acting.*

569. We shall suppose $u dx + v dy + w dz = d\phi$, then the equation of continuity is

$$\rho \left\{\frac{du}{dx} + \frac{dv}{dy} + \frac{dw}{dz}\right\} + \frac{d\rho}{dt} = 0.$$

neglecting small quantities of the second order;

$$\therefore \frac{d \log_e \rho}{dt} + \frac{d^2\phi}{dx^2} + \frac{d^2\phi}{dy^2} + \frac{d^2\phi}{dz^2} = 0.$$

We shall suppose that $p = a^2\rho$, which is the law of nature if the motion be so slow as not to absorb or develop heat. Also since the excursions are small we have, as in Art. 567,

$$\frac{dp}{\rho} = -d\frac{d\phi}{dt};$$

$$\therefore a^2 \frac{d \log_e \rho}{dt} = -\frac{d^2\phi}{dt^2};$$

$$\therefore \frac{d^2\phi}{dt^2} = a^2\left\{\frac{d^2\phi}{dx^2} + \frac{d^2\phi}{dy^2} + \frac{d^2\phi}{dz^2}\right\}.$$

From this equation ϕ must be determined and then p and ρ calculated by the equations given above.

570. For the Theories of Sound and Light which depend upon the principles in this Chapter we must refer the reader to two Articles on those subjects in the *Encyclopædia Metropolitana*, by Sir John W. F. Herschel, to Mr Airy's *Tracts*, and also to Mr Webster's *Theory of Fluids*. We shall proceed with applications of the principles more peculiarly adapted to the nature of the present work, viz. to the Tides and the Stability of the Ocean.

571. THERE remains yet another phenomenon, which is evidently connected with the mechanism of the Solar System, the Tides of our Ocean. In the calmest weather the vast body of waters that wash our coasts advances on our shores, inundating all the flat sands, rising to a considerable height, and then as gradually retiring to their former level; and all this without any visible cause to impel the waters to our shores or again to draw them off. Twice every day is this repeated. In many places this motion of the waters is tremendous, the sea advancing, even in the calmest weather, with a high surge, rolling along the flats with resistless violence, and rising to the height of many fathoms.

572. In searching for the cause of this remarkable phenomenon philosophers readily conceived, that, since the Sun and Moon each cross the meridian twice in twenty-four hours, these bodies may by their attraction influence the waters of the ocean. Accordingly various theories have been adopted for the calculation of the tides upon this hypothesis of lunar and solar attraction, of which the most noted have been those of D. Bernoulli and Laplace. If the hypothesis of universal gravitation be adopted, there can be but one correct theory based upon it for calculating the oscillations of the ocean; but in consequence of the difficulties of the analysis, which have hitherto been insurmountable, other hypotheses must be resorted to in addition to that of gravitation in order to obtain an approximate solution of the problem.

The irregularity of the depth of the ocean, the manner in which it is spread over the earth, the position and declivity of the shores, and their connexions with the adjoining coasts, the currents, and the resistances which the waters suffer, cannot possibly be subjected to an accurate calculation, though these causes modify the oscillations of the great fluid mass. All we can do is to analyze the general phenomena which must result from the attractions of the Sun and Moon, and to deduce from the observations such data as are indispensable for completing in each port the theory of the ebb and flow of the tides. These data are the arbitrary quantities, depending on the extent of the surface of the sea, its depth, and the local circumstances of the port. In the absence of these data we must resort to the best expedients that can be found.

Bernoulli, in his theory, assumed that the attraction of the Moon causes the ocean to assume at every instant the form it would have if the Earth and Moon were stationary. It is found, by calculating the tides upon this hypothesis, supposing the pole of the prolate spheroid (which is the form of equilibrium nearly, see Art. 557.) to lag behind the Moon, that this hypothesis gives results according very well with observations in some of the more ordinary phenomena of the tides. This theory is termed by Mr Whewell the *Equilibrium Theory*. Laplace, however, has taken a different course. He calculates the attractive forces of the Sun and Moon upon the ocean, and finds them to contain constant terms and periodical terms. He states, that in consequence of the resistance and friction of the waters they would soon have assumed a form of equilibrium under the forces which are represented by the constant terms: and then, assuming this as a general dynamical principle, that the state of a system of bodies in which the primitive conditions of the motion have disappeared by the resistances it suffers is periodical when the forces themselves are periodical, he obtains an expression for the height of the tide the same as that obtained from the Equilibrium Theory of Bernoulli. But there are so many assumptions in this, that we may, as far as we know *a priori*, as readily adopt the equilibrium theory

as Laplace's: we must test their accuracy by comparing their results with observations. With this laborious task many calculators and observers are at this time employed under the superintendence of Mr Whewell and Mr Lubbock: and we must look to the general empiric laws to be deduced from the enormous mass of observations that is in the progress of accumulation to guide us in adopting such proper hypotheses as shall bring the subject under the dominion of analysis without materially vitiating the rigour of the approximation. A most interesting Essay *towards a first approximation to a map of cotidal lines* by Mr Whewell will be found in the *Philosophical Transactions* for 1833. In the present state of our knowledge of the tides we are constrained to confess that the laws we possess are only empiric. All we shall attempt in this work will be to obtain the formulæ for the calculation of the tides upon the equilibrium theory of Bernoulli.

PROP. *To calculate the height of the tide at any place at a given time upon Bernoulli's hypothesis.*

573. Let c, $c(1+\epsilon)$ be the semi-axes of the prolate spheroid into the form of which the Moon attracts the Ocean: a the radius of the sphere the volume of which equals that of the Earth: h the elevation of the pole of the spheroid above the mean level of the sea: r the distance from the centre of any point of the surface of the ocean, and ϕ the angle r makes with the axis of the spheroid: n the angular velocity of rotation of the Earth about its axis: ω, $\omega_,$ the right ascensions of the point on the surface and of the Moon: θ, $\theta_,$ their north polar distances. Hence we have

$$c^3(1+\epsilon) = a^3, \quad h = c(1+\epsilon) - a;$$

$$\therefore\ c = a\left(1 - \tfrac{1}{3}\epsilon\right),\ h = \tfrac{2}{3}a\epsilon;\ \ \therefore\ a\epsilon = \tfrac{3}{2}h,\ \ r = a - \tfrac{1}{2}h.$$

$$\text{Also } r = c(1 + \epsilon\cos^2\phi)$$

$$= a - \tfrac{1}{2}h + \tfrac{3}{2}h\cos^2\phi;$$

therefore height of tide at the place of which the terrestrial co-latitude and longitude are θ and ω

$$= r - a = \tfrac{1}{2} h (3\cos^2\phi - 1).$$

Let λ = the difference between the right ascensions of the Moon and the pole of the tidal spheroid (see Art. 572), then $nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda$ is the hour angle of the pole, t being reckoned from noon;

$$\therefore \cos\phi = \cos\theta\cos\theta_, + \sin\theta\sin\theta_,\cos(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda);$$

therefore height of tide =

$$\tfrac{3}{2} h \left\{ [\cos\theta\cos\theta_, + \sin\theta\sin\theta_,\cos(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda)]^2 - \tfrac{1}{3} \right\}.$$

Then considering $\theta_,$, the north polar distance, nearly 90^0, we shall neglect $\cos\theta_,$. Also we shall put

$$1 + \cos 2(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda) \text{ for } 2\cos^2(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda);$$

therefore height of tide =

$$\tfrac{3}{4} h \left\{ \sin^2\theta \sin^2\theta_, - \tfrac{2}{3} + \sin^2\theta \sin^2\theta_, \cos 2(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda) \right\},$$

and since during a day $\theta_,$ remains nearly constant, we have

$$\text{change in height} = \tfrac{3}{4} h \sin^2\theta \sin^2\theta_, \cos 2(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda).$$

Supposing accented letters to apply to the Sun in the same way that the unaccented letters apply to the Moon, we have the whole variation in the height of the tide arising from the combined action of these two luminaries =

$$\tfrac{3}{4} h \sin^2\theta \sin^2\theta_, \cos 2(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda) + \tfrac{3}{4} h' \sin^2\theta \sin^2\theta_,' \cos 2(nt + \omega - \omega_,' - \lambda').$$

PROP. *To find the time of High Tide at a given place.*

574. The height of the tide at a given place (by the last Article)

$$= \tfrac{3}{4}\sin^2\theta \left\{ h \sin^2\theta_, \cos 2(nt + \omega - \omega_, - \lambda) + h' \sin^2\theta_,' \cos 2(nt + \omega - \omega_,' - \lambda') \right\},$$

and when the tide is full the differential coefficient of this vanishes. We shall suppose the angular velocities of the Sun and Moon to be the same or $\frac{d(\omega_{,}+\lambda)}{dt}=\frac{d(\omega_{,}'+\lambda')}{dt}$;

$$\therefore\ 0=h\sin^2\theta_{,}\sin 2(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda)$$
$$+h'\sin^2\theta_{,}'\sin 2(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}'-\lambda'),$$

or $$0=h\sin^2\theta_{,}\sin 2(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda)$$
$$+h'\sin^2\theta_{,}'\sin 2(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda+\omega_{,}-\omega_{,}'+\lambda-\lambda');$$

$$\therefore\ \tan 2(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda)=\frac{h'\sin^2\theta_{,}'\sin 2(\omega_{,}'-\omega_{,}+\lambda'-\lambda)}{h\sin^2\theta_{,}+h'\sin^2\theta_{,}'\cos 2(\omega_{,}'-\omega_{,}+\lambda'-\lambda)},$$

It will be seen by referring to Art. 295. that the force of the Sun on the Ocean varies as $\frac{S}{r'^3}$ and that of the Moon as $\frac{M}{r^3}$:

$$\text{hence}\ \frac{h'}{h}=\frac{S}{M}\frac{r^3}{r'^3}=\frac{S}{M}\frac{\Pi^3}{\Pi'^3},$$

Π, Π' being the parallax of the Moon and Sun;

$$\therefore\ \tan 2(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda)=\frac{\frac{S}{M}\left(\frac{\Pi}{\Pi'}\right)^3\sin^2\theta_{,}'\sin 2(\omega_{,}'-\omega_{,}+\lambda'-\lambda)}{\sin^2\theta_{,}+\frac{S}{M}\left(\frac{\Pi}{\Pi'}\right)^3\sin^2\theta_{,}'\cos 2(\omega_{,}'-\omega_{,}+\lambda'-\lambda)}.$$

This expression shews that the time of the Moon's meridian passage precedes the High Tide by an interval which is not the same for all ages of the Moon.

The mean of all these intervals is λ: and $nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda$ is the excess of any interval above the mean: and $\lambda'-\lambda$ is the time of the Moon's meridian passage when λ (the mean) is the interval of time between that event and high tide.

The value of the interval, at any port, when the Moon is full or new is called the *Establishment of the Port.*

Let $\theta_{,}=\theta_{,}'=90^0$ or the Sun and Moon be supposed in the equator. Then the above formula leads to the following table

esult of calculation compared with good observations of ne of high water made at London Docks. See *Com- to the British Almanac*, 1830.

Time of Moon's Meridian Passage $\omega_1 - \omega_1'$.	Time by which the Moon's Meridian Passage precedes the time of High Water.	
	Observed.	Calculated.
h.	h. m.	h. m.
0	2 2	2 0
1	1 47	1 47
2	1 32	1 32
3	1 18	1 17
4	1 5	1 4
5	0 55	0 55
6	0 52	0 54
7	1 43	1 6
8	1 32	1 32
9	1 59	1 58
10	2 9	2 10
11	2 10	2 9

The mean of the observed results gives $\lambda = 1$ minutes;

and $\therefore \lambda' - \lambda = 2$ hours, by the Table.

PROP. *To calculate the tide at a Port at tidal wave arrives by two distinct routs.*

575. We shall consider the action of the

Let $n - \frac{d\omega_1}{dt} - \frac{d\lambda}{dt} = m$: T the time of transmis

first channel, then at the time t the tide at the port produced by the tidal wave up the first channel

$$= \frac{DM}{r^3} \cos 2\,(nt + \omega - \omega_{,} - \lambda - mT')$$

D depending upon the height of this wave when it was at the mouth of the channel. T' the time the tidal wave takes to move to the second mouth and up the second channel: then the tide at the time t at the port arising from this second wave

$$= \frac{EM}{r^3} \cos 2\,(nt + \omega - \omega_{,} - \lambda - mT')$$

E depending upon the height of the tidal wave when it reached the mouth of the second channel.

Hence the height at the port

$$= \frac{M}{r^3} \{D \cos 2(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda-mT) + E \cos 2\,(nt+\omega-\omega_{,}-\lambda-mT')\},$$

$$= \frac{MF}{r^3} \cos 2\,(nt + \omega - \omega_{,} - \lambda - G),$$

where $F^2 = D^2 + E^2 + 2\,DE \cos 2\,m\,(T' - T)$,

and $\sin 2\,G = \frac{D}{F} \sin 2\,mT + \frac{E}{F} \sin 2\,mT'$.

Hence F and G depend upon m and therefore on the rapidity of the Moon.

If $F = 0$, that is, if $T = T'$ and $D = -E$ or if it be high water at one mouth when it is low water at the other, and if the tides require the same time to reach the port after the great tidal wave has reached the first mouth, then there will be a complete interference at the port, or no tide at all, if we consider the height of the two poles of the spheroid above the mean level of the ocean to be the same. Now this is not strictly the case, the height of the pole furthest from the Moon is less (as might be shewn by a nearer approximation in Art. 557) than the other. Hence there will only be one ebb and one flow in twenty-four hours, and that very small. This

singular fact has been observed at Batsham, a port of the kingdom of Tonquin, $20^0\ 50'$ north latitude. The two waves seem to come by two channels which run, one from the China seas between the continent and the island Luconia, the other from the Indian sea between the continent and the island of Borneo. (Principia, Tom. III. Prop. 24).

PROP. *To determine equations for calculating the motion of an incompressible fluid mass surrounding a body nearly spherical, the body having a uniform rotatory motion about a fixed axis, and the fluid being supposed to be deranged but very little from the state of equilibrium by very small forces.*

576. We shall refer the fluid mass to polar co-ordinates. Let the axis of z be the axis of rotation, n the angular velocity: $r_,$ the distance of any molecule at the commencement of t from the centre of gravity of the body which the fluid covers; this centre of gravity we shall suppose at rest (see Art. 428); $\theta_,$ the angle between $r_,$ and z, $\omega_,$ the angle between the planes rz and xz at the commencement of t. Suppose that at the end of the time t $r_,$, $\theta_,$, $\omega_,$ are become $r_, + \alpha r$, $\theta_, + \alpha\theta$, $nt + \omega_, + \alpha\omega$, α being a very small fraction of which the square and higher powers may be neglected;

$$\therefore\ x = (r_, + \alpha r)\sin(\theta_, + \alpha\theta)\cos(nt + \omega_, + \alpha\omega),$$

$$y = (r_, + \alpha r)\sin(\theta_, + \alpha\theta)\sin(nt + \omega_, + \alpha\omega),$$

$$z = (r_, + \alpha r)\cos(\theta_, + \alpha\theta.)$$

We shall substitute the expressions in the equation of Art. 562, neglecting $\alpha_,^2$ .....

$$\frac{dx}{dt} = \alpha\left\{\sin\theta_,\cos(nt+\omega_,)\frac{dr}{dt} + r_,\cos\theta_,\cos(nt+\omega_,)\frac{d\theta}{dt}\right.$$

$$\left. - r_,\sin\theta_,\sin(nt+\omega_,)\frac{d\omega}{dt}\right\} - nr_,\sin\theta_,\sin(nt+\omega_,),$$

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = \alpha\left\{\sin\theta_,\cos(nt+\omega_,)\frac{d^2r}{dt^2} + r_,\cos\theta_,\cos(nt+\omega_,)\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2}\right.$$

$$- \; r_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \sin(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d^2\omega}{dt^2} - n \sin\theta_{,} \sin(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{dr}{dt}$$

$$- nr_{,} \cos\theta_{,} \sin(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d\theta}{dt} - nr_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \cos(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d\omega}{dt}\Big\}$$

$$- n^2 r_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \cos(nt+\omega_{,}).$$

From this we can obtain $\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$ by putting $\omega_{,} + nt + a\omega - \frac{\pi}{2}$ for $\omega_{,} + nt + a\omega$, and $\frac{d^2z}{dt^2}$ by putting $\omega_{,} + nt + a\omega = 0$ and $\theta_{,} + a\theta + \frac{\pi}{2}$ for $\theta_{,} + a\theta$;

$$\therefore \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = a\Big\{\sin\theta_{,} \sin(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d^2r}{dt^2} + r_{,} \cos\theta_{,} \sin(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2}$$

$$+ \; r_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \cos(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d^2\omega}{dt^2} + n \sin\theta_{,} \cos(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{dr}{dt}$$

$$+ nr_{,} \cos\theta_{,} \cos(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d\theta}{dt} - nr_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \sin(nt+\omega_{,}) \frac{d\omega}{dt}\Big\}$$

$$- n^2 r_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \sin(nt+\omega_{,}),$$

$$\frac{d^2z}{dt^2} = a\Big\{\cos\theta_{,} \frac{d^2r}{dt^2} - r_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} - nr_{,} \cos\theta_{,} \frac{d\omega}{dt}\Big\} - n^2 r_{,} \cos\theta_{,}.$$

Hence making the substitutions and putting $X\delta x + Y\delta y + Z\delta z = \delta V$ for the attractions, we have

$$\delta V - \frac{\delta p}{\rho} = \frac{d^2x}{dt^2}\delta x + \frac{d^2y}{dt^2}\delta y + \frac{d^2z}{dt^2}\delta z$$

$$= ar_{,}^2 \delta\theta_{,}\Big\{\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} - 2n \sin\theta_{,} \cos\theta_{,} \frac{d\omega}{dt}\Big\}$$

$$+ ar_{,}^2 \delta\omega_{,}\Big\{\sin^2\theta_{,} \frac{d^2\omega}{dt^2} + 2n \sin\theta_{,} \cos\theta_{,} \frac{d\theta}{dt} + \frac{2n}{r_{,}} \sin^2\theta_{,} \frac{dr}{dt}\Big\}$$

$$+ a\delta r_{,}\Big\{\frac{d^2r}{dt^2} - 2nr_{,} \sin^2\theta_{,} \frac{d\omega}{dt}\Big\} - \frac{n^2}{a}\delta\{(r_{,}+ar)\sin(\theta_{,}+a\theta)\}.$$

At the external surface of the fluid we have $\delta p = 0$: moreover, in the state of equilibrium we have

$$0 = \frac{n^2}{2}\delta \cdot \{(r_{,} + ar)\sin(\theta_{,} + a\theta)\}^2 + (\delta V),$$

since r, θ, ω are constant when there is equilibrium: (δV) is the value of δV corresponding to this state, it is therefore the force of gravity multiplied by the element of its direction. Let g be the force of gravity, ay the small elevation of a particle of the fluid above the surface of equilibrium, which we shall consider as the true level of the sea. The variation (δV) will increase by this elevation in the state of motion, by the quantity $-ag\delta y$, since gravity acts nearly in the direction of y towards the origin of that line: then

$$\delta V = (\delta V) - ag\delta y + a\delta V',$$

where $a\delta V'$ is a variation depending upon the new forces which in the state of motion act upon the particle.

Likewise $\frac{n^2}{2}\delta \cdot \{(r_{,} + ar)\sin(\theta_{,} + a\theta)\}^2$ will be increased by the quantity $an^2\delta y r_{,}\sin^2\theta_{,}$ by means of the elevation of the particle above the level of the sea: this quantity may, however, be neglected in comparison with $-ag\delta y$, because the ratio of centrifugal force to gravity at the equator, which equals $\frac{n^2 r_{,}}{g}$, is a very small fraction, being nearly $\frac{1}{289}$. Lastly, the radius $r_{,}$ is very nearly constant at the surface of the sea, since it differs but slightly from a spherical surface; we may therefore neglect $\delta r_{,}$. Then the equation becomes, at the *surface of the sea*,

$$r_{,}^2\delta\theta_{,}\left\{\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} - 2n\sin\theta_{,}\cos\theta_{,}\frac{d\omega}{dt}\right\}$$

$$+ r_{,}^2\delta\omega_{,}\left\{\sin^2\theta_{,}\frac{d^2\omega}{dt^2} + 2n\sin\theta_{,}\cos\theta_{,}\frac{d\theta}{dt} + \frac{2n}{r_{,}}\sin^2\theta_{,}\frac{dr}{dt}\right\}$$

$$= -g\delta y + \delta V',$$

the variations δy and $\delta V'$ being in reference to $\delta\theta_{,}$ and $\delta\omega_{,}$.

577. We shall now consider the equation relative to the continuity of the fluid.

Volume of the element at the commencement of t,

$$= \delta r_{,} r_{,} \delta\theta_{,} r_{,} \sin\theta_{,} \delta\omega_{,}, \text{ or } r_{,}^{2} \sin\theta_{,} \delta r_{,} \delta\theta_{,} \delta\omega_{,}.$$

And the volume of the same element after a time t,

$= (r_{,} + \alpha r)^{2} \sin(\theta_{,} + \alpha\theta)\, \delta(r_{,} + \alpha r)\, \delta(\theta_{,} + \alpha\theta)\, \delta(\omega_{,} + \alpha\omega + nt)$.

But since the density of the sea is supposed to remain the same, these volumes must be the same,

$$\therefore (r_{,} + \alpha r)^{2} \sin(\theta_{,} + \alpha\theta)\, \delta(r_{,} + \alpha r)\, \delta(\theta_{,} + \alpha\theta)\, \delta(\omega_{,} + \alpha\omega + nt) = r_{,}^{2} \sin\theta_{,} \delta r_{,} \delta\theta_{,} \delta\omega_{,}.$$

We have then, by equating, expanding, and neglecting the squares and higher powers of α,

$$0 = r_{,}^{2} \sin\theta_{,} \left\{ \frac{dr}{dr_{,}} + \frac{d\theta}{d\theta_{,}} + \frac{d\omega}{d\omega_{,}} \right\} + r_{,}^{2} \theta \cos\theta_{,} + 2 r_{,} r \sin\theta_{,},$$

$$\text{or } 0 = \frac{d \cdot r_{,}^{2} r}{dr_{,}} + r_{,}^{2} \left\{ \frac{\theta \cos\theta_{,}}{\sin\theta_{,}} + \frac{d\omega}{d\omega_{,}} + \frac{d\theta}{d\theta_{,}} \right\}.$$

Let γ be the mean depth of the sea corresponding to $\theta_{,}$ and $\omega_{,}$. Now since the oscillations are small we may assume that all the particles which are on any one radius, will remain on the same radius when $\theta_{,}$, $\omega_{,}$ change to $\theta_{,} + \alpha\theta$ and $\omega_{,} + \alpha\omega + nt$: *i. e.* the relative change of situation of the particles will be chiefly in the direction of the radius vector.

Hence the integral of the above equation is

$$0 = r_{,}^{2} r - (r_{,}^{2} r) + r_{,}^{2} \gamma \left\{ \frac{\theta \cos\theta_{,}}{\sin\theta_{,}} + \frac{d\omega}{d\omega_{,}} + \frac{d\theta}{d\theta_{,}} \right\},$$

where $(r_{,}^{2} r)$ is the value of $r_{,}^{2} r$ at the bottom of the sea: and equals $r_{,}^{2}(r)$ nearly; since the change in the radius of the Earth between the bottom and surface of the sea is so small. The mean depth even of the Pacific Ocean is only about $\frac{1}{1000}^{\text{th}}$ of the radius of the Earth. Wherefore,

$$0 = r - (r) + \gamma \left\{ \frac{\theta \cos\theta_{,}}{\sin\theta_{,}} + \frac{d\omega}{d\omega_{,}} + \frac{d\theta}{d\theta_{,}} \right\}.$$

Now the depth of the sea corresponding to $\theta_{,} + \alpha\theta$ and $nt + \omega_{,} + \alpha\omega = \gamma + \alpha\{r - (r)\}$.

$$\text{Also the depth} = \gamma + \frac{d\gamma}{d\theta_1}\alpha\theta + \frac{d\gamma}{d\omega_1}\alpha\omega + \alpha y,$$

where αy is the elevation of the particle above the mean surface.

$$\therefore\ r - (r) = \frac{d\gamma}{d\theta_1}\theta + \frac{d\gamma}{d\omega_1}\omega + y;$$

$$\therefore\ y = -\frac{d.\gamma\theta}{d\theta_1} - \frac{d.\gamma\omega}{d\omega_1} - \frac{\gamma\theta\cos\theta_1}{\sin\theta_1} = -\frac{d.\gamma\theta\sin\theta_1}{d\theta_1}\frac{1}{\sin\theta_1} - \frac{d.\gamma\omega}{d\omega_1}.$$

Let $\cos\theta_1 = \mu_1$;

$$\therefore\ y = \frac{d.\gamma\theta\sqrt{1-\mu_1^2}}{d\mu_1} - \frac{d.\gamma\omega}{d\omega_1}.$$

By means of this and equation of last Article, we have to determine the oscillations of the ocean.

PROP. *The depth of the sea being supposed uniform, the Earth to have no rotatory motion, and its figure to be a sphere; required to prove the stability of the Ocean.*

578. By the last Article we have, since γ is constant,

$$y = \gamma\frac{d.\theta\sqrt{1-\mu_1^2}}{d\mu_1} - \gamma\frac{d\omega}{d\omega_1};$$

$$\therefore\ \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = \gamma\frac{d\left\{\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2}\sqrt{1-\mu_1^2}\right\}}{d\mu_1} - \gamma\frac{d\frac{d^2\omega}{dt^2}}{d\omega_1}.$$

But if we put $\cos\theta_1 = \mu_1$ in the equation of Art. 576. and observe that $\delta y = \frac{dy}{d\theta_1}\delta\theta_1 + \frac{dy}{d\omega_1}\delta\omega_1$ and $\delta V' = \frac{dV'}{d\theta_1}\delta\theta_1 + \frac{dV'}{d\omega_1}\delta\omega_1$, and equate the coefficients of $\delta\theta_1$ and also of $\delta\omega_1$ in that equation, we obtain (putting $n = 0$,)

$$r_1^2\frac{d^2\theta}{dt^2} = -g\frac{dy}{d\theta_1} + \frac{dV'}{d\theta_1} = g\frac{dy}{d\mu_1}\sqrt{1-\mu_1^2} - \frac{dV'}{d\mu_1}\sqrt{1-\mu_1^2};$$

$$r_1^2(1-\mu_1^2)\frac{d^2\omega}{dt^2} = -g\frac{dy}{d\omega_1} + \frac{dV'}{d\omega_1}.$$

Let these be substituted in the value of $\frac{d^2y}{dt^2}$, then

$$\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = \frac{g\gamma}{r_{,}^2}\frac{d}{d\mu_{,}}\left\{(1-\mu_{,}^2)\frac{dy}{d\mu_{,}}\right\} - \frac{\gamma}{r_{,}^2}\frac{d}{d\mu_{,}}\left\{(1-\mu_{,}^2)\frac{dV'}{d\mu_{,}}\right\}$$

$$+\frac{g\gamma}{r_{,}^2}\frac{\frac{d^2y}{d\omega_{,}^2}}{1-\mu_{,}^2} - \frac{\gamma}{r_{,}^2}\frac{\frac{d^2V'}{d\omega_{,}^2}}{1-\mu_{,}^2} \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots (1).$$

We have already shewn (see Art. 179.) that y can be expanded in a series of Laplace's Coefficients of the form

$$a\{Y_0 + Y_1 + Y_2 + \ldots\ldots + Y_i + \ldots\ldots\}$$

The part of aV' relative to the spherical stratum of fluid of which the general radius is $r_{,}$ or $(a + ay)$, is by Art. 182

$$4\pi\rho a^2 a\left\{Y_0 + \tfrac{1}{3}Y_1 + \tfrac{1}{5}Y_2 + \ldots\ldots + \frac{1}{2i+1}Y_i + \ldots\ldots\right\}$$

Likewise the part of aV' which depends upon the action of the Sun and Moon can be expanded in a series of Laplace's Coefficients,

$$aU_0 + aU_1 + \ldots\ldots + aU_i + \ldots\ldots$$

This being premised, let us substitute the values of $r_{,}$, y, V' in the equation (1): the comparison of the similar functions U_i and Y_i will give

$$\frac{d^2Y_i}{dt^2} + \frac{i(i+1)}{2i+1}\frac{g\gamma}{a^2}\left\{(2i+1) - \frac{4\pi\rho a}{g}\right\}Y_i = \frac{\gamma}{a^3}i(i+1)U_i.$$

Let ρ' be the mean density of the Earth, then

$$g = \frac{4\pi\rho' a}{3}, \quad \therefore \frac{4\pi a}{g} = \frac{3}{\rho'},$$

then putting $\lambda_i^2 = \frac{i(i+1)}{2i+1}\frac{g\gamma}{a^2}\left\{2i+1-\frac{3\rho}{\rho'}\right\}$;

the above equation becomes

$$\frac{d^2 Y_i}{dt^2} + \lambda_i^2 Y_i = \frac{\gamma}{a^3} i(i+1) U_i,$$

and the integral of this is

$$Y_i = M_i \sin \lambda_i t + N_i \cos \lambda_i t$$

$$+ \frac{i(i+1)}{\lambda_i} \frac{\gamma}{a^3} \sin \lambda_i t \int U_i \cos \lambda_i t \, dt - \frac{i(i+1)}{\lambda_i} \frac{\gamma}{a^3} \cos \lambda_i t \int U_i \sin \lambda_i t \, dt.$$

M_i and N_i being two of Laplace's Coefficients.

When $i = 0$, the differential equation in Y_i becomes

$$\frac{d^2 Y_0}{dt^2} = 0,$$

$$\therefore \; Y_0 = M_0 t + N_0;$$

$$\therefore \frac{y}{a} = Y_0 + Y_1 + Y_2 + \ldots\ldots$$

$$= M_0 t + N_0 + M_1 \sin \lambda_1 t + N_1 \cos \lambda_1 t$$

$$+ M_2 \sin \lambda_2 t + N_2 \cos \lambda_2 t$$

$$+ \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$

$$+ M_i \sin \lambda_i t + N_i \cos \lambda_i t$$

$$+ \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$

If the quantity M_0 be finite, then y will increase without any limit, and the oscillations of the sea will not be stable. But it is easy to shew that M_0 and N_0 vanish, because the mass of the fluid is constant.

This condition gives $\int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} y \, d\mu \, d\omega = 0$;

$$\therefore \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} \{Y_0 + Y_1 + Y_2 + \ldots\ldots\} \, d\mu \, d\omega = 0,$$

but by Art. 180. $\int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} Y_i \, d\mu \, d\omega = 0$ when i is > 0;

$$\therefore \text{ also } \int_{-1}^{1} \int_0^{2\pi} Y_0 \, d\mu \, d\omega = 0, \quad \text{or } 4\pi Y_0 = 0,$$

$$\therefore \; Y_0 = 0, \quad \therefore \; M_0 t + N_0 = 0.$$

The stability of the sea depends then on the signs of

$$\lambda_1^2,\ \lambda_2^2, \ldots\ldots \lambda_i^2 \ldots\ldots$$

for if one of these be negative the value of y will have an exponential term in its expansion, and all the terms will not be periodic functions of t. The condition that this should not happen is, that $2i+1-\frac{3\rho}{\rho'}$ shall not be negative for any positive integral value of i,

$$\therefore \frac{\rho}{\rho'} \text{ must not be greater than any value of } \frac{2i+1}{3},$$

$$\therefore \frac{\rho}{\rho'} \text{ must not be greater than } 1,$$

or the density of the sea must not be greater than the mean density of the Earth; otherwise the equilibrium of the waters of the Ocean would not be stable.

579. Laplace extends this investigation to the case where the rotatory motion of the Earth is taken into consideration and the depth of the sea is not uniform: and arrives at the same result as before (Liv. IV. §. 3, also §. 13). He likewise shews in §. 14, of the second Chapter that the converse Proposition is true in many cases.

The part of the oscillations which depends on the primitive state of the sea must have quickly disappeared by the resistances of different kinds which the waters of the Ocean suffer in their motions: so that if it were not for the action of the Sun and Moon the sea would long since have subsided into a permanent state of equilibrium. It seems pretty evident that the same would be the case if the ellipticity of the Earth and the rotatory motion were taken into account, the only permanent effect of the rotatory motion being to modify the action of the Sun and Moon and so to alter the *period* of the oscillations but not their nature. For these reasons we may consider the solution in Art. 578, as applicable to the case of nature.

Now the experiments made by Maskelyne on the attraction of the mountain Schehallien in Scotland and by Cavendish

on the attraction of leaden balls shew, that the mean density of the Earth is somewhere about five times that of the sea. We are hereby assured, then, that, provided no geological convulsion change the form of the Earth's surface, no inundating catastrophe can overwhelm us, so long as matter obeys the laws which at present regulate its motion: a striking illustration of the words "hitherto shalt thou come, but no further." Job xxxviii. 11.

CHAPTER III.

THE MOTION OF BODIES IN A RESISTING MEDIUM.

---

580. It is found by experiment that when bodies move in a fluid, whether incompressible or aeriform, they meet with a resistance which tends continually to diminish their velocity. In consequence of the great difficulty of making accurate experiments on the resistance of media and also because of the extreme complication of the analysis which prohibits our making any extensive use of the facts which are brought to light, the laws of the resistance of fluids have not yet been very satisfactorily ascertained.

The general approximate law seems to be that the resistance on a plane surface moving with its plane at right angles to the line of motion is proportional to the extent of surface, the density of the resisting medium, and the square of the velocity taken conjointly. Some recent experiments upon the motion of boats on canals seem to indicate, that beyond a certain degree of velocity this law is not even an approximation to the truth, but the simple velocity better suits the experiments than the square of the velocity.

In a work of the nature of the present we should not have thought of entering upon this subject were it not intimately concerned with celestial phenomena. It has been computed that Encke's comet has since its appearance in 1786 been moving round the Sun with an increasing mean motion. Encke attributes this to the resistance of a medium pervading space. We shall therefore proceed to calculate the effect that such a medium must have upon the motion of the planets, and then explain the process of calculating the perturbation produced by this cause in the motion of comets.

PROP. *Supposing that a resisting medium pervades the planetary spaces, and that its resistance varies as the square of the velocity, required to find the effect on the motion of the planets, supposed to describe elliptic orbits nearly circular about the Sun.*

581. Let x and y be the co-ordinates to a planet and r its distance measured from the Sun: S the mass of the Sun and $V\frac{ds^2}{dt^2}$ the resistance of the medium; V we shall consider constant, because the orbit is nearly circular and therefore the planet nearly at the same distance from the Sun, and also we shall suppose V very small. The equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -\frac{Sx}{r^3} - V\frac{ds^2}{dt^2}\frac{dx}{ds}, \quad \frac{d^2y}{dt^2} = -\frac{Sy}{r^3} - V\frac{ds^2}{dt^2}\frac{dy}{ds},$$

multiply by $2\frac{dx}{dt}$ and $2\frac{dy}{dt}$, add, and integrate,

$$\therefore \frac{ds^2}{dt^2} = C + \frac{2S}{r} - 2\int V\frac{ds^3}{dt^3}dt.$$

But in the instantaneous ellipse (Arts. 350, 352), the first differential coefficients are the same as in the actual orbit, because the contact of this ellipse with the orbit is of the first order; hence

$$\frac{2S}{r} - \frac{S}{a} = \frac{ds^2}{dt^2} \text{ in ellipse } (2a = \text{axis-major})$$

$$= C + \frac{2S}{r} - 2\int V\frac{ds^3}{dt^3}dt,$$

$$\therefore -\frac{1}{a} = \frac{C}{S} - \frac{2}{S}\int V\frac{ds^3}{dt^3}dt;$$

$$\therefore \frac{da}{dt} = -\frac{2a^2V}{S}\frac{ds^3}{dt^3} = -2a^2VS^{\frac{1}{2}}\left\{\frac{2}{r} - \frac{1}{a}\right\}^{\frac{3}{2}}.$$

Again, $x\frac{d^2y}{dt^2} - y\frac{d^2x}{dt^2} = -V\left(x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt}\right)\frac{ds}{dt}$,

but in the ellipse $x\frac{dy}{dt} - y\frac{dx}{dt} = \sqrt{Sa(1-e^2)}$;

$$\therefore \frac{1}{\sqrt{a(1-e^2)}}\frac{d\sqrt{a(1-e^2)}}{dt} = -V\frac{ds}{dt},$$

$$\therefore \frac{d.a(1-e^2)}{dt} = -2a(1-e^2)V\frac{ds}{dt},$$

performing the differentiation, and substituting,

$$\frac{de}{dt} = 2V\frac{1-e^2}{e}\left(1-\frac{a}{r}\right)\frac{ds}{dt} = 2V\frac{1-e^2}{e}\left(1-\frac{a}{r}\right)S^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{2}{r}-\frac{1}{a}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}.$$

Also, since $\frac{a(1-e^2)}{r} = 1 + e\cos(\theta - \varpi)$,

$$\frac{d\varpi}{dt} = \frac{1-e^2}{re\sin(\theta-\varpi)}\frac{da}{dt} - \left\{\frac{2a}{r\sin(\theta-\varpi)} + \frac{1}{e}\cot(\theta-\varpi)\right\}\frac{de}{dt}$$

$$= -\frac{2V}{e}\sin(\theta-\varpi)\frac{ds}{dt}, \text{ after all reductions.}$$

582. Since the orbit is nearly circular we shall neglect e^2, e^3...: hence $r = a\{1 - e\cos(\theta - \varpi)\}$;

$$\therefore \frac{dt}{d\theta} = \frac{r^2}{h} \text{ (Art. 242.)} = \frac{a^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\sqrt{S}}\{1 - 2e\cos(\theta-\varpi)\};$$

$$\therefore nt = \theta - \varpi - 2e\sin(\theta-\varpi), \quad \sqrt{\frac{S}{a^3}} = n,$$

t being reckoned from the perihelion passage;

$$\therefore \theta - \varpi = nt + 2e\sin nt.$$

Hence $\frac{da}{dt} = -2V\sqrt{Sa}\{1 + 3e\cos(\theta-\varpi)\}$

$$= -2Vna^2\{1 + 3e\cos nt\};$$

$$\therefore a = \text{const.} - 2Va^2\{nt + 3e\sin nt\}.$$

Hence the effect of the medium is to diminish the mean distance by $4\pi Va^2$ during each successive revolution, and therefore to increase the mean motion $\left(n, \text{ which} = \sqrt{\frac{S}{a^3}}\right)$ by $6\pi Vna$.

$$\text{Also } \frac{de}{dt} = \frac{2Vna}{e}\left\{1-e^2-1-e\cos(\theta-\varpi)\right\}\left\{1+e\cos(\theta-\varpi)\right\}$$

$$= -Vna\left\{2\cos(\theta-\varpi)+e\left[3+\cos 2(\theta-\varpi)\right]\right\}$$

$$= -Vna\left\{2\cos nt+e(1+3\cos 2nt)\right\};$$

$$\therefore\ e = \text{const.} - Va\left\{2\sin nt + e\left(nt+\tfrac{3}{2}\sin 2nt\right)\right\}.$$

Hence the eccentricity is diminished during each revolution by $2\pi Vae$.

$$\text{Lastly, } \frac{d\varpi}{dt} = -\frac{2Vna}{e}\sin(\theta-\varpi)\left\{\frac{1+e^2+2e\cos(\theta-\varpi)}{1-e^2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$= -nA_1\sin nt - nA_2\sin 2nt + \ldots$$

A_1, A_2...being functions of V, a, and e;

$$\therefore\ \varpi = \text{const.} + A_1\cos nt + \tfrac{1}{2}A_2\cos 2nt + \ldots$$

hence during a revolution ϖ is unaffected, or the axis major remains stationary.

583. The variations of the elements of the planetary orbits calculated on the principles of Chapter VI. of DYNAMICS on the Planetary Theory give the position of the planets very accurately: hence the variations arising from a resisting medium, if one exist, are insensible in the motion of the planets: hence V is extremely small. But V varies directly as the density of the medium and inversely as the mass of the body acted on, consequently although the medium produces no effect on the motion of the planets, yet its influence on the comets may be sensible, since their mass is extremely small, Art. 491.

584. In order to apply the variations in Art. 581, to find the change in a comet's orbit, we must use the method

of quadratures; that is, we must calculate the differential coefficients for values of the elements at certain instants not far apart, and then multiply these results by the respective intervals of time between these instants and add them all together: see Mr Airy's Translation of *Encke's Dissertation* on his comet in the *Astronomische Nachrichten*, Nos. 210, 211.

The result deduced in Art. 582, with respect to the position of the perihelion is true for all orbits, as there shewn.

CONCLUSION.

SUMMARY OF ARGUMENTS IN FAVOUR OF UNIVERSAL GRAVITATION.

585. THE perpetual recurrence of similar phenomena under similar circumstances suggests the idea, that the material world is regulated in its movements by laws, that the changes and vicissitudes we witness, whether in the heavens or in the planet we inhabit, are not the results of mere chance and caprice, but spring from the secret influence and operation of certain principles and properties with which matter is endowed. The ordinary observer cannot fail to trace in many instances the connexion between one set of phenomena and another; as for example the relation between the length of the day and the interval of time which elapses between the times of high tide; the connexion which this bears with the position of the Sun and Moon in the heavens: then again the analogy which exists between the notion that the Sun and Moon have an affinity for the waters of the Ocean, and the fact that terrestrial bodies are drawn towards the Earth when left to themselves. In this way our conception of order and regularity in the changes of the natural world is strengthened, and by carrying on our researches we begin to discover that many effects, which seemed to be independent of each other and linked by no natural connexion, are collateral results of one and the same principle.

Our object in the present Chapter is to gather the arguments which convince us of the truth of the Theory of Universal Gravitation, arranging them in order and presenting them under one view. By the labours of philosophers extended over a long period of time the celestial phenomena

have been traced to the action of a few simple laws. These laws we have pointed out in the course of this work.

586. All our knowledge of external objects is the result of experience; by experience we accumulate facts, and by the comparison and classification of facts we are led through a process of induction to the discovery of the general laws from the operation of which these facts spring merely as limited and individual results.

Experience teaches us that bodies, when left to themselves and when unresisted by external objects, fall downwards. This constant tendency downwards in preference to any other direction suggests the first idea of an affinity which one portion of matter has for other portions. The greatness of the size of the Earth when compared with that of any body upon which we can perform experiments sufficiently accounts for the fact, that bodies do not appear to influence each other. Experiments shew, however, that when two bodies are placed at rest and near each other on the surface of a fluid (under which circumstances the least possible resistance is offered to their motion) they will begin to move and finally come in contact. Also Cavendish's experiments with leaden balls prove the same.

Let us examine the consequences to which this conception of an attractive property of matter leads us.

587. The examination of numerous experiments led us to conceive that the following laws regulate the motion of bodies; That a body in motion will continue in motion and move uniformly in a straight line when not acted on by external forces; and That when a force acts upon a body in motion the change in motion is the same as if the force acted on the body originally at rest (Arts. 195, 208).

Now the bodies of the Solar System do not move in straight lines. The laws just enunciated shew, then, that these bodies are acted on by external forces; and, since we have seen that a principle of attraction does prevail in matter on the Earth's surface, we are fully justified in adopting as an hypothesis, to stand or fall by the comparison of calculated results with the observed phenomena, that this principle of attraction prevails throughout the Universe. We shall now enquire into the nature of this force of attraction.

588. It is by a combination of the first and second laws of motion that we calculate by the use of mathematical symbols the relations connecting the path described by a body moving in space and the forces which act upon the body. In order, then, to discover the nature of the forces we must examine the nature of the orbit described by the body. Kepler has furnished us with the necessary facts respecting the configuration of the Solar System; he deduced them from observations made upon the motion of the planets. These, as we shall shew, incontrovertibly strengthen the testimony in favour of the universal gravitation of matter, and moreover point out the law of variation of the attraction. The following are the laws which Kepler discovered: they are very nearly verified in the Solar System.

Each planet describes an ellipse about the Sun, the Sun being in one of the foci.

The areas described by the radius-vector of each planet about the Sun vary as the times of describing them.

The squares of the periodic times of the planets about the Sun bear to each other the same relation as the cubes of their mean distances.

These laws have been shewn to hold for the satellites revolving about their primaries if small inequalities be neglected. The same gravitating principle therefore that retains (as we shall see) the planets in their orbits about the Sun, binds the satellites to their primaries.

589. The Sun's magnitude is very enormous in comparison with that of the other heavenly bodies; also the mutual distances of the heavenly bodies are never very small in comparison with their distance from the Sun: this is shewn by astronomical observations which are independent of all theory. For this reason we may neglect, at least for a first approximation, the mutual action of the heavenly bodies in comparison with the action of the Sun upon them. Also the diameters of the Sun and planets bear a very small ratio to the distances of the planets from the Sun: therefore we shall not be very far from the truth if we consider the Sun and planets as intense particles, condensed into their centres. If we adopt this supposition, Kepler's second law proves, that the forces acting on

the planets pass through the Sun's centre (Art. 257): and consequently confirms the notion of a principle of attraction, and shews that the attraction of the planets, as we have supposed, is far more feeble than the attraction of the Sun. Kepler's first law proves that the attraction between the Sun and planets varies in intensity inversely as the square of the distance of the bodies. The third law shews that, not only must the force on each planet pass through the Sun's centre, and the law of attraction be the same; but the intensity of the attractive force on each planet must be the same at the same distance for every planet.

590. Thus far then the laws which Kepler discovered to prevail in the Solar System give great weight to the evidence in favour of the universality of the principle of attraction; and moreover they point out the law of variation of the attraction when the distance varies, and shew that it is the inverse square of the distance. But we have hitherto considered the heavenly bodies to be merely intense particles, whereas the diameter of the Earth is nearly 8000 miles, and that of the Sun between 800,000 and 900,000 miles. And, moreover, we are convinced that it is not the centres alone of the heavenly bodies that attract, since Dr Maskelyne ascertained by observations on the stars made near the mountain Shehallien, in Scotland, that the direction of the plumb line was affected by the attraction of the mountain, and consequently the Earth's attraction is not accurately directed towards its centre. The same is likewise proved by measuring degrees of latitude near the pole and equator. It becomes necessary, then, to enquire more minutely into the legitimacy of the hypothesis we have adopted in Art. 589.

591. The force of the objection, that all the particles of a body attract and not the centres only, will be considerably weakened by referring to Art. 165, in which we proved that a mass of matter composed of particles attracting according to a certain law will have nearly the same attraction for a distant body as if we considered the particles to be condensed into their common centre of gravity. But upon a further examination we find that the objection is, as far as the accuracy of our results in this stage of the question is concerned, quite

removed. For in the Article following that last cited we shew, that the law of attraction of the constituent particles and the resultant law of attraction are always the same. But the resultant law is that of the inverse square of the distance, as we have proved by Kepler's laws: this, then, is the law of attraction of the constituent particles. If we turn now to Art. 153, we shall find that the inverse square of the distance is one of those three laws of attraction which give accurately the same resultant for a spherical shell as if we conceive it condensed into its centre.

When we bear in mind, then, that astronomical observations have proved that the figures of the Sun and planets and their satellites do not differ much from spheres, the objection which arises from effecting the calculations of the motion of the heavenly bodies on the hypothesis of their being intense particles is entirely removed.

592. We come, then, to this conclusion, that, if we neglect the minute errors which accurate observations on the heavenly bodies detected in Kepler's laws, if we neglect the errors arising from the deviation of the figures of these bodies from spheres, and the probable variation of density in their interior, of which we have made no account, then the only simple hypothesis which will account for the phenomena is, that all particles of the universe attract each other with a force which varies inversely as the square of the distance and directly as the mass of the attracting particle.

It remains to be seen whether this law, simple as it is, will upon effecting the calculations give correct numerical results: for the test of a theory consists in a comparison of the exact results to which it leads with the observed phenomena; and not solely in its power of explaining the nature of the phenomena.

593. Now the calculations of the position of the planets made upon this hypothesis of their gravitating towards the Sun with a force directly as their mass and inversely as the square of their distance from the Sun are found to agree very well with the observed positions, if the calculations extend over only a few years. After the lapse however of a considerable interval of time, as a century, minute errors are

detected in the calculations, and they are then found not to agree exactly with the observed positions of the planets. But this disagreement is in fact precisely what we should have anticipated, since if the principle of gravitation be universal the planets would attract each other and consequently disturb the elliptic motion and the equable description of areas; likewise the deviation of the figures of the planets from perfect sphericity and their heterogeneous structure give rise to additional errors. An idea of the extreme smallness of the perturbations may be learned from the fact, that if we trace on paper an ellipse ten feet in diameter to represent the orbit in which the Earth is moving at any instant about the Sun, and if we trace by its side the path actually described in its revolution round the Sun, the difference between the original ellipse and the curve actually described is so excessively minute, that the nicest examination with microscopes, continued along the outlines of the two curves, would hardly detect any perceptible interval between them: Herschel's *Astronomy*.

594. Our next enquiry should therefore be whether the magnitudes of the minute deviations from elliptic motion accord with the calculations effected on the hypothesis of the universality of the gravitation of matter. And here we enter upon an investigation so complicated and depending upon such a variety of disturbing causes all in simultaneous operation, that it is desirable to seek for a compendious method of treating the subject.

The course we shall pursue is exactly the reverse of that we have hitherto followed: for we shall now assume the truth of the Law of Universal Gravitation and calculate by means of mathematical reasoning the phenomena which would result from the operation of this Law in combination with the Laws of Motion. In adopting this method we entirely disentangle ourselves from the multitude of difficulties which were surrounding us; we have not now to consider the influence which this or that observed fact may have upon our calculations; we no longer have to modify our original notions upon each discovery: we commence entirely anew, and assuming the Laws of Motion and of Universal Gravitation we investigate by

means of the rigorous and infallible engine of mathematical calculation, the phenomena which would naturally arise from the action of these laws. The complete accordance which is found to exist, in all the instances submitted to this test, between the calculated and the observed phenomena of the Solar System is the surest proof of the truth of the assumed laws.

We were unable to proceed in this way from the beginning since mathematical reasoning is incapable of application unless we have laws to reason upon: and in consequence of the number and complexity of the observed facts, it was impossible, *a priori*, even to conjecture, that the law of attraction was that of the inverse square of the distance. But having been led by a process of induction step by step to this great principle, we descend through a process of deduction to examine its consequences, and so in the end incontrovertibly to establish its truth. So strong is the evidence in its favour, and so firm the basis on which it rests, that in many cases we attribute slight discrepancies to errors in the observations rather than in the assumed law.

595. Notwithstanding what we have said of the advantage of considering the subject in this point of view, it must not be denied that great difficulties beset our path in effecting the mathematical calculation. Were it not indeed for the peculiar configuration of our system, the enormous preponderance of the mass of the Sun over that of the planets, the grouping of the heavenly bodies into clusters consisting of a primary and its satellites, the mass of the central body greatly exceeding that of its attendants, were it not for these peculiar arrangements the calculation would baffle the powers of analysis.

It must not be imagined, however, that these difficulties are such as to vitiate the results to which they lead us: they add to the labour of the calculation, but do not subtract from their certainty; since we may by successive approximation arrive within an inappreciable distance of the exact results.

596. The motion of a body moving freely in space consists of two parts, one a motion of translation from one

situation to another, and the other a motion of rotation: and these may be considered independently of each other; for the motion of the centre of gravity would be precisely the same if the whole mass were concentrated in that point, and all the forces which act upon the body were transferred to the same point: and the motion of rotation would be the same if the centre of gravity were held at rest. These principles we have proved in Arts. 428, 429, 474, 475: and they enable us to divide the investigation of the motion of the planets and other heavenly bodies into two branches, which we shall consider separately.

597. The forces which act upon a heavenly body are the attractions of the Sun, planets, satellites, and comets upon every particle of its mass, and the resistance of the medium in which the body moves.

But in consequence of the enormous magnitude of the Sun in comparison of that of the other bodies, and in consequence also of the tenuity of the medium which pervades the planetary spaces, the great preponderating force is the attraction of the Sun: and since the figure of the Sun differs but little from a sphere, and since the same is likewise true of the other bodies of the solar system, it follows, that the resultant of all the forces which act upon the various particles of the body, the motion of which we are considering, when transferred to the centre of gravity of the body will differ very slightly from a force varying as the sum of the masses of the Sun and body divided by the square of the distance of their centres: the small additional forces are called *disturbing forces*.

598. Now if the disturbing forces did not exist, the centres of the bodies of the Solar System would each move in a conic section: and all the orbits would have one common focus in the Sun's centre: (Art. 252.) But in consequence of the disturbing forces slight deviations from these paths will arise which it will be necessary to calculate.

Lagrange has put the subject in a most lucid point of view. Let us imagine the disturbing forces to cease acting, the centre of the body would ever after move in a conic section, the magnitude and position of which would depend

upon the state of things at the instant the disturbing forces ceased to act.

Now this curve and the path actually described have a common tangent, and the velocity at the instant under consideration is the same as that in the conic section calculated according to the principles of elliptic motion. For these reasons we may suppose that for an instant the body is moving in the conic section, the elements of its position and magnitude depending upon the time. And in short the entire motion of the centre of the body may be represented by supposing it to move in a conic section, of which the elements are subject to continual variation. The paths of all the heavenly bodies (with the exception perhaps of some of the comets) are nearly elliptical, and the ellipses in which they are moving at any instant are called the *instantaneous* ellipses.

We thus reduce the calculation of the motion of the heavenly bodies to that of the elements of the instantaneous ellipse in which the body is moving at the instant we wish to calculate the position of the body. Nothing remains to be done after this, but to substitute the values of these elements in the expressions of the radius vector, latitude, and longitude. See DYNAMICS, Chap. VI.

599. When a number of small disturbing forces act upon a body and alter its motion the aggregate effect is very nearly equal to the algebraical sum of the separate effects which they would produce if they acted independently of each other. For the real effect differs from this sum merely by the effect which the disturbing forces produce in modifying each others action, and must consequently be of the second order of magnitude, and therefore so trifling as to be inappreciable except in extreme cases. (Art. 288.) This principle we find of vast importance since it greatly facilitates the calculations.

600. In order to determine the elliptic elements of a heavenly body corresponding to any instant, we investigate their value in terms of a small arbitrary disturbing force expressed in general symbols, as will be seen by turning to Chapter VI. of DYNAMICS.

The various disturbing forces are then calculated and substituted singly in the formulæ which give the variations

of the elements: and the variations being added together with their correct signs the whole variation is known: the value of each element being then determined we are prepared to apply the formulæ of Arts. 278, 280, already mentioned.

Having thus explained the analytical machinery, so to speak, which we make use of in order to calculate the motions of the heavenly bodies, we must shew how the results of the calculation bear comparison with the observed phenomena.

601. The planets are subject to perturbations of two kinds; both depending upon their reciprocal action; a full explanation of these will be found in Art. 377. They are termed *periodic variations* and *secular variations*. Some of these remarkably prove the correctness of the principles which have guided the calculations, such as the great inequality of Jupiter and Saturn, which at one time was the great stumbling block in the way of receiving Newton's theory of gravitation, but which Laplace so entirely removed by shewing that the defect lay in the analysis and not in the principle of gravitation: again the inequality of the Earth and Venus discovered by Mr Airy as clearly demonstrates the truth of the law of gravitation, especially when we consider the extreme minuteness of this error and the complex character of the analysis. (Art. 376).

There is a remarkable perturbation in the motion of the Moon arising from the secular inequality of the eccentricity of the Earth's orbit: it is called the Secular Acceleration of the Moon's mean motion. It had been observed by Halley, upon comparing together the records of the most ancient lunar eclipses of Chaldean Astronomers with those of modern times, that the periodic time of the Moon about the Earth is now sensibly shorter than it was at that distant epoch. This result was confirmed by a further comparison of both sets of observations with those of the Arabian Astronomers of the eighth and ninth centuries; and it was proved that the mean motion is increasing by about $11''$ per century, a quantity small in itself, but becoming of importance by the accumulation of ages. This had long been a stumbling block to mathematicians, and so difficult did it appear to render an exact account of it, that the theory of gravity was declared to be

inadequate satisfactorily to remove the difficulty by explaining the cause of the phenomena. It was in this dilemma that the penetrating sagacity of Laplace was once more called into action to rescue Physical Astronomy from its reproach. If the solar ellipse were invariable the alternate dilatation and contraction of the lunar orbit would, in the course of a great many revolutions of the Sun, at length bring about an exact compensation in the distance and periodic time of the Moon.

But the solar ellipse is not invariable, its eccentricity has been decreasing since the earliest ages, and will continue to do so till the orbit becomes a circle, after which epoch the orbit will again dilute and increase in eccentricity. It was from this variation of the eccentricity of the solar orbit that Laplace shewed that the variation in the Moon's mean motion arose. This phenomenon is a very striking instance of the propagation of a periodic inequality from one part of a system to another. The masses of the planets are too small and their distances from the Earth are too great for their difference of action on the Earth and Moon ever to become sensible. Yet their effect on the Earth's orbit is propagated (as we have seen) through the Sun to the Moon's orbit; and, what is very remarkable, the transmitted effect thus indirectly produced on the angle described by the Moon round the Earth is more sensible to observation than that directly produced by them on the angle described by the Earth round the Sun.

602. But without adding more suffice it to say, that the calculations of the inequalities of the planets and of Jupiter's satellites is arrived at such a degree of precision, as to agree exactly with the observations, omitting only unavoidable instrumental errors.

603. Again in the Lunar Theory, we have many proofs of the truth of Newton's law (Arts. 341—346). The Variation, the Evection, and Annual Equation, the motion of the perigee and node all agree in their numerical results with observation: numerous other inequalities, a few of which are mentioned in Art. 346, give additional evidence in support of our theory.

604. Likewise the calculation of the motion of comets very remarkably agrees with observation. The time of the

re-appearance of Halley's Comet in the year 1835, after an absence of 76 years, was predicted correctly within nine days of its actual appearance! A most astonishing fact, when we consider that the light of the comet is diminishing, and that consequently we could not expect to have the time of re-appearance very accurately calculated.

605. In short, when we consider the simplicity of the law to which we are led, the variety and different characters of the tests we use, the labyrinth of calculations through which we have to wind our way, and the exact character of the results upon which any reliance can be placed, we are irresistably constrained to admit, that no theory has ever been based upon a firmer foundation than that of Universal Gravitation. In many instances, if the law departed in the slightest degree from that of the inverse square, inequalities, which are now calculated numerically in the theory and agree with observation, would not give results near the truth: this is the case with the motion of the Moon's perigee.

606. But we have hitherto gathered our evidence solely from the motion of the heavenly bodies considered as intense particles: when, however, we descend deeper into the consequences of the law of gravity and enquire into the minute errors caused by the attraction of the various particles which form the masses of the heavenly bodies, we obtain an accession of sound arguments in favour of Universal Gravitation.

607. By measuring degrees of latitude as near as possible to the pole and equator it is found that they increase in length as we pass from the equator to the pole; this shews that the vertical lines (or normal lines) to the Earth's surface are less and less inclined to each other as we proceed towards the pole from the equator. We learn from this that the form of the Earth is not spherical, but flattened at the poles: and when the calculations and observations are combined, the geodetic measures shew that the Earth is very nearly spheroidal, having an ellipticity $\frac{1}{306}$. This is a result not of theory but observation and trigonometrical calculations.

608. With this fact to guide us we entered upon an enquiry whether this form were given to the Earth in a fluid or semi-fluid state, since we easily see *a priori* that the rota-

tory motion would, in that case, cause the parts near the equator to bulge. We proved in Art. 525, that this would not give the proper numerical value of the ellipticity if we suppose that the mass of the Earth were homogeneous, an hypothesis in itself highly improbable, since the pressure of the upper strata must produce a condensation of the lower: also it is contrary to the results of Maskelyne's and Cavendish's results respecting the mean density of the Earth. We here have then a negative argument in favour of gravitation. We therefore proceeded (Art. 531.) to investigate the figure of the Earth upon the hypothesis that it consists of strata differing but little from spherical shells (an hypothesis extremely probable, since the ellipticity of the surface is $\frac{1}{306}$ by observations), and increasing in density towards the centre according to an unknown law. The result we arrived at was, that the form of all the shells is spheroidal, decreasing in ellipticity towards the centre (Art. 535). An equation was obtained for calculating the ellipticity of the surface, when the law of density was discovered: this law we obtained upon hydrostatic principles in terms of arbitrary constants (Art. 545), and having determined the values of one of these constants by means of the facts given us by Maskelyne and Cavendish respecting the mean density of the Earth, we reduced to numbers the formula for the ellipticity and obtained a result, according most remarkably with that given by geodetic measurements.

609. As a further test we reduced to numbers the formula for the precession of the equinoxes, which had been previously calculated in Arts. 463—470, and obtained a result according with remarkable exactness with the observed precession (Art. 551).

610. Laplace calculated the errors caused in the latitude and longitude of the Moon by the bulging portion of the Earth at the equator, and obtained results very closely agreeing with those we have given above (see Art. 346).

611. Also pendulum experiments give, by the formula of Art. 539, an ellipticity according very well with the other values.

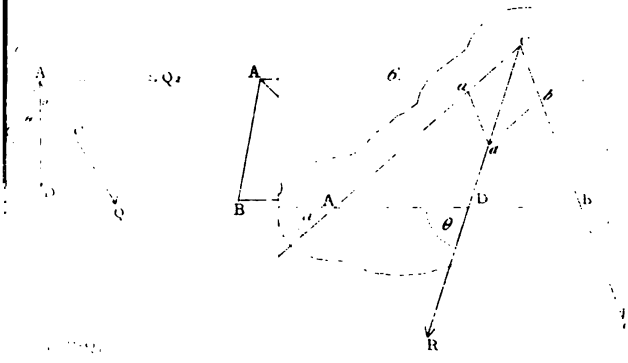
612. It will be readily granted, then, that we have an abundance of evidence (and more might be given) to justify

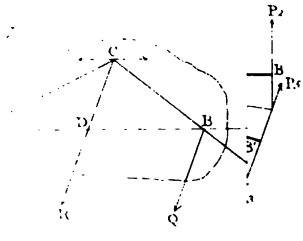
as the square of the distance, but that the individual particles of which they are composed attract according to the same law.

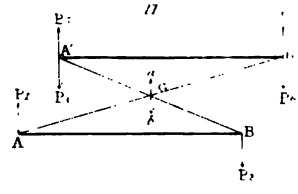
613. The theory of the Tides is at present in so imperfect a state, that we must not look for evidence in that quarter. Nevertheless some of the observations collected by Mr Whewell and Mr Lubbock seem to indicate that the force of attraction of the Moon in raising the waters varies inversely as the cube of the distance, the theoretical law according to the theory of gravitation (Art. 574).

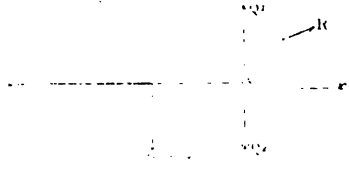
614. We may well draw this epitome to a conclusion in the words of Sir John Herschel. "There is one feature in physical astronomy which renders it remarkable among the sciences, and has been the chief, if not the only, source of the perfection it has attained. It is this, that the fundamental law embracing all the minutiæ of the phenomena so far as we yet know them, presents itself at once, on the consideration of broad features and general facts, deduced by observations of even a rude and imperfect kind, in such a form as to require no modification, extension, or addition when applied to minute detail. In other sciences, when an induction of a moderate extent has led us to the knowledge of a law which we conceive to be general, the further progress of our enquiries frequently obliges us either to limit its extent or modify its expression. ...In physical astronomy, however,...our first conclusion is our last. The law on which all its phenomena depend flows naturally and easily from the simplest among them, as presented by the rudest observation; and, in point of fact, such has really been the order of investigation in this science. The rude supposition of the uniform revolution of the Moon in a circle about the Earth as a centre led Newton at once to the true law of gravity, as extending from the Earth to its companion. The uniform circular motions of the planets about the Sun, in times following the progression assigned by observation in Kepler's rule, confirmed the law, and extended its influence to the boundaries of our system. Every thing more refined than this, the elliptic motions of the planets and satellites—their mutual perturbations, the slow changes

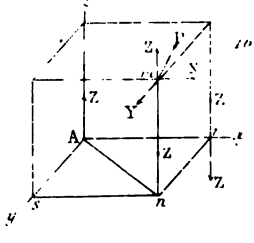
of their orbits and motion denominated secular variations, the deviation of their figures from the spherical form, the oscillatory motions of their axes which produce nutation and the precession of the equinoxes, the theory of the tides both of the ocean and the atmosphere have all in succession been so many trials for life and death in which this law has been, as it were, pitted against nature; trials, of which the event no human foresight could predict, and where it was impossible even to conjecture what modifications it might be found to need." *Enc. Met. Physical Astronomy*, p. 647.

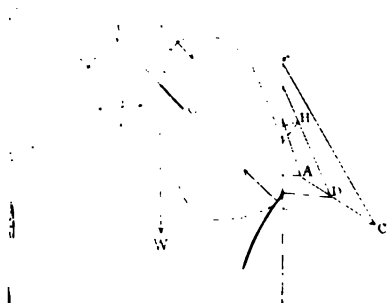

A
B
Q
R
θ
a
b
c
d

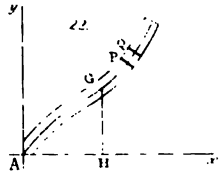

C
B
D
Q
R

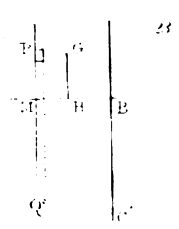

A
B
G

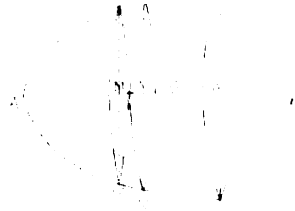

R

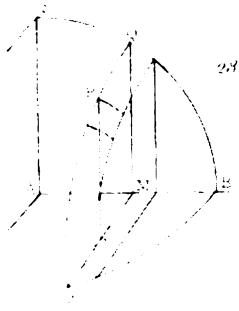

Z
Y
X
A

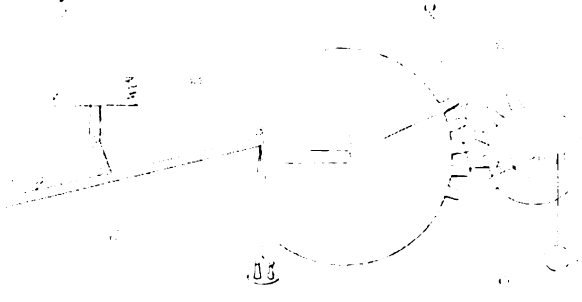

A
B
C
W

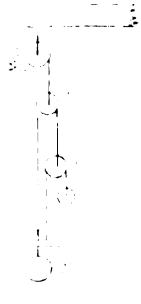

G
A
B

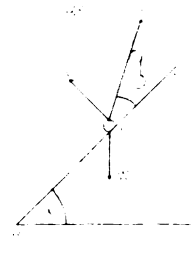


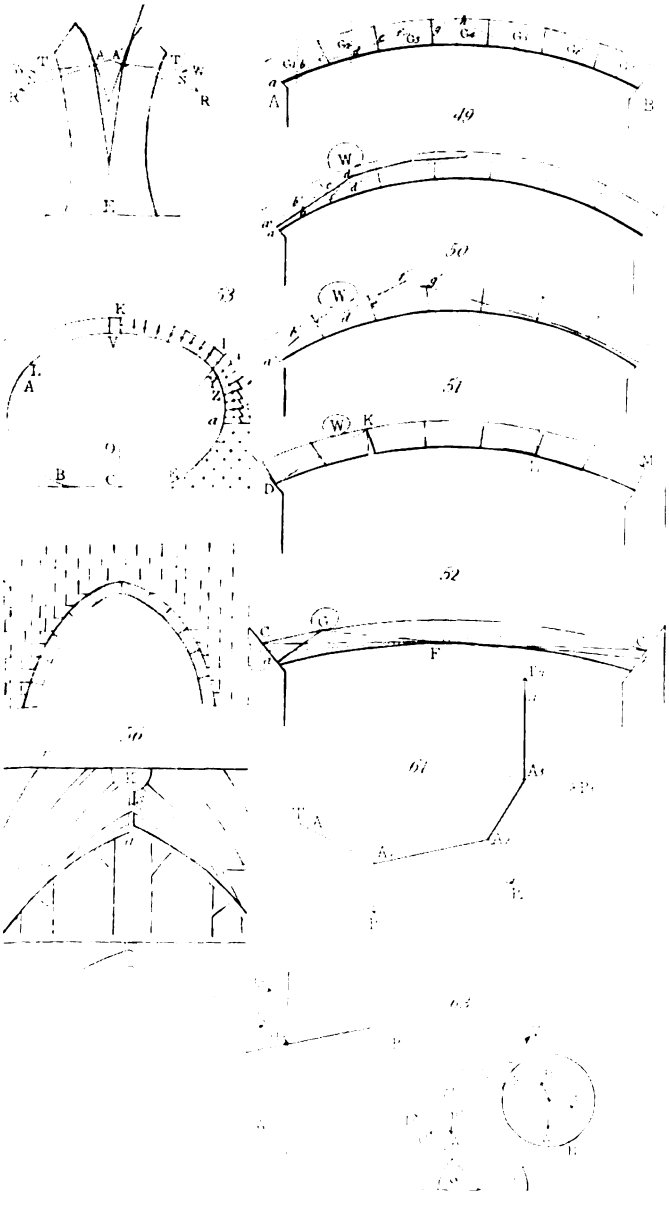


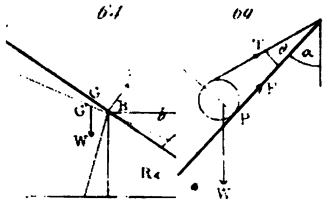


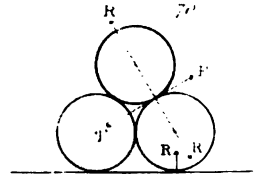


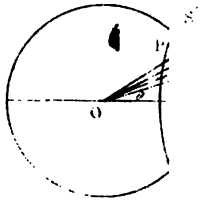




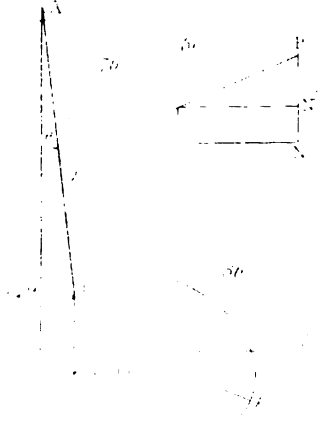


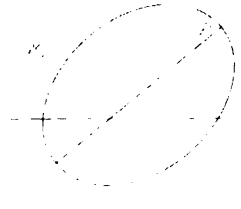

69
W
R
T
P
W

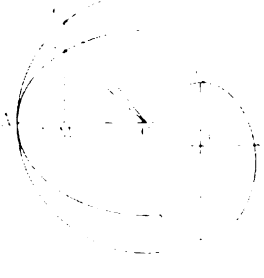

R
R
R

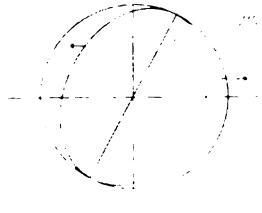

O

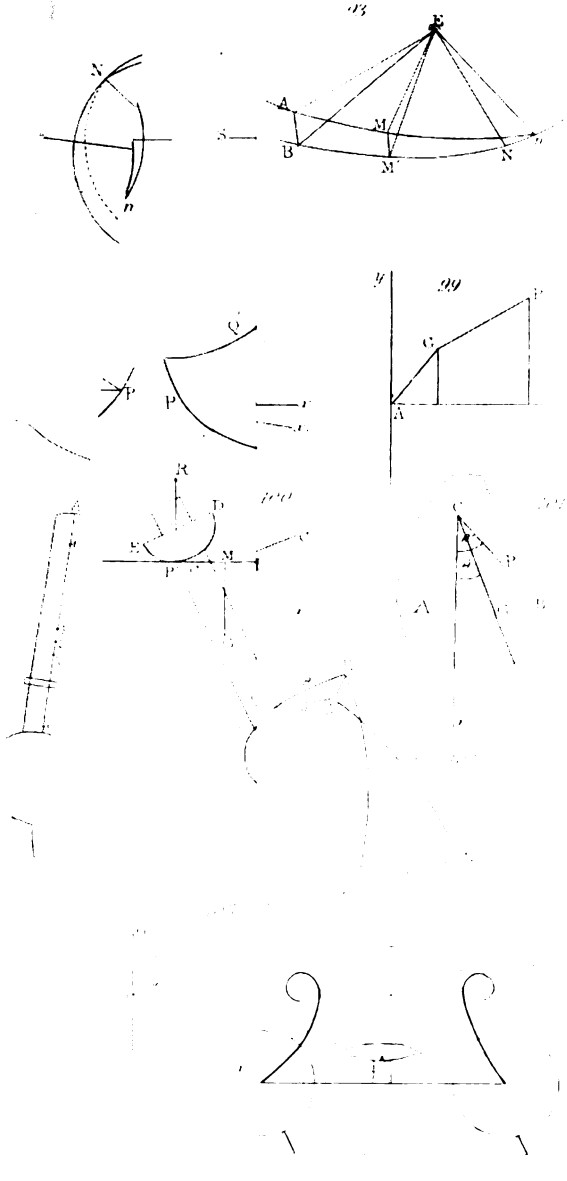
C
AO
OB










N
n
S
A
B
M
M'
N
E
C
P
R
D
M
C
A
B

QA 805 .P8 1836 C.1
The mathematical principles of
Stanford University Libraries
3 6105 034 090 931

DATE DUE